



AWAKENING

BOOK 02

Beyond

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Awakening

(仿如昨日)

by

BEYOND

Synopsis

A martial art expert from the Song dynasty lives like a Phoenix that can live again in another body after death.

This time, he happened to take over the body of a Japanese high schooler who is also a victim of bullying and has a bit complicated family circumstances.

Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by subudai11 @ [subudai11](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 101 - Rooftop

“I want to ask you about some things.” At the stairs, the transfer student Nagasaki after coming back from his extended leave stood before Masashi and asked.

“Rumi, Kazumi, you go back first,” Masashi said to the two girls.

“Brother, you be careful.” Kazumi looked coldly at the transfer student and then said.

“I know.”

Kazumi then took Rumi’s hand and walked to the classroom.

“Well, what matter do you have looking for me?” On the rooftop, Masashi looked at him.

“Is it not you’re doing?” Nagasaki asked.

“I don’t understand what you mean,” Masashi said with a shrug.

“My house has been maliciously set on fire, I want to know, was it you who did it?” The transfer student asked again.

“Do you think a high school student could do this kind of thing?” Masashi asked.

Nagasaki glanced at him, then coldly snorted, “you must be very happy now, right? But don’t you get too comfortable, my house was only burned. But with my family’s financial resources, it’s not even worth the attention.” He said coldly.

In face, he felt that it was impossible for the ordinary high school student Masashi to do this thing, it was likely that his bastard father provoked some trouble. The reason for asking was just to determine it.

“Worthy of being rich, the tone is certainly not small.” Masashi laughed.

Nagasaki didn’t want to hear his voice again, then turned around and walked towards the stairs.

“Yes, Nagasaki student. I would also like to ask you a question.” Masashi from behind him suddenly spoke a sentence.

“What’s the matter?” Nagasaki said without looking back.

“Do you know that there’s a strange substance called diethyl aluminum chloride, I heard that as long as it’s exposed to the air even for a very short time, it would explode, does Nagasaki student heard this kind of thing?”

“It really was you!” Nagasaki shouted, then suddenly turned around and looked fiercely at Masashi.

“It appears that Nagasaki had heard of such a thing,” Masashi said with a smile.

“I will never let this matter go.” Nagasaki tightly clenched his fist.

“Nagasaki Naichi, male, 16 years old, a genius boy with an IQ of 140. His father Nagasaki Masao, 56 years old, owns an export corporation called Nagasaki Business Organization and is now the head. His wife Mieko, 40 years old, has been divorced with Nagasaki Masao for three years already and is now single.” Masashi said slowly.

“You actually had someone investigate me?” Nagasaki hissed.

Masashi didn't pay any attention to him, continued: “Your elder brother, Nagasaki Kyoshi was a surgeon. He was Nagasaki Masao's child with his passed away former wife and is your half-blood brother. But I don't know why, three years ago, Nagasaki Masao suddenly announced to terminate their parent-child relationship with Nagasaki Kyoshi. Although the outsiders don't know the real situation, I heard some strange rumors. I heard that Nagasaki Kyoshi, and his stepmother Mieko, usually seems to look too close, workers even say that, once in the morning they saw your brother coming out of your mother's room. That's weird, your mother had been long divorce for three years, and as it happens, three years ago, your father terminated their parent-child relationship. You say, isn't this a little too coincidental?”

“You son of a bitch, I’m going to kill you!” Nagasaki’s veins were exposed, while his whole face twisted up.

“Since my two younger sister’s being surrounded by hoodlums previously, my first thought that it was you. Afterward, after I’ve sent someone to investigate you, I’ve discovered that you’re related to this matter and was told that your middle-aged butler gave them money. But at that time, I was a little bit busy so that I couldn’t talk to you. But then something happened, do you know what it was?” Masashi looked at him.

Knowing that he wouldn’t answer, Masashi went on and said: “I met the Tokyo Ripper Chojiro.”

Hearing the name, Nagasaki was shocked.

“Then he said something very strange. He said that he had a very capable younger brother, who by hacking the Metropolitan Police line was able to find my report. Also, the one who arranged his place was his so-called younger brother. But ironically, the one who informed the police to surround and capture him at that place was that same person. I had a strange feeling at that time; his so-called younger brother perhaps is someone who I know. In order to confirm this, I started to investigate every suspicious people that I know, of course, that also includes you.”

Masashi lazily leaned on the barbed wire at the roof, “In the report, I found that it had something to do with you, the investigation informed about a strange place. Your half-blood elder brother Nagasaki Kyoshi mysteriously went missing one year ago. Not only did he disappear from the hospital he works, but he also

wasn't at the place he lived in, and no one saw him again. There is, Nagasaki Kyoshi's mother, Nagasaki Masao's wife who had passed away, before she hadn't married your father, her given name was Maruo Kiku.

You should know that by today's cosmetic technology, it's actually very simple to become another person.

If the above speculations are true, then the answer is apparent.

In fact, Nagasaki Kyoshi is Maruo Chojiro.

Perhaps because of the relationship between your mother, Nagasaki Kyoshi seems to be good to you. But it's also because of her relationship, that in fact, you really hate him, or that you're afraid of him, because he was a madman. You helped him arrange the place to gain his trust, until finally, you finally found the opportunity to kill him.

If my guess is correct, you transferred to this school perhaps because of me. In fact, you wanted to know what kind of person I really am. Since it was my advice that allowed the police to successfully ambush him.

Am I right, Nagasaki student?" Masashi turned around and looked at him dismissively.

At this time, the transfer students face turned white and green, while having a bitter and complex look at Masashi.

“So in retaliation, you set my house on fire?” After a long time, Nagasaki said darkly.

“Sorry, I’m not going to answer any of your questions. Don’t forget Kazuo that idiot was dismissed because I recorded him, so you’d better be careful.” Masashi shrugged and walked in front of him.

“Gennai Masashi, don’t get too comfortable, I....”

Before he could finish, Masashi suddenly grabbed his neck with his right hand and ruthlessly smashed him to the wall.

“Boy, don’t annoy me, if my two younger sisters were really hurt last time, I’m going to make you wish you were dead. If you dare think about harming them again, there will be no second warning.” The youth said as he tightened his grasp on the neck.

“Uh...” Nagasaki was struggling in pain, desperately wanting to get away from his hand.

After a while, the youth released his hand, while Nagasaki knelt down on the ground constantly panting.

“If I really wanted to deal with you, it would be easier than crushing an ant.” Masashi stepped on his heaving chest, while looking down at him.

When Masashi went down stairs, Nagasaki's whole body was still trembling uncontrollably for a long time

“Lei, I'm really happy that you're staying with me, but I'm worried that you'll miss your lessons.” Teacher Naoko sitting on the teenager's thigh a little worriedly said.

“Really some like to worry too much, just look when I show you my final exam grades.” The youth said while he put his head on neck heartily smelling her fragrance.

“Lei, you seem to be a little unhappy today, what happened?” Naoko affectionately stroked his face.

The teenager laughed a little, “I know how all those guys are, my intuition is different than that from an ordinary person. In fact, it's nothing, just felt a little tired of fighting, and suddenly feel that those things are unnecessary.”

Although she didn't understand what the teenager said, a wise woman isn't talkative, so Naoko-sensei didn't ask, and clung to his waist with both of her hands, while tenderly pressing her face on his shoulder.

The two quietly cuddled together, although nobody spoke, the air was as if filled with the warm feeling and aroma of coffee that made it feel very comfortable.

Being together with the woman, the teenager more and more

liked her unique flavor.

Suddenly, Naoko-sensei's phone on the desk rang.

She couldn't help but be a little resentful while looking up, and stood as she answered the phone, the youth also suddenly stood up, walking towards her and hugged her beside the desk.

Naoko-sensei shyly looked at him, then let him hold her, as she picked up the phone on the desk and pressed the answer key.

"Hello, may I ask who's calling?"

"Mr. Junichiro, what do you want?"

"You want to invite me for dinner? I'm sorry, I've been very busy recently, thank you very much."

"You're kidding, I don't have time. If there's nothing else, I'll hang up."

"Bye."

After closing the line, Naoko-sensei playfully stuck out her tongue at the youth.

"Does that guy often bother you?" The teenager asked.

“Not too often, but sometimes just like today he would invite me to dinner, watch movies and the like, Lei, you have to believe me, I really have nothing to do with him, I’ve never accepted any of his invitations.” Naoko-sensei looked at him a little anxious.

“Fool, don’t be cranky.” The youth lowered his head and kissed her delicate lips.

Naoko-sensei immediately gently responded.

After a while, the two’s lips separated, the youth’s heart beat as he looked at Naoko-sensei’s complexion becoming bright red, and was extremely captivated.

After he sat down beside the bed, the teenager’s left hand played with her two beautiful jade-like feet.

Seeing the teenager’s intimate action, Naoko-sensei was both happy and shy, and could only shiver as she held his neck with her arm, letting him do what he wants.

“Naoko, your feet are beautiful, I love the way you wear sandals, really lovely. However, it would be best if you don’t wear miniskirt on the streets. Otherwise, those pervert would look at you, and I’ll feel jealous.” The youth said in her ear.

“Um, later I’ll only put it on for you to look.” Naoko-sensei blushes as she smiled bashfully, it was the first time she saw him

with this kind of expression.

Chapter 102 - Unlucky

At the decorated ceremony hall, there was a big flower wall behind the altar, and in the middle of the altar, a picture of an old man with eyes shining brightly was displayed. Unaware that this kind of picture would be used after he passed away. A dark-colored coffin was also placed not far away from the altar.

On both sides of the hall, there was a monk chanting.

People stood inside the hall, as they burn joss sticks in front of the altar in an orderly manner, paying respect to the deceased remains after his death.

It was now Masashi's family's turn to go, the first to go was Rumiko who very respectfully burned an incense and bowed in front of the coffin before leaving. Kazumi had an indifferent expression, even after burning an incense, then turned around and without looking back got out of the way.

It was now Masashi's turn, during which he had been smiling bitterly in his heart. To be really unlucky enough, in less than two months, he was already attending another funeral for the third time.

After burning an incense, they looked at the strange yet impressive photo. Rumiko's so-called family elder that she couldn't forget, she remembered him saying: don't bother to see me out.

Not long after returning to their spot and sat down, a sudden small uproar resounded in the hall.

The source of the unrest was because of a woman, a very beautiful woman.

“That woman really is shameless, even daring to come here.”

“I heard that Uncle Totaro left her a lot of property in his will. This time, she finally got her wish.”

“What? She’s just a mistress, my uncle actually gave her property? He really was old and confused.”

“I heard that she has other men out there. What a slut.”

People whispered curses of the woman, and in the eyes of men she was hot, a more than 30 years old sexy woman that they haven’t heard before, the woman went to the front of the altar, and then stared at the coffin of the elder for a long time.

Although she wore a simple plain black skirt that goes up to her knee, a coat, and an ordinary white shirt, which couldn’t cover up every portion of her graceful, sexy stature, made many men unable to bear but fiercely swallow their own saliva.

Coupled with her mistress status, and unknown identity, many men still had the idea of stealing the woman. But seeing the family member of the dead, they felt a little awkward.

After gazing at the coffin for several minutes, that woman lowered her head and calmly left the mourning hall.

Along with her departure, the mourning hall gradually became tranquil, only those men who cover her beauty had a kind of regret as they drooled signifying their desire for her.

After the funeral ended, Gennai Totaro's family was holding his picture, and then left towards the crematory along with the picture and the coffin.

Along with their departures, other people present also slowly diverged.

"Aunt, do you want to go back?" Rumiko's niece that was a university student came over and asked.

"Yes, Ryoko," Rumiko said.

"Don't go back so quickly, hang out with us." Kurata Ryoko said.

"No, you young people go hang out, I want to go home and rest," Rumiko said with a smile.

"Since you don't want to go, then let cousin Masashi accompany us, I haven't seen cousin Masashi for a very long time, so I would like to hang out with him."

This kind of thing, Masashi accompanying them is good, “go somewhere just don’t hang out too late.” Rumiko turned around and looked at him.

“Kazumi you go too.” Masashi helplessly took off his black suit and handed it over to Rumiko.

After glancing at Ryoko, Kazumi shook her head and said: “Rumi may be afraid to be home alone, so I’ll go back and accompany her.”

“Well, if something happens, then give me a call,” Masashi said.

“Auntie, you don’t have to make dinner for Masashi, we’ll eat outside.” Kurata Ryoko nearby interjected and added a line.

“Come on, cousin Masashi.” After they left behind Rumiko, Kurata Ryoko smiled at Masashi and said.

“If you can, please call me by my name only,” Masashi said dismissively.

The most annoying part in reincarnating into a kid’s body was to act like other people’s grandson.

“Oh Masashi, you’ve changed a lot, if not for Aunt introducing you, I almost wouldn’t have recognized you.” Kurata Ryoko was

still not able to connect the teenager with the previous Hirota Masashi together.

“I don’t see any difference. He’s just taller than before.” Masashi’s current older cousin Nishino Nagason said. He didn’t understand, why Kurata Ryoko must call this fellow.

“Cousin Kurata, where are we going now?” Nishino Nagason’s younger brother Nishino Choshi asked Kurata Ryoko.

“I want to go to Harajuku, Hiromi, where do you want to go?”

“I actually, haven’t been in Harajuku for a long time, so I also want to have a look there. But before going, I want to go home and change first.” Masashi’s younger female cousin Yasukawa Hiromi said.

“Well, whoever want to go home and change can go, but must come at a table in Café de Flore before 2:00, we won’t wait for anyone that comes late,” Kurata said with a leader-like tone.

“Café de Flore? I heard that place is very expensive, before reaching to an agreement, I have to tell you that my allowance is running out this month, but if someone will pay, then that’s a different story.” Yasukawa Hiromi said with a grin.

“Sly little rascal, that’s the most I can treat you.” Kurata Ryoko said ill-humoredly.

“Then thank you.” Yasukawa Hiromi somewhat proudly said.

“The old rules, if you have a girlfriend or boyfriend you can also come and bring them. The more people, the livelier it is.” Kurata Ryoko added.

“This is what you said, I just recently met a nice guy. Don’t snatch him from me when I bring him.” Yasukawa Hiromi blinked as she said to her elder sister.

“Yawn, my eyes might not like what you like. I’ve been waiting since university to find out what kind of man you have.” Kurata Ryoko said with a shrug.

“To be so arrogant, in a while bring your boyfriend so we can have a look.” Yasukawa Hiromi a little unconvinced said.

Kurata Ryoko’s face turned red, and argued back: “Do you see me as a kind of immoral girl? A lot of boys chase me, but it’s only natural for me to slowly choose a capable man. What’s the rush, in any case, I get a capable man that’s first rate.”

Yasukawa Hiromi revealed a disdainful smile, while the two Nishino brothers also smile. Seeing this made Kurata Ryoko angry.

“Masashi, don’t you want to go back and change clothes?” After the three left, Kurata Ryoko looked at Masashi and said.

“Don’t need to, this should be fine,” Masashi said.

“Good, you go to the cafe first, wait for us there, I’ll quickly catch up.” With that, she reached out for a taxi and left.

Truly have enough of being bored, Masashi yawned and also called out for a taxi

Chapter 103 - Encounter

“Aiko, what’s wrong, are you not feeling well, what happened to you?” Asami asked interestingly.

“I’m fine,” Aiko said with a sigh.

“Saying you’re all right, are you sure it’s not because of that fellow Gennai-san?” Asami asked.

“Ah, that guy hasn’t come to see me for several days already. Ami, do you think that he doesn’t like me?” Aiko’s eyes turned a little red.

Asami sighed in her heart, then smiled and strongly comforted her, said: “How could that be, with your looks, figure, how can any boy refuse, perhaps he’s just quite busy recently, so he didn’t come see you, don’t think about it too much.”

“But, I don’t understand him at all. Sometimes he’s very good to me, but other times he doesn’t seem to have any interest in me. I sometimes wonder if he doesn’t even like me.” Aiko said in frustration.

“You little fool, don’t say that, is there even anyone who can thoroughly understand that guy? I’ve never met anyone as unfathomable as him; it’s like he has many hidden secrets. Aiko, assuming, I mean, suppose, did it ever occur to you, that he may just be looking at you as a sister.” Asami said with half interrogating tone.

At those words, Aiko's face immediately turned pale, answered very difficulty: "Yes...is it true?"

Seeing this, Asami hugged her immediately replying back: "It's just an assumption, it's not real. Sorry, Aiko for scaring you. Hey, look, isn't that Gennai-san?" She suddenly said surprised.

Listening to her, Aiko immediately looked toward the line of sight of Asami, and sure enough, not far across the street were people walking, among them a sleepy teenager had his hands inside his pockets while walking slowly.

"Gennai-san!" Seeing the boy, the girl immediately rushed out towards him.

"Aiko be careful!" Asami suddenly screamed.

Just when the girl ran in the middle of the road, Asami suddenly saw a motorcycle in the middle of the road coming at high speed, quickly ramming Aiko....

At that moment, Asami felt her heart stopped. She was afraid to look at what happened next.

".....Peng!", After the hasty sound of a harsh brake, followed by a very big impact noise, as well as heavy items falling down the ground.

When Asami opened her eyes, tears started to fall, seeing an alarming brake marks on the road, and a red motorcycle not far away from the middle of the road, the bike rider fell off the red motorcycle keeping down his voice as his leg was unable to move for a while.

Aiko? Asami ran up to search traces of her friend. She had never felt such a fear before making her eyes hazy, and those few steps in her mind seemed like it was very far away.

“Kid, do you want to die? You almost died back there.” At the side of the road, the voice of a teenager full of anger was suddenly heard.

“Aiko!” When Asami saw the girl in the youth’s arms, she couldn’t help but rush towards them as she clung on her friend in tears.

Seeing the two girls huddled together crying, Masashi couldn’t help but wipe the sweat on his forehead.

“Dead child, are you blind?” The bicycle rider managed to climb up throwing away his helmet and menacingly came.

“What do you think you’re doing?” Kurata Ryoko, who saw the trouble at the side, hurriedly rushed in front of Masashi.

“Fuck off....Ah!” He still couldn’t let go of what had happened and shoved the girl aside, when all of a sudden he held the lower

part of his body, kneeling down on the ground while calling out pitifully.

Standing behind Kurata Ryoko was a teenager who had his left leg outstretched, who then went forward stepping on the motorcyclist that immediately screamed pitifully.

“Let’s go find a place to rest.” In the people’s surprised look, the teenager held the young girl who was still unceasingly shivering and walked towards the front of a restaurant.

In the restaurant, Kurata Ryoko asked curiously: “Masashi, is one of these two girls your girlfriend?”

Masashi shook his head saying: “The girl who almost got hit by the motorcycle, is the younger sister of my previous high school teacher. The other one is her schoolmate; I didn’t think that I would see them here.”

Just thinking of the girl’s attitude towards Masashi, Kurata Ryoko couldn’t help but be a bit puzzled.

After carefully fixing themselves, Asami and Ryoko came out from the bathroom inside the restaurant; everyone couldn’t help but look at the two.

Because it had occurred too suddenly, everyone didn’t notice the two’s appearance, looking again, they found out that the two turned out to be surprisingly beautiful.

Seeing the two stop at a table, it had immediately captured everyone's attention.

Seeing Aiko closely sitting with Masashi, Kurata Ryoko said: "Masashi, introduce us."

Listening to Kurata Ryoko speak, the two Nishino brothers who don't have a girlfriend yet suddenly became excited.

After briefly introducing them, Masashi turned to Aiko and whispered: "Hey, kid, I'm taking you to the hospital, okay?"

"No, I'm fine." Looking a bit pale Aiko shook her head.

Masashi then said: "If you feel your body uncomfortable, then remember to speak out. Otherwise, if you leave your internal injuries alone, it would become troublesome."

"Ah, I know." Feeling his concern, the girl was so happy, and her face became a lot better too.

Seeing the two quietly whispering, Kurata Ryoko became more doubtful.

Knowing that the two girls were a student from a very famous elite school, several boys couldn't help but sigh, the girl really is out of the ordinary, these two's figure and looks would trample

many girls. As the matter stands, not only the two Nishino brothers, even Kangchuan Hiromi also quite warmly chat with Aiko and Asami. As Kangchuan Hiromi observed, he suddenly became angry and annoyed.

Since Asami and Aiko were suddenly added, the whole atmosphere had become very subtle.

Perhaps it was because they were frightened, as the normally lively and outgoing Aiko suddenly didn't like to talk, in addition to not answering to other's question, while more often just quietly watching Masashi. Seeing her cute appearance, the two Nishino brothers were both jealous and angry.

Because it was still too early, there were only a few people in this restaurant.

After dinner and rested for a while, in order to continue to retain the two beautiful girls, the Nishino brothers suggested to go ballroom dancing.

Masashi wasn't interested in dancing and didn't want to go.

"Masashi cousin, you're such a loner. No wonder you're always being bullied in junior middle school." Nishino Nagason said with a smirk.

"What, you were bullied in junior middle school Gennai-san?" Aiko asked incredulously. There are still people that can bully this

guy?

“Aiko, you didn’t know? That guy in junior high school was almost everyday beaten up, had his money stolen, or ordered to buy breakfast. Always very miserable. Isn’t he also bullied in the high school that he’s attending now.” Nishino Choshi immediately followed up.

When Kangchuan Hiromi heard these words, he had a look of disdain as he glanced at Masashi. Just looking at the guy who saved the girl from the motorcycle, he thought that he was very powerful, but it turned out that he was only a coward.

While two Nishino brothers happily talked about the ‘glorious days’ of Masashi, Kurata Ryoko carefully watched his reaction.

And to her surprise, the teenager was still very calmly sitting on the chair, leisurely sipping his tea, his face was not the slightest angry nor ashamed, as if they were talking about another person.

This discovery made her think about her previous cousin and made her think that he was like a completely different person compared to the past, making her more curious of her cousin.

After observing at him for a period of time, she said to the teenager: “Masashi, if you don’t want to dance go there to sit. I’ll accompany you, ok?”

Masashi turned his head to ask Aiko: “Little rascal, do you want

to go, do you want to go home?”

Rarely seeing his face, Aiko certainly wanted to stay at his side for a while longer, so she said: “If you’re willing to go with me, then I’ll go.”

Masashi thought that she really wanted to go, so he told her: “all right, but you have to make a phone call to your sister, tell her you’re going home late, or else she’ll be worried. Asami you too, if you want to go, then inform your family.”

“Ah,” Aiko smiled sweetly for a moment, then pulled out her cell phone to dial. Asami also took out her cell phone from her pocket.

Seeing Masashi mature approach, Kurata Ryoko appreciated it.

Chapter 104 - Ballroom

Nishino Nagason led the several people to a large ballroom.

Under the loud echo of the music, even if you want to say a word, you have to shout. Seeing Masashi didn't seem to like the environment here, Kurata Ryoko specifically looked for a less noisy spot.

“What do guys want?” Not long after they sat down, a sexy bunny girl came over and asked.

Nishino two brothers looked at each other for a long time then Nishino Choshi said to that bunny girl: “Bring a dozen beer and some snacks, and also a bottle of liquor.”

Masashi took a look at the two men's expression and knew their intentions, he suddenly said to the bunny girl who was about to walk away: “Trouble you to take two glass of orange juice.”

Hearing Masashi ordered juice, Nishino Choshi laughed for a long time, “Does cousin Masashi only drink juice?”

Masashi watched them lightly, “The juice is for Aiko and Asami. In this place, it's better for them not to get drunk.”

Hearing Masashi's words, Nishino brothers' complexion changed. Nishino Nagason viciously stared at him.

Feeling the unfriendly aura from Nishino brothers, Kurata Ryoko immediately said to smooth things over: “We went out to dance so we come to the ballroom, how come we don’t go dancing?” With that, she pulled Nishino Nagason to stand up.

“Aiko, Asami, let’s go dancing.” Nishino Choshi said to the two girls.

“Sorry, I just want to sit down,” Aiko said dryly.

“Kid, since we’ve already in the ballroom, why don’t you go and play, if somethings happen, immediately call me,” Masashi said to Aiko.

“Yes, come on, dance. It’s fun with many people around.” Nishino Choshi thought this was the best sentence coming out of Masashi’s mouth this long day.

Thinking to herself, ‘it wouldn’t look good if I don’t go dance,’ plus the slightly encouraging look from Masashi, Aiko slowly stood up.

Once all of them walked away, Masashi opened the bottle of liquor. After he poured himself a cup, he calmly sipped as he stared at the dance floor.

A youth calmly sat in the noisy Ballroom sipping liquor. With looking into the past gaze, he was like a solitary being in the world. But the youth enjoyed this everyone is drunk I am sober kind of

feeling.

“Young man, can you buy me a drink?” Unfortunately, not long after, a cutesy voice destroyed the youth’s reverie.

Turned his head to look at the source of that voice, the somewhat pretty woman, the youth said dismissively: “Sorry, I’m with other people.”

The woman wanted to say a word, but when she saw the youth’s eyes, the words stuck in her throat.

After that, she tactfully walked away. The youth withdrew his eyes and continued to drink the liquor.

“Gennai, what’s with that woman?” Not long after the woman left, Aiko hurriedly ran back. Followed behind her Asami and the Nishino brothers.

Just saw a pretty woman arrived at his side, Aiko’s heart immediately anxious and almost jumped out.

“Nothing, just passing through. Why back so soon?” Masashi put the glass down and asked.

“Humph, I’m afraid if I don’t come back, you will be taken away by those vixens.” Aiko frowned and said.

“Don’t worry, a vixen only likes a handsome guy, they would never take a glance at me.” Masashi self-deprecatingly said.

“In any case, I don’t care, tonight I want to see you.” Aiko pouted her mouth and sat beside him.

Masashi silently smiled and continued to raise his glass to drink.

Seeing Aiko tightly clung to him, Nishino brother can only look at Masashi with resentment.

Soon, everyone came back. Everybody sipped their beer while talking about amusing thing from their school. Because Kurata Ryoko was the only university student on the scene, she has the most interesting and funny story to talk about, in the end, everyone listened to her with great interest.

“You guys look, that’s the woman from the funeral.” When people were happily chatting Kangchuan Hiromi, all of a sudden said a sentence.

“Which woman?” Her boyfriend asked somewhat confused.

At this time, the five people who attended the funeral already knew the said woman. The mistress of the deceased man Gennai Totaro.

She was drinking liquor in the dark corner. Beside her sat two men approximately thirty years of age. They were constantly

pouring liquor and talking to her as if they were old acquaintances.

“That woman is really a **, today attended her lover’s funeral, but now already ganged up with other men.” Kangchuan Hiromi sneered.

“Never thought to see her here, looks like she was about to drunk.” Kurata Ryoko said.

“Don’t mind her, we rarely come out to play, I don’t want to feel disappointed.” Kangchuan Hiromi poured a glass of beer and said.

Suddenly, Kurata Ryoko saw Masashi stood up.

“Masashi, where do you want to go, the bathroom?” Kurata Ryoko asked.

Masashi didn’t answer her question, but lightly said something, “Someone would wear a funeral dress to seduce men in the Ballroom?” Then, under the crowd puzzled eyes, he went to the location of that woman.

“What do you want?” Suddenly being approach by a student, one of the men looked up and asked.

“This woman is my Aunt, I’ve come to take her home.”

“What a joke, you think we’ll believe your nonsense? This

woman is a friend of ours, I'm not going to let you take her away." Another man said with a sneer.

"So you guys are friends right, good, then do you know what's her name? If you say the words, I'll immediately leave." Masashi languidly said.

The two men suddenly speechless, the man became angry out of shame, stood up and loudly said: "Boy, this has nothing to do with you, quickly get the hell out of here."

The other man saw this, immediately stood up, ready to make the move.

"What to do, it looks like they want to hit Masashi, we'll have to go there immediately." Kurata Ryoko stood and said.

"I....,not our problem, he brought this to himself." Seeing the tall stature of the two men, Nishino Nagason sheepishly said.

"But after all, he is our cousin." Kurata Ryoko glared at him and looked at the others.

But to her disappointment, Nishino Choshi, Kangchuan Hiromi, and her boyfriend showed the same timid look.

"A group of waste." Kurata Ryoko swore in her heart and then rushed toward Masashi.

When she has just taken a step, she suddenly discovered two more people by her side. Unexpectedly, they were Aiko and Asami the two girls.

Suddenly she felt very touched, but no time to think continued to run toward Masashi.

But before she arrived at her destination, she suddenly heard the two men respective muffled sound falling on the chair, unable to move, and then they saw Masashi held that woman up.

‘What just happened?’ Kurata Ryoko completely confused about the situation.

But the two girls beside her knew the two men were beaten by Masashi.

“Oh, you’re here? Just in time, help me hold her, but be careful she throws up on you.” Masashi saw the three people came running, dryly said.

Chapter 105 - Mistress

“Now what do we do?” Looking at the drunk woman who was in a complete mess, Kurata Ryoko asked Masashi.

“Do you know where her family is?” Masashi asked.

Kurata Ryoko shook her head.

“Then I’ll send her to a nearby hotel to let her rest for the night. You go get a cab.”

“Okay.” Kurata Ryoko immediately went to the roadside to get a cab.

Placing this beautiful woman on the hotel bed, Masashi said to Kurata Ryoko: “It’s all right now, Kurata cousin, you go home quickly. I’ll bring both Aiko and Asami home.”

“What do we do to her?” Kurata Ryoko pointed at the woman on the bed and said.

Masashi thought for a moment, said: “I can come and have a look at her tomorrow morning. Let’s go.”

In the cab, Aiko pulled his clothes and asked suddenly: “Gennai-san, did you save her just because she’s pretty?”

Masashi smiled and said: “This one is just a little interested.”

Hearing his answer, Aiko suddenly became frantic, “I said, how can you be so kind to save someone else’s mistress, so you really do have a plan.”

“It’s because she was my elder’s mistress, that I have a little feeling for her. Moreover, looking at such a beautiful woman getting drunk to have a 3p, is always not a comfortable thing.” Masashi said slovenly.

Actually, he left out the most important reason he saved her. At that time, he could see that the woman was drowning herself with liquor to forget her sorrow. Because of this, he went out to help her.

He looked like he wasn’t even a little serious, seeing this, Aiko got angry and gritted her teeth. Asami, on the other hand, looked at him with a strange expression.

After sending back Asami home, Masashi continued to send Aiko back to her apartment.

When Aiko quietly opened the door with her key, she suddenly saw the light in the hall lit up.

“Is that you Aiko?” Wearing a white silk nightgown, Naoko-sensei walked over from the sofa.

“Sister, were you waiting for me?” Aiko walked over and held her hand tenderly.

“Later, don’t play until late at night, if Father knows that you came back home late, he’ll certainly ask you to go home immediately.” Naoko-sensei frowned and said.

“I know, sister you’re quite a nag.” Aiko held her hand acting like a spoiled brat.

“Really don’t know what to do with you. Ah, Lei....Masashi why are you here?” Naoko-sensei arrived at the door and saw the smiling youth.

“Oh, sorry, forgot you were here.” Aiko stuck out her tongue at Masashi.

Naoko-sensei had a very complex look when she saw him, looking at her own appearance she was hesitant to speak up.

“This afternoon I went out with a few relatives, and bumping into Aiko with Asami. Afterwards, my relatives wanted to go to the ballroom, but Aiko said she also wanted to go, so I accompanied her. And just came back.” Knowing what she was thinking, the youth explained at a moderate pace.

Hearing his explanation, Naoko-sensei finally relaxed.

“Aiko, it’s not very late, you go take a bath quickly. You still have

a class tomorrow.” Naoko-sensei turned her head to her own younger sister and said.

“Ah, Gennai-san, do you want to sit down and have a cup of tea before you go?” Aiko wanted him to stay for a while.

Glancing at Naoko-sensei, the youth nodded.

Aiko was very glad and then went to get a change of clothes.

After Aiko got into the bathroom, the youth looked at the slightly cramped Naoko-sensei, and then suddenly slapped her thigh.

Naoko-sensei’s face immediately turned red, and after a while, she lowered her head as she walked towards the youth, then slowly sat on his thigh.

Tightly hugging the captivating beauty, the youth, as usual, moved his head closer towards her white jade-like neck gently smelling her unique fragrance. Maybe because she had just finished taking a bath, she had a faint scent of shampoo, very tempting.

The youth appreciatively grasped her fine pair jade-like foot, and whispered into her ear: “Tomorrow afternoon wait for me, I’ll show you a place.”

“Ah.” Naoko-sensei blushed while she cried out softly.

She had an obedient and shy look, making the youth feel like his self-control constantly disappearing.

Lifting her head up with his right hand, the youth made an effort to kiss.....

“Elder sister, where’s Gennai-san?” Aiko who walked out of the bath while wiping her hair and asked.

“He just left.”

“What, that hateful guy, I obviously told him to wait.” Aiko unhappily complained.

“What’s wrong, do you have some matter to ask him?”

“No. Sister, I tell you, today..., was all right. Well, sister, why is your face so red, are you uncomfortable?” Aiko asked with concern.

“I....fine, it’s just a bit hot in here.” Naoko-sensei didn’t dare look at her sister’s eyes.

“It’s all right then, I’ll go back to my room. Good night.”

“Good night.”

After watching Aiko go back to her room, Naoko-sensei touched her lips thoughtfully, making her heart beat faster and faster.

—

When the sun from outside shone onto the half-open window onto her face, Tanitoshi Akiko woke up, and for a time, she felt a splitting headache.

It was dusk when she drunk outside, so she quickly knew that she was in a room at a hotel. After searching, she finally totteringly entered the bathroom.

After washing her face, she looked at the mirror and saw a pale thin woman, Tanitoshi Akiko smiled bitterly.

Suddenly, she heard the sound of a door opening from outside.

Surprised for a moment, she immediately went out to see who it was.

Unexpectedly, it wasn't a waiter, but a high school student wearing a school uniform.

“Who are you?” Tanitoshi Akiko warily asked him.

“Gennai Totaro's relative.” The teenager simply replied.

Hearing that name, Tanitoshi Akiko's eyes darkened.

"Were you the one who brought me here?" She looked at the young man and asked.

"You can say that." The youth walked towards the sofa and sat down.

"Why did you help me? You should know that I am Totaro's mistress. The Gennai family can't wait for me to die, as I've made them not only lose their face, but Totaro also left a lot of heritage to me an outsider. I know, you want me to have sex, right? Don't men want my body?" Tanitoshi Akiko nervously laughed.

"You're the most self-righteous woman I've ever seen. If I want to play with you, I could have easily have done it last night. Would I need to wait until now?" Masashi watched her lazily.

"What do you actually want?" Tanitoshi Akiko didn't like that kind of look that the youth was making in her eyes.

"Nothing, I just wanted to see that you didn't die. However, you seem to be in good spirit, since there's nothing else." Contrary to her expectation, the youth actually got up and walked.

"Hey, you wait?" Tanitoshi Akiko immediately called out to him.

“What, you want to have sex with me?” The youth looked back at her.

Seeing the youth’s playful eyes, Tanitoshi Akiko immediately flared up in anger.

“Go to hell! I just wanted to pay back the money for this hotel.” She really wanted to slap him in the face.

“Okay, but I don’t accept credit card.” Looking for a long time, she only found small changes inside her handbag, while the youth leisurely said.

“I’ll have to go to the bank to pay you.” Tanitoshi Akiko said with embarrassment.

“I’m sorry, I don’t like people like you who owes me.” With that, the youth was too lazy to speak to her, so he instead walked out of the room.

“Bastard!” Thinking of the youth’s pretentious look of generosity, Tanitoshi Akiko was mad.

—

“Aiko, you seem like in a good mood today, what happened?” In Gym class, Ryoko asked.

“No, I’m the same as every day,” Aiko said.

“No, a few days before, you had a preoccupied look. I don’t believe you, there must be something that happened.” Ryoko steadfastly pursued further.

“Really nothing, quickly prepare, it’s our turn to run.”

“Well, just you wait I’ll find you afterwards.” Looking at the physical education teacher, Ryoko pretended to prepare.

Once Ryoko ran out, Aiko whispered to Asami: “Ami, do I really look strange?”

Asami stared at her for a moment and said: “Just a bit different, your smile looks a little silly.” Saying that she couldn’t help but laugh.

“Hate you, someone really told you.” If it weren’t for the fact that she was afraid of getting other people’s attention, Aiko would have already dealt with her.

“Needless to say, it should be because of that Gennai fellow.”

“How do you know?” Aiko looked at her.

“Come on, the old Aiko don’t get so moody because of a boy,” Asami said a bit helplessly.

“Ami, I think Gennai-san likes me. Otherwise, why would he risk his life to save me yesterday?” Aiko gently smiled.

Looking at the young girl falling into her train of thought, Asami didn't know what to say. Her only hope now was that the youth would gradually be attracted to the girl and end up to really like her.

—

Thinking that they were going to drive her own car, after going out of the apartment, the youth actually parked a new black BMW at the front of the door.

“Lei, who's car is this?” Naoko-sensei looked at him quizzically.

“Wait, you'll find out later, get in the car.” The youth smiled and said.

Naoko-sensei didn't ask and quietly sat inside.

Once she was inside the car, the youth went around the other side of the car, opening the door to the driver's seat and sat inside.

“Lei, let me drive, ok?” Looking at the youth who was in the driver's seat, Naoko-sensei suddenly said.

“Do you think I don’t have a driver’s license like last time? I already took a driving test.” The youth said snappily.

Remembering that night, a year ago, Naoko-sensei covered her mouth and chuckled.

Such a good memory, perhaps from the beginning of that night, I’ve already unknowingly liked this boy.

Thinking of that, Naoko-sensei’s heart infinitely beat, as she gently laid her head onto his shoulder.

“Hey, you were also a high school teacher, don’t you know you need to wear the seat belt?” The youth started the car and said.

“Lei, can you help me?” Naoko-sensei said softly.

Hearing this girl who rarely acted like a spoiled brat, the youth couldn’t bear it as his heart beat faster.

Half an hour later, the beautiful car stopped at a relatively quiet community in Shinagawa.

When Naoko-sensei thought that they were getting off, Masashi actually pulled his car behind the garden of the foreign-style villa where the garage was.

“Lei, who are you taking me to see?” Naoko-sensei, somewhat

curiously looked at the two-storey foreign-style house.

“How can you react in the same way as my mother? Go inside, you’ll know.” The youth said while pulling out a key opening the front door of the villa.

After looking at all the rooms inside the villa, Naoko-sensei sat on a sofa inside the hall puzzlingly look at the youth.

“Lei, I don’t understand why you brought me here.”

Masashi laid his head on the back of a chair and looked at her, smiled, said: “Isn’t it clear? I think you should be able to guess a little, I’m not sure if you’ve guessed it, but the house including the car outside, I bought it.”

“Is what you’re saying true?” Naoko-sensei revealed a surprised expression.

“Good, much more calm than my mom. Next, you should ask me, where the money came from, right?”

Naoko-sensei looked at him without blinking.

She had the same interpretation as Rumiko, so Masashi showed her the thick secured transaction of the place, and sat next to her explaining slowly.

Naoko-sensei didn't know, that this stack of records, a few of the listed companies were made successful by the youth in a chaotic way.

“How much does this house cost?” After a long time, the transaction records only made Naoko-sensei confused.

“Plus tax, the total is ¥140,000,000.” The youth simply answered.

Naoko-sensei didn't ask the price of the car. This amount of money to her family wasn't too much, but seeing that he hadn't even reached the age of 18, moreover, he was also a youth who didn't have a background. To build up several million, and unexpectedly increasing it by 40 times in such a short amount of time, was really incredible. However, if it was him, she actually believed that he could do it because he was out of the ordinary.

“Lei, are you moving out to live her?” After a short silence, Naoko-sensei looked up and asked.

Masashi shook his head, suddenly stood up and walked to the couch hugging her around the waist, then went towards the glass-floored hall.

“Didn't you say last time? When I come back at home, you'll cook for me and serve me well.

So, this house, I've bought for you. Later if you have free time, you can wait for me to come back here, cook for me and also serve

me here. You say, Ok?”

The youth said as Naoko-sensei burrowed herself straight to his arms bursting into tears.

After a long time, she slowly calmed down, then the youth said in her ear: “Maybe you hadn’t noticed, but the place I lead is the place that I like the most inside the house.”

When Naoko-sensei who was being hugged by the youth saw the king-sized bed in the master bedroom, her face turned bright red, quickly burying her head deep in the youth arm unwilling to look up.

Chapter 106 - Skipping Class

As if after a long time, the two's lip separated, the youth buried his head on the left side of her pillow.

The smell of her hair exudes a faint scent of shampoo, the youth then gently said in her ear: "Naoko, do you know how attractive you are? Really want to eat you right now."

"Lei..." Hearing the youth, Naoko-sensei, who was lying beneath him became even more excited, her body couldn't help but sway from side to side, and at the same time both her hands grasped the back of the youth.

"Fool, don't move heedlessly. I won't be able to bear it." The youth's breathe was a little rapid, as he said something in her ear.

Feeling the youth's strong desires, Naoko-sensei was bash and happy, suddenly making her whole body stiff.

"I have a credit card in my left pocket, help me take it out." After a while, the youth said suddenly.

Naoko-sensei moved her right hand down into his hip pocket from his back, and at the same time felt that she had touched a card.

"This credit card is for you. I've saved some money in it." Before she could speak, the youth opened his mouth first.

“Lei, you don’t need to do such a thing, I am not short on money,” Naoko-sensei said.

“I know your family is rich, but now you’re my woman, so of course you have to use my money.” The youth said overbearingly.

Hearing the words ‘You’re my woman,’ Naoko-sensei suddenly burst into tears. Nearly using up all her strength to embrace him, wishing that her whole body dissolves into the youth’s body.

Feeling that astonishing wonderful curve, the youth lifted her skirt up ready to heat things up, but taking her heart into account, he didn’t dare to execute the captured offender, and instead had to hug her while their chest rubbed in order to oppress her sex appeal, and unceasingly cool down.

But by doing so, it was no different than adding fuel to the fire, at that moment Naoko-sensei became as hot as fire, skin like a rosy color, eyes tightly close, she couldn’t help but pant unceasingly.

In these circumstances, seeing her exposed completely her seductive body, his bone below was filled with ecstasy, the youth felt like he was unable to back down.

Suddenly, as if cracking a joke at the same time, his cell phone rang.

Awakened by the phone, Naoko-sensei shuddered, immediately

not daring to move.

The youth couldn't tell if it was a good thing or a bad thing, smiling bitterly, he pulled out the cell phone that spoiled the fun from his pocket. Looking at the number demonstrated on it, he knew it was from Kazumi.

“Hey, Kazumi?”

“I'm sorry, today I went to my friend's house to play, so I lost track of time. What time is it?”

“Already after school. Yes, you don't have to make my meal, I'll eat here with my friend.”

“I know; I'll be back soon.”

“You didn't know, I just met up with my friend. Well, all right, I'm hanging up.”

Fearful that she would ask again, the youth hurriedly ended the phone call.

Looking at Naoko-sensei, he found that she was secretly looking at him. Seeing the youth looking at her, she quickly closed her eyes, blushing as red as blood at the same time.

Looking at her rosy color skin as well as her pretty face with a

thick trace of spring that hasn't yet disappeared, the youth didn't dare to light her up again.

After sitting up, the youth gently hugged her bosom as he pulls her closer.

“Wait a minute I'll make a phone call to your sister, say you have something to do, so you'll be back later tonight, and she'll just call for a takeout. Stay her tonight and I'll cook. Ok?” The youth pressed his face on her hair and said.

“Um.” Naoko-sensei docilely complied.

—

“Kazumi, there's less than a month till the test, how's your preparation going?” Having lunch on the roof, Rumi suddenly asked while Kazumi took out the lunch box.

Kazumi felt it was strange, as Rumi had never asked her about tests before. And she should know that her result is always if not first second in the school, so she doesn't need to be worried for her. Just as she was about to reply, she suddenly saw Rumi unintentionally looking down at her lunch after she had looked at Masashi, she immediately revealed a knowing smile.

“Shouldn’t be an issue. Because I go to school and attend classes on time every day, and never skip class, nor leave early, so in the eyes of teacher I’m a good student.”

“This way, I can be rest assured.” Rumi coughed loudly.

“You don’t need to be worried about me, but what you should be worried about is a person who frequently skips class. If I remember correctly, that someone made a bet with you. I think I still remember the content of the bet at that time, probably someone said that if he lost, he must listen to you and so on. Right, brother, you still remember what that person said, right?” Kazumi turned her head to ask Masashi.

“You little rascals don’t sing a duet, that bet I still remember. See what you’ve done, teaching Rumi bad things.” Masashi stared at his own younger sister with one eye.

“What, I’m just kindly reminding you about it. But I’m a little surprised, why did you skip class so much, haven’t your teachers bother you about it?”

“I don’t know, maybe it’s second nature to them now. They think that I’m in class on time in every class, and they just thought I had a fever.” Masashi continued to lower his head to eat his lunch.

Actually he knew the reason why. Since that time with Congressman Ikeda kneeling down and apologize to Masashi in front of the principal, the principal didn’t dare to look trouble for

him. It seems like he had also explained it to his teachers.

“Senior, do you really have no issue? Even at home I still don’t see you read.” Rumi was a little worried as she pulled his arm.

“What hasn’t read, what’s the things piled on my bed?”

“I’m talking about textbooks.” Rumi was very dissatisfied with his careless attitude.

“Little rascal loves to worry, wait and see how your senior force you and Kazumi down the honour role.”

Hearing this Kazumi made a face.

Rumi believed he couldn’t do it, and was planning to one day find a time to go to the temple and pray, hoping he can pass.

After lunch, after the two girls went back to their classroom, Masashi turned and walked to the front of the school.

“This guy never changes.” From the window of the classroom, looking out of the window Kazumi somewhat reluctantly sighed.

Because Naoko-sensei sometimes need to help her schoolmate write some manuscript in the magazine company she works in, he was afraid that he would disturb her, which is why they don’t meet daily. And today was such days.

When he was considering where to go, suddenly, a taxi opened to his side.

“Masashi, it really is you. I thought it was a wrong person.” Walking out of the car a young girl wearing a modern clothes came out.

“Who are you?” Masashi thought that she looked a little familiar.

“Fool, I am Kurata Ryoko, your cousin.” She was a little angry, lifting her hand, she knocked his head.

Lei Yin was always the one that knocks people on the head, and have never been struck before, his so-called cousin was no exception.

“Sorry, on that day you tied your hair, and didn’t put any make-up on, so I didn’t recognize you for a while.” Masashi fender her off and said gently.

“Well, do I look attractive putting this on?” Listening to him, Kurata Ryoko immediately forgot the matter, and a little happily demonstrated her dress.

“Yes, if the skirt were a bit short, it would have been a problem, as it had nowhere to go up.” Masashi commented while nodding.

“Brat, dare to laugh at me, see how I’ll deal with you.” Hearing this Kurata Ryoko suddenly went crazy.

“Hey, your friend has been impatiently waiting for you. Well, what matter do you look for me?” Because she bravely stepped forward wanting to help Masashi that night, he had regarded his cousin as a rare individual with a sense of justice, for this he appreciated her.

“There’s nothing special as to why I looked for you, but we just say you on the side road thinking that person looks very much like you, therefore we took a look, we didn’t think that it really was you.” Kurata Ryoko looked like she was doing a tongue twister.

“Clearly your correct, since the diagnosis is unmistakable, you can go now.” Masashi said. He discovered that this fellow was also very interesting.

“Brat, I must teach you today, follow me quickly.” Kurata Ryoko said pulling him into the taxi.

“Hey, I’m very busy, have no free time to fool around with you.” Masashi called out.

“Who are you trying to deceive, looking at your appearance, your definitely skipping class to come out and play, since you have such a free time, then go accompany me.” Kurata Ryoko closed the taxi’s door rashly.

Masashi had no choice but to sit obediently.

At this time, in the car he saw two girls with Kurata Ryoko who was the same age as her, one sitting next to the driver's seat, the other was sitting next to him. He was currently looking at the female student sitting next to him.

The two girls were quite attractive, one has a composed long hair, the other had hair's length that only goes up to her ears, it was very refreshing.

Among the girls, he found that there's a very strange phenomenon, generally girls would always be together with friends that have looks or appearance that are on the same level as them.

Kurata Ryoko patted his shoulder and said, "Well, aren't my two friends very attractive?"

Sitting next to Masashi, the girl with the hair that only goes up to her ear said: "Ryoko, this is..."

"I'll introduce you, he's my younger cousin, Gennai Masashi, his a high-school student this year.

Masashi, This is Minoru Tachibana, the other one is Yamaguchi Tomoko, they're my college classmates." Kurata Ryoko introduced them one by one.

“Hello.” Masashi greeted them.

“Hello.” The two girls also very politely greeted him.

“Don’t be polite with him, this fellow is actually very amusing.” Kurata Ryoko said carelessly.

“Well, where are you trying to take me to?” Masashi looked outside the window.

Tomoko’s sister has been hospitalized, we’re visiting her now.” Kurata Ryoko said.

Masashi suddenly had the impulse of wanting to roll his eyes, “Are you crazy, you allow a stranger who had never seen the person before? Do you think this is a blind date?”

Pfft, nice try, but Tomoko’s sister is very attractive, so it would be strange if she takes a liking for you.” Kurata Ryoko said in disdain.

“I give up, but it’s just a metaphor. In short I want to get off.” Masashi felt a little powerless.

“No.” Kurata Ryoko declined.

Masashi asked Tachibana Minoru who was sitting next to him: “Is this fellow usually like this?”

The short haired girl nodded, covering her mouth as she laughed.

Chapter 107 - Ward

“Hey, what happened to that woman?” Kurata Ryoko asked.

“That woman you refer to is someone’s mistress?” Masashi asked.

“Nonsense, who else but her.”

“What else can happen, I saw her spirit is quite good in the morning, so I left.” Masashi casually said.

“She didn’t say anything to you?” Kurata Ryoko continued to ask.

“She did, she wanted to pay me back the hotel money, but only had her credit card with her at that time and no cash, so she failed.”

“And that’s it?”

“What else do you want?”

“Honestly, I think that woman is actually quite pitiful.”

“Pitiful? Many people are more pitiful than her. How many young women like her have to work nine to five following their boss’ order and receiving their anger every day, and then go home

to serve her husband and take care of their children. People are like that, when you don't need to work for a living, they will worry about many specious problems." Masashi said disapprovingly.

"You seem to hate her appearance, don't tell me it's because she lost Gennai family's face." Kurata Ryoko looked at him strangely.

"It's not hate, just a bit dismissive toward a woman with such a good condition like her to wallow in the degenerate, that's all. How many women who lose their weight, facelift, breast augmentation but unable to achieve even half of her look?

However, it's also hard to say, after all, everyone chooses different road. Take those golddiggers for example, some women addicted to love, some women want to be an accomplished woman. Similarly, there's nothing wrong with women who love money more than other things."

"I find your thoughts a bit contradictory." Kurata Ryoko said thoughtfully.

"I also find you're quite wordy, keep asking all the time. By the way, how long we're going to have to sit here?" Masashi didn't want to talk about this topic, steered the other way.

"It's coming. When we arrive at the hospital, do not talk nonsense. I'm afraid you guy will scare people." Kurata Ryoko was in the mood to talk but actually stopped short by him, became a bit unhappy.

“Are you afraid I will suddenly propose your classmate’s younger sister to marry me?” Masashi’s eyes were full of playful banter.

“Can you guy less annoy me?” Kurata Ryoko was unbearably angry, squeezed his neck with her hands.

The two classmates next to her smilingly looked at them.

After 15 minutes, the taxi stopped in front of a large Hospital.

Looking at the big sign in front of the Hospital: Aomori General Hospital, Masashi smiled, “Never thought it’s actually this Hospital.”

“What’s wrong?” In their way to the Hospital, Yamaguchi Tomoko found that the boy is actually very easy to get along with. Seeing him like this, she was a bit puzzled and asked.

“It’s nothing.” The youth looked at the Hospital building and said thoughtfully.

Two years ago, Lei Yin rebirthed into his present body in this Hospital. And now to see it again, the heart could not help but sigh.

Yamaguchi Tomoko took them to a very nice private room on the second floor with a very good lighting.

On the white bed, lay a slightly pale young girl who at the moment leaning against a pillow reading a book.

The girl saw Yamaguchi Tomoko, immediately smiled very bright, “Sister, you came.”

“Masako, do you feel better today?” Yamaguchi Tomoko went to her bed and asked with care.

“I am fine sister, you don’t worry too much about it.” The young girl said.

“That’s good, yesterday really scared me to death.” Yamaguchi Tomoko told her she had brought a flower in a vase on the table.

“Ahem, excuse me, can you two sisters not regard us as transparent person?” Kurata Ryoko dryly coughed and said.

“Ah, so sister Ryoko also came with sister Minoru, really wonderful.” Yamaguchi Masako very happily said.

“You d*mn little rascal, you really treated us like air.” Kurata Ryoko went to her bed and said with a fierce look.

Yamaguchi Masako laughed, “People just didn’t notice. I was thinking, are sister Ryoko and sister Minoru going to visit me today? Don’t think you really came.” She said while holding Kurata Ryoko’s hand, unceasingly acting like a spoiled brat.

Kurata Ryoko shook her short hair several times, suddenly relented down. Minoru Tachibana smiled and brought the fruit to her table.

“Sister Ryoko, you guys don’t have classes today?” Masako looked at Kurata Ryoko and said.

“Heard from you sister you suddenly fainted and hospitalized, where were our mood to attend the class. But don’t you worry, today’s lesson is optional and not very important. Do you want to eat an apple?” Kurata Ryoko from the fruit basket took out an Apple said.

“Em, thank you sister Ryoko.”

“Fool, why being polite to me.” Kurata Ryoko said while picking up a fruit knife to peel the Apple.

Initially a quiet hospital room, because of the three girls it suddenly became lively. Coupled with Kurata Ryoko’s somewhat boisterous character, Yamaguchi Masako has been laughing non-stop.

“Ryoko, where’s your cousin?” After a while, her friend Yamaguchi finally found their group seemed minus a person.

“Oh, right, that guy didn’t come in? Where did he go?” Kurata Ryoko suddenly stood up.

“He’s your cousin, and you have the nerve to ask us.” Tachibana Minoru snappily said.

“What, didn’t you also just found out he’s not here?” Kurata Ryoko was unconvinced and said.

“Stop it, quickly go look for him, he should be around here.” The relatively calm Yamaguchi Tomoko said.

“What a troublesome fellow, I wouldn’t ask him to come if I knew he’d be like this.” Kurata Ryoko complained as she walked out of the room.

Clearly it was she who pulled someone else here, but now spoke such words the two girls felt angry and funny at the same time.

“Sister, is there someone else?” Yamaguchi Masako asked.

“On the road, Ryoko met her cousin, but she pulled him here hard, really suit her. But strange, when we went upstairs her cousin clearly followed behind us, how come we can’t see him now.” Yamaguchi Tomoko explained.

“It is indeed a lot like sister Ryoko’s style of doing things.” Masako covered her mouth to smile.

At this time Kurata Ryoko’s loud voice came from the outside,

“Are you crazy, you’re here to visit the sick, not to sleep here.”

“Didn’t you say you fear I’ll scare the little kids? So it’s better for me to sleep. Alas, just fell asleep, only to be wake up by you, disturbing people’s dream is a great sin you know.” The youth yawned and said.

“But you can’t just lie down to sleep on the outside chair, aren’t you ashamed?” Kurata Ryoko was furious.

“Relax, if anyone asks, I won’t say you’re my cousin.” The youth lazily said.

“That’s not the problem.” Kurata Ryoko was about to go crazy.

“You are really long-winded, I’ll just wait outside okay, let me know when you’re finished.”

“Hey, where are you going?” Kurata Ryoko asked.

“You don’t let me sleep, so I’m going to buy a newspaper to read.”

“What newspaper, quickly come with me.”

“Hey, can’t I not come in? I don’t know the other people.” The youth reasoned with her.

“If you don’t see the face, how would you know?”

Heard the dialogue of the two cousins outside, Tachibana Minoru and Yamaguchi Tomoko burst out laughing.

Finally, with a bit helpless expression the youth was pulled inside the ward by Kurata Ryoko.

Chapter 108 - Jackpot

”Masako, this is my cousin Gennai Masashi, just like you, he’s also a high school student, but has too many bad grades compared to you. Masashi, this is Yamaguchi Tomoko’s sister Masako. Didn’t I say Masako is very attractive? Fool, quickly greet her.” Kurata Ryoko said making an effort to pat his shoulder.

Like this Kurata Ryoko took care of introducing them, even showing a bit of deep attachment with each other. The youth then snappily took one look at her.

“Oh, it’s you?” Against all expectation, after seeing the youth’s appearance, Yamaguchi Masako who was sitting on the bed suddenly called out in an excited voice.

“Masako, do you know my cousin?” Seeing her surprised look, Kurata Ryoko asked surprised.

The other two girls also looked at her in confusion. On the other hand, the youth was bewildered, he couldn’t remember where he saw this girl before.

Suddenly, Yamaguchi Masako covered her mouth, as tears drop from her eyes.

“What did you do to Masako?” Seeing her suddenly shed tears, Kurata Ryoko held Masashi and asked loudly.

“I haven’t seen her before.” The youth was confused.

“Then why is Masako like this, it must be that you have done something wrong to her, quickly confess.” Kurata Ryoko didn’t believe him, and started squeezed his neck with both of her hands.

“Masako, what really happened?” After looking at Masashi’s eyes, Yamaguchi Tomoko was very concerned and took her hand to ask.

Seeing Masashi ‘tortured’ by Kurata Ryoko, Yamaguchi Masako hurriedly wiped her tears, smiled and said: “Sister, you’re mistaken, he really doesn’t know me.”

“Then why are you crying?” Kurata Ryoko was surprised for a moment, releasing her hands from Masashi’s neck.

“Nothing.” The girl stuck out her tongue and said with a smile.

“Masako, if this guy’s bullying, you say, I’ll give this guy a good lesson.” Kurata Ryoko said wanting to squeeze Masashi’s neck again, but the youth had dodged it instead.

Yamaguchi Masako didn’t answer her, and instead moved her mouth closer to her elder sister, saying something in a low voice.

After listening to her younger sister, Yamaguchi Tomoko looked at her a bit puzzled. Then, seeing her pleading eyes, she finally submitted, nodding to her.

Seeing her sister nod in agreement, Yamaguchi Masako immediately smiled very happily.

When the others were puzzled, Yamaguchi Tomoko turned towards Tachibana Minoru and Kurata Ryoko, said: “Masako suddenly want to see young girl comics, let’s go buy one for her. Ryoko, can you make your cousin stay and accompany Masako?”

“I can, but why him?” Although Kurata Ryoko was a bit impulsive, she wasn’t an idiot, and immediately understood why Tomoko was sending them away.

“Don’t ask, let’s just get out of her. Otherwise, Masako would be unhappy.” Tachibana Minoru thought it was very interesting, although she was curious, but she still pulled Kurata Ryoko and walked outside.

“If there’s something just call my cell phone.” Yamaguchi Tomoko gently touched her younger sister’s face, then look at the youth with one eye, leaving the room afterwards.

After they left, in the hospital ward, the only ones remaining was the two high school student. Because no one had made a noise, the hospital ward immediately became very peaceful and slightly awkward.

“Please, please sit down.” After a while, Yamaguchi Masako stuttered and said.

Looking at the embarrassed girl, Masashi smiled.

Masashi readily pulled a chair and sat down in front of her bed, “You’re called Masako right. Can you now tell me what happened?”

Because the youth was sitting so close, Yamaguchi Masako could clearly see his eyes, for a time, she felt her face becoming hot.

“Yes, I’m sorry, that was rude of me, I was just surprised of you.” After a while, she said a few words with great difficulty.

“To be precise, you were only surprised and nothing more.”

Hearing him speak, Yamaguchi Masako suddenly relaxed a lot.

“Do you want to eat apples?” Flustered, she took a fruit out from the fruit basket and gave it to him.

“I heard that this is probably a pear.” Masashi looked at the fruit in her hand and said.

“Sorry, I’ll immediately change it.”

“No, I don’t like to eat apples.” Masashi took the pear from her hands.

When the youth's finger accidentally touched her hand, Yamaguchi Masako's face couldn't help but be a bit red.

"Well, can you tell me now?" The youth said as he cut the fruit's skin.

Taking a deep breath, Yamaguchi Masako quietly said: "I....I know that you're the man who hit the home run on the court."

The teenager looked at her a little surprised.

"Sorry, I don't know what you're talking about." After a while, the youth casually said something, then lowered his head as he continued to cut the pear.

"I'm sure it was you, because I'm also a student from PangMu high school, and by chance, I was also in the infirmary that day." Yamaguchi Masako looked at him and said.

Listening to her talk, Masashi smiled bitterly in his heart. On that day he went to the infirmary to ask the school doctor for a mask, probably saw a girl was also there but hadn't paid attention at her appearance at the time. He didn't think that It would unexpectedly be her.

"Please don't misunderstand, I don't want to cause a ruckus. I just didn't expect to see you here, I, I'm really happy." The girl hurriedly explained.

“In fact, this isn’t a big deal, I’m just afraid of causing trouble so I don’t want to let people know about it. So, please keep it a secret for me.” The youth looked up at her again.

“I, I’ll help you keep it a secret.” Yamaguchi Masako said with a little excitement.

“Well, this is for your hush fee,” Masashi smiled, placing the pear that had been cut in her hands.

“Thank you.” Yamaguchi Masako a little helplessly received the pear. Until after biting it, she remembered that he had cut it for him to eat.

“I’m sorry, I’ll help you cut another one.”

“I’ll do it myself. Actually, you can’t even eat a hush fee, then let’s make a deal.” Masashi took out another pear from the fruit basket.

“I, can I call you by your name?” After a while, Yamaguchi Masako asked in a low voice.

“It’s up to you.”

Hearing his reply, Masako immediately smiled very brightly.

“Do you know? My small body isn’t good, so I must go to the hospital to see a doctor frequently, that’s why I particularly appreciate those who are athletic. In all the sports, my favorite is baseball, because a lot of people are passionate about baseball, sometimes as I watch players lose or win as they hug the ball and cry, I can’t help but cry with them.

In junior high school when I became the baseball manager, I later had to drop out because of my body. At that time I was very sad.

Seeing you hit two home runs that day, I was really excited.

At that time, only then did I know that you were that mysterious player. Aside from knowing that you were a student from Asakura High school as well as remembering your appearance, I knew nothing else about you, so I’ve been looking for you for a long time. I really didn’t expect to see you here, I’m really quite happy.” She said bursting into tears.

When Masashi saw her excited appearance, the youth was still unable to understand as to why the Japanese were so attached to baseball. Perhaps he was unable to understand because he was Chinese.

Although it had been thousands of years of continually switching to different nationalities and even different bodies, but from heart, he always sees himself as Chinese. This may be because before he had been hit by lightning becoming an immortal spiritual body, he had already matured. The so-called leopard changing its spot, is simply a sentence tailor-made for him.

“Wipe your tears, or they’ll think I bullied you when they come back.” Masashi handed over a sheet of paper towel.

“Thank You,” Masako whispered her thanks.

When Yamaguchi Tomoko and the others came back, the three were surprised to see that the Yamaguchi Masako was talking and laughing as she chatted with the youth.

“You....” Kurata Ryoko looked at them wanting to ask.

“Sister, did you buy me the manga?” Without waiting for her to speak, Masako hurriedly intercepted her.

“It seems like we came back too early.” The beautiful short haired Tachibana Minoru said with a smile.

Seeing her younger sister shyly lowering her head, Yamaguchi Tomoko smiled, putting a bag of mangas in front of her, “I bought back some, see if you like it.”

“Thank you, sister.” Knowing that she was helping her break through the situation, Masako said very gratefully.

“Strange fellow.” Kurata Ryoko said as she sat down.

“Hey, Masashi, wait a minute and we’ll go out for dinner. Make a

phone call to aunt and tell her that she doesn't need to make your meal." The cousin of the youth also said.

"No, I'll go home for dinner."

"No, rarely see your face, so it's settled." Kurata Ryoko found that this guy got along very comfortably, and didn't want to let him go so quickly.

"Has anyone told you that it's a bad habit to make a decision for someone else, if you don't change, then it would be difficult to marry later on."

When Masashi had finished speaking, the other three girls immediately laughed.

Kurata Ryoko didn't agree with him and said: "Go, I also despise those self-righteous smelly men who fly around those beautiful girls all day."

Tachibana Minoru said to the youth with a smile: "Masashi, you just don't see her much, in fact she is very welcomed by boys in the school. Boys prefer outgoing girls like her."

"It seems like people really are masochistic now," Masashi said with a harsh smile.

"To hell with you." Kurata Ryoko couldn't bear it anymore and gave him a whack.

The few people laughed and sat down, and after a while, Tachibana Minoru glanced at her watch, said: “It’s getting late now, we’ll come back tomorrow.

Hearing that they were leaving, Masako seemed a little lost.

“Don’t do this, we’ll come back in two days. Besides, the doctor said you can be discharged in a few days. After you’re discharged, you can come with us any time.” Yamaguchi Tomoko comforted her sister.

“Exactly, quickly smile.” Kurata Ryoko said as she pulled both sides her cheeks with her hands.

“Hateful, Ryoko sister.” Masako ridiculed as she hit her gently.

The others also smiled, as the atmosphere immediately relaxed.

“You....will you also come back to see me?” Masako’s face redden, asking the youth in a low voice.

He didn’t expect that she would suddenly ask this question, so Masashi didn’t know how to reply for a while.

“Relax, I’ll bring this fellow along next time.” Seeing his hesitant expression, Kurata Ryoko hurriedly grabbed his shoulder and said to Masako.

“Will you really come next time?” Masako looked at Masashi again and asked.

To be treated as a souvenir, the youth weakly nodded.

Masako smiled as beautiful as a rainbow after the rain.

—

Finally, they walked out. Looking at the deserted ward, Masako sighed softly.

Since she was a little bored, she took out a manga from the bag.

After reading less than ten pages, the ward door flung open.

It turned out to be Yamaguchi Tomoko and the others.

“Why did you come back sister, did you forget something?” Masako asked pleasantly surprised.

Then she found that something was wrong, the three girls didn't answer her, and just kept panting.

Suddenly, Yamaguchi Tomoko covered her mouth rushing towards the ward's toilet.

Masako clearly heard the sound of her sister vomiting inside.

"What to do now?" Kurata Ryoko was terrified to ask. Tachibana Minoru looked pale and helpless.

"What happened?" Feeling the atmosphere was quite strange, Yamaguchi Masako asked timidly.

Masashi looked at her with one eyes, bitterly smiled, and said: "Jackpot."

–Scene Before–

"Masashi, when did you meet Masako?" When the four left the hospital ward again, Kurata Ryoko couldn't wait and immediately asked.

This immediately caused Yamaguchi Tomoko and Tachibana Minoru to be interested.

“Previously, it was when their school had a school festival.” The youth simply replied. Strict, but she knew herself that he really didn’t know her.

“But why did you say in the beginning that you don’t know Masako?” Kurata Ryoko hastily examined him closely.

“This issue is a little complex, it’s better if you ask the person herself.” The youth decided to throw this question back to the instigator of his headache.

“No, you have to answer this question.” Kurata Ryoko didn’t easily let him pass.

“Oh, it seems like this hospital was occupied by a great person.” Masashi suddenly looked at the high-intensive care unit.

He interrupted the three girls, making them unconsciously look back.

At the front of the door of the intensive care unit, two armed police officers were standing.

What kind of person was in the hospital ward that would even need the police to be mobilized and protect such individual?

Seeing the three girls look at the ward curiously, Masashi revealed an unnoticeable smile.

To avoid answering a question that one doesn't want to answer, the best way was to divert the attention of the people asking the question.

At this time, a person was loaded on the hospital bed, quickly pushing it running towards them.

Lying on the bed, they saw a man with his head strapped with bandages, while his entire body was covered with the hospital bed's white bed sheet.

Next to the bed, was a doctor and a nurse running along.

"Please let us through." Seeing the two policemen standing in the hallway, one of the doctors in the back shouted.

Seeing the bed heading towards them, immediately the police instinctively stepped aside.

When the hospital bed went through the police side, without warning, the police suddenly lift the sheet that covered the head of the patient who was lying on the bed, then, a man who didn't look like a patient held a digger cutting across the policeman's neck.

No sound, the cover that the police lifted immediately turned bright red, becoming redder and redder.

With her good eyesight, Tomoko Yamaguchi could clearly see the white sheet turn red continuing to go up to the bed sheet, turning it also bright red.

At the same time, not only that 'patient', the doctor that was pushing the hospital bed, suddenly inserted a dagger on the chest of the other police. The other police couldn't believe his eyes as he looked at the dark-skinned 'doctor', then calmly fell down.

Everything happened in a short span of a few seconds, the three girls stood there dumbfounded, their mind blank.

Looking at the 'nurse' pick up a pistol from the bed, who then immediately looked at their side.

The youth immediately took the girls and ran back....

–Back to Present–

“Who were actually those people?” Yamaguchi Tomoko with a pale face, asked from inside the bathroom.

Kurata Ryoko and Tachibana Minoru's complexion wasn't very good, and now they were denying the sense of reality as if they were in a dream. They were just ordinary girls living in the metropolis of Tokyo, they weren't accustomed to seeing the corpse of police or doctors, they only occasionally see the dead's body when they join a funeral to revere and pay respect to the deceased remains, or when they accidentally see a traffic accident on the road.

Closely seeing two real people like this, being brutally killed, was something they will be unable to forget during their lifetime.

"It seems like they want to kidnap the person in one of the hospital ward." Masashi who was quiet for a moment, suddenly spoke.

"What do we do now?" Tachibana Minoru asked.

"Nothing to be done, if that person is their only target, when they succeed they'll immediately leave afterwards. So, we can only wait here until those people leave the area."

Hearing his words, the girls became calmer.

Although he said that, the youth was still worried about another situation that might happen.

"Rest assured, Masako, it's gonna be fine." Seeing her sister's

worried look, Yamaguchi Tomoko sat on her bed immediately hugging her.

Feeling the slight shiver of her sister who couldn't hide it, Masako tightly held her hand.

Minutes ticked by, Yamaguchi Tomoko looked at the alarm clock on the table, ten minutes had already passed by. It seems like nothing was happening, so the three girls slowly began to calm down.

But soon, the ear piercing sound of screams that came and the sound of gunfire that came from outside shattered their optimism.

The youth sighed in his heart, it seems like he had hit a grand prize.

Chapter 109 - Hostage

Several minutes later, the outside scream and wail were getting louder, and the messy footsteps were getting nearer.

“Crash!” The ward door was kicked open. Then, a man carrying submachine gun menacingly walked in.

“Everybody get out.” The man with a very stiff Japanese said some words out loud.

Several girls inside the ward looked at each other, stunned silence in the room.

All the patients, doctors, and nurses about more than 500 people were concentrated in the corridor of the second floor and the first-floor lobby.

Standing around them, constantly patrolling, were twenty young man with face cover, and hands holding submachine guns.

Masashi's group of five people in Masako's ward were removed to the corridor on the second floor.

If only Lei Yin alone, he definitely can, when the other bandits do not pay attention, put down the guy who stormed the ward and then jump from the second floor and leave. But now with four other girls, the matter became a lot more troublesome.

Japan is an earthquake-prone country, the Japanese for this earthquake natural disaster seem to have been a bit numb. Perhaps because of the extension of this role none of the people that were forced out of the wards screamed, the scene seemed quiet and lifeless. But everyone's eyes revealed panicked look. None of the people present thought they could encounter this only seen in television news scene.

Among the group of gunmen, stood a lanky man whose face covered with red cloth. Masashi saw the just now posing as the doctor, nurse, and patient, two men and a woman were standing next to that man.

On the three chairs next to them, sat three people with hands tied and dejected look.

Seated in the leftmost is a big-bellied like a pregnant woman middle-aged man.

Next to him is a 60-something-years-old old man, his body is only slightly thinner than the big fatty.

Sitting in the rearmost, a more than 50-years-old man wearing a suit with a pair of black-rimmed glasses.

That man with black-rimmed glasses, Masashi had seen him on TV, and guessed he probably stayed in the highest quality ward.

The current mayor of Tokyo, Shintaro Ishihara, is one of the

most likely candidates to win the seat of Prime Minister. The other two men were also heavyweight political figures.

“Why are you doing this to us? Please let us go.” An old man in front of the standing stood lanky man suddenly said out loud.

All eyes from the people in the old man’s line of sight immediately focused on that man.

That lanky man gave a meaningful look toward the “nurse” next to him; the woman immediately nodded knowingly.

The woman in a very stiff Japanese said: “In the name of God’s mercy and love, we are the Middle East ‘July Movement’ Jihad members, we have no intention of killing friendly foreign citizens. Because through the reports and news we learned that our Religious Committee asked us not to kill. Unfortunately, your government held up an exiled important member of our organization in your country, and will shortly be transferred to the United States for trial. The trial is unfair, in order to free our comrade, we decided to use your freedom in exchange for his freedom.

Although we have no intention to kill, if there are people who disrupt our plan, we will kill them on the spot. Please behave.”

That woman finished, all the people immediately in an uproar.

That said, they are really being held hostage?

At this time, outside the hospital, the police finally arrived. Within the space of a few seconds, more than ten police vehicles parked outside the hospital building. Dozens of armed policemen got out of the car and immediately pulled out their guns and then hid behind the cars.

A police officer used a megaphone to speak to the people inside the hospital: “The people inside listen, you have been surrounded. Immediately lay down your arms now and surrender, or we will use violent means against you.”

The woman who has just spoken came to the door and said: “We ask for a dialogue.”

“Patrol Head, what’s the current situation?” Ryotaro Maeda walked to a police officer and asked.

That Patrol Head saluted and said to him: “Report to Chief Deputy, there are more than twenty people inside who claimed to be the ‘July Movement’ Jihad members, they took the whole people in the hospital close to 500 people as hostages. Mayor Shintaro Ishihara, Fumi Fukunaga, and Yamazaki Choju two congressmen were also in their hands.

They ask us to, within 12 hours, release the detained foreign prisoner in Tokyo prison called Marando. And demand the government to hand over \$100 million in ransom. Finally, they also demand that the prisoner Marando to be released here, and to prepare a plane for them right now.

They claim that if in twelve hours didn't see Marando, each minute will kill a person."

"Marando? Is that guy also their accomplices?" Ryutaro Maeda asked.

"Sorry, I don't know."

Watching from afar the inside of the building densely packed with hostages, Ryutaro Maeda sighed before saying: "Quickly notice the Chief Police, report to him the situation here in detail. We cannot deal with this situation. This is literally a mass hostages situation, and now can only rely on those gang of guys who usually do nothing."

"Yes, Deputy Chief." After the Patrol Head saluted, he immediately called the headquarters.

It was getting dark by this time, 15 minutes later three van-like vehicles came in.

When the car stopped, thirty dressed in black body armor, heavily armed young men jumped down from the rear carriage.

"Hello, I'm the commander of the special crime investigation department Ryosawa. Are you in charge here?" A 30-something man went over to Ryutaro Maeda to ask.

“Hello, my name is Ryutaro Maeda, I’m in charge here.”

“I want to completely understand the entire situation here,” Ryosawa said.

“Patrol Head, you explain the situation here to officer Ryosawa.” Ryutaro Maeda called over the Patrol Head.

When the Patrol Head explained the specific of the situation to Officer Ryosawa, suddenly, several premium limousines entered the scene.

‘Such a big case really alerted the people on the top.’ Watching the incoming premium limousine of the Police Chief flanked by several high-ranking police officers, Ryutaro Maeda quietly thought.

“Officer Ryosawa, you are the expert in dealing with such event, do you really think this will be okay?” Half an hour later, after listening to Ryosawa’s action plan, the 50 years old Police Chief Jinsho Kikoeru asked.

“Report to Police Chief, in order to maximize the rescued hostages, this is the best approach,” Ryosawa replied.

“I do not agree with this plan, it is too dangerous for the hostages inside.” A police officer immediately objected.

“I also do not agree, the majority of the patients inside are sick,

to do so would cause great casualties.” Another person also said.

“Unless we really accept those conditions, otherwise, this is the only way to maximize the rescued hostages along with the Mayor and two congressmen.” Ryosawa retorted.

“No, we absolutely can’t agree to their conditions. Don’t you remember 20 years ago, the ‘Red Army’ members hijacked the airliner incident? That time our government promised the hijackers’ demand, to our country’s disgrace. So afterward the government deliberately established this branch of special forces. If this time we also agree to those people conditions, afterward our country will become the other terrorists’ ATM. I decided, in the absence of other better solution, we’ll act according to officer Ryosawa’s plan.” The Metropolitan Police Chief firmly said.

“Yes.” Since the Chief has given his order, others had no choice but to comply.

‘Will it really be smooth?’ Waiting at the side, Ryutaro Maeda secretly anxious.

“Will they really kill us?” Looking at the numerous police vehicles and the police outside, Yamaguchi Masako suddenly asked.

“Rest assured, we will be fine.” Yamaguchi Tomoko hugged her sister to console her.

“Alas, never thought this would happen. Until now, I still think I’m in a dream, but no matter how I pinch it feels painful.” Tachibana Minoru softly said.

“Masashi, are you afraid?” Kurata Ryoko gently asked the silent youth sitting next to her.

“Not really, just a bit hungry.” The youth said with a shrug.

“You are a pig, right now still has the mood to eat.” Kurata Ryoko snappily said.

“If I don’t eat something, how could I have the strength to do things?” The youth dismissively said a sentence.

Chapter 110 - Preparation

“Hello, I’m the reporter from NHK television, what’s the situation of the hostage now?”

“I’m the TBS reporter, I want to ask the Metropolitan police how they’ll deal with this hostage incident?”

“Please reply? The audiences in the nation are in urgent need to find out the details of the incident from the police.”

“This incident, do you acknowledge that the police were negligent?”

“These terrorists request of releasing one criminal, is that person their partner?”

Looking at the troop reporters who were gathered outside the hospital entrance, the police chief bitterly smiled saying: “You see, I believe that tomorrow, the world will know what happened here, if not handled properly, not only will the police have no face left, but it would also become a stain towards our country. Fellow colleagues, please be diligent.”

“Please rest assured Chief, we will successfully rescue the hostages. As soon as the plan begins, we will immediately break through the door and rescue the hostages.” Ryosawa said firmly.

The police chief nodded, turning his head to ask another police

officer: “How’s the preparation going?”

“The main deployment has already been completed, the snipers are also already in place. We’ll coordinate with officer Ryosawa as much as possible.” The police officer replied.

“Are those things also prepared?”

“Yes, I’ve secretly notified the headquarters to have it arranged, after half an hour, they’ll be transported by helicopter.”

“If possible, I don’t really want use this method.” The police chief sighed.

Turning his head towards the other police officers he said: “Continue making negotiation with the terrorists, moreover, we must find out the situation inside as much as possible. This matter doesn’t allow for any negligence.”

“Yes.”

At this moment, as time draws near suddenly several people came out of the command center.

“I would like to ask, what’s actually happening here?” In the middle, an old man wearing a white coat came out and loudly asked.

“Good evening! Congressman Tatsuyama, Congressman Hisanaga, Congressman Nagai and Sir Momozaki.” The police chief said respectfully to these political veterans.

“I was just eating at home, when suddenly Nagai called me, saying that terrorists had taken hundreds of hostages in the hospital. Is this true?” The old man first continued to ask.

“Yes, there are 25 people in the hospital claiming that their the ‘July Movement’ Jihad members, they’ve held about 500 people as hostages. Moreover, mayor Shintaro Ishihara, Congressman Fumi Fukunaga and Congressman Yamazaki Chou are also in their hands. They request that in 12 hours the affiliated criminal Marando be released. And also request the government to hand over 100 million US dollar as ransom.” The police chief answered.

“Well said, but we absolutely can’t release Marando. Because we’ve promised the United States to transport him to New York this week.” Another congressman said.

“How did you let this happen Police chief, allowing more than twenty terrorists armed with weapons and infiltrate Tokyo, and also allowed them to take these many hostages. How are you going to explain these to the reporters?” Congressman Tatsuyama’s face was filled with anger as he asked.

“Sorry, this indeed was my dereliction of duty. Our police will recuse the hostages as soon as possible.” The police chief bent down to the waist and said.

“Hopefully, your guarantee is real.” Congressman Tatsuyama said desolately.

—

“It seems like these guys are very civilized.” Looking at the man who was holding a gun patrolling back and forth, the youth suddenly said something.

“What are you thinking? Having the mood to praise those who kidnaped us at this time.” Kurata Ryoko glared at him.

“At least they haven’t raped or abused the woman taken as hostages. If they were from the soldier of Nazi Germany in World War II they would have treated the Japanese hostages very differently, you’re really much luckier.” The youth sneered.

Looking at the girls dazed look, the youth knew that they really didn’t know about the history during that period.

“Do you have a coin?” The youth disliked this topic so he didn’t bother to talk to them about it, then he suddenly asked another question.

“What?” Kurata Ryoko asked.

“Don’t ask, just give me all the coins you have on you.”

Kurata Ryoko pulled out her wallet and threw it towards him.

After collecting the coins of the two other girls, the youth counted, there was only a total of 12, less than expected. However, adding on the 6 coins that he has, it should be nearly the same.

Seeing that he put all the coins that he had taken into his pocket, Kurata Ryoko Couldn’t bear to ask: “Hey, what are you trying to do with that? This money can only let us buy soft drinks, it’s not enough to bribe them to let us go.”

“It’s rare for you to crack a joke, good, leand me your ear, I’ll tell you something.”

Kurata Ryoko glanced at him, as he had gotten through her head.

The three other girls watched, puzzled as the two cousins whispered to one another.

“Will this really work?” Kurata Ryoko was surprised after hearing what the youth had said.

“Theoretically, it’s possible.” The youth said.

“Theoretical your head, if it doesn’t work, we’re dead.” Kurata Ryoko said ill-humoredly.

“Excuse me, what you just said, can you tell us?” Tachibana Minoru interrupted and couldn’t help but ask.

The youth winked at Kurata Ryoko, afterwards Kurata Ryoko whispered a few words to Tachibana Minoru’s ear.

After the other girls have also been told about the youth’s plan, they all had a startled expression.

“Masashi, isn’t this too risky?” Tachibana Minoru looked at the gunman standing in the distance and said.

“This is the only way to increase the chances of our survival.” Said the youth calmly.

“But isn’t the outside police rescuing us a better plan? I think our method is too risky.” The short-haired girl said again.

“The first thing is certain, the Japanese government will never agree to the conditions put forward by those guys. Although the Japanese government did indeed promise to do what the hijackers requested in that ‘Red Army’ hijacking twenty years ago, but that was an idiotic action. But unlike that time, this time they can longer afford to lose face. But the main thing is that the prisoner is a person that the United States want, so this make it more impossible for the Japanese Government to release the man. So,

the only thing they can do is to have the police forcefully break in and kill these people. In fact, doing so makes sense, but if you look at those guys. Don't you think that in such a hot weather, they wearing something too thick?"

The girls didn't understand what he meant as they looked at him puzzled.

The youth went closer to Kurata Ryoko, whispering into her ears.

"bom...." She didn't finish as the youth immediately covered her mouth.

Hearing the word that came from Kurata Ryoko's mouth, the other girls suddenly became pale.

In a deep voice, the youth said: "All those people are religious fanatics, they would rather die than be captured by their enemy. That's why they're called terrorists."

"Can we really do it?" Yamaguchi Tomoko asked.

"To be honest, the chances are half-half. We can only wait right now, not long the police will take action, as soon as it had become chaotic here, just act according to my instructions. Of course, if you want to stay here, I will not force you, after all, the life is your own."

"But, even if the situation becomes like you say, what do we do

with the guys patrolling around? They'll likely to immediately open fire at us." Tachibana Minoru asked.

"That's why I said the chances are only half-half. At the appointed time, if you think that it's safer to go with me, then follow me, if you don't trust me, then stay." The youth said, subconsciously flipping the coin that was inside his pocket.

The four girls were looking at each other, suddenly no one spoke.

Chapter 111 - Explosion

“Reporting to Chief, we’re all ready to go. Able to act at any time.” It was 21:20 in Tokyo, when officer Ryosawa entered to the temporary headquarters reporting to the police chief in the evening.

The police chief looked at the congressmen who were sitting down as if they didn’t hear anything, he then turned around and said to Ryosawa: “Officer Ryosawa, commence the plan.”

“Yes.” Ryosawa saluted to him, then went out of the temporary headquarters.

Looking at the building where numerous hostages were gathered and sitting together, the police chief tightly entangled both of his hands together. Thinking that he should probably retire already. He sighed at heart.

“It seems they’ve begun to move.” Sitting on the second floor, the youth suddenly said something to himself.

Hearing his words, the four girl’s heart immediately tightened.

“Masashi, how do you know that?” Tachibana Minoru asked doubtfully.

“Now isn’t the time to ask, decide quickly, there’s no time left for hesitation.”

Kurata Ryoko found that her cousin was probably a little different from his usual lazy expression.

After a while, the group of armed men suddenly looked a bit strangely outside.

Almost at the same time, at the building's first-floor entrance, window, windows on the second floor and other open spaces, several tin cans suddenly flew in from outside.

Those cans soon fell to the ground, the hostages who were near it thought it was a bomb, immediately screaming and fled. The scene suddenly became very chaotic.

In order to suppress the crowd that fled, the armed men loudly swore in words that nobody could understand, who then shot several times on the ceiling.

The sound of gun fire unceasingly reverberated in the spacious hall; the panicked crowd didn't dare to run all over the place again.

But not long after, grey smoke suddenly emerged from those cans. The smoke spread very fast. In just one minute, the smoke that came out from the can on the ground covered the entire floor. And the smoke was still constantly spreading making it more and more concentrated.

A few minutes later, it became very hard to see inside the whole

building. A few people standing together basically weren't able to see the other party's appearance clearly.

The sound of screams, run and constant sound of gun fire filled the entire building. Everyone fled in panic like it was the end of the world. Everywhere you can hear people screaming from being stepped on.

Back when those tin cans were thrown, the youth already knew that those cans can never be a bomb and should be some chemical weapon such as tear gas. So he called out to the four girls to absolutely never let go of each other's hand, otherwise when they're separated it would become troublesome.

Without any time to ask whether the girls agreed or not, the youth held Kurata Ryoko's hand, after which the girls were like a kebab stuck with him as he led them to run upstairs.

This was the course of action that the youth had decided, as long as it was chaotic in the building, he would immediately lead the to the roof top.

As for the second plan that he had thought, it was to go out from the fire exit, but thinking that those men must have tightly sealed the whole building, making it riskier, and only under compelling circumstances can they break through from there.

But now that it was hard to see inside, not to mention the fire exit, even finding the stairs that lead to the roof was also not easy.

Because there were too many people around, the four girls found it hard to walk, as they were often being stepped on or being tripping over by people, so they were only able to walk over ten meters away from where they started off.

But fortunately, they remembered what the youth had told them, tightly holding each other's hands, even if someone falls down they would still not let go, that's why up until now, no one had been separated yet.

Arriving at the stair case, the youth suddenly let go of Kurata Ryoko's left hand, rushed towards the front.

"Masashi, Masashi! Where are you? Masashi...." Seeing that the youth let go of her hand, Kurata Ryoko hastily called out in search of the youth.

"Ryoko, Masashi disappeared?" Hearing the cries of Kurata Ryoko, Tachibana Minoru immediately asked loudly.

"I don't know, he was holding my hand just a while ago, when he suddenly disappeared. Masashi, are you nearby?" Kurata Ryoko continued to call out loudly.

Hearing Ryoko's words, the other three girls couldn't help but tense up.

"No matter what happened, we still must not let go of each other's hand." Yamaguchi Tomoko knew the urgency of the

situation, so she hastened to say those words.

Although they were eager to look for him, because of the fog, it was difficult to walk. Some people were even only anxiously standing not daring to move.

“Masako, you? Don’t scare me, Masako....” After a while, Yamaguchi Tomoko suddenly cried aloud.

“Tomoko, what happened?” Kurata Ryoko asked.

“I don’t know, Masako all of a sudden fainted, no matter how much I call for her she just won’t wake up.” Yamaguchi Tomoko with obvious tearful voice, said.

“I just want to say, my head is getting more and more dizzy, my whole body doesn’t have much strength left.” Then, Tachibana Minoru slowly collapsed to the ground.

“How can this be? Dead Masashi, quickly come back!” Indeed the storm had not yet stopped and was still continuing to rise, Kurata Ryoko was anxious and worried, but she was just unable to do anything in this situation.

Suddenly, a cool hand held Kurata Ryoko’s wrist.

“Ah!” Kurata was shocked, couldn’t help but cry aloud.

“What, it’s me.” A familiar voice reached Kurata Ryoko’s ear.

“Bastard, just where did you go? Do you want to scare us to death?” Kurata Ryoko scolded while she unconsciously shed tears.

“Don’t talk too much, quickly go upstairs.” He then held her hand and continued to say.

“It’s no good, Masako’s ears seems a bit uncomfortable. No matter how much Tomoko call out to her, she just won’t respond.” Kurata Ryoko said.

It seems like the tear gas was definitely not simple. When he had just started to smell it he immediately felt that it was a bit strong, but because the situation was too urgent, he didn’t think much about it.

“I’ll carry Masako, you hold your schoolmates. Quickly.” The youth said while he arrived at Yamaguchi Tomoko’s side, carrying her younger sister.

“Hey, are you all right, can you walk?” The youth turned his head to ask the elder sister.

“I’m all right, just a little dizzy.” Then, Yamaguchi Tomoko staggered on her feet.

Seeing her this way, the youth pulled her hand to keep her from being separated.

Strangely enough, when they walked up the stairs, Tachibana Minoru and Kurata Ryoko found that nobody was guarding. But didn't think about at the moment, as they closely followed the youth towards the roof.

"How's the situation now?" Looking at the smoke continuously coming out of the hospital building, the police chief nervously asked.

"Reporting to chief, the situation is already within our grasp. After putting in 'tear gas', our members have successfully entered the building. They're now carrying out the mission, killing the terrorists." Ryosawa stressed the 'tear gas' pronunciation.

The police chief nodded, and then continued to ask: "Then, when can they rescue the hostages inside." He was indeed very worried, if they continue to delay longer, many people might die, let alone when the majority of them were frail patients.

"Please rest assured chief, so long as our team is able to kill most of the terrorist, we'll be able to immediately rescue the hostages. I believe that those fellows must have started to slowly lose battle efficiency." Ryosawa said confidently.

"Hope so." The police chief sighed.

Suddenly,

“Bang!”, A loud explosion came from the inside the building. A huge air current instantly broke two glass windows on the third floor. After the loud noise, they immediately saw a thick smoke, and flame writings around the building on the third floor.

At that moment, the police chief and officer Ryosawa's complexion became pale.

“What's this, why did nobody tell that those fellow have bombs?” Congressman Tatsuyama angrily rushed out from his car, and walked over towards the police chief asking loudly.

The police chief didn't have time to take care of him, and immediately turned his head to tell officer Ryosawa: “Tell your subordinates to immediately open fire towards the terrorist. We absolutely can't let them detonate another bomb.”

“But the smoke is too thick inside, they won't be able to clearly distinguish whether or not it's the terrorists.” Officer Ryosawa finally responded from the shock.

“I officially authorize you to, so long as they suspect the person as the terrorist, your subordinates have the right to open fire.” The police chief said seriously.

“I, I understand.”

“I told you, that you'll have to bear all responsibilities of this matter.” After Ryosawa got out of the way, Tatsuyama's face

darkened as he said.

“After this matter, I’ll take the blame and immediately resign.” The police chief bowed towards him, then entered the temporary headquarter.

“Bang!”, Another explosion transmitted, Congressman Tatsuyama then looked at the burning building

“What’s happening?” Inside the temporary headquarter, the police chief’s eyes were red as he looked at Ryosawa.

“Sorry, our member has hit a terrorist, but had also hit the bomb on his body, apparently they’ve strapped a bomb on each person....” Ryosawa was on the verge of tears.

Taking a deep breath, as if he suddenly turned into a twenty year old man, he said: “Now isn’t the time to apologize, I command you, to tell your subordinates to continue shooting, but only shoot at the terrorist’s head, you hear?”

“I understand.” Ryosawa quickly commanded his subordinates with his intercom.

When Ryosawa was busy telling the command, the police chief gently stroked his waist.

On the other hand, on the third floor, the three girls at the moment, were facing the biggest fear in their life since they were

born.

Because they had just set foot on the third floor, they found a gunman touching the wall violently coughing. Seeing them come up, the man immediately raised his gun to fire at them.

In the eyes of the three still conscious girls, time seems to slow down a lot.

Because the smoke on the third floor wasn't thick, Tachibana Minoru saw some obvious rust on their machine gun. Kurata Ryoko, on the other hand, saw a shadow rush out. While Yamaguchi Tomoko tightly closed her eyes.

“Bang!” the sound of gunfire reverberated, as the three girls simultaneously thought that one of them were hit. However, Tachibana Minoru actually saw a hole on the terrorist's fore head as bright red blood splashed out, as his whole body fell down backward, motionless. The entire process seemed like slow motion as they were clearly able to see what had happened.

But just as Yamaguchi Tomoko opened her eyes, she saw the youth inserting a black gun on his belt.

“Masashi, where did your gun come from?” After a long time, Kurata Ryoko slowly recovered.

“From one of these fellows. Well, don't ask anymore, quickly go.” Then he calmly continued to move forwards while carrying

Masako on his back.

Looking at her younger cousin who had just shot down a living person, she noticed that his complexion actually didn't change. Kurata Ryoko suddenly felt a bit scared of this boy.

Chapter 112 - Liable

As Yamaguchi Tomoko and Tachibana Minoru still haven't recovered from the shock they had from being in mortal danger just moments ago. Seeing that the youth continued to move forward, they still followed him while staring him from behind.

The more they went up, the lower the concentration of the smoke, and when they arrived at the eight floor, Yamaguchi Masako slowly woke up.

"Where am I?" She asked a little weak.

"Small Ya, you finally woke up, thinking that you won't wake up anymore, you really scared me to death." Yamaguchi Tomoko held her hand while wiping her own tears.

"I'm sorry, sister, for worrying you," Masako whispered apologetically.

"Fool, so long as you're all right it's all good. Masashi, Masako's awake, let me carry her." Yamaguchi Tomoko was afraid that the youth was tired, so she opened her mouth to say.

"No need, this little rascal is very light." The youth without looking back, continued to go up.

The girl's elder sister followed from behind as she explained the matter to her younger sister when she had fainted.

Feeling the youth's body temperature, Masako felt embarrassed.

From the start, Kurata Ryoko and Tachibana Ryoko walked without making a single noise, merely just silently following closely behind.

“Was there really an explosion below?” Masako asked.

“Um, there had been two big explosions already, the shock from it even broke the windows, but luckily we quickly left. So I just don't know what happened to the people downstairs.” Yamaguchi Tomoko said very anxiously.

If they had just stayed there, they couldn't imagine what would have happened to them. Thinking of this, Tachibana Minoru felt scared.

Finally, walked to the 12th floor, arriving at the roof of the building.

After arriving on the roof, the youth looked around, then lead them to hide behind the building's water reservoir.

“Now, we should temporarily be safe here, so let's rest. Cousin, use your cell phone and alert the police, and tell them that we're on the roof, and have them send a helicopter to save us.”

“I know.” Kurata Ryoko nodded, taking out her cellphone on her body.

On the other hand, the other three girls watched, surprised, as the youth took his gun out, and in a very skillful way took out the magazine checking the amount of bullets left.

After checking, he loaded the magazine, then with both hands held the gun tightly as he stared at the door to the roof.

“Masashi, you....” Tachibana Minoru couldn’t bear to ask.

“Think, If we could run up to the roof, isn’t it also possibly that these terrorists can also come up here, so we should be prepared if such a thing happens. No matter what happens, don’t expose your head. Understand?” The youth interrupted her words.

“I, I understand.” At this time, the girls were completely out of ideas, so they could only believe the youth in this kind of situation.

After making the call, Kurata Ryoko looks at the youth who was holding a gun while staring at the entrance to the roof.

At this time, she suspected whether or not this person really was, Masashi, her cowardly and ordinary cousin.

When Masashi first saw her with her friends, Yamaguchi Tomoko and Tachibana Minoru, she felt that the youth was somewhat different. Together, she grew up with her cousin

Masashi, although they rarely meet, they could still see each other several times every year.

Starting from the funeral, she discovered at that time that here younger cousin's appearance changed a lot. At that time, she only thought that the reason for this was that he grew. But, along with her observation over the last two times that they'd met, she found that his change wasn't that simple.

Today, in the face of such a dangerous situation, he demonstrated a calm and decisive attitude that of a murderer, killing without batting an eye, she was extremely shocked. If not for his facial feature having no major changes, she would have really doubted if this youth was really the same person who she knew before.

"Someone is coming." When Kurata Ryoko was indulged in her thought, the youth suddenly whispered something.

Hearing his words, her heart immediately tightened. Because they were hiding behind the water reservoir, they couldn't see and had to listen attentively for any sounds outside.

After a while, they really heard several footsteps slowly getting closer.

Hearing the sound of footsteps, the youth began to get headaches, as there were six of them. Imagining that those fellows really had good tricks. And because he only had two guns having ten bullets in total, even if he simultaneously opened fire to

instantly kill two people, and also hit their heads. If he had hit the spot where the terrorists had put their bomb, it wouldn't be a wonderful situation, so it was just impossible to counterattack.

Thinking about this, he changed his strategy, lunge up, and jumped on the balcony above the entrance.

After jumping, the youth adjusted his breathing, quietly waiting for these people's arrival. If it was close combat, he believed that no one was his opponent. So long as his swift, it should be much more effective than using a gun.

Finally, the footsteps were getting closer, he could hear the people's breath. Maybe because it had been a long time since he had faced such a crucial moment, Lei Yin couldn't help but be a bit excited.

However, when the people rush to the roof, he knew that he didn't need to fight.

"You're the police, right?" The youth looked at their uniform with an exaltedly big 'POLICE' inscription, and asked.

Those members of the special department were already really tensed, so when they suddenly heard a sound from above, they immediately wanted to shoot above.

"You guys are sick. I'm a hostage!" Fortunately, Lei Yin in the tip of the moment, already turned back, going out of the way when he

had seen them, or he would have certainly been miserable. Looking at the bullets flying towards the edge of the balcony, the youth shouted.

Hearing his words, the police couldn't help but be surprised for a moment, and then immediately stopped firing.

His grandmother, this whole bunch were idiots. Lei Yin scolded as he looked up, at the starry sky, unceasingly shining. It seems like the helicopter has arrived.

—

“Isn't such a thing not proper? Giving them a vacation, moreover a long one. How enviable.” Lying on the bed, the youth was reading the newspaper, and gleefully said.

Maeda Ryutaro smiled bitterly, “Easy for you to say, but now our entire division as long as they're in our division, was also forced home to reflect. Me coming out now to visit you is already violating the rule.”

“There is nothing that can be done, always putting the blame on someone else's back, in any case, it's just like people stealing an innocent cow, your boss probably returned with a bigger headache

compared to you. Right, was the number of death written on the newspaper really these many?”

“Yes, probably even more than that. That’s because many people weren’t able to get out of danger.”

“Humph, some people were killed by the bomb and being stomped on so to speak, yet there were people that were obviously scarred after being involved in the bomb and have been hospitalized? Don’t tell me you also believe that those things thrown at the site were indeed tear gas?” The youth sneered.

“I don’t know, but more and more people have the same question as you. Now the Metropolitan Police are surrounded by reporters outside. The most shocking thing, however, is about the police chief shooting himself, no one could have imagined that he would do that.” Maeda Ryutaro sighed.

“He did this to express that he nevertheless was an unyielding person, this way, the idea is regarded as a relief, at least those people would no longer be bothered by it.” Putting down the newspaper, the youth said dismissively.

Seeing Maeda’s sudden strange expression, the youth said ill-humoredly: “There is something I have to tell you, don’t look like you have constipation.”

Maeda Ryutaro looked at him and asked: “Can you tell me honestly, were you the one that knocked down the two terrorist?”

“Sorry, I don’t know what you’re saying.” The youth said with a smile.

“Don’t trick me, at the scene we found two dead terrorists, their guns were taken away, and you happened to have two pistols, so I know it was you.” Maeda Ryutaro said quite surely.

“Can’t you imagine that someone else killed them, then I just conveniently picked up their gun?”

“Since you don’t want to admit it, I won’t force you. It’s about time, I should get back, you get some rest.” Maeda Ryutaro said before standing up.

“Hey, help me get discharged as soon as possible, I’m really fine, but it might be good if those girls were checked, especially the girl named Yamaguchi Masako, she has been dizzy for some time. Well, anyway, these doctors will handle it. In short, I want to get out of the hospital as soon as possible.” The youth said to him with an unquestionable tone.

“Sorry, this matter can only be decided by Rumiko, I would like to reflect at home, so I don’t have the time.” Before leaving Maeda Ryutaro exposed a sly smile.

“Really is rare, this old boy also unexpectedly know how to crack a joke.” The youth looked at the door that was shut tightly, and thought aloud.

Under extreme boredom, the youth wanted to look at the time, picking up the phone he found that the phone was shutting down, it seems like it was out of power.

What seems to have been forgotten, was slowly being remembered.

Suddenly, outside he heard a rapid sound of footsteps, then “Peng,” the door of the hospital wards all of a sudden opened.

“Sorry, I forgot to watch the movie with you.” The youth raised his head, and said to Naoko-sensei who was standing in the doorway panting.

“Lei!” Naoko-sensei suddenly rushed up to hold him.

“Fool, don’t cry, I don’t have any injuries.” After a long time, she calmed down a little, the youth felt bad as he wiped the tears from her face.

“Lei, I was scared.” Naoko-sensei looked at him while tears continued to flow down from her eyes.

“Come, sit, take off your sandals.” Lei Yin tapped the extra space of his bed.

If it was the usual Naoko-sensei, seeing the action of the youth, she would become extremely shy. But this time she was very emotional, thinking for a moment, she took off her sandals and

climbed up.

Hugging her, he felt her sweet soft body, the youth felt a very unspeakable sense of satisfaction. Unknowingly, this woman had become an increasingly important person in his heart.

“Naoko, promise me one thing, please?” The youth faced his head against her forehead and said.

“Lei, as long as you’re okay, I’ll promise you anything.” Remembering the explosions that were seen on the Television, Naoko-sensei still felt scared.

“No matter what happens, you have to wait for me to come back. Okay?”

“Lei....” This sentence made Naoko-sensei feel very uneasy.

“Don’t be cranky. Because I sometimes go to faraway places to do some things, it may take me longer to come back, I don’t want you to worry, just tell me that you promise that no matter what happens, you won’t give up and believe that I’ll come back to you. So, before I come back, you must take care of your body, okay?” Lei Yin looked deeply in her eyes, said.

“Ah, no matter what happens, I’ll wait for you.” Her eyes stared back at him, Naoko-sensei gently but firmly said something, and then leaned her head against his shoulder.

“By the way, how did you know I was in the hospital?” It stands to reason that she didn’t know that he was in the hospital.

“I was at home waiting for you, but for a very long time you still didn’t come home to see me, so I called your cell phone, but your phone was closed. I was a little worried, so I called your place, your mother was at home and told me that something had happened to you. It scared me, so why are you here?” Naoko-sensei looked up and asked.

“It’s a little long to say, wait a minute and then I’ll tell you. You just said that my mother was at home, she’s supposed to come back and get me a change of clothes, perhaps she’s already back.”

“What?” Naoko-sensei was startled, immediately wanting to jump down the bed.

“Don’t move, let me hug you. In any case, let her see her beautiful daughter-in-law earlier.” Lei Yin laughed and hugged her waist, not letting her go.

“Lei, let me go quickly.” Naoko-sensei blushed up to her ear as she struggled.

“I’ll only let you go if you give me a French kiss, otherwise I won’t let go.” Lei Yin proudly looked at her.

“You bad guy.” Naoko-sensei blushed as red as blood as she continued to look at him.

Originally, he thought that with her shy personality she would hesitate for a long time, but to his surprise, although she still felt embarrassed, soon her cherry lips moved closer....

Chapter 113 - Dinner Party

“It seems like you’re in high spirits, I feel relieved.” In the female hospital ward, Lei Yin leisurely sat beside her cousin’s bed.

“Did you really come to visit a patient? Didn’t even buy a bouquet of flower and came empty-handed.” Kurata Ryoko said ill-humoredly.

“Hey, I’m also a patient.”

“Come on, which part of your body resembles that of a patient? Lying down the whole day, I’m bored to death.” Kurata Ryoko rubbed her face.

“How long did the doctor say until you can leave the hospital?” The youth took an orange from the table to peel it.

“They said that in two days I can be discharged. Damn, I have to go for two more days here, I really can’t stand it.”

“How’s your two schoolmates?” The youth divided the peeled orange by half giving it to her, as she bluntly stretched out her hand.

“Just like me, they can also leave the hospital in two days. However, Masako’s situation isn’t quite good. She was already a patient, at that time she had sucked in a lot of smoke, listening to Tomoko, she said that she’ll have to be observed for half a month

before she can leave the hospital. Oh, didn't think that this would happen." Kurata Ryoko sighed to say.

"So long as no one's injured that's good, but half a month, it will pass quickly."

"Can you be a little more compassionate? Right, I have something I wanted to ask you." Kurata Ryoko's expression became very serious.

"Tell me." Lei Yin had already guessed what she had wanted to ask.

"That day, your actions were so unusual, although I promised that I would keep it a secret for you, but an ordinary person like you could never use a gun to kill a person. I want you to tell me the reason how you were able to do it."

"The reason? Perhaps because I often play games....You should know, headshots are very common in many shooting games." The youth said nonchalantly.

"I knew you wouldn't tell the truth. Well, since you don't want to tell me, I won't force you, but I just want you to know, I'm your cousin, no matter what happens, I'll stand by your side." Kurata Ryoko sincerely said.

"The atmosphere is pretty good, but to be honest, you watch too much soap operas, it's quite disgusting." The youth smiled.

Kurata Ryoko's face reddened, immediately standing, she was ashamed and angry, "You bastard, always annoying and making me angry, die." Saying that she sent a kick to him.

As soon as she stood up, Lei Yin had already slid back with the chair, evading the kick with ease.

"You....What are you doing?" At this time, the door was suddenly opened, and wearing similar to that of a patient, Tachibana Minoru puzzlingly looked at Kurata Ryoko who exaltedly stood on her bed.

"Minoru you came." Discovering that her own posture was a little elegant, Kurata Ryoko hurriedly sat down. And then stared at the youth's eyes.

"Quite bothersome, I wanted to leave the hospital earlier. But father and mother won't let me." Tachibana Minoru complained a little as she walked in.

"I'm also the same, if not for you living next door, I don't know how I'll get over the next two days. Tomoko? Is she at Masako's room?" Kurata Ryoko said on her bed.

Minoru nodded, "she's a good older sister. Masashi, are you also leaving the hospital in two days with us?"

"Sorry, I'm leaving the hospital today. Don't you see that I'm

wearing civilian clothes?” The youth said slowly.

“Why are you discharged so quickly?” Kurata Ryoko asked in surprise.

“Because I convinced my mother, I told her that nothing’s wrong with me. Moreover, I still have to deal with the final exam, so I must get back to class early, so she helped me go through the discharge formalities. As for you guys, recuperate here.” The youth a little meanly said.

“Just like that? If I had known that would work, I would have also said the same thing as you.” Tachibana Minoru said in regret.

“Don’t be proud, I order you as your cousin, from tomorrow onwards, you have to come visit us everyday, until all of us leaves the hospital.” Kurata Ryoko overbearingly said.

“If I have time I’ll think about it. My mother should be back, I’ll leave first.” The youth stood.

“Bastard, I mean, if you don’t come, I won’t let you off.” The youth’s cousin continued to say.

“As I said, I’ll come when I have time, you’re really too wordy. Bye.” Lei Yin said as he left the ward.

“Ryoko, this time, your cousin saved us.” After a moment of silence, Tachibana Minoru said.

“I just asked him the question, but he didn’t reply. What did really happen to him to become like that in just two years? I just don’t understand this guy.” Kurata Ryoko frustratingly said.

“Well, anyway, he’s quite a good person. If he weren’t a high school student, I would have run after him.” Minoru said with a smile.

“Too lazy to talk to you, let’s go see Masako.” Kurata Ryoko got out of bed and wore slippers.

“Ah, wait for me.”

—

“Sister, what are you doing?” After watching a volume of soap opera, Aiko turned her head to ask.

“I’m knitting a scarf,” Naoko-sensei said, lowering her head, she continued to knit.

“My god, it’s summer right now, why are you knitting a scarf for? You’ll get a heat stroke.” Hearing that she was knitting a scarf,

Aiko thought about the heat.

“Fool, of course I wouldn’t be used it right now. I’m knitting for someone, I’m not good at knitting, so I have to practice, and when I knit a good one I can give it as a present for him.” When she spoke of ‘him,’ Naoko-sensei’s expression suddenly became very gentle.

“Who is he? Sister, do you have a boyfriend?” Aiko responded, immediately staring at her.

Looking at her younger sister’s surprised look, Naoko-sensei nodded very shyly.

“When was this? Sister’s too hateful, such a big matter as getting a boyfriend, but didn’t tell me.” Aiko was very discontented.

“Actually, it was just recent, so I didn’t have enough time to tell you. Aiko, can you help me keep it a secret? Don’t tell this matter to father.” Naoko-sensei held her younger sister’s hand to say.

“Why, this is a good thing, why won’t you let father know? I know, you’re afraid that father will oppose, right? Well, father can be very stubborn sometimes.” Aiko said thoughtfully.

Naoko-sensei nodded.

“Good, I’ll help you keep it a secret, but you must have me look at him. Which fellow is so powerful that he can even pursue such a

beauty like big sister. Right, do I know that person?”

Regarding her sister’s question, Naoko-sensei didn’t know how to answer it.

Thinking for a moment, she was about to speak, when her phone suddenly rang.

“I’ll pick up the phone.” Naoko-sensei secretly felt relaxed.

Seeing her elder sister answer the phone, Aiko then continued to watch TV.

Not long after, Naoko put down the phone and walked back. Sitting on the sofa, she suddenly sighed. Saying to herself: “It seems like I can’t watch the movie tomorrow evening with him.”

“Elder sister, who was it?” Aiko casually asked

“It’s a call from my college friend, she organized a class reunion, inviting me to go.”

“It seems like it’s fun, did you say you’re going?” Aiko continued to ask.

“Um, because I haven’t seen my schoolmates for quite some time, rejecting it was embarrassing. Tomorrow I’ll ask aunt to help make dinner for you. You have to be obedient, and not run around.”

“I know, sister always treats me like a child, I’m already a high school student,” Aiko said.

“Even if you get married in the future, you’re still my sister. Ah, it’s late already.” Looking at the clock on the wall, Naoko stood up.

“Sister did you make a mistake, it’s just 10:30, can this be considered late?” Aiko looked at the time, and said the thing on her mind.

“I’ve promised him that I must go to bed and rest before 10:00. Aiko, you also sleep earlier, you have class tomorrow.”

“Okay, I’ll go to sleep in half an hour.”

Immediately, she curled her lip saying: “Elder sister, I’m not really clear, why would you listen to that fellow? If I have a boyfriend in the future, and he dares to be wordy like this, I’ll immediately break up with him already.”

“You are young, you don’t understand, he’s good like this to me. Remember, don’t stay up too late.” Then, Naoko-sensei took the yarn and went back to her room.

Looking at the gentle and happy expression that her sister was revealing, Aiko was confused.

If Gennai that fellow also told me to do this, will I really do according to what he said? Thinking of this, Aiko became more enthralled, forgetting to continue watching TV.

Different from a high school student's school reunion, Naoko-sensei's schoolmate organized their reunion in a very high-quality dining room.

After going, inside was brilliantly illuminated, men and women wore western-style clothing or evening dress everywhere. Looking at the familiar or unfamiliar face, Naoko-sensei felt like time flew backward all of a sudden.

“Naoko you finally came. I and the others were waiting for you for a long time.” Just as she stepped into the dining room, a woman with short hair walked over very happily.

“You are....” Naoko-sensei was a little confused as he looked at the woman in front of her.

“Fool, I'm Matsumi, Fukuhara Matsumi. This fellow unexpectedly forgot me, too hateful.”

“What, your Matsumi? Didn’t you use to wear glasses? Your hair is also short, sorry, I couldn’t recognize you for a while.” Naoko-sensei embarrassedly thought.

“Don’t need to mind it, in any case, a few people also couldn’t recognize me. I’m wearing contact lenses, the pair of old glasses I used before was already gone. No wonder you didn’t recognize me, we haven’t seen each other for years, you’re more beautiful than ever, really worthy of our school flower.” Fukuhara Matsumi said with a smile.

“Not really, in fact, if you hadn’t called me I wouldn’t have come.”

“You’re still as shy as always. I’ll take you to see our former classmates, they certainly haven’t forgotten about you.” Then Fukuhara Matsumi pulled her.

“Be careful, Naoko, you still have a lot of suitors who haven’t given up. Oh, I really want to see what will happen if they see you.” Fukuhara Matsumi said as they walked.

“You’re talking nonsense again, I have.....a person who I like,” Naoko-sense said shyly.

“Didn’t think that our school flower has finally been captured. In the past many people pursued you, but you weren’t interested, I want to see what kind of person you like? Why didn’t you tell him to come? Anyway, there’s also a lot of couple tonight.” Fukuhara

Matsumi exposed a very curious expression.

“I’m sorry, he couldn’t come tonight, he has something to do,” Naoko said falteringly.

“Since he couldn’t come, why apologize. Hurry.”

When Fukuhara Matsumi drew attention with her dress, afterwards, Naoko-sensei came in wearing a splendid attire, everyone couldn’t help but look at her. Soon, some people recognized that this beautiful woman was the former school flower, Hasebe Naoko.”

Suddenly, the people who didn’t have a girlfriend immediately encircled her.

“Are you Naoko? It really is you. I’m Yamakawa, do you recognize me?”

“Hello, it’s been a long time since we’ve met.” Naoko greeted with a smile.

“Naoko, you’re so beautiful, do you recognize who I am?” Another man asked as he revealed his white teeth as if he was doing a toothpaste advertisement.

“You’re from the track and field club, Ishida, right?” Naoko said thoughtfully.

“Yes, that’s me. I didn’t think you’d remember.” The man appeared to be very proud.

After a round of dazzling introduction, Fukuhara Matsumi courageously pulled her to the washroom to avoid these excessively enthusiastic men.

“I wasn’t wrong, right? It seems like our Naoko’s charm is now even more than before. Just wait, if you tell them you have a boyfriend, I wonder what kind of expression they’ll show.” Fukuhara Matsumi showed a joking smile.

“Right, is Anzu coming?” Naoko-sensei asked.

“How do I know if she’ll come or not. If she doesn’t come the better.” Fukuhara Matsumi sneered.

“Matsumi, after all these years, you still hate her? We were good friends.” Naoko-sensei asked, worried.

“I’ll never forget the matter of her stealing my boyfriend.” Fukuhara Matsumi clenched her teeth as she replied.

“You.” Naoko-sensei sighed.

Chapter 114 - Honest

When the two came out of the washroom, they immediately saw an attractive woman wearing a yellow dress, skirt with dotted beads. Next to her was a young man wearing a high-quality suit.

“It’s Anze, she also came.” Naoko-sensei said a little surprise. But then she immediately noticed Fukuhara Matsumi’s complexion becoming not quite good.

Gently taking her hand, she said: “Matsumi, it’s rare to see many of our old schoolmates, cheer up okay.”

“Rest assured, I’ll restrain myself, I don’t want to lose face in front of her.” Fukuhara Matsumi said coldly.

Seeing her this way, Naoko could only sigh in her heart. Making a forced smile, she pulled her over.

“Anze.” Naoko-sensei walked in front of the woman and said with a smile.

“Oh, Naoko, long time no see. Didn’t imagine that you’d also come.” Tsuhara Anze said somewhat coldly.

“Since graduation, we haven’t seen each other for a long time, how have you been?” Naoko asked.

“I’m fine. Thank you for your concern.”

Seeing her indifferent expression, Naoko didn’t know what to say for a while. The nearby Fukuhara Matsumi couldn’t tolerate it anymore, and butted in to say: “Naoko, it seems like young lady Anze doesn’t want to talk to use, we’d better not bother her anymore.”

“Matsumi, don’t be like this.” Naoko said in a low voice.

She then turned her head to say to Tsuhara Anze: “Anze, haven’t seen you for such a long time, I really miss you, I’ve even tried to call your cell phone, but it seems like you changed your number, so I couldn’t find you. In the future, let’s hang out again?”

“Until then we’ll talk. Forgot to introduce to you, this is my boyfriend, Maeyama Gentaro. You should have heard about the Maeyama trading company, right? He’s the eldest son of Maeyama trading company chairman. His also the future successor of the Maeyama trading company.” Tsuhara Anze said a little happily.

“Hello, Maeyama Gentaro.” Naoko greeted, as Tsuhara Anze nodded.

“Hello, I didn’t think that Anze also had such pretty schoolmates.” Maeyama Gentaro said.

“You flatter me, in face, actually Anze is the most attractive.”

“Tsuwara, I want to ask, how are things going with you and Tatsuki Kimigen? When I ask you to hang out you would always come with him.” When Naoko was having a small talk with Maeyama Gentaro, Fukuhara Matsumi suddenly said something with a smile.

Hearing her words, Tsuwara Anze’s facial expression change right away.

“Gentaro, it’s a little stuffy here, let’s take a break somewhere else.”

“Two beautiful ladies, if you’ll excuse us.” Maeyama nodded, turning towards Naoko and Matsumi to say.

“You’re too polite, please feel free.” Naoko answered.

After they left, Fukuhara Matsumi smugly laughed, “Did you see her face? Thinking that catching a rich boy would make her great. If I talked about her romantic history, I’m sure that her boyfriend wouldn’t want to see her anymore.”

Matsumi, why are you like this? I know that Anze did something wrong to you, but it was a long time ago, you don’t need to fight with her anymore.” Naoko urged.

Fukuhara Matsumi was silent for a moment, then said: “Naoko, you haven’t experienced such a thing, so you wouldn’t understand. Your own good friend unexpectedly robs you of your own first

love, having to watch the two of them every day, they're lucky that I hadn't killed them. Sorry, I forgot to put my make up on, I'll come out quickly." With that, she walked towards the washroom.

Naoko knew that she cried, at this moment, she truly felt that Matsumi suffered badly in the past.

In a crowd of laughter, at a distance she looked at the beautiful Tuhara Anze pulling her boyfriend, Naoko suddenly thought that she seemed strange like she was another person.

Slightly feeling Naoko's slightly depressed mood, these men whose eyes saw that no one was at this top beauty's side, they immediately swarmed at her like a piranha smelling the blood of an Amazon.

For several minutes, Naoko was completely encircled by men, in her hands were a bunch of name cards.

In order to obtain the favor of this beautiful woman, all these men displayed their skills to make her happy. In between, to some extent it was hard to avoid any conflict, for a moment, the tension increased.

"I knew you group of perverts won't let Naoko off." At this time, a woman suddenly came and coldly snorted.

"it turned out to be class leader."

“Mari you also came. I haven’t seen you for a long time.

Looking at the woman standing behind them, several men awkwardly smiled.

“You certainly didn’t want me to come. Naoko let’s go, just ignore this perverts.” The woman with a short hair and non-frame eyeglasses walked towards the middle of the crowd, holding Naoko’s hand.

“Class leader, you said too much, right? We were just talking about the old days with Naoko.” A man said a little discontented.

“Reminisce is it? Good, come talk with me, let’s cherish the memory of you deceiving several girls in school. I really miss those days.” The intellectual beautiful woman sneered.

“Uh, I....right, didn’t you have something to discuss with me? Have almost forgotten, let’s talk at that side.” The man hurriedly drew another man to get out of the way.

“You, do you also want to talk about the old days with me? I’ll accompany you for a bit.” Looking at the remaining men, Mari asked.

“I have something to do, Naoko, I must say good bye now, I’ll come to talk with you again.”

“I have something else too. Good bye, Naoko and school leader.”

In less than a minute, the men made an excuse and hastily left.

“Mari you finally came, I was waiting for you for a long time.” Naoko complained very happily.

“The editor-in-chief looked for me for a little something, that’s why I arrived late. Did Matsumi come? I haven’t seen her for more than two years.”

“She already came, she’s here.”

“Speaking ill of me is it?” Fukuhara Matsumi walked cheerfully.

“Matsumi, it’s not like that.” After sizing her up carefully, Mari said.

“Am I not more attractive than before? You’re actually the same as before. Come on, wearing eyeglasses isn’t popular anymore. Just change like me.” Fukuhara Matsumi said.

“Wearing it has already become a habit, too lazy to change. Right, this is your month’s pay, a few days ago you didn’t show up, so I forgot to give you.” Mari took out a cheque from her pocket and handed it to Naoko.

“Thank you.” Naoko received it and put it inside her wallet.

“Does Naoko help Mari with writing a manuscript?” Fukuhara Matsumi asked curiously.

“Yes, because I have more time now, I could help them translate something or write some drafts and so on.” Naoko-sensei replied.

“Well not to mention, I haven’t eaten yet, quickly let go get something to eat.” Mari said.

Following from behind, Naoko walked with Fukuhara Matsumi shoulder to shoulder and said in a low voice: “Sorry, Matsumi.”

“Fool, it’s none of your business.” Matsumi smiled as she gripped her hand.

Dining is mainly in the form of buffet, so there were a variety of high-class food.

Because the school leader Mari stood beside Naoko who was known as ‘Pervert mosquito-repellent’, there were only a few men that dared to actually disturb them. That’s why they all could eat in a very relaxed manner.

Suddenly, they saw Tsuchihara Anze with her boyfriend Maeyama Gentarō.

“Oh, Naoko, school leader also. What’s wrong, haven’t your boyfriends come? Or you still don’t have a boyfriend.” Seeing them, Tsuchihara Anze holding a wine suddenly laughed.

“Anze, you’re durnk. I’m sorry, Anze probably got drunk.” Maeyama said apologetically.

“Gentaro, I’m not drunk. Right, Naoko, we haven’t talked for a long time, do you want to talk outside?” Tsuchida Anze suddenly said.”

“Anze, are you gonna be all right?” Naoko asked, worried.

“I’m fine, come on, let go talk outside. You guys, this is just my matter with Naoko, just the two of us.” Then, Tsuchida Anze pulled her walking towards the balcony outside.

Fukuhara Matsumi was about to follow them, but was pulled by Matsuri, “don’t worry, it’s ok.”

At the balcony, the evening gentle breeze blew towards their face, even blowing up their skirts a bit.

“Naoko, do you know? Sometime, I really hate you.” Turning around, Tsuchida Anze suddenly said to her.

“Anze, I don’t understand what you mean.” Naoko said, amazed.

“In school, although you conceal yourself very well, but I know that you’re a princess of a wealthy family. You’re attractive, family also rich, but also many male students want to pursue you. Is there

anything you can't do? Do you remember Tanaka? Fukuhara Matsumi's boyfriend who I stole from her."

Looking at her eyes, Tsuhara Anze continued: "Matsumi was a genuine fool, the person that Tanaka really likes was you. But after you rejected him, he slowly accepted Matsumi. After knowing the truth, I immediately bid farewell with him, I'm not willing to be others' recycling station."

"Anze, why must you do this, do you know that you harmed Matsumi?"

"Why you ask me, I don't know, perhaps I just couldn't get used to seeing these men bleeding for you. What's so great about you? You only look beautiful, but you assume that you're all mighty. Really makes me sick. However, before long, I'll be the company heir Maeyama's wife. At that time, I no longer have to go to work every day to see smelly men. As for you, I hope I won't see your face anymore." Then, she threw the glass of wine on her hand on the ground, swaggering away.

Looking at her from afar, Naoko suddenly felt an unprecedented weary feeling well up.

Almost unconsciously, she took out her cell phone to call the familiar number.

But just then Mari and Fukuhara Matsumi came, Matsumi was the first to ask, "Naoko, are you okay, what did that guy tell you?"

“Nothing, Anze was just drunk. Let’s go back and have a sit.” Naoko smiled walking back to the hall.

“Naoko....” Matsumi wanted to ask, but was pulled by Mari.

“If she wants to talk she’ll talk, we don’t want to push her.” Mari said calmly.

Glancing at her, Matsumi nodded and also returned to the hall.

Matsumi discovered that since the talk with Anze, Naoko had become absent-minded. Several times she wanted to ask her, but was stopped by Mari. This made her feel very depressed.

Suddenly, one of the waiters came over and asked: “May I ask, which one of you is young lady Naoko?”

“I am, what’s the matter?” Naoko looked up and said.

Seeing the teacher’s face, the waiter couldn’t help but stay silent for a moment, after a while he responded: “Outside, there’s a gentleman named Gennai-san looking for you.”

“What?” Naoko immediately stood up.

“Naoko, what’s wrong?” Matsumi hadn’t seen her make such expression.

“He...came.” Naoko said very shyly, hurriedly running outside.

“Did her boyfriend come?” Matsumi watched her back and said.

“When did Naoko have a boyfriend?” Mari asked strangely.

“Let’s have a look to know.” Then, Matsumi pulled her walking towards the entrance impatiently.

Chapter 115 - Suit

“Lei, how come you’re here?”

“On the phone, your voice sounds a bit different than usual, so I come to see. What happened?”

“Lei....” Looking at his caring eyes, Naoko leaned her head tightly against his arms.

Lei Yin didn’t ask anymore, but embraced her waist with his left hand, his right hand gently stroked her hair.

Feeling his gentleness, Naoko almost fainted with happiness.

“Nao....” Originally followed her out Matsumi Fukuhara, to see Naoko being hugged by a man, managed to suppress the words in her mouth with great difficulty.

Lei Yin slightly raised his head to look, and then leaned near Naoko’s ear to say: “Your schoolmates is here.”

Hear his words, Naoko quickly turned her head to look back and saw Matsumi Fukuhara and Tadashi Mari curiously looking at them. Her face immediately turned red, unconsciously loosened both of her hands on Lei Yin.

Feeling herself being a killjoy third-wheel character, Tadashi

Mari smiled bitterly.

“Lei, can I introduce you to my good friends?” Naoko looked at him with a pleading eye.

“Of course you can.”

Naoko was a bit shy but very sweetly pulled his arm to walk toward Tadashi Mari and them.

“Masashi, this is Matsumi Fukuhara and Tadashi Mari, they are my college friends. Matsumi, Mari, he is the man that I just mentioned, Gennai Masashi.”

Matsumi Fukuhara and Tadashi Mari had no time to pay attention to Naoko’s shy expression, they were very surprised looking at them man before them.

With countless experience in reading people’s face, Mari Tadashi actually can’t see the man’s age.

The man wore a snug comfortable light gray suit, with round neck unlike the other’s who wore a tie. But strangely, such appearance didn’t give people a sense of incompatibility.

His facial features looked very young, although not the kind of impressively good looking man, there’s difficult to write difficult to describe peculiar manners.

This man looks like an 18-year-old boy from afar, but on closer look, he was actually like a 30-year-old mature man. A person with such a big age gap really made the two women a bit difficult to adapt.

“Hello.” Without wasting any time, he extended his right arm toward them.

‘Neither cold nor hot.’ When Mari held his hand and felt his hand’s temperature, those were the words that she thought.

“May I ask Mr. Gennai what is your line of job?” Matsumi Fukuhara was getting more curious about this man.

“Sometimes I will invest in securities as a freelancer.”

“Oh, can I ask you how long have you been with Naoko? Before this, I didn’t know Naoko has a boyfriend.” Matsumi Fukuhara continued to ask.

“It should be more than a month right?” Lei Yin turned his head to look at the beauty beside him.

“From that day plus tonight, altogether is one month and six days,” Naoko smiled sweetly.

“You remember it well.”

“Well, of course.”

Watching the two people whispering at each other, envy feeling rose up in Matsumi Fukuhara’s heart.

Relative to Matsumi’s enthusiastic manner, Mari appeared much colder.

She was more a rational than emotional woman. She always believes that mature attitude needs to correspond with a stable economic base. Without a proper job, a man who wallow in unstable stock market hype, can’t bring happiness to Naoko. Therefore, her favorable impression toward this Gennai fellow was now gone.

“Mr. Gennai, if you don’t mind please go in to sit.” Matsumi Fukuhara opened her mouth to invite.

After taking a glance at Naoko, Lei Yin said with a smile: “To trouble you then.”

To hear him willing to accompany her inside, Naoko excitedly clung tightly to his arm.

The beauty regardless where would always be the center of attention. When Naoko walked back to the hall, slowly, more and more eyes saw this never been taken by a man first-rate beauty who at the moment like an innocent girl, walking arm in arm in a

very intimate manner with a man.

For a time, surprise, jealousy, envy, various kind of emotions were there.

“Naoko, can you help introduce this gentleman to us?”

Several men finally can't restrain themselves came up and wanted to have a look.

Feeling the non-friendly atmosphere from these guys, if it were usual, Mari would cynically open her mouth to drove them away. But now she has no favorable impression toward this Gennai guy. Therefore, she just sat quietly not ready to say anything.

After a round of introduction, a man asked: “May I ask Mr. Gennai engage in what kind of work?”

Lei Yi told him the same answer he just said to Matsumi Fukuhara.

Hearing his answer, another man said: “As far as I know, in recent years, the Japanese stock market fluctuation is significant. Many small investors have been implicated. Don't know whether Mr. Gennai also has the same troubles?” He emphasized the “small investors” on his sentences. Other people listened took the hint to smile.

“Impact? Doesn't seem large, barely passable.

Naoko, help me get a glass of wine, okay? I am a little thirsty.” Halfway through, he suddenly turned around to Naoko and said.

“Um, you wait for me.” Naoko very gently nodded, and then stood up to walk toward the food table.

That several men saw the completely submissive appearance of Naoko, can't help but burst with envy. They never saw the school flower to treat a man like this.

When a man wanted to open the mouth to make things difficult for him, suddenly, from the side came a rich magnetic male voice, “Excuse me, are you Mr. Gennai Masashi?”

Those men looked back and saw the man turned out to be Tsuhara Anze's boyfriend, the heir to the Maeyama trading company Gentaro.

Although the several people on the scene were fairly successful, at most just a mix of supervisor or manager level. But in the business world, networking is always the most important. For the heir of Maeyama trading company, they were absolutely afraid to offend. Therefore, these people quickly made a very wide path for Maeyama Gentaro to walk in.

“Excuse me, are you Mr. Gennai Masashi?” Arrived before Lei Yin, Maeyama Gentaro asked again.

“I am Gennai Masashi, do you have something for me?” Lei Yin did not have any impression of the young man in front of him.

To everyone’s surprise, Maeyama Gentaro, all of sudden, very respectfully bowed to him and said: “I am Maeyama Gentaro from Maeyama Trading Company. I am very honored to have the opportunity to see Mr. Gennai. Chairman Sakurai once explained to us, when we see Mr. Gennai, must not be disrespectful.”

Although his words were looming, Lei Yin’s mind naturally conjured up a beautiful figure. It seems this Maeyama Trading Company is a Tokyo base Japanese Corporation purchased by Black Dragon.

“You are too kind, if you can, please give my regards to Miss Sakurai.”

Maeyama Gentaro bowed, and then said: “I will certainly convey Mr. Gennai’s message.”

“We are all guests here, do not need to be so overly courteous. Please feel free to have a great time.

“Many thanks for Mr. Gennai’s care. If there’s anything, please feel free to tell me.”

“Good.” Lei Yin nodded his head.

Maeyama Gentaro after giving him another salutation returned

to his original position.

After he left, everyone watched in amazement at this leisurely sitting on the sofa “Mr. Gennai.”

“Excuse me, but you just seem to have something to say to me, could you repeat that again?” Lei Yin asked the man who previously was about to speak.

“Em, really unexpected that Mr. Gennai actually knew the young master of Maeyama Trading Company. If there’s anything rude just now, please do not mind it Mr. Gennai.” The man hastened to say with a smiling face.

“You’re too polite.” Lei Yin dismissively said.

“I, I have some things to do, Mr. Gennai, if you’ll excuse me.” That guy who just published the “small investor theory” very embarrassingly said a sentence, then hurried away.

Mari sneered watching these men constantly making excuses to leave. She had just seen such a scenario, the last time was created by herself, but this time because of this strange man.

“Masashi, what happened to them?” Coming back with a glass of wine Naoko strangely looked at those men with hurried footsteps.

“I don’t know, they just said they have to do something, so went away.” Lei Yin nonchalantly said.

“This is your red wine, and some dishes.” Naoko didn’t ask anymore, returned to sit by his side while putting the wine and the dish on the table.

“Thanks.” He picked up the glass of wine and drank.

“Why are you polite to me.” Naoko gently said with a red face.

The nearby Matsumi Fukuhara and Mari can’t help but look at each other’s eyes for a moment.

“Gentaro, who is that guy?” After the boyfriend came back, Tsuchihara Anze asked with an odd expression.

“Anze, do not talk nonsense, that gentleman is a person who absolutely can’t be offended. I don’t care what grudges you have with your classmates, but I want to remind you, it is best not to do things that embarrassed me, or else....” Until here, Maeyama Gentaro didn’t continue his talk, just raised his glass and took a sip.

“You....” Tsuchihara Anze’s face turned pale, coldly snorted and went to the bathroom.

‘Why is it always like this, it seems that all good things will go to that woman.’ When passing near them, she gave Lei Yin and Naoko a vicious glance.

At Nine PM, the dinning was over. At this time, several people began to retreat. Naoko couple and her two friends are one of them.

“Then we go first, you guys must drive carefully.” Inside the car, Naoko opened the window to say to her friends.

“Unfortunately, I work in Yokohama. Otherwise, we’ll be able to see each other more often.” Matsumi Fukuhara a little sadly said.

“It doesn’t matter, later on, we can just call each other more often.” Naoko comforted her.

“I know, you guys quickly go.”

“Em, see you next time, Matsumi. Mari, too.”

The nearby Mari also waved goodbye.

Looking at their similar goodbye gesture, Lei Yin started the car and slowly drove.

Watching the car went farther and farther away, Matsumi Fukuhara said: “It seems that Naoko has found a good man.”

“I hope so.” After finishing this words, Mari didn’t make a sound.

“Tonight I don’t look like a kid, hoping not to embarrass you.” Driving the car, Lei Yin suddenly said.

Naoko knew he usually doesn’t like to wear a suit, tonight he deliberately wore it, entirely for herself.

“Lei, thank you,” Naoko said softly.

“Why are you polite to me.” Lei Yin smiled, returned her original words.

Naoko watched him as he drove the car.

Since together with him, every day is a very happy and fulfilling day. But these happy days would last how long?

The day after tomorrow is back to the hospital for a checkup, at that time what would be the result? She has no certainty about the outcome. Thinking about these, she became very depressed.

“What’s wrong?” Like having a sixth sense, the youth suddenly turned to glance at her.

“It’s nothing. Perhaps a bit tired.” Naoko said with a smile.

“After going back, you need to rest early. If there’s something, remember to give me a call.”

“I know.”

Chapter 116 - Scene

Watching Rumi on the playground doing the baseball's pitching practice, Lei Yin asked: "Does that kid everyday practice until late hours?"

"Yes, because of the forthcoming local area trial, only the winning team can enter the Koshien to participate in the competition. So, recently in this period of time every day have to practice." Kazumi replied.

"Then what about her schoolwork?"

"Schoolwork is fine, she's always been a good student, everyday carefully listen to the lecture and take notes. Should not be a problem. What I'm most worried about is her body, I'm afraid she will one day fall from burnout. I've tried to talk to her not to go, but she didn't listen. You know that Rumi is sometimes very stubborn." Kazumi said with a sigh.

Lei Yin didn't say anything but silently watched the engrossed in practice Rumi.

After a long pause, he suddenly said: "It looks like they finished practice."

Kazumi looked up and really saw the team began to disperse. But the bearded coach was still talking to Rumi, momentarily can't return.

“Hey, Senpai also came.” After a while, the bearded man finally let go of people. Rumi went to the edge of the playground and found Masashi was actually there, suddenly very happy.

Because usually Lei Yin frequently skips classes in the afternoon to accompany Naoko, he seldom able to accompany them together. Rare to see him herself, therefore, Rumi was pleasantly surprised.

“Look at you, sweating profusely, wipe it first.” Kazumi handed her a handkerchief.

“Thank you, Kazumi.” The kendo girl expressed her gratitude as he received the handkerchief.

“Let’s go home, today officer Maeda will come to our home for dinner, and mom should almost ready the meals. Taking benefit from association with that guy, we are in for a treat tonight.” Kazumi said with a smile.

Rumi also smiled listen to this.

Looking at her somewhat weary smile, Lei Yin couldn’t help but filled with a sense of guilt. He had cared too little for this girl.

Thinking of this, Lei Yin took the heavy book bag from her hand to hold it in his own hand.

“Senpai, I can do it myself.” Rumi quickly said.

Let’s go.” Lei Yin said with a smile.

To see the outpouring of pity look from his eyes, the kendo girl’s heartbeat suddenly quickened, feeling a rush of hot in her face.

Lei Yin was thinking of something so didn’t notice her abnormality.

The two people walked quietly. To see this good atmosphere, Kazumi tactfully didn’t make a noise.

After a while, Lei Yin suddenly said: “Rumi.”

“Yes, senpai.” The kendo girl answered with a bit of fluster.

“Originally I do not intend to interfere your school life, but promise me one thing, okay? Starting tomorrow, I want you to stop attending the baseball practice. As for the Baseball club, I’ll go tell them for you.”

Hearing his words, Rumi suddenly stopped.

Lei Yin stopped and turned to look at her.

“I’m sorry, senpai, this thing I can’t promise you.” After a brief

silence, Rumi bit her lip and said.

“Tell me your reasons.” Lei Yin continued to look at her.

“After a period of time, there will be a local area trial. Although we all know that our chance to win is small, we don’t want to give up this opportunity. Now all the members of the baseball club are diligently practicing, how can I quit at this time?” Rumi said with tears streaming from her eyes.

“Very well, I withdraw my previous sentence.” Lei Yin a bit reluctantly said, already guessed correctly that she would not agree.

This sentence completely took the two girls by surprise, never thought he would be so easy to compromise.

When Rumi haven’t had the time to smile through her tears, he said another sentence: “In exchange, while you participate in the training before this trial, you can’t go to the Kendo club to practice.”

“But....” Rumi hastily said.

Before she finished, Lei Yin interrupted her words, “No buts, these two clubs; you can only choose one. If you continue like this, before the trial arrives, you will fall sick. I will talk with Omura-sensei about this, in any case, not going to Kendo club is only temporary. This will not affect you. Unless you think practicing

with me at home has zero effect.”

“Of course not. But I feel that this is not a very good idea. Because before I go to the baseball club, I had a good talk with Omura-sensei; after I finish the practice in the Kendo Club then I go to the Baseball club.” Rumi awkwardly said.

“Don’t worry, I’ll help you deal with this thing. I don’t know how to say you are good, practicing itself is a good thing, but if because of excessive exercise you fell ill or injured, then it loses its original meaning. This matter is settled, these few days, I and Kazumi will pick you up after school.” Brimming with pampering, Lei Yin indulged her with pinching her face.

“Senpai....” Confused whether she should be happy or feel wronged, Rumi suddenly fell into his arms crying out loud.

Changchuan, don’t worry, I won’t let your granddaughter suffer any injury. Lei Yin secretly thought as he stroked her hair.

Watching the two of them hugging on the road, Kazumi’s lips curled into a warm smile.

Remembering the morning talk negotiation with Omura-sensei, Lei Yin felt depressed.

Never thought that this dead fat man really has potential as a profiteer. Although he agreed to temporarily allow Rumi not to practice, the condition was that he wanted Lei Yin to join the Kendo club.

Lei Yin, of course, did not agree. After another round of negotiation, he had to accept Omura-sensei's final request, to take two or three days per week to instruct the Kendo club members.

He's fine with teaching a person, especially teaching a talented student like Rumi; A little sense of accomplishment was there. But immediately wanting him to instruct those many people, Lei Yin felt he would suffer a headache. But there was no other way, who told him to ask a favor from other people, forcing him to compromise.

Different from Lei Yin's depressed mood, Naoko seemed to be in a good mood. She was humming a song while focusing on brewing the coffee. The corner of her mouth also occasionally exposed faint smile.

Seeing her happy look, Lei Yin couldn't help but smile.

Getting up from the couch, he tiptoed over to her.

"What happened, why are you so happy today?" Suddenly hugged her waist from behind, Lei Yin whispered near her ear.

Feeling the heat from his mouth sprayed over her sensitive ear, Naoko's body suddenly turned soft and felt weak.

To see her ear and neck skin became pink, Lei Yin knew she was moved. With a sudden mischievous impulse, he bowed his head to

latch on her small left earlobe, and finally with his teeth nibbled a few times.

“Ah....” If he was not holding her, Naoko really going to fall.

A natural born sensitive like her, if the teasing continued, it may be out of control like the last time. Therefore, Lei Yin didn't continue but put her up holding her in the middle.

Holding her soft body, the youth asked again: “Tell me exactly what happened.”

Lifted up her blushing face, Naoko gave him a shy glance and then said: “This morning I went to a doctor at the hospital for a check up. The doctor told me that my condition has stabilized, and the recovery is getting better and better, even she also felt very surprised. Maybe I don't have to leave you so soon.” Having said that, she couldn't resist but burst into tears.

Lei Yin suddenly excited and put her tightly into his arms.

When she sobbed in silence, Lei Yin loosened his true qi into her body to observe and found her qi flow in arteries and veins was quite smooth. It seemed doing so was really helpful to her.

Usually, when there are only two of them, whether it was watching TV or chatting, Lei Yin would always hold her in his arms. Naoko didn't know, he did so, besides liking her smell, the more important reason was that he needed to be in body contact

with her to deliver his true qi into his body to slowly adjust her body's meridians.

The biggest difference between Traditional Chinese Medicine (TCM) and Western Medicine is that Western medicine analyzes from the microscopic point of view, study pathology, and also to treat the living organism as a biological object.

While TCM is different. The reason it is called extensive and profound, because it is more focused on the macro perspective, according to the theories of Yin and Yang, Ruler and Ministers, and other theories to analyze the problem. Often the same illness, different TCM will have different opinions and approaches.

Lei Yin knew for such congenital heart disease, the Western Medicine is no help, and can only prolong the patient's life through some drugs. Although he had also studied the Western Medicine, he didn't consider himself better than the heart expert who treat and diagnose Naoko's heart disease. Therefore, Lei Yin cast away the traditional healing method and started from TCM. Every day with his own true qi to unblock her meridians.

Although he had previously tried to use this method to save lives, never treated congenital heart disease. Therefore, his assurance was not very big. However, through the result of this check up, it appeared that the result was pretty good.

Because each time Lei Yin delivered his true qi in steady micro-flow, so Naoko, besides to occasionally feel like being flowed with warm water through her body from the outside, she basically did not aware.

After a long time, Naoko slowly stopped the tears.

“Lei.” She suddenly let out a soft cry.

“What’s the matter?”

“I asked the doctor, she said, as long as this continues, after a period of time, even....even doing that, there will be no problem.” If her mouth didn’t attach to his ear, Lei Yin might not be able to clearly hear her last few words.

“What kind of thing?” Lei Yin let go of and smiled at her.

Naoko blushed as red as blood, didn’t dare to raise her head to look at him.

Lei Yin loved her shy look, lifted her chin with his hand, and then kissed her red lips.

Slowly, Naoko began to respond gently.

“Today the weather is good, and it is such a good news. Let’s take a walk and buy something to celebrate.

“But what about the coffee, it’s almost cooked.”

“We’ll drink it when we get back.”

“Ok.”

“Wait a minute.” When the two of them passed a clothing store, Lei Yin looked at a white dress inside a glass cabinet, and suddenly said.

“What’s wrong?” Naoko stopped, a bit puzzled.

Lei Yin didn’t make a sound, merely tried to compare the dress in front of him with her stature. After a while, he said: “Should you wear that dress it would certainly look great. Can you try it for me?”

“Okay.” Naoko blushed and nodded.

“Welcome, please feel free to look.” The two people went in, two young girls wearing short skirts uniform immediately came over and greeted very politely.

“Please help this young lady try that dress on the glass cabinet.” Lei Yin said.

“Yes, please come with me, Miss.” One of the girls led Naoko to the dressing room.

Naoko looked at Lei Yin’s eyes and followed her.

“Lei, I think part of the skirt seems a bit short.” After coming out from the clothing store, Naoko somewhat embarrassedly said.

“It is a bit short; I don’t think your legs to be even more slender than I imagined.” Lei Yin said with a smile.

“Hate, so disgusting.” Naoko smilingly swore and gently hit him.

Suddenly found the corner of his lips curled into a never seen strange smile, Naoko asked: “Lei, what’s wrong?”

“It’s nothing, let’s go back.”

“Em.” Naoko very happily put her hand on his arm.

When the two of them passed through a Community Park, suddenly came from the front four easily recognizable young punks. Among them, there are two men with hair dyed with strange colors. The other wore a lip ring and another with a tiger tattoo on his arm. These four images are definitely the classic Japanese bad youth.

Saw those people came, Naoko was very afraid. Even her hands on Lei Yin’s arm can’t help but tremble.

“Don’t be afraid, I am here.” Lei Yin said softly in her ear.

The four people walked to the front of them, the youth with a lip ring smiled ingratiatingly and said: “Miss....”

“Stop the bullshit, if you want to fight hurry up. You’ve been following us for a long time. Also, your mouth really stink.” Lei Yin interrupted the youth’s words.

The few people looked at each other in surprise.

“If you don’t want to start, then we’ll leave.” Lei Yin said while patting Naoko’s hand, then pulled her behind him.

“Since you want to die, we’re not going to be polite anymore.” The youth with Tiger tattoo in the arm mercilessly stared at him, then came to him first.

“Ah!” Before the other three even reacted, that guy inexplicably screamed, and then clutching his lower body part kneeling on the ground.

“I’m sorry, initially wanted to kick you in the stomach, who told you to grow so tall.” With that, Lei Yin put his foot on that guy’s forehead and pushed him down, the whole person lying face up on the ground.

“Hey, you guys, aren’t you going to come?” Lei Yin raised his head and looked at the remaining three people.

“Go to hell.” The three people looked at each other for a moment

and then rushed over to him.

Until this time, Naoko finally knew how Lei Yin rescued her from several students' evil intention two years ago.

The three people were knocked down to the ground by the youth like he was just joking with them. As if those three people were dummies.

Looking at the four people lying on the ground screaming pitifully, Naoko until now still has an unbelievable feeling.

“Garbage.” From start to finish, he just used his feet, because he didn't want to dirty his hands.

“Naoko, let's go.” He turned back to his previous position and calmly pulled the still staring beauty to leave.

Not long after they left, a man holding a black packaged document angrily walked over.

“How could this happen? You guys can't even beat a high school student?” The man loudly shouted.

“You....Why didn't you tell us the guy so powerful?” The guy who was kicked in the nuts said with a pale face.

“How should I know? I really don't know how you do things.”

That man sneered.

“Do not think that being rich is great, d*mn, quickly give us the rest of the money.” The young man wearing lip ring grabbed him by the collar and said.

“Such a simple thing you can’t even do, but still want money, go to hell.” The man kicked him in the stomach, kicked out his whole person. He then left without even looking at them.

Because the four people were injured, nobody has the strength to go after him.

“Why would he do that?” Not far away, in a secluded corner, Naoko puzzledly asked.

“Fool, still don’t understand? This is the hero save the beauty scenario. Although corny, it’s very effective. If I didn’t have long known he was following us from the beginning, we might fail to see such a wonderful play. You can imagine, if they weren’t beaten by me, but I was killed by them, and then when you were in your most dangerous moment, a handsome man suddenly appeared and heroically defeat the four punks; it really is an exciting scene.” Lei Yin sneered.

“I really can’t think that Hinatsu Junichiro turned out to be that kind of person,” Naoko said with a bit of surprise.

“In short, you must be careful with this person, you know?”

“I know. In the future, I will no longer take his call.”

“That’s not necessary, as long as you don’t meet with him alone. That fellow is a wolf.”

“Em.”

“Let’s go back.”

With that, Lei Yin took her to leave the place.

Chapter 117 - Exam

“Masashi, this is your tea.” Ma Fang placed a cup of tea in front of him.

“Thank You.”

Looking at the club member diligently training in the Kendo Hall, Ma Fang very sincerely said: “Since more than a month ago you came to help us guide the Kendo Club, our members’ level improved very quickly. I, on behalf of all the Kendo Club members, thank you.

“You’re too kind, in fact, I didn’t teach them anything, just correcting some of their errors. If they are not willing to accept it with an open mind, then I have no alternative.” Lei Yin said and drank the tea.

“Masashi, with your strength, even if you participate in the National Competition, you also can achieve a very good result. You don’t really think about actually joining the Kendo Club?” The Kendo Club manager asked.

“Did Omura-sensei told you to advise me?” Lei Yin looked at her with a smile.

“Omura-sensei did say so, but this is also my own wish. I really hope that you can join.” Ma Fang looked at him and said.

Seeing her sincere eyes which can make most of the guys excited, Lei Yin cursed in his heart, ‘Omura that pig, actually employs this vulgar honey trap method.’

“I’m sorry, I’m usually very busy, so do not have much time to participate in the Club. Rumi, let’s train.” Lei Yin stood and loudly said to Rumi on the field.

“Yes, senpai.” Rumi immediately replied.

Rare to see Lei Yin to find someone to practice on his own initiative, everyone immediately stopped and cleared the hall, and then stood by fully absorbed in watching the two people sparring.

‘It seems he has seen through it,’ Ma Fang revealed a relieved smile. She had told Omura-sensei that this trick is useless against that guy. If this matter were to be known by her boyfriend, they would surely quarrel.

But speaking of which, the guy is truly a freak, he seemed to really dislike being famous. What a waste of a good Kendoist strength.

Wanting to return back to think, she still stood up with the other club members, watching the two people in the field.

“Finally return to calm again.” After coming out from the Kendo club, Rumi deliberately stretched out and said.

“What’s up, kid, still unhappy about the trial?” Glancing at her, Lei Yin asked.

“No way, although lost, we have tried our best. So we have no regret.” Though she said that, her eye socket unconsciously reddened.

Lei Yin just casually mentioned it but didn’t think it could affect her so much.

After a silent moment, he looked at her and said: “If you want to cry, then cry.”

Seeing his warm eyes, Rumi could no longer hold herself, rushed over to him and then burst into cry.

“Senpai, you are so bad, I’ve tried not to think about it anymore, but you still mentioned it. I can’t accept it, I really can’t accept it, the difference is only two points. We have gone all out, but in the end, we lost. If that person was with us, we can definitely win. Those who have to cope with the University entrance exam, the third-grade club members, for this trial, also try to take the time to practice. We have really tried very hard. It’s true, senpai.” The Kendo girl cried.

Lei Yin was silent, waiting for her to finish venting out, and then said: “Although these words are a little old fashioned, since you have tried, then there’s nothing to regret. Sometimes, not only those who won the competition deserve to be happy.”

The girl lifted her full of tears face, stared at him, and after a while, leaned back in his arms again.

“Senpai.”

“What’s the matter?”

“Can you promise me a wayward request?”

“Just say it.” For the gentle and cute personality like her, Masashi was very curious about this wayward request.

“Carry me back, OK?”

“Do you feel uncomfortable?” Lei Yin looked at her strangely.

“No, I just want senpai to carry me home. Just like....last time in the Kendo Hall when I was injured in the match. Is that ok, senpai?” The Kendo girl blushed and said.

Looking at her still stained with tears little face, Lei Yin smiled and nodded.

The Kendo girl suddenly smiled. Like raindrops on a pear blossom (i.e., tear-stained face of a beauty), her delicate face was especially touching.

“Senpai.” After leaning over the youth’s back, the girl whispered.

“What’s up?”

“Fortunately, I have senpai on my side.” After a while, she suddenly said something softly.

“Kazumi is already preparing the meal waiting for you to come back. Later on, if you have some unhappy things, remember to speak out.”

“I know.”

Leaning her head on his shoulder, watching him though not handsome but has a soft side, Rumi exposed a very satisfied smile.

—

“Senpai, you are so powerful.” On the rooftop, Rumi incessantly yelled.

“What powerful, I lost. If you want anything, just say it.” Lei Yin wryly smiled.

“How could it be, you suddenly rise to the top 20. There has to be a mistake, usually never see you read any book, and almost everyday skipped classes, how could your exam results are better than mine, this is really too much.” The Kendo girl pouted her

mouth and said.

“This is the strength, but no matter what, our bet is if I can’t get to the top ten then I lose. So, big brother Rumi, I am your little brother. If you need something, please feel free to tell this little brother.” Lei Yin pretended to be serious and shook her hand.

“Hate, senior, the other are telling you the truth.” Rumi charmingly said but didn’t draw her hand back.

“Hey, you two stop playing around, quickly eat your meal.” The nearby Kazumi said.

Lei Yin and the Kendo girl smiled, and then obediently started to eat.

Watching her elder brother eating in earnest, Kazumi could not help but think of today’s exam publication results.

He did succeed in his exam, although not on the top ten high scorers, all of a sudden, he jumped to the top twenty, making a lot of people raised their eyebrows.

She had read his exam papers, most of them have very high scores, including, math, physics, and other science subjects all have perfect scores. But it’s weird, she can’t find his history paper. When she asked him, he just said it’s lost.

She calculated that, in addition to history, her brother’s total

exam score on all the subjects is only less 30 than the maximum score. Which is to say, his history score barely passed the threshold. Why was this the only subject with a bad score?

In fact, Lei Yin himself was very depressed. His thousand of years of cumulative knowledge made this high school test a play thing, which was why he confidently made a bet with Rumi.

But as fate would have it, although most of those subjects were okay, that history exam made him unable to write down the answer.

Some questions made him very angry, particularly one question that asked: Japan and Chinese 100-years war, 19th century Qing War (In China it's called "the Sino-Japanese war of 1894-1895"), and 20th-century Sino-Japanese war. In the 21st century, if Japan opened fire with China, when do you think it would happen? What would be the indirect and direct cause? If Japan won, where would it be, if lost, what would be the condition for it to happen? Try to analyze.

His grandma, what is this nonsense topic.

Lei Yin didn't bother to write lengthy refute, but with his talent in drawing that he acquired among his countless rebirths, in that exam paper, he drew a big and exquisite life-like student who gave the middle finger.

In Japan's high school exams, as long as you have, at least, 30 points on every subject, you will pass the exam. But there are more

than a dozen subjects, as long as one subject is failed, you will have to repeat the exam. Lei Yin is not an idiot who completely disregard the consequences, so, after finishing all the exams, he immediately wrote a heart-warming, absolutely can “moved” the principal into shedding cold sweat greeting letter, and put it on the Principal’s desk.

Soon, the letter really “moved” the Principal. He ignored the strong opposition from the History teacher and very strongly allowed this centuries-old “good student” Masashi to PASS the History exam.

Having this PASS result, Lei Yin although very unhappy, didn’t bother to pursue the matter further. In any case, with Rumi’s simple character, she would not really push him around as little brother.

“Kazumi, we have finished the exam. In a few days, we’ll be on summer vacation, what are you planning to do this summer?” Halfway through eating, Rumi asked.

“I’m going to use the summer vacation time to go to a cram school,” Kazumi answered.

“What, you are the first rank in the whole school, why would you need a cram school?”

“Public High School enrollment rate is very low; the exam questions are too simple. The test here is nothing. If you don’t prepare now, then in the future University entrance exam it will

be very difficult to get admitted to a Top University.” Kazumi slowly said.

“Kazumi, you’re so fierce, turns out you have long planned for this.” Rumi stretched out her tongue.

“Fool, many people have the same idea as me,” Kazumi said with a smile.

“Very well, from now on, I also want to strive, I must attend the same University as Kazumi and senpai.” The Kendo girl appeared to be in a great fighting spirit.

Seeing her with a-small-universe-exploding like face, Lei Yin couldn’t help but smile; this little girl is as simple as ever.

Summer vacation? If everything is all right, he wanted to go to Switzerland to find Amy. This was the plan that he promised the little rascal before he left. Therefore, in Switzerland, he will deliberately buy a house with a car.

Of course, Naoko would also go with him. Otherwise, he would not feel at ease if he leaves her here. He also can bring the little rascal for a summer vacation in Japan. In any case, she should not come over here, but as a tourist it’s fine.

Rumi should fond of this little rascal, with the language barrier, interesting scenes would happen when they meet and talk to each other in different language. Thinking of this, Lei Yin smiled.

“So tired, finally finished the exam.” After entering the room, Aiko tossed down her bag, totally ignoring the beautiful figure of Shimamura Asami, lying on the bed.

“Me too, as if just finished fighting.” Kogure Ryoko feebly said.

“How was your test?” Shimamura Asami sat down on the chair and asked.

“Don’t mention it, the Math and English subjects are very dangerous, I hope that spinster shows mercy, do not buckle too hard,” Kogure said with a headache.

“Little Ai, your performance has always been good, the test result should be good, right?” Shimamura asked the nearby Ai.

“Should be acceptable. I’m not sure.” Ai didn’t say with certainty.

“Please guys, stop talking about exams. Now as soon as I heard the word exam, I have a headache. How about we think about our summer vacation.” Lying on the bed Aiko turned her head and said.

“What else can we do? I can’t think of any good places to go. Why

don't we go to other places to travel? Isn't a few people organize a self-tour very popular right now?" Kogure Ryoko suddenly said with great spirit.

"Don't even think about that, with only a few of us girls, when being eaten outside nobody would know. Besides, mom and dad would not agree. Come on, think of something constructive, okay?" Shimamura Asami immediately poured cold water on her.

"If you have any good ideas, do tell." Kogure refuse to buckle and said.

"I temporarily can't think of something, in any case, the summer hasn't started. We have plenty of times to think, no need to be anxious." Shimamura said with a smile.

"Go." Kogure said with disdain.

"Everybody, this summer I'm ready to do something very important to me." The previously silent Aiko suddenly made a cryptic sentence.

"What things?" Piqued by the sentence, Kogure asked.

The other two girls also looked at her.

"I want to confess to that guy." Although flushed, she is still very firmly said.

“Good, Aiko, I support you.” Kogure immediately created disturbance and said.

“Are you sure about this?” After a while, Shimamura Asami asked.

“Yes. I don’t want to wait any longer. I must make a clear confession to that dull guy, I want him to be my boyfriend.” When the young girl spoke, her eyes seemed to exude some brilliant light.

Infected by her expression, Shimamura went to her side to sit down, and then looked at her and said: “I will also support you.”

“Thank you.” Tightly holding her hand, the girl’s eyes flashed with faint tears.

Ai stared at the seemingly a bit excited girl and suddenly felt a kind of empty feeling.

Chapter 118 - Guest

“My God, you can actually pass the exam with this drawing?” Naoko incredulously looked at that glaringly arrogant sketch.

“This exam paper I managed to get it back with great difficulty. I rarely draw a picture, do not want to leave it to those guys. This is the legendary masterpiece of drawing, you need to treasure it well.” Lei Yin said with a smile.

Imagining the expression of the History teacher when he saw this piece of paper, Naoko could not help but laugh.

Her laugh finished, Lei Yin picked up her hands and put it on his face, feeling the warm skin on her hands, and said: “A few days after this, summer vacation will begin, do you have nothing to do?”

“There’s nothing special about it. What’s the matter?” Naoko lovingly looked at him.

“In that case, this summer vacation I want to take you to Switzerland for a period of time. What do you think?”

“Switzerland?” Naoko was a bit surprised to say.

“Yes, I want to see that rascal Amy, but don’t feel at ease to leave you here alone. So I want you to come together with me. As for how long, it will depend on the situation. I also planned to bring

that rascal to Japan this summer, just consider this as her vacation.”

“Lei....” Naoko breathed and looked at him, suddenly shed some tears.

“Hey, why are you crying. If you don’t want to go, let’s just cancel it.” Lei Yin said, wiping her tears.

Shaking her head, Naoko said: “It’s not this, Lei, I, I am truly happy.” With that, she put her head on his chest and gently wept.

Naoko was really touched, the more she got along with him, the more she discovered that he is actually very gentle and considerate. He rarely spoke the words love or like, but he actually silently concerned about her. He will often keep an eye on the change of her body temperature, and emotional ups and down. When she feels cold or depressed, he will always be the first to know. He never forced her to do anything, except for that time when he told her not to rest beyond ten o’clock. She knew there were times he very much wanted her, but for her body’s sake, he abruptly bore it down.

The quiet care seemed to be just his instinct, he himself didn’t realize, but such casual gentleness was particularly impressive.

Naoko knew very clearly that if she loses this man, her life would have no meaning at all.

Looking at the unable to quell the tears beauty in his arms for a long time, Lei Yin just felt confused. He still did not understand why she would cry like that. Alas, is there any man who dare to say he completely understand a woman?

—

“Kid, why are you here?” To see Aiko and Asami standing in front of the school, Lei Yin was a bit surprised.

“I....oh, have you taken the test?” Seeing Kazumi and Rumi standing next to him, Aiko suddenly changed her words to a question.

“The test is over, did you come here just to ask this question?”

“I, I want to know what you are planning to do this summer?” Under so many people watchful eyes, Aiko could not open her mouth to say that matter.

“Haven’t decided yet. Since you’ve come, how about this, let’s go to our house for a meal, what do you think? Asami, you can also come. You guys have never been to my house.” Lei Yin said.

“Won’t it be troublesome?” Aiko a bit hesitantly said.

Lei Yin shrugged his shoulder: “Just a meal, nothing troublesome.”

Aiko inquired with her eyes toward Asami, listened to what Lei Yin said, she really wanted to go, because this would give her the opportunity to tell him.

Glancing at her, Asami nodded with a smile.

Aiko immediately chirped: “Then trouble you.”

This was the first time Aiko and Asami came to Masashi’s house. After looking around for a bit, they found the house though not luxurious, very clean and comfortable.

“Gennai, you grew up here, right?” Aiko looked at the house in a very novel vision.

“No, we moved here not long ago. Kazumi was cooking the meal, soon will finish, and then you can eat. First, drink a glass of water.” Lei Yin placed two cups of tea in front of them.

“Thank you. Then what about your mom?” Aiko asked.

“Because mom comes back later than us, so usually Kazumi is responsible for the meal, mom comes home when it’s almost dinner. In general only on Saturday and Sunday when she doesn’t go to work, can help us to cook. After a while, she will be back.” Lei Yin explained.

Hearing his mother will be back soon, Aiko suddenly felt ill at ease.

“We have to go to the bathroom.” With that, she hastily pulled Asami to the bathroom.

“Asami, you help me look, if there’s any mess in my clothes or hair behind me.” In the bathroom, the girl said to her friend.

“Rest assured, our Aiko is the most beautiful and lovely. Absolutely one hundred points.” Asami said with a smile.

“Asami, my heart is beating so fast. If his mom doesn’t like me, what to do?”

Watching the heart in flutter girl, Asami can’t help but feel a bit funny. To see her so nervous look, Asami didn’t know whether her friend was under the impression that she was about to meet the parents to discuss the marriage conditions.

With a bit pity, she took her hand and said: “Relax, just act normal. No one would refuse the beautiful and lovable Aiko.”

“If....if she refuses, what do I do?” At this point, the girl’s eyes began to suffuse with the hint of tears.

“It does not matter, as long as you said it well. No matter what happens, I will be at your side to support you.” Asami held her hand and said.

“Thank you, Asami, if you are not with me, I really don’t know what to do.”

“No, wash your face first, and then we get out together,” Asami said.

“I know.”

After the meal, Kazumi and Rumi went to the kitchen to wash the dishes, leaving Rumiko responsible for cutting the fruit from the refrigerator, while Lei Yin stayed in the hall with the two girls to chat and to watch TV.

“Hey, kid, why tonight you rarely said any word, it’s not like the usual you. My mom didn’t look so terrible, right?” Lei Yin said with a smile.

“How could she? It’s just....” Aiko retorted.

“Just what?”

“It’s nothing.” She said bitterly.

“Masashi, come help me bring the fruit.” From the kitchen on the other side came Rumiko’s voice.

“I would also like to help.” Aiko was the first one to stand up.

“No need, this is the first time you come here as a guest, wait until you come several times and say again.” With that, Lei Yin walked over to that side.

‘His meaning seems to be wanting to invite me here many times in the future.’ Watching his back, Aiko happily thought.

Secretly looking at sitting in the hall Aiko, Rumiko smilingly said: “Come on be honest, how did you meet such a beautiful girl?”

“Mom, don’t think too much, we’re just ordinary friends.” Lei Yin weakly said.

“Really just ordinary friend? But I think that really likes you. Both girls are good, it’s really hard to choose. However, I like Rumi, that’s my opinion for your reference.” Rumiko said with a sly smile.

“I will not interfere with your old lady’s daydream, I go out first.” With that, he took a tray full of fruit and walked out.

After Lei Yin came back, in the living room there were only Aiko, Asami, and Lei Yin, three people. Aiko took a deep breath and then leaned over near Lei Yin’s ear and whispered: “Gennai, I, I want to tell you something in private.”

Seeing her a bit anxious eyes and distended red face, Lei Yin nodded.

After she came to his room, he said: “You wait here for a moment, I’ll let mom know, then picked up the fruit and tea.”

“Em, I’ll wait for you.” Finally only the two of them, Aiko slowly relaxed.

After he had gone out, Aiko surveyed the room curiously.

The room furnishing is very simple, only a bed, a wardrobe, and a large bookcase with a desk.

On the wall, unlike the other normal youth, there were no wallpapers of beautiful women or artists. On the East wall, hung a very sloppy calligraphy writing. After looking for a long time, Aiko couldn’t understand what was written on it.

The most striking feature in this room is the many books that were placed in everywhere.

That bookcase is, needless to say, has no other spot to add another book. Under the bed, and on the bed all stacked with thick stack of books

Aiko thumbed through some of them but found they were all in Chinese or English. Occasionally found a few Japanese, but it was the likes of “Introduction To Deep Consciousness,” “Japan Macroeconomic Analysis” kind of book.

Perhaps the books are someone else's. Aiko can't imagine someone could have the energy to read so many books here.

Suddenly she remembered a few girls in the class said that in the room of all the boys, there would be, more or less, some movies or magazines. Thinking about this, Aiko suddenly has a mischievous thought to investigate. She would like to see if this guy is the same as the other boys.

Listened to the outside sound, it seemed that he wouldn't come so soon. Aiko repressed her laugh, walked to the desk in front of her, and pulled open the top drawer.

The drawer was unlocked, so easily opened. After pulling open the drawer, Aiko found nothing, not to mention magazine. But in the drawer, there's something that deeply attracted her attention.

She carefully picked up to take a look and all of a sudden, her whole body froze.

Chapter 119 - Indulgence

“Sorry, kid, making you wait for a long time.” Lei Yin with left hand holding the tray filled with fruit and a tea cup opened the door with his right hand.

After closing the door shut, he put down the tray and said: “Now there are no other people, say what you want to say.”

Like a robot, Aiko stiffly turned around, and then with an incomparably dry voice asked: “Where does this scarf come from?”

“Hey, kid, what’s going on with you?” Found her voice was different, Lei Yin approached her to ask.

“I ask you, where did you get this scarf?” Aiko suddenly threw the scarf in her hand on him.

Holding the scarf in his hand, the youth gently caressed.

Naoko weaved this scarf for him, strictly speaking, this was a flop. Because she thought she weaved badly, after she finished this scarf she cast it aside, not really for him. He later saw it and conveniently took it as a memento. She said when she weaved one satisfactorily then she will give it to him as a gift.

“It seems you already know. Yes, this is your sister’s hand-woven scarf. It’s not our intention to conceal it from you, but she wanted to find an opportunity to personally tell you.” Lei Yin slowly said.

“Turns out, my sister’s boyfriend is you.”

Suddenly, Lei Yin saw two teardrops dropped from her eyes along the girl’s face to her chin, and then fell to the ground, finally splashing into two little watermarks on the floor.

“Kid, you....”

“You guys are bastards!” Aiko lifted her tears stained face, swore loudly, and then pushed him, and rushed to the door to open the door and ran out.

Seeing Aiko ran out without saying a word, Asami immediately chased her out.

“Brother, what happened?” Kazumi asked.

“It’s nothing. I’m out for the night, don’t wait for me to come back.” With that, Masashi went to the backyard and pushed open the garage.

“Senpai, don’t drive too fast, be careful.” Rumi urged from the side.

Lei Yin nodded his head and then drove out the car.

Seeing Rumi’s worried face, Kazumi held her petite hands and

said: “Don’t worry, it’s ok.”

Rumi nodded, but her eyes gazed at the direction where he left.

Lei Yin went to Naoko’s apartment driving a car. When he just stopped, he saw Naoko’s anxious face standing at the entrance.

Seeing Lei Yin, Naoko immediately ran and said: “Lei, just now Aiko came back very angry and started to throw things around. What exactly happened?”

“Where is she now?” Lei Yin asked.

“I don’t know, she ran out after, she finished throwing things up. Why would she do that?” Naoko very anxiously asked.

“She knows about us. That’s why she did this. Don’t worry, as long as she’s with Asami, she’ll be fine. Let’s go inside.” Lei Yin said to comfort her.

Naoko nodded her head.

Sure enough, the room was really a mess, everywhere there were smashed things, the entire living room looked like a Typhoon has just passed through.

Lei Yin wryly smiled, “That kid temper is really big.”

After they went in, he put the junk on the sofa to the floor, and then he put Naoko up in the middle of the sofa and said: “There are many pieces of glass on the floor, it’s dangerous for you to wear a slipper here. Let me tidy up here first while you obediently sit still. Understand?”

Naoko’s eyes were red as she very docilely nodded.

“Good.” Lei Yin kissed her on the cheek, then walked to the balcony to take the broom with the garbage shovel.

Naoko held both of her knees with her hands as she watched him cleaning the living room.

Because Lei Yin is the kind of person who rarely clean his own room, moreover there are three very diligent women in his home, so basically he has not done cleaning work. It took him nearly an hour to sweep clean the trash on the floor and restore the living room to look pretty much like the original.

After washing his hands, he walked to the sofa, held Naoko up, sat down on the sofa, and then put the beauty on his thigh.

Hugging her pleasantly warm and tender body, Lei Yin said: “Let the kid calm down. If at twelve o’clock she hasn’t come back, I’ll go out and find her. Don’t worry too much.”

Looking at his pair of purer than precious gems but also deeply mysterious eyes, Naoko softly sighed and said: “I should have

guessed it. The boy that she likes is, in fact, you. Because she often inadvertently mentioned your name. I'm her elder sister, but actually failed to perceive this."

Watching her remorseful eyes, Lei Yin comforted: "I also just knew this thing from her reaction. Don't think too much about it, a kid like her is still immature, having favorable impression toward the people around her is also a very common thing. When she grow up a little, she will understand that in this world men are actually a lot."

"I hope so. I'm just afraid she will take things too hard." Naoko said with worry.

"Nothing would happen, rest assured. If you are tired, then go back to the room to rest."

"No, I want to be here," Naoko said and leaned her head on his chest.

At 11:30, Lei Yin's phone suddenly rang.

He looked at the top display and saw it was an unknown number.

"Hello, who is this?" He pressed the answer key.

"Gennai, I am Asami, quickly come here, Aiko is in trouble." Over the phone came the rapid voice of Asami.

“Just tell me the specific address.”

“What happened, Did Aiko had an accident?” After Lei Yin hung up the phone, Naoko very nervously asked.

“It’s okay, I’ll go now and bring her back. Wait till I come back.” Lei Yin patted her face and walked out.

Naoko stood in the doorway and watched as he drove away.

—

“Aiko, don’t drink anymore, let’s get out of here,” Asami spoke again to persuade her friend.

“I....don’t, I don’t want to go back, I hate there!” Aiko said out loud.

“Since you don’t want to go back, we’ll accompany you.” Youth with earrings sitting next to them said with a smile.

“You are really good, 1000 times better than....that bas....tard, no, a million times.” Aiko finished and drank the rest of the half cup of beer.

“If you want to drink, you can come to my house to have a drink. Let’s go.” With that, despite her objections, Asami forcefully

pulled her up.

“Hey, young lady, your partner told you, she doesn’t want to go back, why are you forcing her?” Another dyed blond youth stopped in front of Asami.

Looking at these three guys who entangled them from the start, Asami deadpanned: “What do you want to do? If you don’t get out of the way, I’m going to call the police.”

“Young lady, please don’t misunderstand, we just want to accompany you two to have some fun.” The last youth dressed in jeans, like a machine gun, said with a smile.

“I repeat, If you don’t get out of the way, I’m going to call the police.” Asami knew they are not good people, resolutely wanted to go.

Watching the fat prey wanting to slip away, the three of them looked at each other for a moment.

“How about this, I won’t force you, as long as you drink this glass of wine, I’ll let you go. If this time, you don’t even give us some face, then I’m sorry. Arguing like this in here, even if something happened no one would know.” The dyed blond youth suddenly said.

Asami a bit hesitantly looked at that glass of liquor he held in front of her, for a while didn’t know what to do.

Looking at her hesitation, the young man went on to say: “Just a glass of liquor, even if you drink it, you will not get drunk. Young lady, don’t test my patience.” With that, he pulled out a knife from his body and slowly played with it.

Asami’s facial expression changed, she looked at the youth and said: “If I drink this cup of liquor you’ll let us go at once?”

“Of course.” The dyed blond youth put the knife back in his pocket.

“Fine, I will drink it.” With that, Asami reached out and took that glass of liquor.

When she was about to drink that liquor, a lazy voice suddenly came: “Fool, if you drink it, you won’t get out of this bar. There’s something inside it.”

“Gennai!” Asami was pleasantly surprised to see the source of that voice.

“Who are you?” The three young men watched with surprise as the guy came from behind.

“What happened to Aiko?” Lei Yin didn’t bother the three of them, went toward Asami and asked.

“She’s drunk,” Asami answered.

“What a troublesome kid. Let’s go.” With that, he led the way at the front.

“This has nothing to do with you, quickly leave.” The dyed blond youth pulled out a knife in front of him and waved it.

“This world really has so much trash.” Before the dyed blond youth reacted, Lei Yin grabbed his holding the knife hand, put his hand back on him, and put the hand holding the knife to stab on that youth’s thigh.

“A....” That youth didn’t scream out loud, was knocked out by Lei Yin’s punch.

The dyed blond youth was right, to quarrel here, even if something happened, no one would know.

“As you can see, he stabbed himself. Why don’t you take him to the hospital, if he bleeds too much, he will die.” Lei Yin dismissively said.

Seeing his eyes, the two young men shuddered, quickly pulled the fainted dyed blond youth and ran out.

“Well, let’s go, this kid’s sister is still waiting for her at home.” With that, he picked up Aiko and walked outside.

After a time staring at his back, Asami finally reacted, and quickly followed up.

Chapter 120 - Truth

Outside, the cool evening breeze blew, Aiko slowly woke up.

“Where am I?” She felt very dizzy.

“Well....” Lei Yin didn’t have the time to speak, as Aiko suddenly covered her mouth feeling nauseated.

Lei Yin hurriedly put her down supporting her arm up.

Aiko couldn’t bear it any longer, bending down she started to throw up.

“Aiko, are you all right?” After she finished, Asami handed her the towel in her hand.

“Asami, my head is dizzy.” Aiko clutched her head while she spoke.

“Wait a minute and you’ll be fine, if you can’t drink, don’t drink.” Lei Yin said desolately.

“You....are you Gennai Masashi?” Hearing his voice, Aiko said slightly sobered.

“Well, you hear my voice.” Lei Yin sneered.

After clearly seeing his appearance, Aiko flew into rage, immediately scolding at him: “You bastard, leave. I don’t want to see you again. Go away....” She said, pushing him as hard as she can.

“Your sister’s still at home waiting for you, I’m not leaving before I take you back.”

“I don’t need you, all of you are liars. I hate you, go away, get the hell away from me.” Aiko cried a little hysterically.

Lei Yin looked at her, and suddenly put her on his shoulder, walking towards the central square.

“You....what do you want? Let go of me....” Aiko cried out in a loud voice.

Seeing his action, the nearby Murashima Asami froze for a moment, but quickly reacted, immediately following the youth.

“Quickly let me go, you bastard, I’m going to call for help. Someone save me, help, someone quickly help, save me....” Aiko without any other way, actually cried out for help.

“Gennai-san, put Aiko down first, this isn’t right.” Asami urged as she saw more and more people starting to notice them.

Lei Yin didn't utter a word and continued to act as though there was no one around, continuing to carry Aiko on his shoulder.

Seeing him acted aloof, Aiko was both ashamed and angry, and at the same time continued to call for help while repeatedly hitting his back.

Splash, Lei Yin threw the girl into the fountain at the central square.

Asami was completely petrified. My God, this guy would actually do that to a girl.

Although the water level of the fountain was only up to the waist, Aiko still swallowed a large amount of water. After getting up with great difficulty, she coughed desperately.

His action scared the two affectionate man and woman sitting near the fountain. They looked blankly at the beautiful girl and the boy standing at the side of the fountain, even though his clothes was splashed with water, he didn't care about it.

"What are you looking at, leave." Lei Yin felt extremely uncomfortable, giving the couple a glare.

They'd never seen such an evil man, their face turned pale, not knowing what they did against the man. Finally, the first to react was the young man, immediately pulling his girlfriend away.

“Gennai-san, you’ve gone too far, why did you do this to Aiko?” Asami anxiously ran to the fountain going towards her good friend.

“Awake now? If you are, listen to me.” Lei Yin looked at the young girl coughing near the fountain.

“Do you know, if it weren’t for Asami tonight, refusing those trash and dragging you out, you would have already lost your virginity. Also, your older sister is at home worrying about you, waiting for you to get back. Look at your appearance, was it such a big deal? That it’s worth doing this?” Lei Yin unemotionally said.

Asami didn’t say anything, and just held Aiko while looking at her silently.

“There’s something you don’t know. Your sister had a heart attack a few months ago, almost dying at that time. Doctors said that she might not live much longer. I ask you, did you know this? Don’t think that you’re unfortunate. There are so many people less fortunate than you. I told you this, but I also told your sister not to hide this from you. Don’t abandon yourself after only feeling a bit wronged, you ask yourself, do you genuinely care about your family?” Lei Yin looked at her eyes and said with a deep voice.

Tears streamed down from Aiko’s eyes.

She finally knew why her sister would go to bed so early every night, and why she take pills every day, although she says that it was only vitamins.

Her sister has been suffering from this pain. Thinking of this, Aiko cried.

Asami quietly held her, as she let her head lean on her shoulder.

“That, my sister...” Crying for a while, Aiko looked up at Lei Yin.

“Her condition is stable now.” Lei Yin said dismissively.

Hearing his answer, Aiko felt slightly better.

After staying silent for a moment, Lei Yin said, “Wait for me, I’ll get the car.” With that, he turned around and walked away.

Looking at him get further away, Aiko said, “Ami, I really didn’t know....” She said while crying.

“It’s unimportant, come on out.” With that, she helped Aiko out of the fountain.

After getting out of the fountain, Aiko suddenly asked with a very light voice: “Ami, you say....does he hate me?”

Asami was wiping her face with a handkerchief, but hearing her words, she couldn’t help but stopped and reply: “No, if he really does hate you, he wouldn’t have saved you, but you should understand that he likes your sister. Maybe I should have told you

clearly, that he usually acts like you're his younger sister when he's with you."

"Actually, I already knew that, but I've been deceiving myself. But, I, I really like him very much. I feel so exhausted." As if she was trying to drain off a lifetime of tears, the young girl continued to cry.

Murashima Asami had never seen Aiko this vulnerable. Not knowing how to comfort her, she just held her quietly.

At this time, light shone from behind them, and it turned out to be the youth driving back. Asami knew that the car was Aiko's sister's.

Concerned about her friend, Asami went along, back to Aiko's house.

In the car, Aiko didn't say a single word, as if she was a lifeless doll.

Arriving at the apartment door, Lei Yin said to her: You two go in. I'll also have to trouble you to give the key back to Naoko." As he said that, he handed the keys to Asami.

Asami took a look at him and then took the keys.

"Gennai-san." When he turned around to leave, Aiko suddenly called him.

“What’s the matter?” Lei Yin looked back at her.

“No matter what you think, I’ll still tell you, I....like you.” The young girl’s face reddened all over, as she said firmly.

Looking at her, Lei Yin said languidly: “Little rascal, you fall in love too easily. There are many men in this world, many of which die randomly being smashed down by a signboard. Go back and have a good night’s rest, and when you wake up, you’ll find out, that Gennai Masashi is, in fact, nothing, he’s just a self-righteous asshole. So, you don’t have to do anything stupid for him, you know?”

“I....When did I do anything for him? You’re right, he’s a jerk, moreover a big jerk.” The young girl said while clenching her teeth.

“I know. Go in quick, your sister has been very worried about you. I’ll be off.” With that, he turned around and walked away.

“Humph! Fellow putting on airs.”

Looking at him, the young girl scolded as tears flowed down, making Asami finally relaxed.

Under the light, Naoko gently looked at the young girl sleeping soundly.

It was already a long time, that the two sisters slept on the same bed, talking intimately with one another, like tonight.

From the younger sister's mouth, she had understood it all. Including how Lei saved her, after that, the young girl told her about her increasingly deep affection towards the youth.

Why did they have to fall in love with the same person?

Thinking of this, Naoko sighed softly, easily switching off the desk lamp

Gently touching her sister's pure white forehead, Naoko put a letter at the end of the table, and then brought a bag of luggage, standing up and walked towards the door.

When she walked out of the door, she saw that the sky was still dark. She looked at her cellphone and found from the time shown above, it was still around 4:00 AM.

After opening the garage door, she calmly sat on the driver's seat. And after a while, she started the car.

When the car drove out of the entrance, she suddenly noticed a person with a slender stature standing in the middle of the road. Under the shine of the headlight, she saw the figure as well as the

person's shadow becoming longer and longer.

Opening the car door, the youth sat silently.

“Lei, you...” Naoko looked at him surprised.

Looking at her baggage at the back seat, the youth interrupted her words, “It’s so late, where are you going? Don’t tell me you’re camping out.”

“I....want to move out temporarily. It might be nice for Aiko.”

Looking deeply into her eyes, and after a while, the youth raised his right hand touching her left cheek, said: “I’m relieved. I was afraid that you’ll have an idea like one of those dramas, pretending to have a great exit, and then leaves. Thinking of your character, I thought it was possible that you would make such a foolish decision.”

“So you’ve been waiting here for me?” Naoko’s eyes instantly widened.

Lei Yin nodded and smile: “It seems like I was thinking too much.”

Suddenly tearing off all her buttons, Naoko turned around and threw herself to him, embracing him.

“I’m sorry, I really wanted to do so. However, the thought of being apart from you, made my heart hurt so much. But ever since I was young, I’ve given everything to Aiko, because she is my most important younger sister. But this time I can’t do it, I just can’t....” Naoko wanted her whole body to dissolve into his body.

After she returned to normal, Lei Yin a little angrily said, “Who told you to do that, what do you take me for?” With that, he slapped her pretty jade-like hip.

“Ah!” This palm was fierce, Naoko couldn’t help but groan.

But before she could call out, Lei Yin slapped her again.

“Ah....” Her tone was very soft.

When Naoko thought that the youth was going to slap her the third time, Lei Yin actually slowly rubbed her hips with his hands.

“Ah....” As she was sensitive, his actions were no less stimulating than before. Naoko was ashamed to find out that in her heart, she really didn’t want his hands to stop.

Suddenly feeling more and more wet than he anticipated, the youth showed a meaningful glance at the beautiful lady, strangely look at her bosom.

Lifting up her bright red face, he said: “Next time you act unreasonably like this again, it won’t simply be just a spank.”

Knowing that he had found out her current predicament, Naoko-sensei didn't dare to look at his eyes. Only clinging to his back, deeply shrinking down into his arms.

"The day after tomorrow, go see a doctor to see the result, this way, I'll be able to stroke you." Lei Yin smiled bitterly.

"Un." Naoko softly replied.

Taking a deep breath, Lei Yin said: "Let's go back, it will be just us two in our house."

Hearing his words, Naoko couldn't help but tremble in his arms.

Chapter 121 - Cafe

Looking at the small groups coming together, happily talking about summer vacation, Lei Yin having his back on the wall revealed an indistinct smile. Being a student really was good, doesn't need to worry about life problems, not only that, they also have two huge free vacations.

"I'm sorry, senpai, for keeping you waiting." The vibrant kendo girl first went towards him. Rumi then revealed a smile at his back as she slowly came.

"I didn't wait long, let's go." Lei Yin stretched.

"With great difficulty, I managed to wait for summer vacation, but unfortunately, I'll have to go back to Hokkaido," Rumi said a little depressed.

"Your parents haven't seen you for a long time. Certainly, they want to have a look at you and see if you've become fat or thin. However, they should be rest assured, after you came here, they haven't seen your good appetite. Kazumi takes credit for this, for making you fat and plump." Lei Yin pinched her cheeks while smiling.

"Senpai's always laughing at others." Rumi blushed to say.

"The day after tomorrow we'll take you to the airport, at that time don't cry." Lei Yin fondly squeezed her small nose.

“I won’t, in any case, we’ll be able to see each other next semester, only senpai has to call me frequently.” She was very fond of his intimate action at heart very much, the young kendo girl pulled his hand acting like a spoiled brat.

“Good. Moreover, I’ve bought some tea and several bottles of liquor, bring these back to your family as souvenirs.”

“Many thanks, senpai.” Without being polite, Rumi readily thanked him.

“Let’s go, we still have to go to the supermarket to do our grocery, tonight Rumi will make meals to your liking.” Touching her hair, Kazumi walked towards Lei Yin standing in front of the school.

Thinking that she wouldn’t see him for the whole summer, the kendo girl’s eyes turned red again. Looking at the back she saw him being bathed under the sunlight, immediately she quickly ran up, tightly holding his hand walking together.

—

“Miss, your eyes are really good, this only came out yesterday. This is the latest design that ‘Dianne’ made.” A saleslady wearing a uniform warmly introduced the product.

“I want to try it.”

“The changing room is on that side, please come with me.” The saleslady said well-mannered.

“Thanks.”

In the changing room, looking at the mirror, Naoko blushed.

This underwear seems a bit too much, I wonder what he'll think about it?

Imagining him seeing her put on this set of underwear, Naoko felt that her whole body became hot.

“Please wrap it.” In front of the desk, Naoko-sensei said to the saleslady.

“Thank you, will you pay in cash or credit card?” The saleslady asked.

“Credit card.” Naoko took out a credit and handed it over.

Handing over the credit card on the saleslady's hand, Naoko revealed a gentle smile on her face.

After coming out of the underwear shop, she looked at the time, it was 3:00 pm.

Remembering what he had said yesterday, that he was dropping off someone at the airport, she thought that he probably wouldn't come today. Thinking of this, for a while she couldn't think where she'd go. Finally, she arrived at a coffee shop, sitting there to rest.

Shortly after going to the coffee shop, a red sports car stopped in front of the entrance. A quite handsome young man walked out from the vehicle and then entering the coffee shop.

"Hello Naoko, didn't think that we'd meet this quickly." Hinatsu Junichiro smiled as he walked in front of the table where Naoko was sitting at.

"Hinatsu-san hello, you wouldn't by chance tell me that you just happened to see me, right?" Naoko said a little desolately.

"I specially came to see you." Hinatsu Junichiro sat in the chair opposite of her without consulting anyone.

"What matter did you come find me for?" Naoko looked at him.

"I don't know if I'm just oversensitive, but recently I think Naoko seems very cold towards me." Hinatsu Junichiro smilingly said.

As Naoko was just about to speak, suddenly, a female student wearing a maid outfit came and placed a cup of coffee in front of Hinatsu Junichiro.

“Sir, this is your coffee. Please enjoy.”

“Thank you.” When Hinatsu Junichiro spoke, his eyes were actually looking at the outstandingly beautiful woman opposite of him.

After serving him, the girl got out of the way, allowing Hinatsu Junichiro to continue talking to Naoko: “Naoko, do you really have no interest in me? It should be very clear to you why I’ve been looking for opportunities to approach you.”

“Hinatsu-san, I’ve told you clearly when I was at Nagoya. I have a person I like, besides him, I won’t fall in love with anybody else. That’s why, please don’t look for me again, all right?” Naoko said sincerely.

“You say that you have a person you like, are you referring to the high-school student Gennai Masashi?” Hinatsu Junichiro sneered.

Hearing his words, Naoko’s complexion immediately changed, “Hinatsu-san, did you have someone investigate me? I am very disappointed with your behavior.” She then stood up, turning around, preparing to leave.

“I want to know, if the head of the Hasebe house find out that her own daughter was actually living together with a high school student, what do you imagine he’ll think?” Hinatsu Junichiro looked at her while he was sat down.

And sure enough, just as he had expected, Naoko stopped.

“Are you threatening me?” After a while, Naoko asked.

“I didn’t mean that, Naoko, I just care about you. This fellow is only a high school student with no money nor power, and his mother is just an average worker. Do you really think he can make you happy?” Hinatsu Junichiro said slowly.

She’s smiling?

“Hinatsu-san, I don’t want my father to know about this matter, but I’m also not afraid that he finds out about it. That’s why you can do whatever you want to do. I must take my leave now.” With that, she picked up her bag and shopping bag filled with stuff, and stood out of the seat.

This time, Hinatsu Junichiro was really starting to panic, he never expected that this woman would be so unyielding. Looking at her killer body gradually get farther, and then a light flashed in his eyes.

“Naoko, please wait a minute, I have to apologize to you.” Just as Naoko was about to go out of the door, Hinatsu Junichiro ran and stopped in front of her.

“Please excuse me, Hinatsu-san,” Naoko said in front of the man.

“Naoko, I’m very sorry, I apologize. Can you just give me a chance to say a few words? I assure you, I will not mention it to the head of Hasebe.” Hinatsu Junichiro wouldn’t yield an inch.

Seeing his fully sincere expression, Naoko started to hesitate.

“I just want to say a few words, after that, I won’t disturb you again. Ok?” Seeing that she shook, Junichiro immediately added a few words.

“All right.” Naoko finally nodded.

Back at the seat, Hinatsu Junichiro turned towards the waiter standing not far away, said: “Please give us a cup of coffee.”

“Please wait a moment.” The waiter answered.

Hinatsu Junichiro turned his head back to Naoko, said: “Naoko, I know feeling of such a thing can’t be forced, since you really like that person, I can only give you my blessing. However, later on, can we still be friends? I don’t want to lose you as a friend.”

Hearing him say this, Naoko immediately felt relieved. She smiled saying: “You are my younger sister’s schoolmate’s cousin, so we’re friends.”

“Thank you, Naoko.” Junichiro looked at her and said.

Seeing the hot look in his eyes, she felt a little uncomfortable.

Fortunately, at this time a woman holding a cup of coffee went over and placed two cups of coffees on the table. With that, she was relieved.

After the woman left, Hinatsu Junichiro held up the coffee cup in his hand and smiled, “To celebrate us becoming friends, let’s toast?”

“You’re such a joke.” Unable to bear to rain on his parade, Naoko had also raised her cup of coffee and slightly hit his cup for a moment, then slowly took a drink.

Seeing her drink it down, Hinatsu Junichiro showed a faint smile on his lips.

Naoko remembered what Lei Yin had said, Don’t be alone with him, she then stood up and said: “Hinatsu-san, I have somewhere I need to go to.”

“I’ll also go, I’ll take you back.” Hinatsu Junichiro stood up.

“No, my car is parked in the vicinity.” Naoko turned him down and said.

Hinatsu Junichiro didn’t force her, but said: “Good, let’s always hang out, ok?”

“You’re joking.” Naoko placed the money on the table, then taking her stuff walked towards the entrance.

Hinatsu Junichiro followed behind her.

Looking at him ride his sports car not wanting to talk to her, Naoko relaxed. She didn’t think much as she walked towards her car.

Still a few meters away from her car, when suddenly she felt a little dizzy, and felt her body lose more and more power.

What’s happening, is my illness starting up again? But why isn’t my heart in pain?

Taking two more steps, she thought about what was happening to her as she felt her dizziness and weakening was getting more and more serious.

Finally, she arrived in front of her car with great difficulty. Touching the blue car, she thought that she was quite tired, as her whole body was constantly sweating.

Lifting her heavy right hand, she took out the cell phone in her pocket, then looked for his number while her fingers trembled.

She just saw his name, when all of a sudden, a hand snatched the

cellphone from her hand.

“Naoko, what’s going on with you? Are you okay?” With one arm around her waist, She heard a familiar male voice that she didn’t want to hear.

Looking at his face unable to hide the grin on his face, Naoko’s heart suddenly felt cold.

“You.....in the coffee...drug?” Naoko looked at him weakly.

“I don’t understand what you’re saying? It seems like you aren’t feeling too good, relax, I’ll bring you to my house to rest.” Hinatsu Junichiro strengthened the pronunciation of the two words ‘My House’.

Naoko mind immediately became blank.

Seeing that she slowly fainted, Hinatsu Junichiro showed a self-satisfied smile.

Because he was afraid that he had been seen, he hurriedly opened the front seat of the red race car and placed her inside, he then rushed to the other side and sat on the driver’s seat.

After closing the car door, he looked at her tender and incomparably beautiful appearance, his face started to distort with excitement.

Bitch, I said that I'll play with you one day.

Suddenly he saw her mouth move as if to whisper something. Curious, he leaned his ears.

“Lei....Save....Me....”

“Lei? Not Gennai Masashi? Well, no matter.”

Without wasting any more time, Hinatsu Junichiro quickly started the car and drove away.

Chapter 122 - Nightmare

As if waking up from a very scary nightmare, Naoko slowly opened her eyes.

She felt as if her whole body being pressed by a very heavy thing, so heavy that she can't even move a finger.

Her head was still a little dizzy, a bit like the hangover feeling.

Three minutes later, a trail of tears silently ran down from her eyes.

She clearly remembered the things that occurred before she fainted, especially that devil-like face.

Seeing her clothes were different than the one she wore before, her heart was broken. A deep sense of despair covered her whole soul.

Lei, I'm sorry, I'm not clean anymore.

Like suffering a heart attack, Naoko felt a crushing pain in her heart.

I'm such an idiot, a hopeless fool. I should have listened to him, he had told me not to talk with Hinatsu Junichiro alone. Why I didn't even have a bit of vigilance.

Naoko deeply reproached herself, wishing she could immediately die.

She now knew, when one in an extreme grieve, one couldn't cry out loud. Although the tears kept pouring down, she was unable to send out her voice.

She was like a wounded reindeer, tightly curled up the body with sorrow.

Not long after, she heard the sounds of footsteps coming from outside the door, and then, the door was opened.

Hinatsu Junichiro came over and put a hand on her forehead to check her temperature.

Naoko finally broke out, she suddenly turned to grab that hand and maliciously bite down.

That hand's muscle was very strong, but she deeply bit into it. When she tasted the liquid full of flavor, she has the pleasant sensation of revenge.

Suddenly, his other hand gently stroke her face. That strange touch unexpectedly made her has an indescribable feeling.

“Fool, I'm Lei Yin.” A clear and familiar voice sounded in her

ears.

At that moment, Naoko could hardly believe her ears. She unconsciously loosened her tightly biting teeth to look at the owner of this hand.

It's not Hinatsu Junichiro, it's him, it's really him!

When looking at his pair of deep and clear eyes, Naoko almost got into a shock.

—

“Really? Hinatsu Junichiro didn't....that on me?” Naoko closely looked at his eyes and asked.

The right hand gently stroking her back, Lei Yin kissed her face and said: “You are my woman, of course, I will not let people take advantage of you. In fact, there are some things you didn't know, I've arranged a few people to protect you around the clock. Only when I'm around you, they will temporarily leave. When Hinatsu Junichiro made you get on the car, the person that I arranged to protect you has actually been following from behind. On that same day, when Hinatsu Junichiro drove through a no man's area, they intercepted him. And then they saved you. That's it.”

“Then why are my clothes being replaced? Lei, I beg you to tell me the truth, okay? Please don't lie to me.” Naoko said while crying.

“You this fellow didn’t even believe my words. Listen, I’m the one who changed your clothes. Because your original clothes were wet with sweat, so I helped you to change. Forget it, even if I go on, you will still think I’m lying to you.

Fool, you are a woman, can’t you feel something if you have been done by a person? Go look at your own body at the bathroom and you’ll know.” Lei Yin a bit reluctantly said.

Hearing what he said, Naoko immediately came to her senses. Just too excited, even such a simple thing she was unable to think of.

Can’t manage her shy, she quickly went to the bathroom.

Ten minutes later, she came out red faced.

Seeing her happy expression from the angle of her eyebrows, which can’t be concealed, Lei Yin opened his arms with a smile.

Naoko full of shame walked over to sit on his lap.

“I’m sorry, letting you frightened, I should’ve got rid of that guy.” Lei Yin said, kissing her temple.

Thinking about the previous thrilling experience, Naoko can’t help but cringe.

Shaking her head, she tightly held the gauze on his right hand, feeling guilty.

“Lei, I’m sorry. It must have been very painful, right?” She said while bursting into tears.

“I’m fine.” He gently stroked her hair.

Hearing this, Naoko cried even more.

Previously, when he was being bitten, he instinctively wanted to unleash his true qi to his hand, but because he was afraid that would hurt her mouth, he had to bear down hard.

“Although I was bitten, I also sort of took advantage of you. Naoko, your body is so beautiful.” In order to distract her attention, Lei Yin suddenly said a sentence in her ear.

Sure enough, after hearing this words, all of Naoko’s exposed skin turned pink.

Chapter 123 - Desire

In an old house, several men were talking, an unconscious man lying on the floor in front of them.

“How is he?” Lei Yin coldly looked at the lying on the ground Hinatsu Junichiro.

“Master, he hasn’t woke up till now.” A tall, strong man next to him replied.

“This time, it’s thanks to you, if not you, this guy would succeed.” Lei Yin turned his head toward the several men.

“Master is too kind, this is what we should do. What will master want to do with this person?” That man asked.

Lei Yin was silent, just quietly walking to Hinatsu Junichiro’s side, and then put a hand on his head.

While the several men were puzzled, suddenly, two lines of blood slowly oozed out of Hinatsu Junichiro’s ears.

“Put him back in the car, and then make it look like a traffic accident. This guy is already an idiot, there will be no trouble.” Lei Yin said dismissively.

Those several men’s heart turned cold, and immediately went

over Hinatsu Junichiro to pull him up and tow him away.

“Master, we go first.” That tall, strong man bowed and said to him before leaving.

“Mm, you’ve worked hard.”

After those several men left, Lei Yin stepped into the bathroom, opened the tap, and slowly washed his right hand.

Regarding this depraved beast Hinatsu Junichiro, Lei Yin originally wanted to castrate him and then send him to those double plug club letting him taste those perverted XX men’s taste. But, considering that as long as the guy didn’t die, he would one day going to find Naoko to take revenge. Moreover, this guy is a millionaire, if he really kills him, it will draw the attention of the police, so he finally decided to make him an idiot, too cheap for him.

However, no matter how many years, he still doesn’t like this hands-on feeling.

—

When Lei Yin used the key to open the door, he saw Naoko in an official Kimono kneels at the entrance stair tenderly looking at him.

This is the first time he saw her appearance in Kimono, Lei Yin

couldn't help feel his pair of eyes shone brightly.

“You're back,” Naoko said as she put the slippers on his feet.

After changing the slippers, Lei Yin asked her: “What happened? Why it's not the same as usual?”

Slightly lifted up her light makeup face, Naoko lovingly said: “Lei, today let me serve you well, okay?”

“How would you like to serve me?” Lei Yin asked with a smile.

Naoko blushed, and after a while, she took him by the hand and said: “The dishes are ready. Let's eat while they're still hot.”

After walking down the hall, he really saw the food and wine ready at the table.

After Lei Yin sat down, Naoko said: “Wait a minute.” With that, she went into the kitchen.

After a while, she came while holding a bowl of warm water.

“First wash your hands, okay?”

Lei Yin smiled and looked at her, and then nodded.

Naoko put both of his hands in the bowl and carefully, gently rubbed.

When she washed his hands, Lei Yin slowly appreciated her single-hearted devotion movement.

After wiping his hands with a towel, she looked up and said: “Lei, your hands have been washed clean.”

But no sooner had she finished speaking, her blooming cherry lips were sealed up by the youth opposite her.

Because the two people were separated by a bowl filled with water, Naoko was afraid to move, and only gently responded.

“You’re not going to eat?” Lei Yin saw only a pair of chopsticks, turned around to look at the blushing kimono beauty.

“I already ate. These dishes are prepared for you.” With that, she lowered her head to pick up a bottle of wine and fill the glass in front of him.

Glancing at her, Lei Yin drank that glass of wine in one gulp.

“Don’t drink too much, there are many dishes you need to try, okay?” Naoko whispered and filled his glass again.

Like a gentle wife, Naoko knelt beside him and carefully wait.

After the tableware had been tidied up, Naoko said to the youth sitting in the hall sipping a glass of tea: “Do you want to take a bath now?”

Lei Yin thought and nodded: “Okay.”

“Wait a minute, I’m going to help you put in the hot water. Also, the bathrobe has been placed on the bed.” With that, she turned and walked into the bathroom.

Watching her back, the youth revealed a thoughtful eye.

Soaking in the steaming bath, Lei Yin felt all the pores are opened, very comfortable.

At this time, a sound of knocking suddenly came from the door.

“Lei, I....help you rub your back, okay?” After that knocking sound came Naoko’s shy voice.

“Come in, the door is unlocked.”

After a while, Naoko wearing a large bathrobe quietly walked in.

Although the bathroom is filled with steam, Lei Yin can still clearly see her flushed face.

“Didn’t you say you want to help rub my back, why don’t you come?” Lei Yin propped his hand on the edge of the tub.

Hearing his words, Naoko finally slowly walked over.

Lei Yin very cooperatively turned back toward her.

Naoko with trembling hand held the towel and gently wiped his back.

Suddenly, he turned around and grabbed her hand, “Do you want to take a bath together?” Lei Yin smiled a bit evilly.

“I....I have washed in the afternoon.” Naoko was full of shame completely afraid to lift her head even a little bit.

“What a coincidence, I also have just washed.” He stood up from the bathtub.

Naoko quickly closed her eyes.

Lei Yin picked her up by the waist and then lowered his head to kiss her closed eyes.

“Lei....I, I will help you clean....your body, okay?” Naoko bit her lips and gently said something.

“No need, we’re going back to the room.” With that, he walked out of the room while still holding her.

Lying in his arms, Naoko felt her whole body melted, and can only tightly attach her face against his chest.

Walking a short distance to the master bedroom, Lei Yin applied his power to evaporate the water on his body.

Gently putting the beauty on the bed, Lei Yin reached out his hand to release her hair.

Watching the luxuriant hair shy beauty, Lei Yin caressed her face and praised: “Naoko, you’re so beautiful.”

Naoko slowly opened her eyes and soulfully looked at him.

“You really do not have any regret?” Lei Yin put his hand on her towel.

She didn’t speak, just looked at him with infinite tenderness.

Lei Yin couldn’t bear anymore and kissed her red lips, while his right hand gently pulled off her towel.

Although this was not the first time he saw her body, because yesterday he was in too much of a hurry, he didn’t take a closer

look. Under the shine of light, Lei Yin carefully looked at the soul-stirring beauty before him.

Sensing his gaze, Naoko trembled, and closed her eyes tightly. But even so, she didn't shrink up her body, but stretched it as far as possible to let him watch.

Knowing that she was really nervous, Lei Yin flicked his middle finger backhandedly, a wisp of wind flew to the light switch beside the door, switching it off. The room suddenly became dark.

In this dark environment, Naoko finally began to relax, her body slowly stopped shaking.

At this time, Lei Yin's two hands each held her delicate foot, playing with them. After a while, both hands traced her as smooth as the finest Satin skin slowly moved upward.

Although she had prepared for this, when he was playing her feet, Naoko's whole body became stiff. Both fear and expectation complex emotions continued to impact her nerves.

When the two hands were on her knees, Naoko instinctively clamped her legs. Her mouth can't help but groan.

By this time, Lei Yin no longer moved his hands upward, but gently put her upside down, pressing his face on her lower body.

“Naoko, now it's only 8 PM, it's 12 hours from dawn. The Big Bad

Wolf is going to eat the Little Red Riding Hood little by little; you will slowly experience it.” With that, Lei Yin’s hands began to move.

The whole room began to echo Naoko’s more and more helpless charming moan.

—

When Naoko woke up, her eyes immediately saw on her right-hand side Lei Yin smilingly looked at her with hands resting behind his head.

Before her shyness even shows up, he suddenly held her in his arms.

Listening to his strong heartbeat, Naoko felt a serene mood.

“Still hurt?” Her ears heard his voice.

Naoko felt her face flushed, after she nodded, she quickly shook her head.

“Right now....what time is it?” She asked in whispered voice.

“2 PM.”

“It’s actually so late,” Naoko said with a bit of amazement.

“Hungry yet? Let’s go out to eat.”

“Em.” Naoko held his waist and casually said.

Touching her slippery skin with his left hand, as well as her quite curling buttocks, Lei Yin couldn’t help but have a wave of impulse.

Sticking together with him Naoko immediately noticed his reaction and suddenly blushed.

“Forget it, let’s just wait for a while and then go out. I think you are quite delicious.”

“Ah, no....”

Chapter 124 - Situation

It was already the fifth day of summer vacation, apart from returning home every day to tell them he had come back, Lei Yin almost always run to Naoko's side whenever he has time.

He wasn't a young boy who didn't understand anything, at heart wasn't a morally nobleman.

But perhaps because Awei died early, and in addition to being dead for ten years, he hadn't felt a woman in more than a decade. Moreover, the main reason, was that Naoko was simply a true obsequiously natural stunner. If not for taking her illness into account, Lei Yin would have even be unwilling to let her out of the bed for even a minute.

In contrast, with Lei Yin's careful watering these past few days, it goes without saying already that Naoko could cause crimes with her stunning beauty. The gap between her brown and the corner of her eye exudes a kind of mature woman atmosphere, and just by showing her back, it would intoxicate any men, even with Lei Yin's cultivation it was also a bit difficult to control himself.

"Lei." Bending down in his arms like a lazy cat, Naoko acted like a spoiled brat calling for him.

"What's the matter?" Lei Yin replied, his right hand continued to move slowly going inside her night gown.

"I need....to return and take a look at Aiko. Please, don't do this

again. Ah...people are already....saying not to.” Naoko pitifully looked at him.

“I can’t do anything about it, who told you to be this attractive? Right, what did you just say? Once again.” Lei Yin lowered his head and kissed her on the forehead.

“I want to go back and see.....Ah no, don’t do that....” Her sobbing voice grew weaker.

After a while, she let out her last violent moaning chirp, Lei Yin slowly pulled out his fingers which were dripping wet, and then placed it in front of his nose to smell it a bit.

“Don’t!” Seeing his action, Naoko’s body shook in embarrassment, stretching out her left hand, she grasped his fingers not letting him continue smelling it.

Feeling his wet finger with her hand, her whole body turned red just like a shrimp.

Taking pity on her, Lei Yin kissed her red lips, and said with a gentle voice: “You go back and have a look at that little rascal, I’ll send you back.”

“Lei, thank you.” Forgetting about her embarrassment, Naoko raised her head and looked at him lovingly.

“Fool, thank you. Let’s go take a shower.” Lei Yin hugged her

waist as they went to the bathroom.

Naoko's face was red. Although she already has such a close relationship with him, her feeling of shyness still didn't diminish.

"I forgot to tell you, I really like your smell." Lei Yin suddenly smiled and evilly said in her ear.

"You bastard...." She couldn't bear hearing him anymore, so she gently pinched his fist and pushed his chest.

Seeing that Naoko had entered the apartment's front door, Lei Yin conveniently turned on the radio in the car.

Listening to a somewhat boring talk show, Lei Yin had almost fallen asleep.

The reason it was almost, was because he was awakened by the noise emitted from his cell phone.

"Hey." Taking a look, he casually answered the phone.

"I know; I'll meet you as soon as possible. No matter what their condition is, don't agree with it for the time being, but you also can't refuse them, stall them off. Wait for me to get there, let's talk about this again later."

After five minutes, Lei Yin sternly hung up the phone.

After switching off the radio, he opened the middle compartment of the car and took out a packet of smoke. Picking up one inside, ignited it, and then took a look at the window of the silent scenery outside.

After half an hour, Naoko finally walked out from the apartment.

Looking at her good mood, Lei Yin said: “Was the little rascal all right?”

Naoko snuggled up against his shoulder and said: “Um, it seems like she’s back to normal. She also told me that she’s going with a few of her schoolmates at the countryside to play and will be back in a few days. Looking at her like this, I feel relieved.” She then gently relaxed.

“I’ve said it before; after a period of time, she’ll be fine. You always like to worry too much.” Lei Yin fondly kissed her.

Feeling his gentleness, Naoko unrestrainedly burst into tears.

“Lei, I’m afraid, really afraid, these days I’ve felt like this isn’t reality as if I’m in a dream. I’m afraid that this feeling of happiness is only a dream. If this is a dream, I would never want to wake up from it.” She said as she cried on his chest.

Lei Yin didn’t say anything, and instead picked her up on his lap, and tenderly hugged her tightly in his arms.

In the very quiet car, listening her lover's quiet but strong heartbeat, Naoko wished that time would stop forever.

—

Walking down the hall, Lei Yin saw Kazumi sleeping on the couch, with the TV turned on showing a program that wasn't funny at all.

After turning off the TV, he gently picked her up and walked to her room.

Helping her take off her glasses, when Kazumi all of a sudden woke up.

“Brother, you're back,” Kazumi said while rubbing her eyes.

“Sorry to wake you up.”

“No, I just accidentally fell asleep while watching TV, did you eat yet?”

Lei Yin discovered that the just woken up Kazumi's calm and shrewd appearance was a bit different, apparently look a little dazed.

“I've already eaten. Mom?” Lei Yin asked as he sat on by her bed.

“Maeda that guy brought her to see a movie. Unfortunately, you didn’t see her tense look, picking a dress for half an hour. I really give it to her, they’ve known each other for so long, but they’re still so shy with each other.” Kazumi said with a smile.

Feeling like he hadn’t had a good talk with her for days, Lei Yin stroked her hair and said: “Didn’t you enroll for cram school, when will it start?”

“It will start in two weeks, without Rumi these days, I don’t know how to spend my time,” Kazumi complained.

“Studying diligently is good, but schoolwork isn’t the most important. It’s summer vacation now, you can call a schoolmate and spend time with them outside. You know?”

“Brother, you’re getting more and more long-winded, always like to preach,” Kazumi grinned as she leaned her head on his shoulder.

“Who told you to become my younger sister, this is the privilege of being the eldest child. Also, give this credit card to mom for me.” Lei Yin handed her a credit card from his pocket.

“This credit card is to help mom right?” Kazumi took it and looked at him.

“I deposited a sum of money in it, the password is her birthday.”

“Why don’t you hand it to her yourself?” Kazumi asked curiously.

“Due to a little thing, I’ll be going out of town tonight.” Lei Yin thoughtfully replied.

“What? You’re going to go out, for how long?” Kazumi sat looking at him.

“I don’t know, it might take longer this time.”

“How long will it take?” Kazumi pursued to ask.

“I don’t know how long.” Lei Yin said.

“Brother, you? Exactly what happened?” Having never seen him show this kind of expression before, she asked worriedly.

“Nothing, just something personal, don’t let your thought wander off. If Rumi calls looking for me, tell her I’ll be back soon. Relax, everything’s fine. Don’t show such face.” Lei Yin pinched her face with a smile.

Looking at him for a moment, she suddenly threw herself into his arms and said in his ear: “Brother, you must come back safely.”

“I know.” Lei Yin gently stroked the back of her hair.

Lei Yin like a ghost stepped into the kitchen, watching intently Naoko cook something, he felt this scene was very warm. Indeed, someone waiting for them at home was simply a blessing.

“What are you cooking?” Lei Yin held her waist and said gently.

“Ah!” Naoko was shocked, the ladle in her hand fell off.

Seeing this Lei Yin immediately caught it, and then conveniently placed it on the chopping board.

“Hateful, are you a cat? Why don’t you tell me when you’re back.” Naoko looked at him charmingly angry.

“Didn’t you hear my voice when I opened the door. What are you cooking?” Lei Yin looked inside the pot.

“You’re flying somewhere again, so I wanted to make you something before you leave,” Naoko replied.

“You’re so good.” Lei Yin said as he kissed her right cheek.

“It’s nothing, simply just making something to eat, that’s all.” Hearing his words, Naoko blushed.

Really love her shy and charming look, Lei Yin couldn't help but kiss her again.

“Annoying.” Naoko scolded in a low voice and then leaned on his chest as she continued to cook.

After Lei Yin finished eating, Naoko carefully wiped his mouth with a handkerchief.

“I'll cook a little more? I'll be quick ok.” Naoko said to him.

“Don't, I can't take the plane with a full stomach.”

“I'll tidy up the tableware, I'll be back soon.” With that, she picked up the tableware on the table and brought it back in the kitchen.

After drying her hands, Naoko went out of the kitchen and saw Lei Yin watching TV, but she knew that he was actually thinking.

Naoko went to his side, sat down, and laid her head on his lap.

Stroking her luxurious hair, Lei Yin said: “Naoko, if I don't come back later in six months. You.....don't have to wait for me. All right?”

Naoko looked up at him, and after a while, she gently shook her head.

“You are my first man, and will be my final man. If you don’t come back in 6 months, I’ll wait for you for two years. If you don’t come back in two years, I’ll wait for you for ten years, if you don’t come back in ten years, I’ll wait for you for a lifetime.” Her voice is as gentle as ever, but was actually filled with painful perseverance.

“You really are a fool.” Lei Yin sighed, carrying her on his lap, he tightly hugged her. Tightly hugging her as if putting her inside his body.

“Lei, even if you don’t come back it doesn’t matter, as long as you’re safe, it’s enough. After enduring the pain, she still couldn’t bear to cry finally.

“I promise you that I’ll certainly come back to you.” Seeing her tears continuously flow, Lei Yin thought that a part of his chest was in pain.

“We’ve reached an agreement, so you must come back earlier.” Naoko wiped her tears and forced a smile.

Gently wiping away her tears with his hand, Lei Yin looked her in the eyes and said, “I know you have many questions, but I fear that you won’t bother to ask me, so I’ll tell you now, I’m going to save a person that I need to save.”

Before he could finish, Naoko suddenly pressed down his lips with her finger.

“Lei, you don’t have to tell me.” Then, for the first time ever, she took the initiative to kiss him.

After a long time, the two lips finally separated, Lei Yin took out a small box from inside his pocket. After opening, inside was two simple-designed, but very comfortable-looking couple ring.

Putting it on her finger, Lei Yin said with a smile: “Fortunately, it just fits, otherwise, I’d be troubled.

Naoko now knew on the day when they were in the car, why he had tied her finger with a line, was originally used to measure her finger.

“Come on, you.” Lei Yin smiled and placed his hands in front of her.

Naoko blushed as she picked up the other ring inside the box, placing it near her lips and kissing it, then carefully put it around his finger.

After she helped him wear the ring, Lei Yin carried her and walked towards their room.

On the wide double bed, Naoko enthusiastically and sorrowfully responded to him as if she never wanted it to end.

Feeling more of his taste, even when she was exhausted, she kept wrapping herself tightly around him.

Feeling her strong sadness, Lei Yin from the beginning was gentle gradually became wild.

In the entire room, Naoko's moan vibrated unceasingly.

After several consecutive peaks, finally, they fiercely climaxed, and Naoko couldn't move anymore.

After cleaning the traces of her climax, Lei Yin tenderly took her in his arms.

"Good, close your eyes and have a good night's rest." Lei Yin kissed her while she tried hard to open her eyes.

After one look at his eyes, Naoko finally couldn't bear it anymore as an intense sleepiness overwhelmed her, slowly closing her eyes, and then fell into a deep sleep.

Seeing Naoko's beautiful and tranquil look as she was sleeping, Lei Yin felt a rising burst of strong sense of responsibility.

Fighting for her, no matter what he must come back alive.

Being reincarnated so many times, it wasn't the first time Changan called him on the phone and talked about the situation.

But today, after finishing his talk with Changan, he suddenly had a strange feeling.

Although this feeling was strange, he didn't feel strange at all.

Every time he had this feeling, not too long, the body he was using would "retire".

Not to say that this feeling in itself will lead to an accident, but it just acts as an alarm device, warning him in advance that he would soon "change shell."

In the many times he had reincarnated, it had been tested. He had tried to avoid the devastating consequences that may arise, but in the end, always fall short. Later, he just let the so-called nature takes its course.

He doesn't believe in fate, but this time, he was forced to believe that something was controlling his fate that even he couldn't avoid.

That's why, just like his previous deaths, he placed his hundreds of millions of dollars in the Bank of Switzerland, in addition to the investment in securities which all belong to "Gennai Masashi," the money under his name was divided into two, one is given to Rumiko, while the other was deposited into Naoko's account.

But as for Rumiko's share, the amount of money she was given

was not even a fraction of Naoko's. Not that he was eccentric, but in order to avoid Rumiko to think that it was dirty money, he had only placed a part of the investment into her account.

This time, it was different, for Naoko, he must come back alive at any cost.

Looking at the time, in about an hour he needed to board the plane. Lei Yin gently went down the bed.

After getting dressed, Lei Yin arrived at her bedside, deeply looking at her.

"I'll certainly come back. Naoko, I love you." Ever since Lei Yin had been reincarnated this was the first time he said such phrase.

Then, he kissed her red lips, and then went out of the room peacefully.

After Lei Yin left the house, Naoko who had been sleeping suddenly opened her eyes.

"Lei...." She bit her pillow and wept in a low voice.

Chapter 125 - Search

New York's Chinatown, a famous large Chinese community comprised of several streets, is also the world's largest overseas Chinatown. On the street, in the restaurants, inside the shops, in the crowded area, the people all speak the vernacular, as if one is standing in Hong Kong's Temple Street. This scene, to those overseas Chinese, is indeed very familiar and convenient.

Now it's around 1:00 AM, in a three story high building East of Chinatown, the light is actually still lit. Every now and then someone can see a shadow in the window walking back and forth.

In the basement of this building, Changan was like in meditation, sitting on a chair without moving. The tea placed on the table beside him is already cold for a long time.

Suddenly, a few rhythmic metal percussion sound echoed without warning.

Changan's eyes flashed, immediately went to the front of the large wooden cabinet filled with debris.

After forcing open the lock, he explored a bit, and then pried open the wooden floor that already partially broken, revealing a metal bezel with a keyhole.

Changan took out a key from his body to put it inside the keyhole, and then he used his hand to lift, lifting up this whole block of metal.

“How long exactly that kid hasn’t cleaned this passage, his grandma, made me catches a lot of spider’s web.” Lei Yin called out from the opposite side as he came out from the channel under the bezel.

“Master has worked hard. If I remember correctly, the last cleaning should be three years ago, after that he moved out.” Changan repressed his laughter to help Lei Yin get off the sticky Spider’s web that covered his body.

“This is your contingency escape place, and should occasionally be cleaned.” Lei Yin found a chair to sit down.

Changan followed after him, gave him a cup of tea, and also sat down.

After drinking the tea, Lei Yin said to him: “Give me the detail about what had happened.”

“Yes, master. Two days ago at night, little Rey was invited to attend an annual gang rally. But on the way there, he was ambushed, two drivers with five bodyguards all died in the cars. Two cars exploded and burned beyond recognition. Four hours after this happened, I received a phone from those guys.”

“There was no witness?”

“We saw two gunned down tramps at the scene. They should be

the so-called witnesses.” Changan wryly smiled.

“What was the police reaction to that?”

“They thought it was a gang shoot out, so now they send people staring us all day.

“His subordinates were actually killed, and he was forced into captive, I really don’t know if that kid is getting weaker or the other side is too strong.” Lei Yin sneered.

“Please master, don’t get angry, the other side has planned for this, the matter can’t be entirely blamed to little Rey.

“I know, did you hear his voice on the phone?”

“Yes, they just let him say two words. But from those two words, according to our gang in-house custom code, translated to two words, ‘men in black’ and ‘island’.”

“Men in black in these words is unnecessary because we should have guessed it, but the island word actually has some use. This should mean he is now on an island. However, he shouldn’t know the exact location. What conditions are those guys set out?” Lei Yin put the teacup down.

“The list of all members of Black Dragon, the entire Black Dragon Industries and all the internal data. They told me explicitly, as long as we finish the formalities of the property rights’ transfer, they

will immediately release the people. They need us to cooperate in order to show our sincerity.” Changan heavy sound ended.

“It seems they just want to control the Black Dragon, not trying to overthrow it. Understandable, after all, it is much more convenient if you can control a deep-rooted force, such as Black Dragon than to prop up a new gang. Who is the recipient of the property rights?”

“A US brokerage firm called Lyle. I’ve checked, that company was only recently registered. The boss is a US man named Robert J Johnson. He is a veteran with an incredibly clean record. It’s like he build the company by saving a dollar at a time. The staffs, including the cleaners, consist of only five people.” Changan said, didn’t know whether to laugh or cry.

“It’s the worst kind of shell company I’ve ever heard. If one can find out anything from there, I might as well go home to retire. Don’t say these, I remember you said before that a few years ago, you put a gadget on Little Rei’s clothing, what about now, still useful?” Lei Yin looked at him.

The thing that Lei Yin said is actually a small transmitting device, similar to the tracker. But unlike the tracker, the signal of this device is sent as a repeated transmission, with the farthest receiving distance in about 200 km. Although it has such a long distance reception range, due to the battery problem, the device can only send the signal every half an hour, and the battery must be replaced every month. The rings that Changan and ReiLi usually wore is actually this thing.

Changan-ReiLi is the principal of the Black Dragon, in addition to being assassinated, being kidnapped is a very likely thing. So, in order to prevent this situation, Changan has called people to develop this stuff.

Hearing Lei Yin's question, Changan pulled out a map from a bookcase and came over.

“Master, the last time they called is less than four hours ago, according to little Rei code word ‘Island,’ I immediately sent someone to secretly search the Islands near New York. Finally, we intercepted his signal near this ‘Heart Island.’ But strange, when I sent people to go there to receive the signal again, the signal is gone. There are only two possibilities in this, one he is in a confined space, the signals can't pass out. The second is the worst case scenario, that is, his signal was discovered and destroyed.” Changan's expression seemed to be very serious.

“It's useless to keep on thinking, right now the only way is to go to the Island to make sure. The Dark group people are ready?”

“I've called them on standby. Master want to take action now?”

“Of course, this matter can only be fixed by doing a battle to force a quick end. Hurry up, on the road you can slowly tell me about this Island.” With that, Lei Yin stood up.

“Yes, master.”

On top of the continuously swaying yacht, Lei Yin carefully watched the Island in front of him with a binocular.

Right now is late at night, plus there was no moon, leaving the entire Island seemed like a mass of black. Even with Lei Yin eyesight, he probably can only see its outline.

Putting down the binocular, Lei Yin sighed. This is his action that he most unsure of in decades. Besides some little knowledge of the opposite party, he actually knew nothing of their internal situation or their distribution of strength. In contrast, although the Black Dragon is hiding in the dark, after all, it has existed for many years, plus there are frequent expansion these recent years, the others may had some general understanding about them. When the enemy is in the dark and yourself is in the bright, the situation is quite dangerous.

But, however unsure he was, he must save that boy. Who told him to let the boy call himself master.

Now the only advantage they had, was that the other party might not know they've already started to act. If they can catch the enemy off guard, they might be able to succeed eventually.

Looking at the rising sea-level with waves that were getting higher by the minutes, tonight seemed to be windy.

Lei Yin turned to Changan and said: “Did you really decide to go with me? Don’t forget, if little Rei and I didn’t come back, someone has to preside over the general situation.”

Also dressed in waterproof clothing, Changan shook his head and said: “Master, if this is like before, I might stay. But after knowing your experience, I suddenly realized something. No matter if the Black Dragon still exists or not, it’s all the thing outside the body. Even if we’re gone, the Black Dragon is dissolved, the following brothers will still survive. The Black Dragon is an underworld organization, not a justice organization, if people want to mess with the outlaws, let them mess with it. In any case, those government officials are not going to sit by and do nothing. Then what the f*ck do I need to care? Therefore, while my body is still active, I want to do things that I want to do.”

Watching his calm smile, Lei Yin knew that further advised is useless.

Touching the outline of the ring on his finger under the glove, Lei Yin said: “Gentlemen, let’s start.” With that, he put the breathing tube, carried the oxygen tank, and first to jump out of the water.

After him, Changan, as well as more than 20 Dark group members, went underwater.

Different from the windy and high waves on the sea, under the sea, was actually very quiet.

Swimming about a kilometer or so, the more than 20 people finally arrived on the beach side of the island.

After determining there was no one near, Lei Yin with the other people went into the woods on the isle.

After hiding the oxygen tanks, waterproof lenses and other things people began to change their attire and put out their pieces of equipment from the waterproof bags.

When everyone got ready, Lei Yin briefly inspected, and then led them to walk to the center of the island.

Walking for almost a kilometer, Lei Yin discovered that, along the way except for a few shabby wooden houses, there were no traces of human habitation on the island.

Did we guess it wrong?

After another half a kilometer walk, he suddenly stepped on a rectangular thing. He picked it up to take a look, it turned out to be a canned box. Beside that, there were also a few similar things.

After smelling the can, Lei Yin whispered some sentences: “It seems like those guys did come here. This canned food is opened today.”

Changan went up to him and said: “Master, it has been half an hour, but I haven’t received the signal from little Rei transmitter.

Could they have evacuated from here?”.

“I don’t know, now we can only continue to search. I hope they are still here.” With that, Lei Yin threw away the can and continued to walk.

Chapter 126 - Entrance

Touching the highly visible tire marks on the ground, Lei Yin and Changan looked at each other.

Changan nodded, Lei Yin followed suit to stand up, waved his hand, and went along that tire tracks on the road.

After walking about a kilometer or so, the tire tracks disappeared in front of a very large cave.

“Master, we want to go in?” Changan whispered.

Lei Yin shook his head, “This is obviously a base, and this cave is the main entrance. Inside there must be full of cameras, and we have so many people. We have no way to enter through this unless they all fell asleep.”

“What should we do then? If we don’t go in, there’s no way of knowing if ReiLi not inside.” Changan showed a worried expression.

“It doesn’t matter. Such a big place like this is impossible without the vents; we can go in through the vents.”

“Then we’ll immediately split up to look for a vent.” Changan nodded and said.

“Wait a minute, let me give it a try to find it first.” With that, Lei Yin took off his gloves and put his hands on the ground.

Five minutes later, he opened his eyes and smiled.

Seeing his smile, Changan knew he had found it, although it was unclear how he did it.

Lei Yin with the other people arrived in front of a hill behind the cave.

He pointed to the above, and other people immediately understood. Then, each of them took out their respective climbing tool, ready to climb.

Lei Yin glanced at his watch, now is 4 AM, will soon dawn. They must successfully enter before dawn.

After signaling Changan and the other team members, he first climbed up.

Because the hill is abnormally high and steep, it took almost half an hour before all the people climbed up.

After taking and wearing the infrared glasses from his pocket, Lei Yin noticed in front them was full of invisible infrared beams.

Everyone carefully skipped or avoided those beams. This was the

most crucial time, as long as someone accidentally bumps the beam even a little bit, the people inside will immediately notice their invasion.

Seeing everyone successfully avoided the beams, Lei Yin brushed aside the hanging weeds before him with his hands, revealing a downward slope of a nearly one-meter square vent.

Time is running out, Lei Yin didn't say anything, with hands and feet, he propped on both side of the vent's wall and began to crawl.

After climbing to the top, Lei Yin saw the vent was divided into several ways. He then chose to continue to crawl to the right.

The team members also followed behind him.

After crawling for quite a long time, Lei Yin finally reached a room. Seeing the inside of the room from the gaps on the vent, he saw the room was not very big, only a bed with desk, with a notebook placed on it. On that bed, a bulky man was sleeping soundly.

Finally seeing a person, Lei Yin gently removed the bezels from the vent and then jumped down like a cat.

Arrived at that man's bedside, Lei Yin's hand moved like a blur, jabbing several of the man's acupuncture points.

After finishing that, Lei Yin slapped him in the face.

That man suddenly woke up.

Seeing a figure before him, he suddenly scared out a cold sweat. He wanted to yell, but unable to. He wanted to move but found his body as if not belong to him, no matter how hard he tried, his body didn't react.

This cannot move and cannot speak feeling of terror, almost made him mad.

In the dark, Lei Yin can clearly see the fear in his eyes. He slapped him again.

“I can let you speak, but if you dare to yell, I'll immediately kill you. If you hear me, blink your eyes twice.” Lei Yin said in English.

The man just looked at him blankly.

Seeing him like that, Lei Yin elbowed him in the stomach. The man immediately hummed out “ah” sound.

“I'll say it again, if you hear what I just said, blink your eyes twice.” Lei Yin said coldly.

The man immediately blinked his eyelids twice.

After he jabbed the man twice, Lei Yin asked: “Now you can talk.

First, answer me, who are you?”

“I....” The man opened his mouth and was surprised to find that he could talk.

“Answer me, who are you?” Lei Yin asked again.

“I....My name is George Cornell, a researcher here. Who are you people?” He saw two people jumped down behind this man.

“What kind of research you’re doing here?”

“The research and development of Biological cells anti-rejection agents. I’m just one of the members of the research group.” The man called George stammered.

Seeing him this way, Lei Yin pressed the bedsheet over his mouth and then ruthlessly punched his stomach several times.

To see his pained expression, Lei Yin took the bedsheet out of his mouth and said: “Don’t give me a half-assed answer, I don’t have the patient.”

“It’s true, I’m just a fellow researcher who researches this kind of thing, really none of my business,” George said, almost crying.

“Why are you studying this stuff, don’t tell me is just used as drugs for organ transplants. You don’t look like such a caring

person.” Lei Yin heard some hidden clues.

“They....they want to add something else in the human body. In order not to cause rejection, they called me to research this stuff. However, the side effect of the drug is very big, and can’t be used on the average person. I really only know so much, don’t ask me this again.” George called out.

Lei Yin covered his mouth, “Who told you to shout? Do you want to die?” After saying that, Lei Yin sent out another fist.

“Do you know where’s the man that your people caught two days ago?” Lei Yin asked.

“I don’t know, I’m just a researcher, everyday all the time in the lab. If they caught someone, I really don’t know.”

Looking at the way he was afraid to die, Lei Yin knew he shouldn’t be lying. Having had no time to care about their experiments, Lei Yin continued to ask: “Do you know where’s the place where they usually put the people they caught in? Do you have the sitemap here?”

“The sitemap is on my computer.”

With a wink from Lei Yin, Changan immediately took the laptop on the table.

“Show me the sitemap.” Lei Yin released his acupuncture points,

then put the notebook on his body.

George searched the file on the computer with trembling hands, after a while, he showed the sitemap to Lei Yin and the others.

“Call everyone down, let them remember this sitemap well. Whether we can escape or not will rely on this.” Lei Yin said to one of the Dark team members.

“Yes, sir.” That person immediately

In less than three minutes, the room filled with more than twenty people. George looked stunned.

“What are these few red places?” Lei Lin referred to the position on the image.

“I don’t know, they just told me those are restricted areas, and if we enter without authorization, we’ll be executed on the spot.”

“What do you think the most likely place that is used for keeping a person?” Lei Yin asked.

“I....I don’t know.”

“His grandma, is there anything that you know?” Lei Yin asked as he punched him again.

Too lazy to care for him, Lei Yin said to his people: “You guys remember this sitemap well.” With that, he gave them the notebook.

“Master, this is such a big place, if we search the room one by one, it would be a waste of time,” Changan said.

“I know. That’s why I want us to split the search. By the way, how many bombs that we bring this time?”

“Each of us has three, which added up to nearly 70,” Changan replied.

“Good, you look for those obviously important room. For the so-called restricted area, especially send out a few. Set the time for detonation at 8 AM. But you also need to think about a good escape route, do not engage if you don’t have to. Whoever found ReiLi first, immediately send out a signal to inform, I’ll immediately rush over. Good, let’s split four people per group, and make it quick. Changan, you also go.”

“Yes, master.” Changan immediately led several people to climb up the vent.

“Move when you can remember the sitemap clearly. I don’t need others to follow, you guys go ahead.” Lei Yin said to the rest of the people.

When everyone left, Lei Yin caught George by surprise, letting

this big man died in his own bed without a scar.

Putting the notebook back to the table, Lei Yin began to adjust George position. After he made it look like euthanasia, he also followed to climb up the vent.

Because the control room isn't marked on the sitemap, he has to search like the other people. In order to find ReiLi, he needed to find the control room and occupy it as soon as possible, so as to avoid being found.

In the ventilation tunnels, Lei Yin moved toward the suspected control room according to his memory of the sitemap.

After nearly 15 minutes of crawling, he came to the room, looked down from the vent, and saw seven or eight large cabinets stood on the room. It seemed that this was just a place to store files, not the control room.

He didn't want to stay long, immediately crawled to another suspected room.

His luck was quite good, as he arrived at the second suspected room, sure enough, he found the control room.

Looking down from the top, he saw two very tall white men. One of them was sitting in front of the monitor platform, asleep. The other one was looking at "Playboy."

Lei Yin gently broke the exhaust fan baffles, then stretched out his right hand to flick. A wisp of wind flew and hit the nape of the man looking at the magazine. The man's neck crooked as he fainted.

After jumping down from the vent, he stepped in front of the monitoring station, and casually jabbed his hand several times at the sleeping man. Then, he carefully watched the images on the dozens of surveillance monitors one by one.

Finally, in one monitor screen, he saw the tied up on the bed ReiLi.

Saw that kid, Lei Yin breathed a sigh of relief.

After waking up the man that just looking at the magazine, and some additional coercing, Lei Yin, from this man's mouth, knew in which specific room ReiLi was.

Over the radio, Lei Yin informed Changan about ReiLi's position. After knowing that, Changan immediately rushed to save the people.

So far, the progress seemed to be going well, just hoping they didn't make a mistake. But, without knowing why, after coming in, Lei Yin always had an unsettled feeling.

Too late to think at this point, after killing the two people, Lei Yin hid a time bomb at the bottom of the monitoring station and

set the time. Then he put the control room on the deadlock by putting the cabinet against the door.

After doing all these, he hurried back to the ventilation pipe and crawled to ReiLi's room.

"How is this kid?" Jumping down from the vent, he went over to Changan and asked.

"Master, little Rei seems to have been injected with a drug, no matter how hard I call, I can't wake him up," Changan replied.

"First, we need to get out of here. You carry him." Lei Yin said to one of the Dark team members.

That member nodded and immediately put ReiLi on his back.

When they were out of the door, Lei Yin suddenly felt all his fine hair immediately stood up.

"Get down!" He exclaimed while pulling down the nearby Changan.

A burst of scream sounded from behind him. One of the team members, having no time to crouch, was swept by a row of bullets, and blood wildly spurted out.

The bullets kept coming like a migratory locust. The entire

entrance was like a hornet's nest.

"D*mn it, this is a trap." Lei Yin lambasted a sentence, hurriedly pulled the unconscious ReiLi looking for a place to cover.

At this time, a strong light lit up from the outside. A powerful light illuminated the room they were in.

"Mr. Shen, surprisingly we met so quickly." A man with a megaphone said from the outside.

"Master, he is the man that spoke on the phone," Changan said to Lei Yin in low voice.

"Try to delay him, I'm going to look for a way out of here." Lei Yin said.

Changan nodded, and then loudly said: "Is this your hospitality?"

That man smiled and said: "To a guest, we, of course, offer our hospitality. But for those mouses that silently drill, then it's hard to say. Of course, Mr. Shen is our important guest; please speak out your mind."

Changan glanced at Lei Yin who came to the door.

Under that harsh glare of the lighting, Changan only saw a slightly obese figure on the second floor above. And in the front

stood rows of men in black with guns.

“Using a bright light to shine the face of the guest is how you entertain a guest?” Changan said calmly.

“I admire your courage, Mr. Shen.” The man on the second floor clapped his hand. The lighting on the room was suddenly turned off, leaving only the original few fluorescent lamps.

At this time, Changan saw that the man was 50-something years old Caucasian, with slightly bald head, and dressed in a white suit.

He seemed indistinguishable with ordinary middle-aged men on the street. Never thought such an ordinary man is actually the leader here.

“Then what about those who come along with me?” This was the thing that Changan most concerned about at the moment.

“Just a bunch of mice that want to sabotage, all have been dealt with by my staffs.” Hearing his answer, not only Changan, even Lei Yin felt a burst of heartache.

All of them were the elite of the Dark group. The effort and time spent on each of them are incalculable. Words from the underworld were that, they are definitely the gold medal killer in the underworld. Now, all of a sudden, lost more than twenty, it really is the largest losses of the Black Dragon in recent years.

“I want to know, how did you know that we will come tonight?” Changan quickly restored his calm and asked that man.

“In return, I would like to know how did you get here? This one really make me wonder.” The man asked.

“Since you said that we are guests, shouldn’t you give us the preferential treatment? I would like to hear your answer.” Changan took the initiative to say.

“You really are good at doing business, Mr. Shen. Very well, I’ll tell you. Come out.” When he said the last sentence, the man clapped his hands.

Before long, a man stepped out from behind those group of men in black.

To see that man, Changan’s pupils immediately contracted, “You’re the one who betray us?” He didn’t conceal his murderous intent on his tone.

“I’m sorry, Mr. Shen, I was forced to.” That Dark group member said as he lowered his head.

“Understand now, Mr. Shen? When you began to move, this person has notified us in advance. You must be wondering how I make him betray you, right?” The man said proudly.

Changan didn’t say anything, just kept staring at that Dark group

member.

Seeing this, the man smiled and then pulled out a tube-like thing from his body.

“18th, bark like a dog for me, then this thing will belong to you.”

That Dark group member looked up to see the man at a glance, saw the test tube in his hand, his eyes suddenly sent out a strong longing look. Changan had never seen that kind of look before.

“Woof, woof woof....” In Changan’s surprised eyes, that Dark group member actually barked like a dog.

The man proudly smiled.

“You must be very surprised, Mr. Shen.” The man said.

Changan was indeed very surprised, though the Dark group members are his and ReiLi’s subordinates, each is a very proud elite. If they order them to bark like a dog, they’ll immediately mutiny. Exactly what made him became like this?

It seemed like the real culprit is the man upstairs. Changan looked up at him.

“Seeing that you are the guest, I’ll answer your second question now. Do you know what’s in my hand? No, you should not know.

This is called T5, our latest researched drug. Originally, we develop this as a cell filtering agent. But later on, after testing, we found a very interesting phenomenon. This stuff is five times stronger than the addiction power of heroin. Each test subject will need it like crazy. Unfortunately, it has a side effect, that is, if long-term use, it will greatly reduce a person's intelligence. If not for your group member that is too stubborn, I really don't want to use this kind of thing. However, this also has an advantage, people can buy heroin everywhere, but you can only find the T5 here. So, I don't worry someone will betray."

Changan very sadly looked at that Dark group member that was still posing like a dog.

"Well, Mr. Shen, then, let us discuss the issue on how we can cooperate." The man smiled like a gentleman.

"Go back and talk to your mom." Suddenly, a voice sounded, followed by something being thrown at those men in black.

Chapter 127 - Breakthrough

Before the explosions sounded, Changan immediately returned to ReiLi's captivity room.

"Changan, come quickly." Lei Yin from the bathroom on the right yelled.

Changan immediately ran following the source of that sound.

Once in the bathroom, Lei Yin added: "Quickly cover your ears, there's going to be explosions here."

Just as Changan covered his ears, suddenly, from the outside came the sound of an earth-shattering explosion. Blasts of air flew into the room rolling out everything, even the few men in the bathroom felt dizziness and tinnitus.

"Quickly come with me." Not long after the explosions happened, Lei Yin immediately rushed out from the bathroom.

In the room filled with dust, five people got out from the big gap that was blasted open by the explosions.

"General, you want to kill them?" A refined looking man next to a man dressed in a white suit asked.

"Except for Shen or ReiLi two people, kill all the others. As long

as we catch one of the two, that is enough. I will let them become my dogs.” The man in a white suit sneered.

“Master, what do we do now?”

Changan suddenly heard the sound of ReiLi, turned to take a look, only to find that ReiLi actually followed behind him. His whole face was swollen like a pig, evidently he was awakened by Lei Yin’s gigantic and quick slap in the face.

“Now we have been encircled by wolves, the only way out is to blaze a new trail to survive. We can’t trust the sitemap anymore, who knows if they still have some traps. Now we just need to break through the main entrance, if we can snatch a car the odds of success would be much bigger.” Lei Yin continued to run as he replied.

He originally thought about pretending to cooperate with that man, but to see that man’s means, he knew that person is very difficult to deceive. If that person forced them to take that drug, then it really worse than death. So, he finally decided to make a forced break trough.

“I’m sorry, Master, Changan, I’ve implicated you.” After a moment of silent, ReiLi said something.

“At a time like this, you said these words, what’s the use. Don’t worry, I’ll beat you up after this. I’ve just notified the outside brothers on the boat to come immediately and kill. This is a life and death situation, just hope they will come in time.”

Five people ran through the huge space, along the way continued to shoot the men in black that came at them, it was really lively.

Perhaps because of the influence of the drugs, those men in black recklessly rushed to their fires like crazy. In this shootout, these several people's path was blocked every now and then. Because these several people's hand grenades were not many, only when the shootout was too concentrated did Lei Yin order them to throw out one or two. But even so, it was not long before they almost threw all their grenade. Finally, without any other way, they had to use the fast ticking time bomb as they threw their last hand grenade.

For a time, the sound of explosions sounded again and again in the entire base, and the base appeared like it was about to collapse.

These few people, along the way, shoot every human in their sight. ReiLi with the other two have never played such a vigorous battle, it was very exciting. Guns were scattered everywhere on the ground, which they conveniently picked to use. Therefore, they didn't have to worry about running out of bullets.

To see from the monitor screen, the few people continued to make a breakthrough, the man dressed in the white suit turned ugly.

"Only five people, but they actually able to put the entire base upside down like this, are all our people waste?" He slammed the table full of anger.

“Sorry, General, I also can’t imagine they would be so stubborn. I have ordered all our forces to concentrate on the entrance, as long as they get there, they will be surrounded by our formidable firepower. Then we can flank them, surrounding them from the front and back, and then round them up.” The young subordinate next to him respectfully said.

“Now we can only do so, remember, no matter what, you have to ensure one of the two to stay alive, preferably capturing both of them alive.” The man ordered.

“Yes, General.” After saluting, the young subordinate went out of the room.

“So many facilities have been destroyed by them, I really don’t know how to explain to the above. Those several old ghosts are really long winded.” The man swore to himself.

Faced with several sudden surges of firepower, Lei Yin and the others could not even lift up their heads.

“Changan, when are those guys going to arrive?” Lei Yin asked aloud.

“Master, they have just landed, it may take an hour to arrive,” Changan replied.

“An hour? Calling them to collect our bodies in an hour is more

likely. You tell them, they must arrive within twenty minutes in any case. How many bombs we have left?” Up to now, adding the two of them, they only have four people left. From the two remaining Dark team members, one has been shot and killed.

“Master, we are left with the last time bomb,” Changan replied.

“Set it to detonate in five minutes. I’m going to blast apart the wall on the left.” Lei Yin said.

He knew that, before long, these men in black would outflank them from behind, and now the only way is to return inside the base to fight a guerilla warfare. As long as they can hold on until the reinforcement arrives, that would be fine.

When that last Dark team member adjusted the detonation time, Changan suddenly called out a sentence: “Master, little Rei was hit.”

Lei Yin was surprised and immediately looked back. Only to find Changan tightly covered ReiLi’s back. Facing them, ReiLi’s face was as white as a paper.

“I’m fine....” ReiLi hasn’t finished, suddenly coughed violently, some blood coughed out from his mouth.

Lei Yin rushed over to take off his clothes and saw, on the upper right sight of his back, there’s a bullet hole.

Lei Yin quickly made some jabbing movements with his fingers on the several spots around the wound, and torn a strip of ReiLi's clothes and then strapped it on his wound.

“Master, how is little Rei?” Changan, with a face full of worry, asked.

“Pretty bad, he was shot through the lung, leaving the blood flow back into the lung. If this continues, he'll be choked to death with his own blood. It seems he had been shot for quite a while, merely endured it to death till now.” Lei Yin said with a heavy face.

“So what happens now?” Changan also watched ReiLi growing up, his affection for him is no less than Lei Yin.

“I have sealed several off his key acupuncture points, so the blood temporarily stopped. But he can't move heedlessly now, otherwise, the blood will continue to flow back to the lung.”

Hearing what Lei Yin said, Changan's heart suddenly cooled. If they don't get out of here soon, they would soon be outflanked. But watching ReiLi's terribly pale face, he didn't know what to do.

“Master, Changan, you guys don't worry about me, quickly leave....quick....” ReiLi said while coughing.

“Don't move. Master, I'm going to stay here and watch him, you and 12th should go first. They just want me and little Rei, and will not do anything to us, wait until you can work something out and

have the opportunity then you come and save us.” Changan looked up and said to Lei Yin.

Lei Yin didn't answer, just said to that member of the Dark group: “Don't adjust the bomb, keep it as it is. You continue to find the opportunity to shoot them.”

The Dark member immediately picked up two submachine guns and prepared himself.

“Changan, it seems we still a bit underestimate the opponent.” Lei Yin said with a sigh.

“Yes, master.” Changan nodded heavily.

Lei Yin went on to say: “Looking at the size and the equipment on this base, if they are not supported by the government, even if you kill me I would not believe it. Maybe this is their biological laboratory.”

Changan laughed bitterly, “I now begin to understand why they want to control the Black Dragon, perhaps in order to get a huge amount of research funding as well as wanting the Black Dragon to get more experimental bodies for them. Just like the previous gang in New York that they prop up led by Tang Najin.”

As early as six months ago, those men in black started to launch their attack on several of Black Dragon strongholds. But ReiLi completely unable to find any clues in those cases. Lei Yin then

collected the leftover human tissue from the explosion and sent them to several gene research organization from several countries. In those countries, he used variety of means, so that a member of those organizations looked for him and handed him the list that matches the sample that he sent.

Because genetic information has a considerable degree of ** nature, usually only those who donate certain body's tissue, such as bone marrow or blood, their genetic information can be registered.

After screening the data of the gene banks from the several countries, he finally found a matching sample. A Finnish veteran called Mark.

When the man was still in the military, he voluntarily donated his blood marrow after receiving the application handout by the agency specializing in the treatment of Leukemia. Moreover, he also had a blood test at that time. Therefore, his blood type, genes, and other information were inside the file and was finally found by Lei Yin.

After obtaining this vital clue, Lei Yin told Changan to look for this man named Mark, because he is a member of men in black. After several months of searching, Changan discovered that the man called Mark was once Tang Najin subordinate, that is to say, the assassination of Tang Najin probably has some collusion with those men in black.

Now it seems that the man in white suit is the real boss behind the scene. And Tang Najin is just his pawn.

“Now it seems like there are only two ways to survive. First is to surrender to them, this is the most simple way.” At this point, Lei Yin glanced at ReiLi.

“But as you can see from that 18th appearance, this is very dangerous because he will probably do the same thing to you. An obedient dog is always much more safer than a tied wolve. Therefore, in order not to make you suffer, I’d rather shoot you.” Lei Yin said.

Hearing his words, Changan and ReiLi raised their heads at the same time and looked at him.

“In fact, there is another more direct and simple solution. That is, to kill all those people.” At this point, Lei Yin suddenly revealed a strange expression.

“Master, what do you want to do?” Ten years ago, ReiLi had seen him with exactly the same smile as now, his heart filled with a very uneasy feeling.

“Rest assured, master will not going to let anything happen to you. Changan, it seems, this time I have to say goodbye to you once again.”

“Master you....” Changan was surprised to find that Lei Yin’s body seemed to have a vague layer of silver light.

Lei Yin suddenly smiled faintly, and then, his whole person disappeared....

As if turning into air, Lei Yin disappeared out of thin air just like that. Changan and ReiLi could hardly believe their eyes.

Immediately after that, they heard strange screams from the front, then there's a burst of messy gunfire.

Chapter 128 - Disappear

Refusing to think about the danger, Changan and ReiLi exposed their head to look at the front.

Only to see, for some unknown reason, that several hundred men in black suddenly turned chaotic. A few people even shot toward the direction of their own people.

When ReiLi and the other two were still puzzled, all of a sudden, Changan saw next to a man in black suddenly appeared a dark figure, and then, in less than 0.01 second later the dark silhouette was eerily gone. This scene happened so fast that Changan thought he just saw an illusion.

But soon, he knew that that was certainly not an illusion. Because he saw that the man in black, like a slow motion image, fell to his knees on the ground. Then, his head fell off. That big incision was like being made by laser cut, it was so incredibly smooth. Changan can even see, on that incision, the constant twitch of white muscle tissue of the trachea. Several seconds later, the blood, like a fountain, rushed out of the neck from that cut, flowing over the floor.

Changan blankly stared at that head while more than ten men in black beheaded in the same way.

No one knew what happened, those men in black only saw their companions inexplicably die like this at their side, and then it was immediately their turn.

“Monster, it’s a monster....” Didn’t know who shout it first, the whole scene became increasingly chaotic. Initially, only one or two people shooting randomly, but soon, more and more of their companions opened fire at themselves. Those people didn’t care about the consequences anymore, as long as they saw a suspected shadow object, they will immediately open fire.

But all of them were men in black, the friendly fire increased exponentially.

After seeing several times that their compatriots walked a few steps, and then the head fell down to the ground, these men in black members who always kill without batting an eye felt a burst of bone-chilling cold.

This is definitely not something a human can do. Is there really a blade cut that fast? Who can decapitate people’s head so fast that the man didn’t even realize he is already dead?

Seeing the eerie shadows of the ghostly killer flickering all over the place, ReiLi blankly asked: “Changan, that’s Master, right?”

Changan didn’t answer, just closely watching everything that happened.

“Don’t shoot, exactly what happened?” Standing in the back, the refined gentleman who is responsible for commanding these men in black called out in a loud voice. Because he came to the scene later, he only saw his subordinates suddenly became chaotic, then

opened fire at each other like crazy.

In just two minutes, more than a hundred highly trained soldiers and mercenaries became like a broken mannequin, their lifeless bodies fell to the ground. Everywhere filled with decapitated heads who died without closing their eyes. There were also more than fifty people who killed by their peers. The entire floor was dyed bright red from the blood.

The commander desperately wanted to call his subordinates to gather around, but no one can hear his voice. Everywhere there seemed to be screaming, hissing roar and gunfire sounds.

The dark shadow only stops when he was killing, but no one knew where will he appear next. Even some people who shot relatively faster, only shot his afterimage.

“What is that thing?” Watching the scene unfolding in the monitor screen, the man in the white suit angrily cried out.

“I....I don’t know.” One of his subordinates said, cold sweat streaming down his head.

“Get Jack with all the people to support there. Right away!” The man pounded the table to urge.

Looking back at the monitor to see the men in black unceasingly fell down, as well as doubting whether there was really a shadow, his face turned very ugly.

“Monster.” He is unable to sit straight on the chair.

Five minutes later, another group of men in black coming up from the rear flank finally arrived.

Running at the front was a man about 40 years of age. He was very surprised to see the strange scene that resembled a slaughterhouse before him.

Those guys actually kill each other? Did they really go crazy?

But soon, he saw two men in black's heads fell in a weird way. At the same time, he also saw the faint dark shadow.

That's the monster the old Jess refer to? Are all of these people die because of that thing? Suddenly, Jack felt his hands and feet were cold.

“Everyone immediately shoots at the front, quick!” Without the time to explain to them, Jack said as he raised his submachine gun at the front and started the attack.

Although unclear, under his lead, the men in black standing behind him immediately followed to raise their guns and open fire to the front. But the targets that they shot were only the remaining dozen men in black. They thought those group who shot at each other just now were crazy.

“Changan, are we going to save Master?” Hiding on the side, ReiLi asked.

“Not yet, I’m afraid if we threw the bomb now it will accidentally injure master. Besides, looking at master’s performance, those bullets don’t seem to be able to hit him.” After a few minutes of watching, Changan has calmed down.

After a round of indiscriminate fire, “Stop shooting.” Jake suddenly waved and cried.

Those men in black immediately stopped firing.

Only to see that more than ten men in black lying in the pool of blood, except for one man in black who stood with his back toward them

Looking at that standing alone man in black, Jack’s expression was quite dignified.

In his vision, that man in black already has dozens of bullet holes. He was able to stand only because something supported him. What is behind him? Jack’s hand tightened, ready to shoot.

Finally, that man in black fell to the ground. When he fell to the ground, Jack clearly saw behind him stood a man.

Wearing a black leather jacket, the youth was holding a dagger. Didn’t know whether he had vertigo, Jake seemed to see that

person appears to have a layer of silver light.

“Who are you?” Jake loudly asked.

“People who come to kill you.” The voice was very light, but everyone can hear.

Without knowing why, having listened to these words, Jack felt his eyelids jumped a bit.

“Shoot him.” With a shout, he first opened fire to madly shoot that person. The other men in black followed suit.

Looking at the seemingly slow motion replay of the rows of flying bullets, Lei Yin calmly dodged as if nothing happened.

At that moment, in his eyes, the time seemed to be infinitely magnified. He can definitely see those incoming bullets, and it was clear to him that he can grab the bullet with his hand.

But he has no time for such idle thought, he didn't know how long this body can still support, before this happen, he must kill all the enemies.

Therefore, after flashing through the first round of fire, he began to move.

In the eyes of outsiders, the man suddenly disappeared.

Totally beyond reason, such a large man disappeared just like that.

Jack didn't have the chance to speak, a second later, the man suddenly appeared in front of him, and then he felt cold on his neck.

—

After finally decapitated the last head of the men in black, Lei Yin quietly stood there with a pool of blood under his feet.

In addition to the shoe soles, his whole body was clean, including the dagger in his hand.

“Master....” Changan called out to him.

A figure suddenly appeared before them, ReiLi and the last surviving Dark group member automatically jumped.

“This....”

“You guys listen to me.” Lei Yin interrupted him as usual.

The three people all looked at him.

“Little Rei, if later on I’m gone, you have to take a good care of yourself. Changan too, you...” Speaking to this part, Lei Yin suddenly sprayed a mouthful of blood out of his mouth.

“Master!”

“Master, what happened to you?” ReiLi struggled to stand up.

“Don’t move heedlessly.” Lei Yin waved trying very hard to stop him.

ReiLi immediately dared not to move, only looked at him closely.

“Listen, I’m now using the power that human body can’t afford, so this body is likely to be scrapped. I just hope that in your lifetime, I will have the opportunity to see you again. Take care of my family for me....Changan, help me look at him.” Halfway through his speech, Lei Yin vomited blood from his mouth.

He knew his internal force soon couldn’t suppress the huge energy within his body. Can’t afford to explain further, he turned around and ran out of the base.

Thus, in the eyes of the three of them, Lei Yin once again disappeared.

“Master, Master!” ReiLi screamed himself hoarse.

Seeing the way he was about to excitedly stand up, Changan quickly went over and held him down.

“ReiLi, don’t move, do you want the painstaking effort of master went in vain?” Changan continued to persuade him, and slapped him in the face.

Seeing Changan’s eyes shone with tears, ReiLi finally turned around, and then looked up to loudly cry like a child. As he cried, he constantly hit the wall with the back of his head.

—

Really going to die?

Lei Yin thought that the energy almost burst out from his body.

Not only his mouth, even his other facial features like eyes, nose, and ears also started to bleed.

He felt like a balloon being constantly filled with gas, ready to burst open at any moment.

His grandma, after all these years, why this energy is still so overbearing, it didn’t even have the slightest room for negotiation.

This energy is not his own, but the “gift” from when he was struck by lightning after becoming an immortal spirit.

In his first rebirth, because he didn't know how to control this energy, just when his soul entered that body, the body immediately exploded, flesh and blood flying in all directions.

After no less than three rebirths, he slowly learned how to suppress this energy.

But this enormous amount of energy is like a ticking time bomb, as long as he lifts the lid and uses it, although, in a short amount of time, it can bring him an absolutely invincible force, the energy will continue to increase rather than decrease. When his internal force can no longer suppress the increased energy, he will burst and die.

Touching the ring that he wore on his finger, Lei Yin screamed as he rushed into the sea....

Chapter 129 - Remembrance

“Naoko, you seem to have lost your spirit, are you unwell?” Wearing rimless glasses, the Kawaii short hair Mari put her hand on Naoko’s forehead.

“I’m fine, perhaps I didn’t have a good night sleep. This is the week’s translation manuscript.” Naoko handed her a paper bag.

After taking the paper bag, Mari looked at her somewhat quizzically, “You sure you’re okay?”

Looking at her worried eyes, Naoko smiled and said: “I’m fine, really. Also, can you give me some other draft?”

“Do you really need money recently? This is the third manuscript that you give back to me.”

“No, I just have more free time recently, and looking for something to do. The fee is as normal.”

“Your boyfriend didn’t accompany you?” After thinking about it, Mari asked.

“He has some matter to do, so he went out to the field.”

Carefully looked at her face, Mari suddenly asked: “Naoko, you honestly tell me, is that guy broke up with you? If that’s the case,

you don't need to be sad for that kind of people.

Naoko shook her head gently, "It's not like that, he really has some important things to do and need to leave for a period of time. He promised me, he will definitely come back." At this point, she involuntarily clenched both her hands into fists.

Watching her determined look, Mari didn't say anything.

"Drafts that need to be translated, are indeed a lot, I'll get some of them for you. Moreover, your last few essays are very popular with the readers, the Editor in chief want you to continue doing that, I was about to inform you about it. Don't know if you have the interest in that?" Mari suddenly remembered something and said.

"Very well, I'll give it a try." Naoko nodded her head in affirmation.

Looking at the table, Mari said: "You haven't had dinner? Wait for me, after I pack my things I'll go out to dinner with you."

Naoko nodded.

Not long after Mari walked away, two men immediately came up.

"Hello, my name is Hiroshi Watanabe, Mori's colleague." A bespectacled man took the initiative to introduce himself.

“Hello, I’m Hasebe Naoko, Mari’s college classmate.”

“Hello miss Hasebe, my name is Hiro Toshiaki, is also Mari’s colleague.” Another younger man said with a smile.

“Hello.” Naoko nodded to him.

When the two men saw Naoko entered the Editorial office, their eyes shone. The moment they saw Molly walked away, they immediately seized this chance to meet the beautiful woman.

When the two men sputtered to say something, from behind them suddenly came Mari’s sneering voice, “I knew you two perverts would find the opportunity to strike up a conversation.”

“Mari, you come back so quickly.” Hiro Toshiaki said with a smile.

“Of course you don’t want me to come back so soon. Naoko, let’s get out of here.” Mari pulled Naoko’s hand to walk outside.

“Miss Hasebe, and Mari, why don’t you let us invite you to dinner today.” Hiroshi Watanabe kept up with them and said.

“Yes, yes, it’s rare for Miss Hasebe to be here, might as well letting us play the host to eat a meal.” Hiro Toshiaki hastened to add.

“This is what you said.” Mari suddenly exposed a sly smile.

Seeing the smile from Mari, the two men’s heart suddenly felt cold. They forgot that there was this witch.

“Since they are so keen to ask us for dinner, we’ll give them some face. Am I right, Naoko?” Mari Said.

“But....” Naoko a bit hesitantly said.

“Yes, since even Mari said that, come with us Miss Hasebe.” To hell with it, Hiroshi Watanabe thought that he might as well went all the way and invited the beauty.

With Mari and the two men’s persuasion, Naoko finally agreed. The two men immediately excited and almost howl like a wolf.

Mari agreed to go with them because she saw Naoko’s mood was very low. She still believed that the guy named Gennai Masashi abandoned her, letting her turned like this. Moreover, going along with the two guys that have been her colleagues for years, she knew they were the type of guys who have the intention but no guts. She just let them go along to stir up the atmosphere.

In the dining room, the two men continued to look for opportunities to talk to Naoko, while Mari surprisingly didn’t bother with that, just quietly eating her meal.

“Miss Naoko, your ring is very beautiful, is it the gift from your boyfriend?” Hiro Toshiaki accidentally saw the ring on Naoko’s hand, casually asked a sentence.

“Yes, it is a couple’s ring, there’s also one on his hand.” Naoko lovingly stroke the ring on her finger.

Hearing her answer, the two men’s faces suddenly became very strange. They now just remembered that they forgot to ask if she had a boyfriend.

Seeing their expressions, Mari couldn’t help but smile. Turning her head to look at Naoko, she found her expression was a bit strange, and can’t help but ask: “Naoko, are you alright?”

“Sorry, I need to go to the bathroom.” Naoko stood up and walked toward the restaurant restroom.

Looking at her hurried footsteps, Mari showed a thoughtful look.

More than a month has passed, he still didn’t come back, not even a single phone call he gave her.

Did he....

Thinking of this, Naoko shook her head, wanting to dump this ominous thought.

Lei, please be okay, please be okay....

After a while, Naoko wiped the tears in her eyes with a tissue, then slowly walked out of the bathroom.

—

Looking at the two average looking men before him, Changan put down the teacup in his hand.

“Are these your conditions?”

“Yes, as long as you give all those data back to us, we guarantee that we won’t look you for trouble.” One of the men said.

Changan sneered, “Guarantee? You think your so-called guarantee credible? We already have close to two hundred people die in your hands. At this time, you want to talk to me about conditions?”

“Mr. Shen, don’t go too far, our people that die in your hands is no less than yours. Do you want to continue this unwinnable war?” The other man couldn’t help but sing out.

“Indeed, no gang could resist in a fight against a country, let alone such a powerful nation such as yours. But don’t forget, you’re the one who started this, we just fought back in self-defence. To be honest, at this point, I don’t care about anything. I’d like to see how much of a stir I could create if I hand those data

to the public. Don't you often boast yourself to be the beacon of human rights?"

Hearing his words, the two men's face immediately changed.

"Mr. Shen, I apologize to you for my partner's attitude just now. Our boss wants to sincerely reconcile with you. We hope Mr. Shen would consider our proposal seriously." The man who talked first immediately apologized to Changan and said.

"There's nothing to consider, my request is very simple, as long as both sides do not interfere with one another (orig, river water does not interfere with well water), that would be enough. Now, every day there are a lot of people around the world that rely on our company for their livelihood. Unless it is absolutely necessary, we don't want any open conflict with you. The data, I will give it back to you, as for how and when, we can talk about it on another time. I can assure you, as long as you no longer harass us, this data will absolutely not leak out. Excuse me, I'm a little tired, the two of you please go back." Changan said dryly.

"In that case, we take our leave." The two men looked at each other and then stood up.

"Do not send." With that, Changan walked himself out of the room, leaving behind two white male with awkward expressions.

After they walked to the car, one of the men angrily kicked their white vehicle, "D*mn, I really want to kill that arrogant guy."

“You shut up, you almost messed things up just now. If we can’t handle this, none of us can escape.” Another man glared at him and opened the door.

That man bitterly entered the car.

“I really don’t understand, why the above want to compromise with this guy. He’s just a gang leader, why we must humble ourselves to these people.” After getting into the car, that man said discontentedly.

“You haven’t seen their data, so there are a lot of things you don’t know. They are not as simple as you imagine. Do you think the hundreds of people who died in their hands are just a motley crew? Wrong, they’re all the crazies that we saw in area C. Especially now that they have that information, if leaked, the consequences that it will lead to are unimaginable. Later on, please use your brain when you work.”

From the window of the room watching the receding car, Changan turned to the several men in suits standing behind him and asked: “Where is your boss?”

“He’s at the bar.” One of the men replied.

Changan sighed in his heart, “Now take me to him.”

“Yes, Mr. Shen.”

In a noisy bar, a more than 30-year old blond man a bit tipsy watching the stripper on stage. Compared to the young girl on stage, the escort girl by his side leave little to be desired. In addition to the relatively large chest, her thighs and waist were a bit thick, and she had a strange body odor.

Drinking the fifth cup, he finally couldn't bear anymore. Pushed away the woman, he walked to the bar, and loudly shouted: "Are all your beauties here die? How come there's not even one who is slightly prettier, all are sows."

The bartender gave him a glance and said: "I'm sorry sir, all the pretty girls have been wrapped up by a guest. That includes the young lady who is now performing on stage, after this, she will go to accompany that guest."

"What? Which guy is so perverted?"

"I'm sorry, I'm not quite clear either. If there's no other thing, I'm going to continue to work." The bartender was too lazy to care for him, bowed his head and wiped the glasses.

"D*mn, what's with your attitude, you think I don't have the money to pay the bill? Where is your boss, I'll tell him to fire you immediately." Feeling the contempt, the man suddenly flew into a rage.

Having seen many such wild drunks like him, the bartender didn't even look at him and continued to clean the cup.

Though very angry, the man didn't dare to touch the bartender. This was not his first time to come out to play here, and he knew he would be the one to suffer in the end if he put his hand on the bartender.

When he scolded while backing off, he was suddenly bumped into someone a bit. The man who has nowhere to vent his anger immediately turned, but after seeing in his side stood a few strong and able bodyguards, he suddenly didn't dare to make any noise.

The middle-aged man that accidentally hit him also didn't catch a glimpse of him, continued to walk on. The several bodyguards also followed behind him.

"Good evening, Mr. Shen." Arriving in front of a big room, the few men standing at the door saluted to Changan and said.

"Open the door."

"But the boss he...."

"I told you to open the door," Changan said in a deep voice.

That bodyguard dared not say anything anymore, immediately opened the door.

When Changan walked in, he saw within this dark room, many young ladies dressed in sexy revealing outfits. In the middle of the room, there were two women cuddled together, fondling each other, moaning. In the couch behind them, a young man was drinking while his bleary eyes looked at the two women show.

Changan without saying anything, turned on the lights on the wall, the two women lying on the ground immediately screamed and stood up.

“All of you get out.” Changan coldly said.

Looking at the posture of those bodyguards, these women knew their guest tonight and the man before them were not ordinary people. In less than two minutes, in this big room, there were only two men left.

After closing the door, Changan and went and sat next to ReiLi.

“Who is it, his grandma, where are all the people?” Unable to see the surrounding women, the half drunk ReiLi cried out in a loud voice.

“Little Rei, stop drinking anymore, your wound hasn’t healed well.” Changan took down the bottle in his hand.

“Oh....it’s you Changan, what are you doing here?” ReiLi said after seeing the man.

“Come on, let’s go back.” Changan pulled him up.

“No, I....still want to drink. Give me the drink...” ReiLi reached out and grabbed the bottle in his hand.

“If master sees you now, he will be very angry.” After silence for a moment, Changan said.

Hearing his words, ReiLi’s whole body shivered. After a while, he pulled open Changan’s hand and slowly sat on the sofa as he lowered his head.

“Little Rei, you have to pick yourself up,” Changan said with a deep voice.

“Changan, I killed Master. If not to save me, he would not....” After bowing his head for a long time, ReiLi slowly said.

“Did you forget? Master is immortal. I believe that before long he will rebirth and come to see us.” Changan patted him on the shoulder and said.

“How long is that? Ten years, twenty years? Or wait after we all die?” ReiLi said with a bitter smile.

“Little Rei!” Changan whispered.

“Changan....I want to see Master....” ReiLi covered his face and wept.

Chapter 130 - Church

Two hundred kilometers from the City of Boston, near a small fishing village called Norman. The entire fishing village population is about three hundred people. A small fishing village this size can be seen everywhere in the surrounding Boston area.

East of the fishing village close to the sea, there's a not small Catholic Church. The church has a history of more than twenty years. At the beginning when the church was very small, only thirty people can sit inside. Even so, it is the only church within the nearby two hundreds of kilometers. For this reason, those sincere religious believers living nearby more than ten years ago launched a large-scale donations activity. The church then suddenly expanded a lot, turning into today's scale.

The church is very quiet most of the time on weekdays. Until Sunday, when most of the believers would drive or ride to the church to worship. Moreover, in important events, such as Thanksgiving or Christmas, it will be very lively here.

At eight o'clock in the evening, a young man wearing an earring in his left ear pushed open the back door of the church.

After going in, the youth directly went to the second floor, and then walked to the room where the priest rest.

After the youth knocked on the door a few times, there was a voice of Father Marshall, "Is it you, Robin?"

“Yes, Father.” The youth said and then opened the door.

“What can I do for you?” The fifty years old Father Marshall asked Robin.

“Father, have you forgotten? Didn’t you want me to help you to get some anti-inflammatory drugs with the gauze? These are the things that you want.” Robin put the package on the table.

“I almost forgot, thank you. How much do I owe you?”

“Forget it, in any case, these things did not take much money.” Robin declined the offer.

“No, now you have moved out, you need a lot of money.” Father Marshall handed him several paper money.

Robin didn’t insist, took the money, and then said: “Don’t think I’m wordy, but Father, you really do not need to be so good to that stowaway. I urge you to quickly turn him over to the local police.”

“I can’t do that, you should have seen that his whole body are wounded. If I handed him over to the police, they would immediately repatriate him. But the problem is, he doesn’t even know who he is.” Father Marshall said with a straight look.

“Father, do you really believe he is suffering from amnesia? For a stowaway like him, as long as they can stay in the United States, they will do anything. Father, you should listen to my advice and

hand him over to the police.” Robin waved his hand and said.

“No, I believe him. From his eyes, I could see that he didn’t lie to me.”

“Alas, I really regret it that I carried him from the beach to here. If I knew, I should directly take him to the police station.” Robin a bit reluctantly said.

“You have always been a good kid. Even if this happen once again, I believe you will still save him.” Father Marshall said with a smile.

Robin was a bit speechless. In fact, he also didn’t want to notify the police. Near the place where he lived, there were also a few people smuggling themselves into the United States to work. Although they usually work very hard and earn much less money, almost all of them spent tens of thousands of dollars to sneak in. If the police catch and repatriate them, all of their previous efforts will come to naught. Based on this inexplicably sympathetic attitude, he didn’t send the man to the police station.

“By the way, how are sister Mary and sister Jill recently?” Robin asked a question.

Although he said it without showing any expression, when it came to the name sister Jill, Father Marshall could see a trace of concern showing on his face.

“They’re doing great. Sister Jill misses you, and sometimes asking about your situation to me. You should go and see her.” Father Marshall said.

“Where is she now?” Robin thought for a moment and asked.

“She is the person in the room taking care of him.”

“What? How could this be.” Robin cried aloud.

Father Marshall was young once, and naturally knew what he was worried about. He smiled and said: “Don’t worry, he’s not the kind of person that you imagined. If you’re not assured, you can go and see them.”

“Actually, I have nothing to worry about. But I haven’t talked to sister Jill for so long. I’m now going to see her.” With that, Robin stood up and ready to leave in a hurry.

“Robin, please help me take the medicine and the gauze to sister Jill.” Father Marshall called out to him and handed him the bag on the table.

“I know.” Robin was burning with impatient, after receiving the bag, immediately went out.

Watching Robin left in a hurry, Father Marshall can’t help but sigh.

Robin was an orphan. When he was very young, Father Marshall took him as adopted son. He has been at this church for a full fifteen years. In that many years, Father Marshall watched him slowly grew up into an adult, the fatherhood kind of joy was unspeakable. Although he had a mind of letting Robin inherited his career to become a priest. But Robin, like other young people, has more longing for the outside world, so, Father Marshall did not force him.

Although he did not want to become a priest, he was brought up in a clean and quiet life in a church. Therefore, he was not like the other young people addicted to tobacco and alcohol, drugs or having fun. This was the thing Father Marshall felt most gratified.

But three years ago, when sister Jill being assigned to work in the church, Robin began to change. He became decadent, often going out all night long, the body filled with the smell of irritating alcohol odor. Later on, Robin finally left the church and moved to live outside.

Father Marshall knew the reason he turned out this way was because he fell in love with sister Jill. But this was a dead-end relationship. He knew better than anyone that sister Jill is loyal to no one but the Lord.

Robin went to the room at the very end of the second floor. The man now lived in that room.

When he arrived at the door and was about to knock, he suddenly

heard someone's voice. He immediately stopped his hand.

“Koger, why are you so stubborn? The Bible is the Word of God, how can you say that kind of thing.” Robin heard sister Jill's reproach but with the usual gentle tone.

“Although I don't remember anything, I felt I should believe that there is one mysterious entity that can dictate the fate of the world and all the people. But, is it really completely the same as described in the Bible?” The speaker was the man named Koger. Because he didn't remember anything, Father Marshall helped him took the name “Koger,” this name means forgetting.

“But this does not prove that the Bible's teachings are wrong. The above teachings are intended to reduce crime.” Sister Jill continued.

“If in strict accordance with biblical teachings, then every person in the world are doing crime all the time. Chatting with friends can be a sin, spending energy to prepare delicious meals made a sin of gluttony, thinking of others as a fool violated the crime of criticizing, even if in the rainy day be in a bad mood is a sin. Let me give you an example, Of the ten commandments in the Bible, ‘you shall not commit adultery.’ According to this doctrine, this includes not only forbidding a marital relationship outside of one's legitimate spouse but also forbidding one to even think about it. Don't you think that this dogma is too harsh? This is inconsistent with God's mercy. The Bible also said that human body is weak, susceptible to Devil's temptation, so we need to strengthen our mind. However, when a normal man sees a beautiful woman in a sexy outfit, he will inevitably start to fantasize, this is a normal

psychological phenomenon, or should I say this is an animal instinct, as the many men in the United States who like to buy 'Playboy' adult magazine come to know. Strange, how would I know this 'Playboy' kind of thing?" When it came to the last sentence, the man called Koger suddenly asked strangely.

"That's because you are a pervert." Robin could no longer hold, pushed open the door and mercilessly glared at the man lying in the bed.

"Turns out to be Robin, when did you come?" Sister Jill happily said.

"Sister Jill, good evening," Robin said hello to the young trainee not yet ordained nun.

"You know nothing Koger, how dare you talked absurd things about God's mercy. If you don't have any injury, I will mercilessly beat you up." Robin turned to the man on the bed and scolded.

"The man on the bed glanced at him and then said: "In the middle ages, due to religious issues, people were burned and killed in large number. These were not the will of God, but just the method people at the time used to achieve their purpose, by disguising it in the name of God. I'm not some clergy, am I wrong to doubt the doctrine?"

"You....bast*rd!"

“Stop messing around, his wound is still not good.” Seeing the way Robin was about to make his move, sister Jill hastened to hold him.

“Please let me go, sister Jill, I want to teach this arrogant guy a lesson.”

“Robin, you can’t do that. Is to make a move against an injured man a thing that someone who believes in God supposed to do?” Sister Jill very seriously said.

Seeing her expression, Robin didn’t try to make his move again, after a while, he said: “Sorry, sister Jill. I’m just too impulsive.”

“Robin, you have to control your emotion.” Sister Jill let go of his hand.

“This is the medicine with the gauze that Father Marshall asked me to give you.” Robin handed her the thing in his hand.

“Thank you. The gauze has just run out today. Fortunately, you promptly brought it.” Sister Jill said with a smile.

Looking at her warm and touching smile, Robin can’t help but be absent-minded.

“Sister Jill, this is the medicine and the gauze that will be used on me?” The man called Koger suddenly asked.

“Yes.” Sister Jill replied.

Koger turned to Robin and said: “Although I have views that are different from yours, I would still like to thank you for sending this stuffs to me. Thank’s a lot.”

Robin didn’t think he would thank him, for a moment, didn’t know what to say.

Sister Jill came to Koger bedside and said: “Since the gauze has arrived, I will now help you change it.”

“Sister Jill, let me change it. After all, he is a man.” Without waiting for an opening, Robin quickly said. This was not his good intention, just didn’t want sister Jill to come into contact with the guy’s body.

“That’s good too, come on then. But you have to be careful, his wound has just healed, if you’re too harsh it will split again.” Sister Jill thought for a moment and then said.

“I know.” After Robin gave that guy a dirty look, came to his bedside.

When untying the old gauze, Robin couldn’t help but take a deep breath. Although Robin saw the wounds on his body when he saved him on the beach, to see now that his whole body was almost covered with terrifying wounds, he could not imagine exactly how

the man survived. But the strange thing was, when he saw him on the beach, his wound didn't bleed, or Robin would have to inform the Police to call an ambulance instead of taking him back to the church.

Though most wounds have scarred, there were still several large wounds not completely healed, the gauze firmly affixed to their top. If you want to change the gauze you have to rip them off. But that could rip the skin off the wounds. But finally, Robin hardened his heart to pull the entire gauze. And then, after he applied the medicine, he wound them with the new gauze.

Watching him sweating out cold sweat on the forehead, enduring the pain but trying not to cry out, Robin couldn't help but admire him.

"Sister Jill, later on, I will come over to help him change the gauze every day." Looking at the pale sister Jill at the side, and knowing that the thing she was most afraid of was this gory scene, Robin very sadly said.

"Are you sure?" Sister Jill asked in surprised.

"Yes."

"Thank you so much, Robin. Uh, sorry, I was rude." Sister Jill couldn't help but cheer up, but quickly found her performance was beneath a nun's deportment, immediately stopped and awkwardly said.

Rarely seeing her so happy, a smile appeared on Robin's face.

Chapter 131 - The Past

In the vast beautiful environment of the campus, like in the high school, a black-rimmed glasses, shoulder-length hair Kazumi walked quietly.

It is May now, about a month ago, after an exciting opening ceremony, Kazumi officially became ordinary college student of Teikyo University in Hachioji district.

Realizing her dream, to become a student of a first class University, Kazumi found herself not so excited about it. Her expression was still indifferent, letting people difficult to approach her.

In February this year, her mother finally married to Ryutaro Maeda. Regarding this, she sincerely gave her blessings. Only she knows how lonely her mother was after so many years. As for Ryutaro Maeda, he is her present father, although he didn't force her to call him so. He is a stubborn but very principled man, he is also good to her mother and herself, and should be called a good man.

The wedding was simple and warm that day, Rumiko and Ryutaro didn't invite many people, just some familiar friends, and relatives.

At the wedding, Rumiko smiled beautifully, and Kazumi found for the first time that her mother in the wedding dress turned out to be so beautiful. Does every woman in this time will become

particularly beautiful?

Later on in the bathroom, however, Kazumi heard the constant tears from her mother.

Her cry was filled with sadness, though the sound was so soft and gentle.

Kazumi knew she remembered that person, who was supposed to appear at this time, but hasn't appeared.

A year has passed, and he finally did not come back.

After Ryutaro Maeda's continuous investigation, in addition to his exit record, Maeda completely unable to find other information.

Certainly he was not kidnapped, or put under house arrest, he was out alone, the airport staff who saw him can prove it. But why did he have to go to the United States, a place so far away?

The investigation completely fell into a bottleneck. He was even classified as a missing person by the police.

He is a liar. He said, he will be back soon. But in the end, he did not deliver his promise.

Doesn't he know that mom and Rumi would turn into tears

worrying about him?

Maybe he knew he wouldn't come back, so when I last saw him that night, he put a large sum of money into a bank card and gave it to mom. If I had prevented him out, everything would be fine.

If there were no Ryutaro Maeda supporting mom by the side, mom might have really fallen.

But what about Rumi? What about that naive and a bit cheeky girl?

In a year's time, when she woke up in the middle of the night, she often heard the low sound of sob of that fellow in her room.

Kazumi's train of thoughts was suddenly interrupted by the sound of her cell phone ringing.

—

In a bright and clean restaurant, a beautiful and quiet teenage girl, like a beautiful painting, attracted the unintentional attention of all the young men.

She was not the type of sexy bombshell girl, but any woman standing next to her could not conceal her presence. The girl was like a pearl, elegantly issued a subtle yet exciting light.

Based on her appearance, she was probably still a high school student. Her natural waist long black hair casually tied together, except for the pale yellow ribbon, there was no other ornaments on her head. The skin on her face is white and delicate, without a bit of makeup marks. But people who have seen her will think such a beautiful skin would be a waste if put on makeup.

She sat there quietly, sometimes lifted up the cup on the table to drink, the scene itself is a picture worthy of a beautiful poster.

At this time, a black-rimmed glasses girl arrived at the front of the girl's table to sit down.

“Sorry, I’m late.”

“Kazumi, you’ve come.” Rumi raised her head and looked at her with a bit of pleasant surprise.

“What are you thinking, you don’t even know that I came,” Kazumi asked.

“It’s nothing, you hungry? Order the food first.” Rumi pushed the menu on the table in front of her.

Kazumi nodded and picked up the menu.

After ordering the food, Kazumi looked up and watched the girl opposite of her.

“What’s wrong Kazumi, do I have something on my face?” Rumi unwittingly wiped her face with her hand.

“No, just haven’t seen you for so long, suddenly found you are getting more and more beautiful,” Kazumi said with a smile.

The Kendo girl suddenly blushed, and stammered: “Not really, don’t talk nonsense.”

Seeing her as shy as ever, Kazumi thought it was very interesting.

“Are you doing ok? Is it fun in college?” Can’t stand the look of Kazumi, the Kendo girl quickly diverted the topic.

“It’s so-so, just a bit more freedom than high school. What about you? Now you’re in a third grade, what does it feel to be the senior sister?” Kazumi took a sip of tea and said.

“It’s okay, when I began to be called senior sister, I was somewhat unused to, but then I gradually adapted to it,” Rumi said with a smile.

“How is my mom? I’ve been busy studying recently, and haven’t been home for almost a month.”

“Aunty is in good health, but uncle Maeda was traveling a lot lately. Don’t worry, I’ll take good care of aunty.”

“You should also pay attention to your own body, what about your school clubs?”

“Because I was busy with homework recently, I went to the Kendo club a few days ago, but I haven’t been gone to the Baseball club,” Rumi replied.

Hearing her said so, Kazumi felt relieved. This was the thing that she most worried about her because Rumi was usually too embarrassed to refuse the club activity and that might affect her schoolwork.

“Kazumi, wait till you have the time, can you accompany me to look for some reference books?” While eating, Rumi looked up and asked.

“No problem. Do you want to apply to the University that I attend?” Kazumi asked.

“Yes, I want to study....in the same University as you, Kazumi.” Finishing the sentence, the girl quietly lowered her head.

“Really? I’m also looking forward to become Rumi’s senior sister.” Seeing how her lowered head look, Kazumi said with a wry smile.

“Sorry, I want to go to the bathroom.” With that, Rumi left her seat.

Watching her walked faster and faster, Kazumi sighed.

In order not to open the wound, they will always try to avoid mentioning that guy. But, is it really useful?

In the bathroom, Rumi slapped her cheek with her hands, and then whispered to herself in the mirror: “Rumi, don’t cry, remember, don’t cry.”

But the tears did not listen to her, running down her face.

“If you cry, it would be better.” Suddenly, a voice came from the side.

Rumi turned to look and saw a very beautiful woman. She was slowly washing the hands.

After washing her hands, the woman said to the girl: “Tears are a woman’s wealth, the greater the age, the chance of bursting into tears will become less and less. While you’re still young, let all your tears out.”

Looking into the woman’s warm eyes, Rumi’s tears kept pouring out.

“Broken up with the boyfriend?” After a while, the woman handed her a tissue.

“Thank you.” Rumi very gratefully received the tissue.

“To give up a girl like you, that man is not worth your tears.” That woman carefully looked at the girl with a glance, and then said.

“It’s not like that.” Rumi tightly clutched the tissue in her hand and shook her head.

Seeing her sad face, the woman didn’t speak again, and slowly walked out of the room.

“Sorry, Kazumi, for letting you wait so long.” After coming back from the restroom, Rumi apologetically said to her calmly.

For her slightly swollen eyes, Kazumi pretended not to see and said with a smile: “It doesn’t matter. Hurry up and eat, after a minute we’re going to buy the reference books.”

“Okay.” Rumi looked down and ate something.

After settling their accounts, the two girls walked out of the restaurant door.

Not far away from the door, Rumi saw a pretty woman sitting in a red sports car. Without much thought, Rumi quickly ran over.

“Really thank you for just now.” Arriving at the woman’s side, Rumi made a thank you gesture and said to her.

The woman turned around, looked at the slightly-short-of-breath-because-of-running girl before her, and smiled.

“You come here to say this sentence?”

“Yes.” Rumi nodded her head.

The woman smiled and turned on the car.

After she started the car, from the window, the woman said to her: “You’re still a kid. But I like you a lot.” With that, she closed the window and sped away.

Rumi watched with bewildered look as the sports car getting farther and farther away.

“Rumi, you know that person?” Kazumi went to her to ask.

“I don’t know her, just met her once when in the bathroom,” Rumi replied.

“Turns out to be so,” Kazumi said, and then looked in the direction where the sports car disappeared.

If she isn't mistaken, that person seems to be the woman she met at the funeral that day, the mistress of the family elder. She did not expect she would meet her here.

—

“Madame Yaka, this is my daughter, Hasebe Naoko. Please advise.” Naoko's mother said to the opposite middle-aged woman.

“I have long heard that Director Hasebe has two very beautiful daughters, now seeing her with my own eyes, she is really incomparably beautiful. This is my son, Yaka Kawashiro; this year just graduated from Harvard University. At the graduation time, his mentor wanted him to teach there, but because he wanted to help his father manage the business, he rejected his mentor's request.” Mrs. Yaka a bit proudly introduced her son.

Hasebe Shohata praised: “Your son is really young and promising, in the future, he will definitely become the right-hand man of Mr. Yaka. Naoko, come say hello to Mrs. Yaka and Mr. Kawashiro.”

“Hello, Mrs. Yaka, Mr. Kawashiro, hello.” Naoko bent her waist to greet them and said.

“You are too kind, Miss Hasebe.” Yaka Kawashiro a bit excited to see the absolutely beautiful person in front of him.

Being accustomed to the culture of freedom in the United States,

Yaka Kawashiro hates this kind of blind date. But because he was forced by his parents, he reluctantly agreed. In the first two blind dates, he really had enough of those rich princesses false modesty. One of them is even more exaggerate that she even need to seek her mother's consent to eat a snack.

These princesses, are not like the ordinary people imagine, that all of them are so beautiful. At least, he had seen some of them, only a few pleasing to his eyes.

For this blind date, he didn't have much high hope.

But, since he saw Hasebe Naoko for the first time now, his heart didn't slow down.

He was extremely lucky not to refuse this blind date, or he'd missed such a tender and absolutely beautiful top level beauty.

When the two middle-aged women were engaging monotonous pleasantries, Yaka Kawashiro unblinkingly stared at the opposite Naoko.

Seeing Yaka Kawashiro's eyes seemingly can't wait to swallow Naoko, Hasebe Shohata and Mrs. Yaka couldn't help but smile at each other.

"Let the two young people talk, our two old women will just be a bother here, Kawashiro, why don't you take miss Hasebe to the outside for a walk. What do you think, Mrs. Hasebe?" Mrs. Yaka

asked Hasebe Shohata.

“This proposition is very good. Naoko, you go out with Mr. Kawashiro.” Hasebe Shohata immediately responded.

“Miss Hasebe, would you go out with me?” Yaka Kawashiro said with full of hope.

Naoko thought for a moment, and then looked up and said: “Then bother you, Mr. Kawashiro.”

Seeing her agreed, Yaka Kawashiro deliriously happy, immediately stood up.

“Mother, I go now,” Naoko said to her mother.

“Em, have a great time.” Hasebe Shohata was full of smile.

After also greeting Mrs. Yaka, Naoko went out of that serene restaurant. Yaka Kawashiro, of course, immediately followed after.

“Miss Naoko, do you have any particular place you want to go?” In the car, Yaka Kawashiro eagerly said.

“If possible, I want to go to a nearby coffee shop,” Naoko answered.

“Very well.” Yaka Kawashiro immediately took the car to the cafe two hundred meters away to the left.

After parking the car, the two people walked into the coffee shop.

After getting their respective coffee, Yaka Kawashiro continually created the topic to speak with Naoko, hoping to gather more information about this beauty’s preference.

After replying several of his questions, Naoko sipped her coffee while politely listened to the talk about his study in the US.

After drinking a cup of coffee, Naoko felt she should not refill her empty cup, and said to Yaka Kawashiro: “Mr. Yaka, I have something to say to you.”

“Miss Naoko, please do not hesitate. If you don’t mind, you can call me Kawashiro.” Yaka Kawashiro very eagerly said.

Naoko looked up and said: “Mr. Yaka, I believed you are like me, being forced by the parent to come to the blind date. With Mr. Yaka’s condition, I believe you can find your ideal companion that is your equal. If there’s nothing else, I want to go back. Many thanks to Mr. Yaka’s hospitality.” After bowing to him, Naoko stood up.

Yaka Kawashiro was silly, never thought she would suddenly say she want to go back.

“Miss Naoko, do you have something urgent? If so, I can drive you there.” Yaka Kawashiro immediately said to her.

“I don’t have anything in particular, just don’t want to waste Mr. Yaka’s time,” Naoko answered.

“How can this be called wasting time, I like being together with Miss Naoko.” Yaka Kawashiro also stood up and said.

Naoko said to Yaka Kawashiro: “Mr. Yaka, you should go find someone who is more suitable to be your partner, please do not waste your time.”

“No, Miss Naoko, ever since I first saw you, I already like you, Miss Naoko, please give me a chance?” Yaka Kawashiro directly confessed to her.

Naoko raised her beautiful eyebrows and said with a straight face: “Mr. Yaka, I already have a favorite person. Other than him, I’m not going to accept anyone. Please do not waste time with me.”

“What, is this true?” Yaka Kawashiro said in surprise.

“Yes, it’s true. If there’s nothing else, I take my leave, Mr. Yaka.” After another bowing ritual, Naoko walked toward the door.

Yaka Kawashiro blankly stared at her beautiful figure walking farther and farther away, and for a long time could not say a word.

Chapter 132 - Injury

“Your hand grip is too tight, it will affect your sword speed.

“I understand, senior sister.”

“You are a beginner, so it’s very common to make such a mistake. After more practices, you’ll be fine.” Rumi said with a smile.

“Yes, senior sister, I’ll work hard.” A girl in a Kendo outfit looked at the beautiful senior sister instructor with a worship look.

“Alright, continue your training.” With that, Rumi returned to the edge of the field.

“Ryoko, who is that? How come I never saw her before.” After Rumi walked away, another girl in Kendo uniform came over and asked.

“What, you don’t even know her? I really don’t know why you want to learn Kendo.” Ryoko was surprised to say.

“I come to the Kendo Club in order to lose weight. Initially, I want to participate in the gymnastic club, but training there is too hard. That’s why I come to the Kendo club.

“My God, learning Kendo in order to lose weight, only you can do that. I advise you to withdraw because the exercise here is also

quite hard.” Ryoko looked at her with both angry and amused look.

“No, I see you guys only waving your swords all the time. Forget it, regardless of this, you didn’t answer me, who is that girl just now?” Hiromi continued to ask.

“She is my idol, I only joined Kendo Club because of her. She is last year’s individual champion of the National High School Kendo Tournament, Nakagawa Rumi.” Ryoko said excitedly.

“What, you said that she’s the National Champion, aren’t you mistaken, she’s just a girl.” Hiromi was flabbergasted.

“Of course, it’s true. After watching her game, I was too excited that I stay awake the whole night. I’ve heard that not so many female students join the Kendo Club, but because of what she achieved last year, many girls attended the Kendo Club. But because senior sister Nakagawa recently preparing for the University entrance exam, she’s rarely able to come to the Kendo Club.”

“Sounds like she’s really fierce,” Hiromi said thoughtfully.

“Of course. And she also looks so beautiful, she is the embodiment of beauty and wisdom.”

Seeing the longing look of worship Ryoko gave to senior sister Nakagawa, Hiromi couldn’t help but smile.

“Then does she have a boyfriend? Such a fierce girl like her must have put her boyfriend a lot of pressure, right?”

“Never heard she had a boyfriend. Although from the first grade, many boys have chased her, but no one seems to be successful. But I thought, with such an outstanding girl like senior sister Nakagawa, no boy in our school is worthy of her.” Ryoko righteously said.

“I see that you have been poisoned.” Hiromi snappily glanced at her. Then she looked at sister Nakagawa sitting in meditation on the sideline. Didn’t know if this was just an illusion, but she felt as if there was a touch of sadness in her eyes.

—

Entering the hall, not only Naoko saw her mother, but even the rarely seen second brother also inside.

“Mother, brother, good evening.” Naoko gave them the greeting ritual.

“Naoko you came, long time no see.” Hasebe Kenji said with a smile.

“Brother, how are you?” Naoko asked.

“Still the same, Naoko I tell you, now I don’t know what happened, as long as one day I don’t hear that old man’s scolding voice, I felt I don’t have the gut to go home. This is really a terrible habit, it seems I need to see a psychiatrist.

“Your sister goes home rarely, what nonsense are you talking about. If your father heard that, he would certainly chase you out.” Naoko’s mother Hasebe Shohata said with some anger.

Hasebe Kenji made a face to Naoko.

Seeing her brother still as frivolous as ever, Naoko can’t help but smile.

“Naoko, I already knew what happened yesterday. You also know that your second brother is also a Harvard graduate so that Yaka Kawashiro can be considered as my junior. I know that guy, as far as I know, he is a good man, you really don’t want to consider him?” Hasebe Kenji went over to her and said.

“I’m sorry, brother, making you embarrassed.” Naoko bowed to him to apologize.

“Em, you don’t have to be polite. Actually, I know that feelings this kind of thing can’t be forced, just forget what I previously said.” Hasebe Kenji scratched his head and said.

“Thank you, brother, for your consideration. Moreover, I don’t know when brother is planning to get married, I think mom

should be very concerned about this thing.” Naoko suddenly said with a hint of sly look.

Sure enough, after Naoko finished this sentence, Hasebe Shohata started to grumble: “Your brother does not intend to get married, he spend all of his day philandering, which young lady is willing to marry him. If I knew this, I would not let him go to the United States to study. You look at him, he doesn’t even have a bit of big brother’s poise, always so frivolous. No wonder your father often scolds you.”

Seeing the smile on her sister’s lips, Hasebe Kenji knew he was tricked and had to helplessly listen the scolding of his mother.

Because Naoko and Hasebe Kenji two people age difference is not very large, plus Hasebe Kenji’s character since childhood is quite frivolous, therefore, the brother and sister relationship has always been very good, and will, from time to time, play some joke on each other.

“Mom, stop saying that, the old man is still waiting for Naoko.” After the third round of scolding from Hasebe Shohata, Hasebe Kenji immediately seized the opportunity to say something.

“Oh, I almost forgot. Naoko, hurry up and go to the study room, your father is waiting for you there. He looks very angry. Forget it, let me go with you.”

“Second brother, I go first.” Then, Naoko walked toward the study room with her mother.

Sitting on the sofa, Hasebe Kenji looked at Naoko beautiful figure from the back, and can't help but sigh. Naoko was getting more and more beautiful, a pity she was his own sister. Among the women that he socializes with, not a single one of them is up to her level. A pity, what a pity.

After gently knocking the door a few times, from the study room, a strong voice quickly came, "Come in."

Opening the door, Naoko saw her father sitting in front of a desk.

"Good evening, father." Naoko respectfully saluted him.

Raised his head to glance at Naoko, Hasebe Masao with an indifference expression said: "You finally come, take a seat."

"Thank you." Naoko sat down at the chair in front of the desk.

Sized up her father who she has not seen for a long time, Naoko found his white hair has increased, and he seemed older than the last time she saw him. Naoko can't help but a bit sad.

"Naoko." After a while, Hasebe Masao called out.

"Yes, father." Naoko immediately responded.

"How old are you?" Hasebe Masao asked.

“Answering to father, the daughter is twenty-four this year.”

“So to speak, your age is not small anymore; this should be the time to think about getting married. You’ve been a well-behaved, obedient daughter, this is very clear to me. Because your body is not so good, I’ve always worry about your life. Yaka Enterprise has been a very close partner with our company. Yaka Director is also my old friend with a deep personal relationship. His second son, Yaka Kawashiro, according to my observation, has a good character, so I called your mother to arrange a blind date for you and him. Even if you don’t like him now, you should at least try to socialize for a period of time to see whether the two of you is suitable for each other. But you don’t even give him a chance, which makes me very disappointed. What you did will cast a shadow over my relationship with Yaka Director, you know?” Hasebe Masao was getting more and more loud.

Naoko bowed her head while she listened to her father’s talk, after a while, she slowly looked up and said: “Father, it’s not that I don’t give Mr. Yaka a chance, but it’s because daughter already has a man in her heart. In order not to waste time on both sides, I flatly rejected him. Father, please forgive me.”

“You say you already have a favorite person, are you referring to that fellow called Gennai Masashi, a high school student?” Hasebe Masao looked at her coldly.

Naoko’s mind was shocked, her father actually sent someone to investigate her situation.

After silence for a long time, Naoko bit her lips, and then looked up and said: “Yes, father. I really love him.”

Hasebe Masao whacked the desk loudly and said: “Are you still Hasebe family? You actually did such a shameful thing like cohabitating with a high school student, yet you’re still unrepentant?”

“What? Naoko, did you really live together with a high school student?” The nearby Hasebe Shohata uncontrollably called out.

“Look at your baby daughter’s good deed. If other people know this thing, where do you think I can keep my face?” Hasebe Masao fiercely coldly snorted.

“You have always been a sensible child, why would you do such a silly thing, how can you marry a high school student?” Hasebe Shohata ruefully said.

Watching her said nothing while still keeping her head down, Hasebe Masao with an unquestionable tone said: “Starting tomorrow, you will immediately move back to live here, and later can not meet with that fellow again. Also, whether you like it or not, you have to socialize with Yaka Kawashiro for some time, if after that you are still no match for each other, then we’ll talk again.”

After a while, Naoko gently said something: “Father, I can’t do that.”

“What did you say?” Hasebe Masao was enraged, like an angry Lion, he suddenly stood up, tightly staring at her.

“I’m sorry, daughter can’t do according to father’s words. I have promised him, I will wait for him to come back, therefore....”

“I ask you again, are you actually willing to leave that guy?”

“I....”

Hasebe Masao interrupted her, “I won’t let you shame the Hasebe Family, if you don’t do as I say, then you immediately get out of here, from now on, you will no longer a Hasebe Family member.”

Having heard this, not only Naoko’s face became pale, even Hasebe Shohata was horrified.

“Masao, you can’t do that, Naoko is, after all, our daughter.” Hasebe Shohata made a noise to discourage her husband.

“You shut up! Now answer me, what exactly do you want?” Hasebe Masao turned to look at Naoko.

The atmosphere in the room became very heavy, Hasebe Shohata worriedly looked at her pale daughter.

As if it was for a long time, Naoko finally slowly stood up, and then knelt on the ground and gave Hasebe Masao a kneeling ritual.

Hasebe Masao thought she agreed, his face slightly eased a bit.

“Father, please forgive this unworthy daughter.” With that, she slowly turned and walked to the door.

Hasebe Shohata dumbfoundedly looked at her daughter walking out of the room.

Hasebe Masao’s anger went through the roof, he kicked the whole desk into the ground. All things above the table spilled all over the ground.

“Masao....”

“Shut up! Who dare to plead on her behalf, immediately get out of the house.”

Never seen her husband so angry like this, Hasebe Shohata was afraid to make a sound.

After walking out of the study room, Naoko felt her whole body weak, as if there was a sense of shock. She could only hold on to the wall, struggling to walk downstairs.

“Naoko, what happened to you?” Hearing a large noise coming from upstairs, Hasebe Kenji immediately went up.

“Second brother, I’m fine.” Naoko continued to walk downstairs.

“Still say you’re okay, your complexion is not good. Exactly what happened?” Hasebe Kenji nervously looked at her.

“I....” Before finishing her words, Naoko suddenly felt a burst of intense pain in the chest. Then, her whole body collapsed on the floor.

“Naoko!” Hasebe Kenji rushed over and lifted her head.

Hearing the scream of Hasebe Kenji, Hasebe Shohata ran out from the study room. Seeing Naoko lying on the ground, she can’t help but cry out loud.

“Quickly call the ambulance.” Hasebe Kenji was first to react and shouted.

Hasebe Shohata frantically rushed downstairs to make the call.

Looking at the pale face Naoko on his bosom, Hasebe Kenji has a very ominous feeling.

—

At 9 PM, at the Boston airport terminal, two young men were talking.

One of the youth said: “Koger, do you really want to go now? You just got out of bed and able to walk a couple of days ago, I urge you to stay and rest for a few days.”

“I know how my body is, I’m alright. I have something urgent to go back, so I must go now. In addition to you, convey my gratitude to the priest, sister Jill, and sister Mary. For all these time, I really thank you all for taking care of me.” The other Asian youth called Koger said.

“I will. What a pity that the Priest and the two sisters have to attend a sermon, therefore, can’t send you here. He wanted me to tell you, take care of your body.”

“I know, I’ve already talked to them yesterday. This is my contact information, if something happens, remember to call the number listed above and look for me.” Koger handed him a note.

The White youth readily took the note into his pocket.

“Since you’re so determined to go, I wish you a pleasant journey.” The youth hugged him and said.

“Thank you.”

“Alright, it’s about time, hurry up and get on the plane.” The White youth glanced at his watch and said.

The Asian youth who was without any baggage nodded, and then

walked to the entrance door.

After walking a few steps, the Asian youth suddenly turned to the White youth and said: “Robin, to be honest, I really don’t like this ‘Koger’ name. I prefer to be called by my own name, Lei Yin.”

Hearing his words, Robin smiled: “No way, who told you to have a name that is so difficult to pronounce.”

The Asian youth smiled, turned around, and continued walking toward the entrance.

Chapter 133 - Ward

“Doctor, How’s my daughter?” When the doctor came out from the ICU, Hase Shohata immediately asked.

The doctor looked around and saw a few of the patient’s family, said: “To be honest, the condition that the patient is in is very dangerous. After being admitted here in the hospital last night and up to now, her heart rate has been very unusual, and so far, she hasn’t woken up. I saw her medical records, she has a congenital heart disease, and had been hospitalized because of the disease two years ago. Moreover, the patient is very weak, compared to the previous one, this time’s illness is even worse. We will do our best to save the patient, but please prepare yourself.”

“Prepare? Doctor please say it more clearly.” Hase Kenji asked loudly.

The doctor thought for a moment before answering: “If her condition continues to deteriorate, the patient is likely to die.”

Hearing his remark, everyone’s face immediately became pale.

“Doctor, I beg you, you must save my daughter.....”

“We will try out best. Please rest assured.” The doctor comforted Hase Shohata who has been crying all along.

“Doctor, I’ve heard that the best treatment for congenital heart

disease is a heart transplant, can you do this type of surgery to my younger sister? Money isn't an issue, so long as you can rescue my younger sister, we don't care how much we have to pay." Naoko's brother Hase Kento asked.

"it is as you've said, your younger sister has a congenital heart disease, and performing a heart transplant is indeed the best way to prolong the patient's life. But as you know, there are very few people who are willing to donate their organ's after death, so the storage capacity is very small in organs and tissue, particularly the type of heart needed. There exist a problem when the body rejects an organ, that's why we want to find a heart that matches with your younger sister which is a very difficult matter. Even if I could find a compatible heart, with your younger sister's present physical condition, it isn't good to perform such a large-scale surgery."

Hearing the doctor's explanation, Hase Shohata's heart was ice cold, almost fainting. Seeing her this way, Hase Kento quickly held on to her.

Once the doctor left, Hase Kento said to his younger brother: "Go and inform father immediately, tell him Naoko's situation."

Hase Kenji coldly snorted: "So what if we inform him, if he really cared about Naoko, he would have immediately come to see her. The reason why Naoko is like this, is his own making."

"Kenji, watch your mouth." Hase Kento immediately stopped him from continuing.

“You want me to inform him, then you inform him, but seeing that his always so busy anyway, he wouldn’t have the time to come.” Hase Kenji quipped.

Hase Kento in his own way, helped his mother sit to one side, then took his cellphone.

“Brother, is sister really going to die?”

“You shut up, saying such unlucky words.” Hase Kenji was furious.

“Yes, I’m sorry.....” Aiko bit her lip crying.

Looking at the pale young girl, Hase Kenji knew that he scared her. Quickly saying softly: “I’m sorry, I didn’t met to say that, Rest assured. Naoko’s going to be fine.” He said as he clenched his fist.

Through the window of the ward, Aiko stared at her sister lying on the bed wearing an oxygen mask, her face pale and her thin white body.

Gennai, you bastard, why haven’t you come back yet?

She knew why her sister became so weak. Without coming back for more than a year, and that bastard didn’t even call back.

Six months ago, Naoko finally moved back to the Apartment Aiko was at.

Helping her move the baggage she had, Aiko discovered a hand-made scarf with gloves. Needless to say, it must be specially woven by her sister for that guy.

When she asked about the circumstances about that guy, her sister just smiled and said that he had something to do, had to temporarily go somewhere, and will take some time before he could come back.

Although it was strange that the guy was away for so long, but Aiko didn't ask again.

But in the evening, Aiko really regretted asking her this question. Because after her sister went into her room, she heard her desperately suppressing her tears.

In the days that followed, Aiko found that her sister was eating little by little every day, usually she would write something or translate something. It wasn't because she was trying to work hard, but rather like it was her own anesthesia.

Seeing her face increasingly became thinner, Aiko was very worried.

Talking about her worries to Ami, Ami as usual suggesting something, telling her to spend more time at home, accompanying

her sister and talking to her.

Aiko thought that this proposition was very good, that's why she didn't go out to play frequently like in the past, and remained at home as much as possible talking with her, and sometimes call Ami to come and play.

This method seemed to be very effective, as her sister was smiling more and more often.

But why was her face getting worse?

Suddenly, the door opened and interrupted her thoughts, as she saw a nurse hurriedly ran out of the intensive care ward.

"What happened?" Hase Kenji immediately ran over and asked.

"The patient isn't breathing normally, the situation is very dangerous. Please let me, I need to tell the doctor to come immediately."

"What did you say?" Hase Kenji couldn't help but make an effort to grab the nurse's arm.

Please let me go, I need to call the doctor." The nurse worriedly said.

"Kenji, quickly let go of her. Sorry, could you hurry up and call a

doctor.” Hase Kento tugged his brother’s hand.

The nurse nodded, and immediately ran out.

“Why is this happening? Naoko!” Hase Shohata wanted to burst into the intensive care unit, but was pulled by Hase Kento.

“Mom, calm down, it will affect the doctor’s job.”

Aiko looked at her elder sister’s icy cold hands and feet on the hospital bed, tears streaming down on her face unceasingly.

I’m sorry, sister, because of that Gennai guy, I hated you, even cursed you, but now I admit my mistake, I’m really sorry. I don’t care what you do to me, but please wake up quickly....

—

“Hello, who are you looking for?” The police who was patrolling nearby asked loudly.

He was paying attention to this person for quite sometime now.

This person shouldn’t live nearby. What is important is that on his neck was a very obvious scar, and looked a little like a knife wound. If it really was a knife wound, it was very possible that the type of hoodlum who comes out that steals to feed himself.

From the start, he's just standing there, at that big apartment door, seemed as if he's waiting for someone.

To his knowledge, that big apartment was where the very beautiful sisters live. Does this guy have ill intentions toward them?

Thinking of this, the young police spontaneously arise, imagining himself like a hero coming to the rescue upholding justice.

But the man ignored him, and continued to stand motionless.

The young policeman was a little angry, and immediately walked over to him.

"Hey, I'm asking you, why aren't you answering?"

The man looked him in the eye.

The young policeman found that he looked much younger than he had imagined.

Just as he was about to ask, the man spoke first, "Can I borrow your phone to make a call?"

"What? You want to borrow my phone?" The policeman didn't think that the hoodlum would ask to borrow a police's phone.

“I have an urgent matter; I need to make a call.”

Looking at his eyes, the police unknowingly pulled out his cell phone and gave it to him.

“Thanks.” After the man received the cell phone, he immediately dialed a phone number.

However, when he pressed the fifth digit, he suddenly stopped, and after a long time didn't press the sixth digits.

His grandmother, again, something's up. Feeling something especially from something like a fragmentary thing like a telephone number, and not just from his, but her phone number as well.

Starting from when he got off the plane, he had a very bad feeling. A feeling of anxiety that was slowly disrupting his state of mind.

Taking a deep breath, he calmed his mind, telling himself, the most important thing right now is to get to where she is.

—

“Immediately send her to the ICUk, take turns and send someone on duty for 24 hours, if anything happens inform me

immediately.” Coming out of the operating room, the doctor was talking to the nearby head nurse.

“Doctor, how’s my younger sister?” Looking at Naoko who was on the stretcher, Hase Kenji first asked.

“Sorry, we’ve done everything we could. But your younger sister’s situation is still becoming more and more unstable, even her breathing isn’t normal, in addition her heart rate is excessively slow. In order to make her heart rate become normal, I’ve injected her a cardiac glycoside. But if she doesn’t wake up tonight, the patient would likely have a heart failure.” Here, the doctor didn’t say anything else.

Hearing his words, everyone’s face changed.

“Mom!” At this time, Aiko suddenly cried.

Turning their head, they saw Hase Shohata unknowingly faint on the ground, Aiko was making an effort to hold her head.

“Nurse, immediately send her to the emergency room.” The doctor yelled after observing her condition.

“Doctor, how’s my mother?” Aiko asked quickly.

“She just couldn’t handle the situation and fainted, I’ll check on her again later.”

Kenji, Aiko, both of you stay here and look after Naoko, I'll take care of mother." With that, Hase Kento followed the doctor towards the emergency room.

At 22:00, Kenji and Aiko remained at the front of the ICU.

Naoko still didn't show any signs of waking up, Hase Kenji was anxiously walking up and down the corridor.

Suddenly, a man came over.

"Kenji, how's Naoko's condition?"

Hase Kenji looked up, and saw his father Hase Masao.

Although he was unwilling, he still replied: "Naoko's condition is really bad, the doctor said, if she doesn't wake up tonight, then, it's likely that she'll suffer from heart failure."

Hase Masao's face changed, he didn't think that the situation would be so bad.

"Your mother?" After a while, Hase Masao asked.

"Mother fainted. She's now in the hospital ward resting, brother is looking after her." Seeing his father's dejected look, Hase Kenji's resentment disappeared.

Hase Masao arrived in front of the ICU room, looking at her daughter lying down on the hospital bed from the glass window, without making any noise for a very long time.

“Because I forced her to do something she doesn’t want, Naoko became like this. Kenji, you hate me, right?” Hase Masao looked back towards them, and said slowly.

Hase Kenji looked at his eyes, and didn’t speak a word.

“You also know, Naoko since childhood was frail. But she has been a sensible and caring child. Besides her illness, she had never made me worry. But this time she really made a mistake. As her father, I can’t continue to let my daughter go down the wrong path, this is my responsibility. However, I’ve made a mistake in handling this matter, I shouldn’t have forced her.” Hase Masao’s tone expressed deep remorse.

Watching their father suddenly look 10 years older, Hase Kenji felt his chest tightened.

Sitting in the back, Aiko made an effort to cover her mouth crying in a low voice.

2:00 am, Naoko still hadn’t woken up. Hase Shohata insisted on waiting outside until Naoko woke up, Hase Kento who had no choice, escorted her back outside the ICU.

As the minutes ticked by, an incredibly heavy oppressive atmosphere spread in the whole corridor. Everyone lost the mood to talk.

Suddenly, a burst of rapid footsteps came from outside the corridor. Because of the quiet environment, these footsteps became very loud.

Hase Kento found that those footsteps was becoming increasingly clear, as if there were several people walking towards here.

Sure enough, before long, five men appeared in the corridor.

Aiko looked up, looking at the side, her whole being was dumbfounded.

“Ge..Gennai-san?” After a good look it was indeed that man, she cried aloud.

Hearing her cry, the others also looked over.

But before they could look, the man had already appeared in front of Aiko.

“You....” Seeing his face, Aiko was suddenly filled with a mixture of surprise, anger, grievance, and other complex emotions.

Before she could finish, Lei Yin interrupted and asked first: “Has

your woken up?”

When he came in, he first saw a doctor and found out Naoko's illness. After all, only a doctor can explain things clearly.

“Who are you?” Hase Kenji looked at this strange young man and asked.

Looking at Aiko who was also not reacting, Lei Yin didn't want to waste any more time, and turned around walking towards the ICU.

“Who are you, what are you doing here?” Hase Kento hurriedly blocked him.

“Move out of the way!” Lei Yin didn't have time to take care of him, shoving him aside.

“Hey, what do you actually want?” Hase Kenji ran up and stopped him.

Lei Yin was worried right now, but seeing someone blocked him again. He couldn't bear it anymore, turning his head, he said loudly to the four men behind him: “Block them immediately. Don't let them hinder me.”

The four men immediately ran up, two were blocking the Hase brothers. While the other stood in front of Hase Masao.

“Gennai Masashi, what do you actually want to do?” Hase Masao shouted.

“You listen to me, right now I’m the only one who can save Naoko.” With that, he opened the door, and went inside.

“What do you want?” Hase Kenji cried loudly while struggling.

Suddenly, one of the men pulled something out from his chest and put it in front of his chest.

“Shut up!”

The two other men also took out the same thing and placed it against Hase Kento’s and Hase Masao’s waist.

“You, you....” Seeing the men hold a hand gun, Hase Masao was frightened, feeling his hand and feet become icy cold.

“We’re just doing what Mr. Gennai told us, just don’t say anything.” One man said towards Hase Masao.

The Hase family suddenly didn’t dare speak out. The four men also immediately retrieved their hand gun, in order to avoid being seen by other people.

Aiko didn’t think that she would see such scene, looking at Lei Yin inside the hospital ward dull.

Looking through the glass window, they saw Lei Yin walked towards Naoko who was lying on the bed, climbing up the bed, he made a very strange posture sitting cross-legged, and then held Naoko's hands.

The Hase family didn't know exactly what he wanted, but they had choice but to only look quietly.

Looking at Naoko's body, Lei Yin found many of her channels stagnating into a ball. Apparently due to worries over this fool.

It was now too late for him to send his qi towards her meridians, one by one, it was important for him to start with her heart arteries first, enabling it to circulate naturally, so that she could live on.

After considering this, Lei Yin sent his qi into her body treating her right away.

She didn't know if she was seeing things, but in the dark room, Aiko saw Gennai's body suffused with a faint layer of light.

Chapter 134 - Dreamland

Naoko had a very strange dream.

She dreamt her whole body soaked in a hot spring, her upper and lower body were warm.

Just like every morning when she woke up fast, she knew she was in a dreamland. But it felt so warm and so comfortable, making her feel this was very familiar and close to her.

Slowly, she opened her eyes. Seeing the man sitting in front of her, she smiled.

‘Really nice, he came to see me.’

“Lei, don’t go, okay? Why do you always have to go so soon? Did you know that every time I woke up and found I am only by myself, was really uncomfortable? Please, let this dream be a little longer, will you?” Naoko forced herself to hug him and said.

“I promise you, I won’t leave you again.”

Naoko’s ears heard that familiar voice.

“Lei, you’re really nice to me.” Naoko closed her eyes very satisfiedly; she suddenly felt exhausted.

After a while, listening to her steady, regular breathing, Lei Yin knew that she fell asleep.

Gently he laid her on the bed and then covered her with the quilt up to her chest. Lei Yin was very aggrieved to see her pale, haggard face.

“I’m sorry, making you suffer.” Lei Yin softly said a sentence, and then put her left hand on his face to gently stroke.

After coming out from the ICU room, Lei Yin saw not only the Hasebe family was here, even the doctor in-charge of Naoko also present. However, it was evident that when he was going to inspect the patient, he was casually “held hostage” by the four men, because one can see his scared look and the beads of sweats that covered his forehead.

“Doctor, please check out her condition. She just woke up for a while, but fell asleep again.”

“Very well.” The doctor was scared to death and hurriedly went in.

“Sorry, just now because the situation is too urgent, I’ve offended you.” Lei Yin turned his head toward the Hasebe family and said.

“How is Naoko now?” Hasebe Masao took one look at him and asked.

Just now the few of them have also seen that after this guy entered the room, about an hour later Naoko indeed awake a bit.

“Let’s wait for the doctor to check over, okay?” He really couldn’t explain to them about his treatment.

“If something happens to my sister, I won’t let you get away with it.” Hasebe Kenji told him what’s inside his heart.

Lei Yin ignored him and turned to look toward Naoko’s ward.

Seeing him like this, Hasebe Kenji was even more furious. His two eyes fiercely stared at him from behind.

Aiko looked at him with an incredibly complex look.

‘I haven’t seen him for more than a year; he seems a bit taller. He also looks a lot thinner than a year ago, but it gives a more mature taste.’

Although she didn’t know where he went this past year, Aiko felt as though he wasn’t doing great. Maybe it was just like what her sister said, he really has had difficulties.

‘Who are the other four men who came with him? Each of them actually carries a gun. Even more surprising is that they seem to be very respectful and obedient to him. Alas, exactly how many secrets this guy has?’

After a while, the doctor came out with a surprised expression.

“How about my daughter?” Hasebe Shohata immediately asked. The other people were nervously waiting for his test result.

“It’s really strange, her heartbeat suddenly returned back to normal, including her breathing. According to her previous situation, even if we could wake her up, it is impossible for her to return to the normal heartbeat so quickly. Excuse me, what did you just do to the patient?” The doctor very excitedly walked toward the young man.

“Thank you, doctor.” Hearing his answer, Lei Yin was relieved.

After thinking for a while, he turned toward the Hasebe family and said: “Naoko should be able to wake up soon, I’ll stay here with her. Just now I’ve offended you, really sorry.” With that, he walked into the ward.

Because he had just excessively used his power, he felt a little fatigue, and not in the mood for a polite talk with them.

The Hasebe family were a bit uncomfortable to see him go, but no one tried to stop him.

“Doctor, exactly what happened to my daughter?” Hasebe Masao wanted to be sure.

“The way she is now, her situation has stabilized. As long as it keeps going, I believe she can wake up tomorrow.” The doctor explained.

Hearing his words, everyone revealed a happy countenance.

At this time, Aiko turned around to look at the ward. The man was quietly sitting on the bed watching her sister. Then, her heart faintly sighed.

—

Seemingly asleep for a very long time, Naoko thought that this was her best sleep in a year.

She vaguely remembered that last night she seems to dream about him. Naoko was a bit sad to sit up.

Where is this? Naoko was a bit surprised to see she was in a white room.

Soon she came to understand, this should be a hospital ward, and she must have had a heart attack again.

How long can I wait for him? Thinking of this, Naoko's heart turned sour.

At this time the ward door suddenly opened, and someone came

in with a takeaway lunch box.

Because tears blurred her view, she didn't see the person's face. After rubbing away the tears with her sleeve, she finally saw the man's face.

And then, her entire body froze.

Walking over to the bed and gently placing his right hand on her left cheek, Lei Yin full of pity looked at her, "Naoko, I'm back."

—

Watching two people cuddled together tightly, Hasebe Kento stood there somewhat embarrassed. 'It seems I came in a wrong time.'

"Naoko, your brother is here." Lei Yin whispered a sentence in her ear.

Naoko blushed, and quickly released her hold on his hand.

"Brother, good morning." Thinking that her brother had just seen the scene where she tightly hugs a man, Naoko blushed.

"You finally woke up; we were all very worried about you." Hasebe Kento said with a smile.

“I’m sorry, brother, letting you all worry,” Naoko said apologetically.

“It’s okay, as long as you’re alright, father and mother have stayed here until morning before they leave. If they know you’ve woke up, they’ll be very happy.” Hasebe Kento refrained from telling her that Hasebe Shohata had fainted because of too much stimulus, lest she worried.

“Letting them two old people toil so hard, I really feel sorry. Brother, you too, look tired. Why don’t you go back to rest.” Naoko said to Hasebe Kento.

“Your condition have just stabilized and need someone to look for you. Don’t worry, I’m in a good spirit.” Hasebe Kento comforted her.

Naoko just wanted to advise, but Lei Yin already started talking to him: “Brother Hasebe, I will stay here with Naoko, you’d better go back to take a rest. If there’s anything, I’ll let you know.”

Hearing him saying “Brother Hasebe” made Hasebe Kento a bit uncomfortable. For this quite mysterious young man, Hasebe Kento was not very assured. But looking at his last night’s action, he thought that the young man seems to really care about Naoko. Looked at him in the eyes, Hasebe Kento can’t help but hesitate.

“Brother, you first go back.” Naoko pleaded again.

“Very well, I will come again tonight. Mr. Gennai, if something happens, please notify me as soon as possible.” Hasebe Kento finally nodded.

“Rest assured, I’ll take care of Naoko.”

After giving his sister another glance, Hasebe Kento left the ward.

Once Hasebe Kento walked away, Lei Yin opened the lunch box and took out a bowl of steaming porridge from the inside.

“Your body is still very weak, can only eat liquid food.” Sitting on the bed, Lei Yin scooped a spoonful of porridge to her mouth.

“I....I can eat by myself.” Seeing him trying to feed her, Naoko’s face reddened.

“My dear, be obedient.”

She took one look at him, and finally opened her red cherry lips.

—

Seeing the house from afar, Lei Yin didn’t know how he should feel.

For more than a year he didn't go back. He wondered what would their reaction be when they see him.

Unfortunately, he forgot Maeda's phone number, if not, he can have a better lying partner in him. Otherwise, when they ask him where has he been this past year, he really can't say.

He went to the door and thought for a moment. Finally, Lei Yin raised his hand and pressed the doorbell.

After a while, the door opened, and a man stepped out.

Speak of the devil, the one who opened the door was actually Maeda.

"Ma...Masashi?" Maeda looked at him like seeing a ghost.

Lei Yin found his surprised look was quite funny. But there was no time to laugh, he quickly pulled him out to the street.

Ryutaro Maeda was like a fool being pulled to a corner before stopping.

"Masashi, you really are Masashi?" Maeda tightly clutched his arm. Until now he still can't believe that this guy who disappeared for more than a year has suddenly appeared before him.

"I know you're very surprised by this, but now it's not the time

to catch up, let us come up with a string of statements.” Lei Yin said.

“Statement, what statement?” Ryutaro Maeda is, after all, a trained police officer, he quickly recovered his thought.

After seeing him calm down, Lei Yin immediately told him about his ideas.

After a round of talking, Ryutaro Maeda reluctantly said: “Very well, I’ll say it like that. After you come back, you this guy immediately ask me to help you lie, later on, don’t make me do this kind of thing anymore.”

“But what I said is actually not a lie, most of which are true. Later on, I’ll explain it to you. By the way, what are you doing in my house? Came here to eat?” After having his promise, Lei Yin asked.

“Masashi, actually....I’ve married Rumiko.” Ryutaro Maeda stammered.

“When did this happen?” Lei Yin was pleasantly surprised.

“Three months ago,” Maeda said.

“Very good, I can’t believe you guy actually get it, I was worried that you would only talk about love with my mom forever.” Lei Yin vigorously patted him on the shoulder to show his appreciation.

Maeda smiled without saying a word.

“Alright, don’t giggle, hurry up and prepare it. I’m waiting here for you.” Lei Yin said.

“Ok, I’ll drive over.” With that, Maeda walked back.

When he returned to the living room, Rumiko has just showered.

“I just heard someone rang the doorbell, who is it?” Rumiko asked.

“One of my subordinates, Rumiko, listen to me, that fellow said, they’ve found Masashi.” Maeda pretended to be excited.

“What? You say that again!?” Rumiko could not believe her ears.

“Just now the police informed me, they’ve found Masashi,” Maeda repeated.

“Is that true? Are you serious?” Rumiko excitedly pulled his hand.

“It’s true, I’m going to pick him up right now,” Maeda said while wearing a coat.

“I’ll go with you.” Rumiko hurriedly back to the room to change clothes.

“No, just stay at home waiting for us to come back. I’m leaving now.” Before she could say anything, Maeda went out of the door.

“You have to hurry back.” Rumiko had no choice but to run to the door and loudly shout.

“I know.”

Once Maeda drove out, Rumiko was restless, feeling both anxious and looking forward to it.

‘That’s right, Rumi should also know about this.’ Thinking about this, she quickly ran to Rumi’s room and knocked her door.

After the door is opened, Rumiko saw Rumi was single-heartedly dedicated to practicing the test questions.

“Rumi.” Rumiko softly called out.

The Kendo girl finally heard someone called her, raised her head to look at the caller, who turned out to be Rumiko.

“Turns out to be Aunty, what can I do for you?” The girl stood up, looked at her and asked.

“Rumi, according to Ryutaro, the police have found Masashi,” Rumiko said as tears streaming down her face.

“What?” The pen in the girl’s hand dropped to the floor.

“Aunty, is this true, they’ve really found senpai?” The girl excitedly ran to her side.

“It’s true, Ryutaro has gone to pick him up, soon they’ll be back.” At the last word, Rumiko has already choked with sobs.

At this time, the girl’s mind went blank. She could not believe the thing that she looks forward to day and night, could actually come so suddenly.

When the two women were anxiously waiting for the return of Lei Yin, Ryutaro Maeda used the car to carry Lei Yin around the block back and forth to make up time.

“It’s almost time, let’s go back.” Looking at his watch, Ryutaro Maeda said.

“Em, let’s go then. Alas, haven’t seen them for a year, I do not know what has become of them now?” Lei Yin sighed.

“They are thinking of you everyday. If I do not know that you have had difficulties, I really want to beat the sh*t out of you.” Maeda threw the cigarette butt out of the window.

Lei Yin paused, after a while, he said: “Let’s go back. I also want to see them.”

Ryutaro Maeda immediately turned the car to drive back.

Once again coming to the door, Lei Yin saw Rumiko and Rumi standing at the doorway side by side looking out.

After getting out of the car, step by step Lei Yin walked to the door.

Watching the two women’s eyes flashing with tears, Lei Yin didn’t know what to say. After a while, he said a sentence in a very dry voice: “Mom, Rumi, I’m back.”

The two women standing at the doorway rushed out to throw themselves at him....

Chapter 135 - Reunion

“The thing is, our police met with the US embassy and took Masashi back.” After the excitement from the reunion, Ryutaro Maeda slowly began to explain the reason of Masashi’s disappearance.

“So that sort of thing could actually happen.” Rumiko was very sad and held Masashi’s hand. At the side, Rumi kept on wiping away her tears.

Seeing them cry so sadly, Lei Yin help but feel a little bit guilty. Looking at Maeda, he discovered that he was the same.

The version that Lei Yin explained to them was very simple. The general content follows along: He went to US to visit a good friend who he met online, but it didn’t take long when the plane had an accident. After being sent to a local hospital, because of the excessive blood loss during that time, resulted in insufficient blood to make the brain function, so he had been unconscious and in bed full of patient for a year. After the crash, the documents, wallet and luggage were stolen by local thieves, so the US hospital was unable to confirm his identity. But up until recently, he miraculously woke up, after contacting the local embassy, he had safely returned to Japan.

Although Rumiko was convinced with their explanation, but Lei Yin and Maeda knew, that this version had many weak points. The biggest flaw was that even without the documents to prove his identity, it was very obvious that “Gennai Masashi” had Asian ethnic characteristics, and most people in the US would see him as

a tourist. As long as they check immigration records at the airport they'll be able to find his data quickly. There wouldn't be any problem to confirm his identity. But Rumiko didn't understand how the police operated, and in any case, as long as he could make them believe him, it was enough. This time, he should have passed through the plan.

“Masashi, you look very tired, quickly take a back and rest well.” After a long time, Rumi finally calmed down, and told Lei Yin.

“Okay, mother. You also get some rest, Rumi you too.” He was indeed a little tired, as he had just got off the plane last night, in addition to nursing Naoko on the hospital bed, he hadn't close his eyes ever since. If not for Naoko insisting him to go back and rest, he would have possibly still be at the hospital.

“Senpai, I'll help you prepare hot water.” Rumi stood up.

“Thank you.” Lei Yin said with a smile.

“You're welcome.” Afraid to look at his eyes, the girl whispered something, and then hurriedly ran towards the bathroom.

Seeing Rumi's shy look, Rumiko gently laughed.

After taking a bath, Lei Yin's spirit became a lot better.

Passing through Rumi's room, he saw the room lights on.

Knocking on the door, there came the familiar voice of Rumi, “Come in.”

Opening the door, he saw Rumi sitting in front of a desk, a book spread on top of the table.

“Senpai.” The young girl didn’t think it would be him, and was suddenly a little startled close the book on the table.

Seeing her like this, Lei smiled and walked towards her.

“Writing a diary? Don’t worry, I won’t take a peek.”

The girls face was crimson.

Pulling up a chair, sitting down, Lei Yin stared at the girl for a moment, then simply said: “It seems that the little girl has finally grown up.”

Hearing this, a surge of emotion suddenly welled up on the young girl. Tears flowed from her eyes coming out uncontrollably.

“Senpai, I miss you.” Rumi could no longer bear it, and threw herself into his arms and cried.

“I’m sorry.” Except for this words, Lei Yin didn’t know what else to say.

The girl shook her head and said: “No, so long as senpai....came back, it’s enough.”

Lei Yin silently stroke her hair, and felt that it had been longer than a year since he had done so.

After she calmed down, Lei Yin said with a gentle voice: “Listen, Maeda said that you were busy preparing for the university entrance exam recently, studying hard is good, but you must take care of yourself. Understand?”

“Un.” The young girl nodded gently in his arms.

Feeling the girl’s mature body, Lei Yin thought that hugging like this isn’t very good, so he gently lifted her up, and then used his sleeves to wipe the tears from her face.

“Crying kid.” After wiping her tears away, Lei Yin pinched her nose with a smile.

The young girl also looked at him, smiling.

“Well, go get some rest.” Lei Yin stood up.

Following him to the door, the girl looked up at him, and then said meaningfully: “Senpai, Will I see again tomorrow?”

“You little fool, I’ve already come back, I won’t leave again. Later, you’ll be able to see me everyday.” Patting her head, Lei Yin smiled and left the room.

“Senpai, good night.” Standing at the doorway, the girl smiled with tears flowing down her face.

—

“Lei, when can I get discharged?” Like a cat lover, he was stroking her hair softly, when Naoko asked.

“I asked the doctor, and said that you’ll be able to go home in a week, only that you have to pay special attention to resting and taking medicine on time. Good, patiently wait a few days, all right?” Lei implicitly comforted her.

“Un.” Naoko closed her eyes and complied.

Suddenly she remembered something, looking up, she asked: “Lei, will you continue studying?”

“Why do you ask?”

“Just suddenly thought of asking. I heard that your sister is now a first year in Teikyou University.” Naoko replied.

“Do you think it’s necessary for me to continue studying?”

Naoko seriously thought for a moment, then a little reluctantly shook her head.

With her knowledge, Naoko aware that she had never seen anyone like him. On wealth, he had stored a great sum of money in her account a year ago. Which university student could achieve something to this degree?

“Tell me, you actually thought that I would continue studying, right?” Lei Yin asked.

Looking at his eyes, Naoko nodded.

Struggling in his arms, she said softly: “I know that with your knowledge there’s no need for you to continue studying, but it’s just a little pitiful, you won’t get to know more a lot of people, and make more friend.”

“Please, don’t treat me like I’m autistic, will you? The people I know aren’t few, just that there aren’t many good people.” Mentioning autism, he suddenly remembered that little rascal Amy, and didn’t know what she had become now.

Hearing his words, Naoko couldn’t help but laugh.

“I’ll think about your suggestion. But compared to this thing, there is another matter that’s just bothering me.”

“What matter?” Naoko asked a bit strangely.

“You’re illness, you may want to take some time to rest and fully recover. But you know, I’m a normal healthy man, that kind of pain isn’t enough to stop me from eating you up, it would be awful if you died because of that. Naoko, you better hurry up and quickly get better.” Then, Lei Yin lowered his head and nipped her ear.

“You bastard....” Naoko blushed up to her ears, as she shrunk into his arms.

Perhaps because of being separated for a long time from being a newly-married couple, seeing captivately embarrassed look, Lei Yin immediately had a strong reaction.

Sticking against his body, Naoko immediately sensed the changes in his body, her whole body trembled like a frightened little animal.

Knowing that her heart couldn’t be exposed from too much stimulation, Lei Yin didn’t dare tease her again, and could only hug her motionlessly.

At this time, a knock could suddenly be heard from outside.

Naoko was startled, and immediately left Lei Yin’s arms, and hurriedly fixed her disorderly clothes.

Seeing a young nurse come in, Lei Yin thought that she wanted to

take Naoko's temperature and so on, so he immediately got out of the way at one side.

But the nurse said to Lei Yin: "Are you Gennai Masashi?"

"I am, did something happen?" Lei Yin was a little surprised.

"Some gentlemen outside said something about looking for you. They're waiting in the corridor outside." The nurse replied.

"Thank you. Naoko, I'll take my leave." Lei Yin turned his head and said to Naoko.

"Lei, you must come back a bit faster." Naoko's eyes revealed a worried expression.

"Relax, I'll come back quickly." Kissing her forehead, Lei Yin went out of the hospital ward.

Naoko was a little restless as she gazed towards the direction he had left.

—

In the hallway, Lei Yin saw a few people who were looking for him.

It was them, a faint smile crept on Lei Yin face.

One of the men was about to speak, when Lei Yin's hand had immediately prevented him from opening his mouth.

“Let's go talk on the roof.” With that, he took the lead, and walked towards the rooftop.

The men immediately followed behind.

After reaching the roof, the four men dressed in black suits shut the door, and then stayed there.

The other two men went to the edge of the roof, one of the man took off his sunglasses clearly revealing his face, and then, all of a sudden knelt in front of Lei Yin, clasping his feet, shouted: “Master!”

Changgan was also shaking out of his hat.

“Master, we finally meet you again.”

Taking a deep breath, Lei Yin calmed himself from their excitement, and then forcefully shoved Reili away.

“Master, I thought you had....” Reili was crying like a child.

“I didn’t think I’d see you again.” Lei Yin said with a deep feeling.

“Master, why didn’t come to us for so long? I really missed you. If we haven’t received Akamatsu Ryuichiro’s phone call, we wouldn’t have known that you were back.” Reili was hardly able to stop his tears.

“Not that I don’t want to find you, it’s that I couldn’t.” At this point, Lei Yin sighed.

Changan and Reili didn’t say anything, waiting for his answer.

“In the last battle, I opened the power that I shouldn’t use. Although I’ve successfully killed a lot of people, but that power would soon force my body to come to an end. But I don’t know why, I didn’t die. And drifted towards a fishing village near Boston, and later was fortunately saved by a person.

Although it was a narrow escape, but my body’s meridians were broken, so I laid in bed for a full year. On top of that, I had a serious impact on the brain, of course, lost all of my memories. Until six months ago, I slowly recovered my memory, and repaired those broken meridians one by one. Half a month ago, I finally fixed up all my meridians and returned to Japan.”

Hearing his story, Changan and Reili’s face went up and down.

“Master, I’m sorry I almost killed you.” After a moment of silence, Reili said with a deep voice.

Glancing at him, Lei Yin scratched his chin, said: “Do you remember what I had said last time? That I’d teach you a lesson. In order to ease your guilt. Come, let us master and disciple get intimate.” With that, Lei Yin took him at the other side of the roof.

“Master....Master, please don’t?” Reili screamed as he was being pulled away.

Lei Yin ignored him and continued to bring him into the corner.

“Ah, Master, don’t hit me in the face!” Soon, Reili’s screams could be heard at the corner.

Changan without word smiled, the four men who were guarding the door for a moment each had a strange look in their face.

Ten minutes later, Reili’s whole face was swollen like a pig as he pathetically followed Lei Yin back.

“Master, you did it too hard, how could I let anyone see me like this?” Reili touched his face, his eyes shed a drop of green tear.

“This way, I’m giving you the chance to stay at home, and keep you out from fooling around.” Lei Yin gave him a stern look.

Reili suddenly didn’t dare to speak out.

“Master, you’ve worked hard.” Changan said with a smile.

“Fortunately, this no good kid has rough skin and flesh, the feeling is good.” Lei Yin thoughtlessly answered.

With regards to Changan’s ridicule, Reili could only smile helpless. But after a meal of his master’s beating, he seemed to be a lot more comfortable. I won’t become a masochist, right?

“Master, you’ve only possessed this little body, how can you lose your memory?” After a while, Reili remembered an issue, and opened his mouth to ask.

Looking at him, Lei Yin leaned on the railing, and said: “Do you know why human’s get angry? That’s because the brain is stimulated, caused by the kidney sending a signal up. In short, all human emotion, much of which is caused by physiological effect. Although I’m a spirit, but every time I possess a body, I don’t just purely control it, but also fuse with it. If I possessed a serious idiot’s body with brain damage, then similarly, before that body is scrapped, I would also be stranded in that body and become an idiot. That’s why, similarly, with the body I have now, if the brain is damaged, then it would also be normal for me to lose my memory. In the state of spirit, because there is no physiological effect, I was in a state of nothingness, which is what Buddhists call free.”

“Fortunately master has finally returned.” Reili said.

“You came to me, it was too noticeable. Tonight I’ll go look for

you.” Lei Yin said.

“Master, let’s talk again in detail tonight. This is your cell phone and the documents.” Changan handed him something.

Lei Yin readily took the bag. Because he couldn’t bring any personal thing while on duty, in order to avoid someone from finding it, Lei Yin had given it to Changan.

“Master, we’ll go first.” Reili said to Lei Yin.

“I’ll call tonight.” Lei Yin nodded.

Once they left, Lei Yin returned to the ward.

Seeing Lei Yin come back safe and sound, Naoko was very happy.

“I said that I’d come back quick, you worry too much.” Lei Yin pitifully touched her face.

“Lei, I was really scared.” Tears were glistening in Naoko’s eyes.

“I won’t leave you again.” Lei Yin lowered his head and kissed her lips.

Feeling that familiar warmth again, Naoko burst into tears while gently responding.

Chapter 136 - Option

This chapter is sponsored by Anonymous

Very quickly, a week has passed.

In this period, Kazumi came back once, and when she saw her brother really came back, she burst into tears.

To see the always calm Kazumi cry like that, Lei Yin was both touched and guilty.

After several days in Japan, Changan and ReiLi returned to the United States.

As for Naoko, her condition has been very stable, and her body recovered quickly.

Everything seems to be developing for the better.

This day, Naoko was discharged from the hospital, besides not knowing what to say to Naoko when he walked her out of the hospital, Lei Yin was having a grand confrontation with the Hasebe family.

“No, Naoko can’t live together with you again, this is highly improper.” Hasebe Masao was very determined.

“Naoko is my woman, what’s wrong with living together with me?” Lei Yin categorically said.

“From today on, Naoko had to move back home. I am her father, I have the right to do so.” Hasebe Masao continued.

“Naoko is already an adult, long past the need for parental permission. Besides, her body just needs more of my care.” Lei Yin replied tit for tat.

“There’s no need for you to worry about this, she’s my daughter, and we’ll take good care of her.”

“Talking to this point, it seems you just want me to say goodbye to Naoko. Father-in-law, what year is it now, a woman that is a few years older than the man is not big of a deal.” Lei Yin shrugged and said.

To hear the man calling himself “Father-in-law,” Hasebe Masao jumped up and shouted, “I’m warning you, I’m not your father-in-law. I will not marry my daughter to you.”

“Father-in-law, why are you so polite, we are all families here. Wouldn’t you say, Mother-in-law?” Lei Yin deliberately said to Hasebe Shohata.

Hasebe Shohata was overwhelmed to see this so-called “Son-in-law.”

“I repeat, I will not let Naoko marry a person like you.” Hasebe Masao was so furious that he started to smoke.

“Father-in-law please quell the anger, being angry is not good for your body.” Lei Yin said, pretending to care.

“You....”

“You said that Naoko is your woman, but you’re just a high school student who hasn’t even graduated, aren’t you just boasting. Do you think you can really give Naoko a comfortable life?” Hasebe Kenji has long seen this guy not pleasing to his eyes, immediately said with a cynical tone.

“To be honest, this is not difficult. Brother Kenji, although my money is not a lot, I can still draw billions at any given time.” Lei Yin casually said.

Thinking that he was playing with him, Hasebe Kenji was really angry.

Looking at the scene that was getting more and more intensified, Hasebe Kento can’t help but had a headache.

After many years studying abroad, the recently came back Hasebe Kenji was very different than Hasebe Kento, who has long been taking care of his father’s business. After the many years of business experience, he had developed a fairly accurate reading of a person.

When he first saw the young man named Gennai Masashi who was followed by a few bodyguards, he knew that this man is not as simple as Kenji imagined.

This week, he sent people to carefully investigated him. And sure enough, he also found the records that his father previously investigated in many places.

He did have an ordinary office worker mother, and he also has a policeman as his stepfather. In addition to regularly skipped classes, he is just like any other ordinary high school student.

But after further investigation, they found out that the house their family lives in was actually bought by himself. Moreover, he obtained this money through investment securities. What even more amazing was that he also separately bought a villa in Shinagawa district plus a luxury car. The money is also coming from the stock market.

After checking out his investment security records, he found that the above records could only be summed up with one word, miracle.

None of them missed, always buy in when the stocks were in their lowest position, and then closed when they reached their highest point.

Hasebe Kento does not believe there's a prophet in this world; this miracle has only one explanation, that is, he and a few

mysterious bankers manipulated the stock market as he saw fit.

He also checked the identity of the previous gunmen, but the investigation led to nowhere.

For this mysterious “High school student,” her really didn’t want to have any conflict with him.

Therefore, he suddenly coughed dryly for a moment and then said: “How about this, everyone take a step back, just let Naoko continue to live with Aiko in the apartment. What do you say, father?”

Hearing his son’s words, Hasebe Masao thought that this proposal would be a good solution.

Naoko’s sickness, the biggest reason for that to occur was that he forced her too hard. In fact, what he most disagree with was to see Naoko continue to live with the guy, if in the unlikely event that someone else knows, it will make him lose his face.

“No, I do not agree.” Hasebe Kenji loudly protested.

“Kenji, father will decide this, not you, so stop making any noise.” Fearing his brother would get things into deadlock again, Hasebe Kenta put out his rarely seen elder brother’s prestige.

Seeing his big brother’s angry expression, Hasebe Kenji immediately did not dare to make any sound.

After a while, Hasebe Masao finally nodded and said: “Very well, Naoko can continue to live with Aiko. You don’t have a problem with this, right?” With that, he gave Lei Yin a glance.

“Father-in-law is wise.” Lei Yin said with a smile.

“B*stard!” Hasebe Masao loudly scolded, turned around and walked back to the hospital.

Knowing that his father wanted to help handle Naoko’s discharge formalities, Hasebe Kento immediately followed behind.

“It’s alright now, I’ll send you back.” Lei Yin turned to Naoko and said.

“Em.” Seeing that they no longer quarreled, Naoko felt relieved.

In the car, Naoko leaned on her lover’s shoulder and said: “Lei, please don’t quarrel with my father and brothers again, okay?”

“Relax, I will exercise restraint. Don’t worry about this, all right?” Lei Yin kissed her forehead.

“Lei....” Naoko looked at him gratefully.

She knew the reason why he so against her father was because her father forced her to socialize with Yaka Kawashiro. Which

then triggered her heart disease because she took things too heart.

“Alright, let’s go back.” With that, Lei Yin helped fasten her seatbelt and then started the car.

Looking at him driving a BMW in front of them, Hasebe Kenji curiously said: “Where did that guy borrow such a good car?”

Hasebe Kento didn’t speak, just quietly drove the car.

‘Unexpectedly he has paid all the expenses. Perhaps, Naoko has found a good boyfriend.’ Thinking of this, Hasebe Kento smiled.

—

When he got back from Naoko’s apartment, it was already 9 PM.

Walking down the living room, he saw Rumiko sitting on the couch watching TV.

“You came back, Masashi. Had dinner yet?” Rumiko stood up and asked.

“Yes, I had. Where is uncle Maeda?”

“He won’t be back until late.”

Lei Yin sat on the sofa and asked: “What about Rumi, she’s in the room?”

“Yes, this child has been reviewing her lessons very diligently recently.” Rumiko exposed a warm smile.

Lei Yin nodded his head, and casually picked up from the bowl of fruit on the table in front of him an apple to chew up.

Looking at the face of her constantly maturing son, Rumiko felt very pleased.

Masashi really grew up.

“Masashi, what’s your plan for the future?” After a while, Rumiko asked.

“What do you mean by that?” Lei Yin turned to look at her.

“Are you going to continue studying or going out to work?” Rumiko said.

It seemed he can’t escape from this question forever.

Naoko also asked the same question a few days ago, but at the time he did not pay too much attention to it. Now, he was suddenly being asked again, Lei Yin didn’t know what to say.

To be honest, he can't think of anything else to do now.

He already gave the Black Dragon over there to Changan and ReiLi, unless they encounter a life and death situation like before, under normal circumstances, he didn't want to interfere too much.

If he was asked to go out to work like those Japanese bosses, that was even more unbearable to him. Besides, with his current net worth, there was simply no need to do so.

But if every day he were idle, he would be seen as a prodigal. He also can't pester Naoko to do that thing all day long. Moreover, now even Naoko has become a famous columnist in a women's magazine, and almost everyday writing articles. Compared to her, he did seem a bit less busy.

"Mom, you mean?" Lei Yin asked a rhetorical question.

"I hope you can continue to study. I know you made a lot of money, but I think it would be better if you read more books. Although this year's college entrance exams is already over, as long as you study for another year, then I am sure you can be admitted." Rumiko said with full of hope.

"Mom, let me think about it, okay?"

"Em, you think about it."

After returning to the room, Lei Yin lied on the bed, looking at

the ceiling in a daze.

After a long time, he finally sat up, then took out a coin from the wallet.

Looking at the coin in his hand, he used his thumb to flick it up, the coin immediately tossed up into the air.

When it was about to fall, he reached out to catch the coin and then opened his hand to look.

After that, he threw the coin and then catch it for the second look.

After seeing the third results, he helplessly smiled.

He turned around to pick up the phone on the table, and after searching for a number, he finally found it.

After dazedly looking at that number for a moment, he finally pressed down.

Soon, the call was connected, from which came a gentle and elegant female voice: “Is this Mr. Gennai?”

“I am Gennai Masashi, Miss Mio, I have some matter to trouble you....”

Coming out from the bedroom, Lei Yin directly sat down beside Rumiko.

Looking at her full of hope eyes, Lei Yin nodded, “Mom, I listen to you, I will continue my study.”

“Tomorrow I’ll take a leave to help you contact the best cram school, if not, I’ll go ask a tutor to especially teach you.” Rumiko very excitedly said.”

To see her so happy, Lei Yin thought his decision didn’t seem too bad.

“No need, mom. I have a friend who’s father is a board member of Teikyo University. I have just contacted him to ask him to help me find a way. He promised me that if I can pass the Teikyo University entrance exam, I can be admitted to Teikyo University as a midterm student.” Lei Yin said with a smile.

“Is, is it true?” Rumiko looked at him in disbelief.

“It’s true. I’m going to take the entrance exams in a few days.”

“Great, that’s great....” Rumiko’s whole body trembled with excitement.

‘I do not know what would be Naoko’s reaction if she knows this?’ Lei Yin thought

Chapter 137 - Customized

“Kazumi, you seem to be really happy these days, did something good happen?” After finishing class, Wu Qianjing looked at Kazumi who was packing her stuffs up, and asked.

“How did you know?” asked Kazumi.

“Recently you’ve been smiling more and more. Did you find a boyfriend?” Wu Qianjing leaned over and said with a grin.

Looking at this girl who had been glued at her side ever since the start of school, Kazumi shook her head and said: “No, it’s because my brother finally came back.”

“Why say that, does your older brother work outside the country?” Wu Qianjing asked puzzled.

“It’s a little complicated, I’ll explain it to you later, let’s go.” When saying that, Kazumi had already put her books and laptop away.

As they walked out of the building, Wu Qianjing said while walking: “I hate that Tanimura old man’s class, so bothersome and long-winded, listening to that Oldman makes me want to sleep. Nakano’s class is quite good, after all he looks handsome, his lectures is a treat in itself.”

“When are you going to change your view on man? That kind of

man is no good, always enticing the beautiful woman in our class, just looking at it makes me disgust.” Kazumi thought otherwise.

“You’re so prejudiced, he’s just simply making eye contact with them. Are all good looking men bad?” Wu Qianjing protested.

“According to Pavlov’s biological theories. Generally, good looking man will have a certain psychological advantage, this self-righteous psychological advantage would make them feel that they’re a lady killer. So they aren’t faithful to any woman, because they feel that there are a lot of beautiful woman waiting for him to comfort her. This is commonly known as playboy. That’s why good looking man that are good are indeed few. Do you know who Pavlov is? It was the biologist who proved that you can train a dog to drool with the use of ringtone. Just like how men drool at the sight of beautiful girls.” Kazumi said with a vicious tone.

“Did what you say real or not?” Seeing that even a big name such as Pavlov was included, Wu Qianjing doubtfully asked.

“What do you think?”

Seeing her eyes full of teasing expression, Wu Qianjing immediately knew that she had been fooled.

“Hateful fellow.” She was angry and wanted to rush and teach her a lesson.

“Young lady, your image, you might want to pay attention to

your image.” Kazumi deliberately said something.

And sure enough, Wu Qianjing stopped and took a look around, and then gave her a look.

Looking at Kazumi’s mischievous smile, Wu Qianjing was also infected by her and burst into laughter.

She really was happier, before she would always make a plain face. It seems like she really was very happy to see her brother.

She was saying that It was some kind of fate.

Remembering the day, she was to report to school, she was unexpectedly sexually harassed by a sexual harasser in the train, but because there were too many people inside, she was embarrassed to make a fuss. In her most embarrassing moment, a girl suddenly kicked, kicking the guy out of the way, and then loudly scolded the pervert. Wu Qianjing had never seen such a cool girl, blankly staring at the girl who yelled at the pervert that fled, ever since that she had immediately become her idol. Afterwards, she discovered that they were actually studying the same field, and immediately felt that it was destiny that they had met.

Because Teikyou University doesn’t provide lodging for students, so Wu Qianjing was clinging to dear life, and finally thinking that she wanted her life to become peaceful, she had wanted to live and rent at the same place together with Kazumi.

When they arrived at the educational administration building, Kazumi suddenly stopped.

“Hey, why did you stop walking?” Wu Qianjing asked puzzled.

Without replying, Kazumi suddenly ran towards the man standing in front of the building entrance.

Wu Qianjing didn't see the person's appearance and followed close behind.

When Kazumi was about 50 meters away from the man, the man suddenly turned around and looked at her. Then saw the girl who was running towards him.

“It really is elder brother, and I'd thought I got the wrong person.” Running up to him, Kazumi said pleasantly surprised.

“Didn't imagine we'd meet so soon, I had wanted to surprise you.” Lei Yin said with a smile.

“Did you come looking for me?” Kazumi asked.

“That's one of the reasons. But, I actually came here to take the entrance exam.”

“What entrance exam?” Hearing his words, Kazumi seemed to have had a premonition of what was about to happen.

“Kazumi, is he your brother?” At this time, Wu Qianjing came and asked.

“Yes, he’s Gennai Masashi. Brother, this is my classmate and roommate, Wu Qianjing.” Kazumi replied.

“Hello, thank you for always taking care of my sister.”

“You’re too polite, I’m actually the one being taken cared of.” Shaking hands with him, Wu Qianjing took a look at him.

After they had greeted each other, Kazumi continued to ask: “Elder brother, you were saying something about an entrance exam, care to explain it more clearly?”

“Mother thought that I needed to continue my studies, I happened to know a man, his father is a member of the Teikyou University board of directors, he has helped me get through the line, and so long as I can pass the entrance exam, he can help me study here.” Lei Yin replied.

“Really? Are you really attending this university?” Holding his hand, Kazumi was very excited.

“In high school, for a period of time you were already on the same level as me, this older brother of yours had already lost face. Don’t tell me, in the next years you wanted me to go to a cram school and become your junior?” Lei Yin said.

“How did you do on the test?” Kazumi asked hurriedly.

“All passed. Later on, we’ll graduate together. Please advise me, Kazumi schoolmate.” Lei Yin said with a smile.

Kazumi couldn’t hold it in anymore, and became more excited, suddenly embracing him.

“Damn, why did no one tell me?” Kazumi cried while she complained.

“If someone had told you, where would the surprise be? Come home for dinner tonight, Mother is waiting for us at home.”

Kazumi nodded in his arms.

The nearby Wu Qianjing enviously watched them.

—

“Lei, will you be wearing a suit tomorrow?” At their house in Shinagawa, Naoko was preparing Lei Yin’s clothes for his class tomorrow.

“No, I’ll wear the usual. It’s only a class, no need to be so serious.”

“But Teikyou University is a well-known university, tomorrow will be your first day to attend class, I thought it would be quite good if you put on something nice.” Naoko said.

Lei Yin went over and picked her up on the knee, “Fool, you’re too nervous. The students there, seeing me wear something too formal, would think that I’m a salesman.”

Naoko laughed, and very contently leaned her head on his chest, listening to the familiar sound of his heartbeat.

“Your old man, is he still forcing you to see that Yaka Kawashiro?” Lei Yin asked as he appreciatively held her delicate hands.

“Father hadn’t mentioned this matter again, it seems like he doesn’t want to force me again.” Naoko replied.

“I can understand your father’s anxiety, after all, no father would leave his baby daughter to someone who hasn’t even shown up for high school. Well, anyway, it would be a waste to leave the money in the back, so when I have time I’ll make a company. And let your father see that his son-in-law is not a lounge, and should be a bit more at ease.”

“Do you really want to build a company?” Naoko raised her head and asked.

“I have that idea, in any case I still need to go to university. But at the appointed time, you’ll be my beautiful secretary sitting on my lap inside the office every day.” When it came to the last sentence, Lei Yin jokingly laughed.

“Hateful!” Naoko blushed to her ears, gently hitting his chest.

Lei Yin’s heart moved, he tightly held her in his arms, smelling her heavenly fragrance.

The mature, tender and beautiful woman docilely settled in his arms, letting him do as he wishes.

After hugging for a while, Lei Yin suddenly asked: “That kid Aiko, how’s she doing recently?”

Naoko was charmingly furious: “Still calling her a kid, she’s now a university student. Just that a lot of school boys are chasing her badly, and would receive calls from them every day.

“She needs a shield, your old man should have no free time to manage you two again. The so-called grown up daughter leaving the nest, it seems like he’ll be having a headache again.” Lei Yin smirked.

“Although many boys are pursuing her, it seems she isn’t interested in any of them. Lei, I think Aiko may still like you.” Naoko said a bit worried.

“Don’t think too much, maybe she just hadn’t met the right one. She’ll be in university for 4 years, it’s long enough, just let her take her time to find the one.” Lei Yin comforted.

“Un.” Naoko, leaned her head on his chest again.

—

“Student, I would like to introduce to you, this is your new classmate Gennai Masashi. And for some special reason, it had been quite some time before he could get here. Later, you must get along well.” Attending his class, a 40-year old teacher, Moriyama-sensei introduced him to the student as he stood at the platform.

After Moriyama was finished, the students immediately began to talk to each other.

It has already been two months since school started, and he had only registered at this time, it really made them think very strangely.

Watching the students talk among themselves, Moriyama-sensei coughed, then loudly said: “Gennai student, just like in the past, go and introduce yourself.”

Lei Yin was most annoyed with was having to introduce himself, but since Moriyama-sensei had called him, he had to walk to the center of the platform, saying: “Hello everyone, I am Gennai Masashi, from now on please advise me.” With that, he went back

to the same place.

Seeing that he had just said a sentence and was immediately done, not only the students, even Moriyama-sensei was caught off guard.

“Well, Gennai student, are you finished?”

“Yes.”

“Then, you may go back to your seat.”

“Thank you.”

“Now, let’s begin our class.” After Lei Yin got out of the way, Moriyama-sensei immediately said.

When Lei Yin was just about to look for a “bed”, a lanky man suddenly said to him in a low voice: “Hello, my name is Takeda Hidetoshi. Gennai Masashi, come sit here, there are empty seats.”

Hearing his name, Lei Yin couldn’t help but twitch the corner of his mouth. After having a glance at him, he finally sat beside him.

After sitting, Lei Yin discovered that this guy’s jeans were deliberately with holes, on his T-shirt there was two big English letters printed: F*ck Me.

Although Lei Yin didn't care about the traditional moral principal of public dress, but seeing this kind of dress full of bad taste, he now felt a little regret for impulsively sitting next to him.

When the boy saw Lei Yin look at his pants, he proudly said: "Well, isn't this very cool, I also wanted to make two large holes in the buttocks, but my sister said that if I did, she would at once cut off our brother and sister relationship. That's why I restrained myself from doing so."

These words made Lei Yin remember of Reili when he was a kid. The boy at the age of 6 was also persistent in wearing an open-crotch pants, saying that it was more convenient for him. Lei Yin at that time didn't care about what he wore, and was too lazy to care for him.

Many years later, every time Reili remembered about his righteous appearance at the time, even with his ultra-thick facial skin, he still felt very embarrassed. And even began to blame his master: Why didn't you stop me from going that, as he was being laughed at for so many years. But after a meal of Lei Yin's crazy martial arts, he didn't dare to mention this matter anymore, and could only sigh at his own cruel fate at heart.

"Your family is in Tokyo?" The youth named Takeda Hidetoshi asked.

"Yes, it's not far from here." Lei Yin replied.

"That's really nice, you can go back at any time. My home is in

Kyoto, I came here together with my sister to take the test, but she's older than me by one year. Do you know who my sister is? Yes, you should already know. She's the student council clerk. Very fierce, she had only been here for two year, but has already become the clerk. Not long, the position of student council president would certainly belong to her. Also, she is the school's flower in her first year. Having many male students chase her like flies."

Lei Yin looked at the male student who obviously had an elder sister complex as he was endlessly talking about her elder sister, without any opportunity to interrupt him.

"Takeda Hidetoshi, we're still in class, shut your mouth." When Takeda Hidetoshi was enthusiastically talking, a girl wearing a gold-rimmed glasses in front of them, turned around and gave him a stern look.

"Dead 38, isn't this none of your business?" Takeda quietly cursed.

"You say that again, and I'll complain to the teacher for you." The girl didn't allow herself to be outdone and answered back.

"You...." Takeda without making any more noise, and resentfully looked at her.

Lei Yin on the one side watched them bicker with great interest. Although they were university students, but after all, it hadn't been long since they had graduated from high school, compared to

those older students that graduated before them, and sure enough there were still significant differences. As they still resemble a high school student.

“She’s called Dead 38, a friend of Mai Haruko, and is a person who like minding other’s business. Later you must be careful of this fellow. She often snitches people to the teacher.” Takeda looked over to Lei Yin and whispered in his ear.

Lei Yin laughed and didn’t make a sound, and then took out a novel from his bag and started to read.

Takeda Hidetoshi looked at him for a moment, and then said: “Gennai-San, do you have a girlfriend now?”

Lei Yin strangely looked at his eyes.

Takeda pointed to the ring on his hand, and then added: “Your lucky that you already have a girlfriend.”

Lei Yin didn’t understand the meaning of his words, without bothering to think about it, he lowered his head and continued to read.

Chapter 138 - Laughter

“Good, it’s the lunch bell, I’ll take you to the school’s cafeteria. Don’t be polite, it’s my treat. I’ll also introduce you to a friend.” Takeda Hidetoshi patted Lei Yin’s shoulder and said.

Unexpectedly towards this guy, Lei Yin didn’t feel any hatred. Although he dresses weird, but at least he wasn’t like other people pretending to be kind.

Putting the novel into his bag, Lei Yin together with Takeda came out of the classroom.

“The meal is on me, but my sister might be coming to look for me.” Lei Yin said.

“Your sister studies here? What does she look like?” Takeda Hidetoshi asked, very direct.

“Is it really important?”

“You misunderstand, I don’t mean anything about it. It’s just that the person I’m introducing you to, is a typical sexual harasser. If your younger sister looks good, you’d better be careful.”

The dining room in the school looked more expensive than the typical cafeteria, but the environment is also good, patronizing many of the students, especially couples. One can see pairs sitting together everywhere. Some were even feeding each other in the

presence of everyone.

“Bitches.” Takeda Hidetoshi looked at the couples making out despised.

After grabbing a seat by the window, Takeda immediately pulled out his cell phone and dialed a number.

“Hey, where are you?”

“What, class isn’t finished? You liar, you must be flirting with girls again, hurry up, I have a friend to introduce you to. Really.”

After ending the call, Takeda Hidetoshi implicitly said to Lei Yin: “That guy will come. I’ll tell you about him, his name is Yoshikawa Jiro, we had played together since childhood. That fellow is a lecher, just by seeing a beautiful girl for the first time, he would already want to have sex with them. He originally studies law, but after two weeks he quit, seeing that there were more beautiful girls in the literature section, he simply enrolled in a US and Britain language and culture course. I’ll tell you a secret, but don’t tell anyone. That guy’s university entrance exam scores were not enough for him to study in Teikyo university, and was only able to enter because his old man had knocked him in the school with money. Oh remember, never tell anyone, or he will never let me go. Hey, why aren’t you talking, it isn’t too good for a young person to be too silent.

His mouth was like a machine gun, so Lei Yin found it hard to insert words.

When Lei Yin was about to speak, his cell phone suddenly rang.

“Kazumi? Where are you?”

“In the cafeteria, together with a classmate, we haven’t begun to eat. It doesn’t matter if you can come over with us or not.”

After he hung up the phone, Takeda asked, “Was that your sister?”

“Yes.”

“I would also like to have a younger brother or sister, but after my old man made me, I was the youngest one. I was always bullied by my older brother and sister.” Takeda Hidetoshi said.

“A myriad of love, what else do you want?” Lei Yin said with a smile.

“You just said myriad of love, I didn’t catch that.”

“Nothing, just a Chinese proverb. You go first and order food.”

Takeda wasn’t polite with him, and picked up the menu and started to order food.

Shortly after ordering food, two youths suddenly walked towards them.

Looking up, Takeda said to one of the youth: “You finally came, making it hard on me. And this is?”

The youth said to him: “He is my classmate, called Shiraishi Akira. You definitely don’t know this, but in high school he was a celebrity in their kendo club, often participating in various types of tournament, and has won numerous prizes where he entered. He had just entered the Teikyou university Kendo club, and was designated as third best. Isn’t that awesome?”

“How did you know these things? I’ve never heard you being interested in kendo.” Takeda asked curiously.

“What’s strange? Let me tell you something that you don’t know. I am now a member of the Teikyou university’s Kendo club.” Yoshikawa Jiro curled his lips to say.

“Weren’t you in the photography club, why did you suddenly decide to join the Kendo club? Let me guess, you took a fancy on a young girl in the Kendo club. I won’t say anything else, but let me introduce to you. This is Gennai Masashi, and had just registered in class today. His a good fellow. Masashi, this is Yoshikawa Jiro.”

After they met, they made a brief introduction.

Lei Yin carefully sized up the two man.

Yoshikawa Jiro was a typical playboy. Tall, appearance filled with some wild flavors. Coupled with the potential for excellence, but some men still think that his a disgusting guy, using sweet words and honey filled phrases that women actually likes listening to, in private, according to Takeda that at the age of 13 this guy was not a virgin any more. Listening to this, Lei Yin turned cold.

As for Shiraishi Akira, he was a silent man with few words. After sitting down for so long, he hadn't even opened his mouth. However, he also looked quite handsome, he was a very cool male student that should also be welcomed by many female students.

“Will you older sister come?” After Yoshikawa ordered food, he asked Takeda.

“She's busy right now, but sometimes she would accompany me to eat.”

Without even letting him finish, Lei Yin suddenly stood up looking at the front of the cafeteria.

He noticed two girls walking towards them.

Seeing her elder brother, and three other male students, Kazumi wasn't able to respond for a while.

“Kazumi, come, sit down.” Lei Yin pulled out two chairs, and called Kazumi and Wu Qianjing.

From the time they came, Yoshikawa had already started eyeing the two. Looking at the old-fashion dressed Kazumi, he quickly considered her not within his scope. As for Wu Qianjing, though she wasn't a top-level beauty, she still looked good, giving off a very sweet feeling, should be worth the effort.

Seeing Yoshikawa stare at Wu Qianjing like a wolf, Lei Yin began to regret to invite Kazumi and Wu Qianjing together. Hoping that it would good that if she won't be affected.

Sure enough, during the meal, Yoshikawa began to look for opportunities to start a conversation with Wu Qianjing, inquiring about her situation. Seeing his enthusiastic manner, the girl felt at a loss.

“Brother, are you renting a house?”

Because Teikyou University doesn't provide lodging for its students, Kazumi had asked.

“Not yet, accompany me to go look for one.”

“Good, after eating, we go.”

“Masashi, you want to rent a place? I also have a spare room at my place, would you care to share with me?” Takeda interrupted.

“No. I’m used to living on my own.” Lei Yin liked tranquility, so it would be fine living with Kazumi, however, living in the same place as this fellow who doesn’t even know how to stay silent, he would absolutely suffer.

Seeing that Lei Yin didn’t agree, Takeda appeared to be a little disappointed.

“Elder brother, how’s the first day of class?” Kazumi asked with a smile.

“It’s okay, not too bad.”

“I hope Rumi can come here so that we can meet every day.”

“That kid is studying hard every day, I think it shouldn’t be a problem.”

Kazumi, who wasn’t able to talk with her brother for a long time, was at ease, feeling very comfortable being beside him, revealing another smile on her face.

When the siblings were talking, Takeda suddenly let out a cry: “Yoshikawa, your Namera Tetsuno came.”

Yoshikawa raised his head to look, and saw three beautiful women talking to each other walking towards the cafeteria.

“Masashi, check it out, that’s the school flower of this year’s new student, Narimura Haruko. You really having a treat, seeing her on your first day.” Takeda said, hastily pulling Lei Yin.

“Which one do you mean?”

“Idiot, the middle one, of course, can’t you see that she’s the most beautiful one among the three?”

Lei Yin looked at the female student, who looked really attractive. The female student was beautiful, letting out a faint arrogance.

Lei Yin calmly recovered his vision. Kazumi had been observing his reaction, when she saw this, she immediately asked: “Elder brother, isn’t that girl very pretty?”

Looking at the other two young men staring at the female student, Lei Yin went nearer and whispered to her ear: “Flower pot.”

Kazumi laughed while covering her mouth.

When the three girls sat down at a table, Takeda said, “Really very attractive, but isn’t as beautiful as my sister.”

“If it weren’t for her attitude, I would have already given your sister a love letter and some flowers. Your older sister is very attractive, but usually so serious. Lacking with feminine qualities.”

Yoshikawa said.

“What do you understand? Only liking those naughty prostitutes, you don’t understand at all.” Takeda refuted.

“It’s at least much better than a certain fellow who has a serious sister complex.”

“Bastard, if you dare say that again, I’ll let you see what happens.”

“Do you think I’m afraid of you? Ever since childhood, have you won a fight against me even once?” Yoshikawa curled his lips to say.

“You....”

Looking at them getting more and more louder, Kazumi was a little worried, and said: “Brother, you need to stop them.”

“Don’t be afraid just wait, if they really fight, we’ll just sit at another spot, and pretend that we don’t know them.”

Hearing Lei Yin, Kazumi burst out laughing. While Wu Qiajing looked as if she was going to faint.

—

Soon, Two weeks passed by. Lei Yin got used to his life here.

University was indeed a very free environment, when a student falls asleep in class they don't wake them up, no matter what the teacher generally didn't care. But in some courses, it's require to attend at least 45 hours in class, otherwise they won't receive the credit for that class. In addition, each year they two big test; a midterm exam and a final exam.

Because Lei Yin majored in Economics, which was neither a cold nor hot class. Usually teacher would talk about economic theories, economic policies, and the industrial policy as well as globalization, only having the students to this types of topic making some students in class sleepy.

For these courses, Lei Yin too weren't able to resist. It only took him two days to flipped over the whole text. After reading, and listening to the instructor's slow lesson about the contents of the chapter, and began to unable to bear it any longer. And just like in high school, skipping classes became an ordinary activity.

Takeda Hidetoshi also had the same idea. And noticed that Lei Yin was the same, unable to sit through the class lectures, immediately seeing him as a real friend. And started hanging out with them, frequently taking a stroll and looked at beautiful women.

Lei Yin began to think that Yoshikiwa Jiro was like them frequently skipping classes, but he surprisingly discovered that he would go to class every day and get there in time. Lei Yin certainly didn't believe that he was a person who would be diligent in his studies, so afterwards he had asked Takeda, and found out that

Yoshikawa's father was very strict with him, ever since high school, every semester, he would come to school and see the teacher asking about his son's studies. If he find out that his son was absent for one day, his son would meet the club.

One day, when Takeda heard the that the first year school flower Narimura Haruko was taking a history class, he immediately took the half-asleep and half-awake Lei Yin and flew towards the literary class to find out if it's true.

Sitting in the huge classroom, he saw more and more girls coming in and sitting down, Takeda began to regret why he didn't find such a nice place. No wonder the literary department was known as the paradise of beauties. Even if he couldn't see Narimura Haruko this time, he would still come and have a look.

Many male students had the same goal as him, following close by, a substantial amount of male students sat behind the female students. Some of them were new, and some weren't. But all had the same ulterior motive.

Quickly attending class, Takeda saw that Narimura Haruko didn't come and was a little disappointed. Turning his head to look at Lei Yin, he discovered like magic, Lei Yin took out a novel from his body.

"It seems like Narimura Haruko can't come." Takeda sighed.

"Is that so?" Lei Yin casually replied.

Knowing that he at heart wasn't listening to what he says, Takeda was searching for something to entertain himself, looking around he suddenly saw a sublime beauty.

When Takeda was about to give up, all of a sudden, some fine footsteps came from outside, then opening the classroom door, three beautiful women panting sweet fully came in.

"Is the seat taken?" One of the girls who was the nearest to Takeda asked.

"No, please sit." Takeda quickly replied.

"Thanks." Then one of them sat in the middle, followed by two others also sitting at the other girls side.

When several boys who were sitting in the front row saw Narimura Haruko sitting at the back, they began to regret not choosing the location at the back.

When Takeda Hidetoshi was just about to talk to Narimura Haruko, at that time, the classroom door opened, a 40-year-old, middle-aged man wearing gold-rimmed eyeglasses walked in.

Knowing that the instructor was about to start teaching, Takeda shut up.

When the middle-aged teacher started teaching, Takeda didn't have the mood to attend the lecture, his eyes unceasingly looking

at Narimura Haruka, who was sitting not far away.

It seemed like that fellow Yoshikawa Jiro had said was true, this young girl was not any worse than his elder sister. Without knowing how to get her phone number. Takeda started to rack his brain.

Half the class passed by, Takeda was still thinking and was unable to think of a good way to get it. Girls like her, one must line up to pursue her. Generally, there was a rule in pursuing a girl, it was important for the person to think that the other people pursuing the girl were useless and that the first impression was important.

After thinking for a little longer, Takeda finally gave up. This one just couldn't think of any good plan. Suddenly, he remembered the guy next to him has a girlfriend, and that person may have a good plan, after all, he is a seasoned person.

Thinking of this, Takeda hurriedly turned towards Masashi.

When he was about to asked him in a low voice, Takeda suddenly discovered that Lei Yin at this moment wasn't his usual self.

He didn't know when, but the novel left Masashi's hand and was placed on top of the table, without blinking, he stared at the platform, looking at the middle-aged teacher, a hint of laughter appeared on his lips.

He had never seen him look so serious in class, Takeda was a little curious, and couldn't help but focus his attention on the instructor.

“The night of July 7, 1937, the Marco Polo Bridge on the outskirts of Beijing, the Japanese army invaded. The next day, China fired back, making it into a state of war. However, the event itself was caused by a small friction, although the people hoped for it to be resolved, the Chinese and Japanese side actually repeatedly clashed, resolving it became difficult. In regards to this provocative behavior, our army had forced China to open fire....”

“A country in war doesn't kill and maltreat those who are not in the military, Japan is no exception. The Tokyo War Trials recognized the Sino-Japanese war, and that the Japanese had occupied Nanjing and had also killed many Chinese citizens. However the actual situation about the event, was found to have a lot of doubtful information, there were various opinions, and is still in dispute even now...”

“The end of World War II, the United States and other countries indiscriminately raided Tokyo in the air, dropping an atomic bomb on Hiroshima and Nagasaki. Moreover, the Soviet Union had torn the treaty with Japan, and invaded Manchuria, continuous atrocities happened, killing several Japanese citizens, forcing Japan to pull back including the 600,000 Japanese forces that captured Siberia, and was forced into harsh labor, killing 10% of them. This war brought Japan an excruciating pain.”

“Our Imperial Japanese army temporarily stationed in Taiwan, had tremendously contributed in the construction of Taiwan. For

example, our country's irrigationist Mr. Yoichi Hatta, went to investigate the Wushantou Reservoir and made the Chianan Irrigation Plan, completing the design after two year, and began in 1920. Hydraulic engineering he had made included the exit of water in the east using a diversion in the Wushantou reservoir. The Chianan Irrigation system controlled the flood, moisture-proof levee, and was region wide, was a arduous project, the scale was the biggest reservoir in Souteast Asia, and ranked third in the world. The completion of the Chianan Irrigation, had allowed the completion of a thousand hectares of the barren plain, the field became fertile turning green, which is very respected by many farmers. And was finally completed in 1930. The local Taiwanese people greatly benefitted. It's known as the Li of diplomatic relation between the countries—the splendid man Mr. Yoichi Hatta who was born in Ishikawa Prefercture, regarding this are very grateful.....”

Hearing this, Takeda was not interested in listening. It was just a mere platitude, finding it strange, and was unable to understand why Masashi was so enthralled.

Suddenly, he saw Masashi laughed loudly.

Takeda Hidetoshi was surprised, What was this guy doing? Doesn't he know his in class?

Masashi laughed revealing a smile on his face, which made him feel that the guy was really crazy. Without any time to think, he quickly rushed to cover his mouth.

But the man suddenly pushed him aside. Takeda didn't think

that he'd be so powerful, and was all of a sudden pushed down to the ground.

Getting on his nerves, Takeda was angry and annoyed, he got up and glared at him.

At this time, it wasn't only Takeda Hidetoshi, but also everyone in the class was surprised, looking at the young man laughing all the time.

"What are you doing?" The history instructor loudly asked. Loudly echoed throughout the classroom.

Lei Yin slowly stood up, and then slowly stopped laughing.

"Today I heard a joke that I've never heard of." Lei Yin said dismissively.

"What are you trying to say?" Inuo Kento coldly looked at the guy who had interrupted his lecture.

"After hearing your lesson, I finally understood a very important fact.

That is, the reason why robber needs to steal other's stuff. It's actually very simple, that's because you have something that's worth for him to steal. And the reason why a robber must kill the person, that is because, the robber, when stealing from you, felt you trying to fight back, if you don't fight back, he would only

steal from you, but if you fought back, the robber would inevitably kill you. So, everything is the fault of the people who have been robbed.” When it came to the last sentence, Lei Yin sneered.

Chapter 139 - Rearview

“My class does not welcome you, please leave immediately.” Inuo Kento loudly exclaimed.

Looking at him with one eye, Lei Yin suddenly smiled: “You afraid I’ll continue to say it?”

“Why should I be afraid of you?” Inuo Kento angrily said.

Glancing around at the other college student who were staring at him in surprise, Lei Yin with pity and cold gaze looked at them and said: “All of you here, are a group of both pitiful and sad people. Because you are now, by the Japanese Government as well as him, being given an unconscionable teaching, blindfolding your eyes and covering your ears. Do you really believe that, in those years, the Japanese soldiers invaded various Asian countries in order to promote the so-called Yamato spirit? I can plainly tell you, it was a blatant, full of blood aggression.”

“You shut up and get out of here.” Inuo Kento’s eyelids jumped up.

Lei Yin ignored him and continued in a clear and resounding voice, “You do not understand the real history, you are all blind and deaf, so you guys are pathetic. One day, when you travel to Asian countries, you don’t even know why some people would point at your back scolding you a Japanese devil, so you guys are pitiful. After a few years, when you have kids, another so-called mentor like him will teach this distorted history to your children

as you are now. And then your children will also teach their children. As you harm the people in other countries, you also slowly destroy your own. Therefore, you are equally hateful.

Why would the similarly aggressive country in World War II, the Nazi Germany, hasn't encountered the same diatribe from other nations as they do to Japan? That's because they bravely admit and bear the mistake that they once made. In contrast, those self-righteous Japanese lawmakers, in addition to altering textbooks, stubbornly refusing to acknowledge the history for what? History is history, they will not lose their original meaning because of the distortion of some people.

I know it was useless to say anything, because you're blind and deaf for far too long. Go online and look to see how much dirty deeds those war heroes, that your Prime Minister visits every year in Yasukuni Shrine, have done."

"Immediately get out of here. You adulterous traitorous bastard!" Inuo Kento vigorously banged the table, his face was livid.

As if hearing the funniest joke, Lei Yin smiled again.

"If you think you are right, then do you have the guts to come with me to Nanjing, China or South Korean Axe mountain to teach your class there? Rest assured, I'll help you with the plane ticket, plus I will also help you arrange the lecture venues. I believe after that lecture, within one-day, you will become a world class celebrity. I just do not know if you'll still have your life back to Japan." Lei Yin's tone of voice was thick with sarcasm.

“I told you to scram!” Inuo Kento’s face was flushed with anger as if having a cerebral hemorrhage.

Lei Yin slowly walked to the aisle, looked at him and dismissively said: “Unlike you, I am a person, and will only walk out, not scram.” After he said that, he walked toward the entrance.

The whole classroom was deathly silent, the only audible sound was the sound of Lei Yin’s footsteps.

When he opened the door, Lei Yin suddenly looked back to Inuo Kento and said: “There’s something I forgot to tell you, your wig is crooked.”

Inuo Kento unconsciously held his head.

Seeing his funny appearance, a girl could not help but “pfft” out a laugh.

Inuo Kento knew he was tricked by Lei Yin, under the rage influence, he threw the textbook in his hand at him.

Because the distance was too far, the textbook only flew a third of the distance and then fell to the ground.

Lei Yin sneered and walked out.

All the student's expression were complex watching his back as he left, the whole classroom was silent.

—

Opening the rooftop door, Takeda really saw Lei Yin quietly standing in front of the barbed wire.

Looking at that slim and aloof figure, Takeda, for a moment, was suddenly overtaken by the feeling of inability to understand this man.

“Hey, it's time for lunch, how long are you going to act cool?” Takeda went up to him and said out loud.

Looking back at him for a moment, Lei Yin dismissively said: “You seem to have something you want to ask me.”

Takeda leaned on the barbed wire next to him, “I don't understand why you must speak those words. If it's someone else's words, I would think that in order to attract the girl's attention, he deliberately said something unconventional, but I know you are not that kind of person. Besides, no one will say such things to attract the attentions of others. If it's all right, I want you to give me an explanation.”

Lei Yin smiled back to his eyes, “If I tell you that, in my previous life I was a Chinese, would you believe that?”

Takeda fixed his gaze at him for a moment and then a bit unluckily said: “Come on, if you don’t want to say, why say such a lie to me.”

Lei Yin thought for a moment and said: “The reason is not that big of a deal, my grandfather is Chinese, so I have one-fourth of Chinese descent. When I saw that guy spewing out nonsense in the classroom, I can’t help but flare up.”

“This explanation make sense. Very well, let’s go find something to eat.” Takeda a bit understandingly patted his shoulder.

Lei Yin smiled, ‘sometimes it seems that the truth makes people unable to believe than a lie.’

Down the stairs, Takeda suddenly said: “By the way, just after the class, I heard a few guys were talking about you, evidently they don’t have anything good, you better be careful.”

When they walked to the restaurant, Jiro Yoshikawa, and Akira Shiraishi were already there waiting for them.

“Why are you guys so slow? We are famished.” Seeing them, Yoshikawa immediately complained.

“It’s just waiting for a few minutes, what are you squawking about.” Takeda readily pulled a chair to sit down.

“Masashi, why hasn’t your sister came to eat meals together

these past few days?” Takeda asked.

“She’s not used to getting along with strangers.” Lei Yin said. ‘Although the character is neither good nor bad, too withdrawn, after all, is not a good thing.’ He started a bit worry about Kazumi’s future interpersonal relationship.

Suddenly, Lei Yin looked up at the restaurant door.

He saw from the outside came in more than a dozen youth, they didn’t seem like they’re looking for a meal, but just walking around as if looking for someone.

“Masashi, quickly look down.” Takeda suddenly pulled Lei Yin’s sleeve and whispered.

“Why?” Lei Yin asked.

“I recognize the two people who were just talking about you, they may come to trouble you. While they still haven’t found you, immediately go to the bathroom to avoid them right now.” Takeda whispered.

“Hey, what happened?” Yoshikawa saw something seemed off, puzzledly asked.

“Wait a minute and then I’ll explain it to you, Masashi, I’ll cover you, hurry up and go to the bathroom. They have many people, you can’t beat them.” Seeing Lei Yin sat motionless in his chair,

Takeda was very anxious.

Lei Yin took a glance at him and finally got up from the chair.

But before Takeda started to relax, he saw Lei Yin actually walked toward those people.

‘Is that guy crazy?’ Takeda had the urge to run away to stop him.

‘Really owe him in the previous life,’ Having no time to think, he immediately stood up to follow behind him.

Seeing Takeda like this, Shiraishi and Yoshikawa immediately knew something was about to happen, and stood up.

Looking at the group of more than ten college students, Lei Yin said to the lead students: “It appears you didn’t come here to ask me for a meal.”

That youth in a t-shirt sneered: “It seems you already know why we’re here. I don’t want much nonsense, as long as you kneel down in front of the whole restaurant and bark like a dog, we’re not going to care about you. Otherwise, don’t blame us for being impolite.”

“Senior, don’t go too far. He just said a few words and did not offend you.” Before Lei Yin can answer, Takeda interrupted him.

“You’re wrong, he has offended all of us Japanese. If you don’t want to be like him, immediately get the f*ck out of here.” The young man said aloud.

“I don’t think you’re such a patriotic person, you just want to flaunt your power and prestige in front of everybody. Am I right, senior?” Takeda full of sarcasm said.

“Boy, you will regret what you just said.” That young man sneered.

From these exchange of words, Yoshikawa had some clues about what was about to happen. He never once being ganged up and beaten, and his palm can’t help but shed out cold sweat.

Meanwhile, Akira Shiraishi still showed an expressionless look.

All the people in the restaurant were watching them, in this well-known Teikyo University, it’s the first time such a thing happened.

“That’s enough, let’s go out and talk about something, don’t affect other people’s appetite here.” Being cold-shouldered by the side Lei Yin suddenly said.

“Didn’t you hear, I want you to act like a dog and bark here.” The young man walked up to him and said word by word.

“Want to do violence inside the University campus? Really make

me nostalgic. But if there's a fight on the campus ground, all would be penalized, some might even be expelled. But if it's on the outside, all bets are off, do you think I'm right?" Lei Yin said dismissively.

That young man looked around and really saw a lot of people were looking at them.

On second thought, he said to Lei Yin: "You can not escape."

Lei Yin was too lazy to bother him, he turned to the three men and said: "You guys don't need to follow."

"No!" Takeda loudly protested.

Lei Yin seriously looked at him and said: "If you still consider me as your friend, then do what I just said."

"It's because I consider you as a friend I can't let you go alone, after this matter is over, then we can talk about it again," Takeda said stubbornly.

Silently watching him for a while, Lei Yin suddenly smiled, "Forget it, up to you then."

Takeda for the first time saw him smile like that. His heart suddenly filled with a burst of excited emotion.

“Hey, don’t forget you still have the two of us, two grown up men smiling at each other could be mistaken for being gay.” Yoshikawa a bit helplessly sighed. ‘Who told Takeda that guy is my friend.’

“Come on. Don’t waste everyone’s time.” Lei Yin turned back and said to the young man.

That young man took the lead to go outside.

The other people stared at them leaving the restaurant.

Chapter 140 - Interrogation

Looking at the lying on the table sleeping like a pig Patrol Chief Police Officer Harayama Daisuke, the young policeman Sada Yufu can't help but be infected, also feeling a bit sleepy.

Sada knew he can't sleep, today he and Harayama were responsible for night duty. If two of them were asleep and were seen by others, their punishment would be certain. The worst thing to happen was that it would leave a stain on their records, so their subsequent promotion would be a lot harder.

Perhaps such punishment for 15 years-long patrol officer Harayama means nothing, so he slept comfortably. But not for him, on his first day as a police officer, Sada once promised that in ten years, he must become a Police Inspector.

But in two years since, the once enthusiastic young policeman began to get a bit discourage.

The area that he is responsible for is much more peaceful than the other areas. His daily works were filled with registering the data of lost objects, and occasionally detaining high school kids engaging in the gang fight. Plus he often got calls requesting him to look for missing house pet.

He remembered one of his senior once said to him: Only in the event of danger when people realize the importance of the police, but usually, it's no difference than just doing odd jobs.

At the time, he did not believe it, but now he knew better.

Looking at the drooling while sleeping Patrol Chief Harayama, he kinda has both envy and contempt emotions.

Patrol Chief is not an official title for a Police Officer. It's actually given to those who, in ten years, still hasn't being promoted to Patrol Head.

This guy has been at ease being a patrol officer for 15 years, Sada really can't imagine why would Harayama never thought of improving himself. However, this person is usually good to him, just a bit wordy.

Sada looked at his watch. It's not yet 10 PM. The dawn was still long; he really didn't know how to keep himself awake. Luckily, tomorrow is Sunday, so he can have a good rest.

While he was still daydreaming, the alarm phone on the table suddenly rang.

Sada immediately aroused, almost reflexively picked up the phone.

"Hello, this is Tokyo Hachioji District Patrol Unit, what can I do for you?"

After answering the call, Sada immediately shook awake Patrol Chief Harayama Daisuke.

“What’s the matter? Is there an accident?” Harayama yawn and said.

“I just received an order from the above, saying that, in Teikyo University, there’s a very serious off-campus brawl. Now there are 17 students injured and have been admitted to the hospital. The above wants us to immediately arrest the escaped brawl ringleader.”

“What, an elite University like Teikyo could actually have such incident?” Harayama said in surprised.

“Wait for the above to fax us about the data of the criminal, and then we can act.” Sada somewhat excitedly said.

‘This guy seems to be very excited about this.’ Harayama strangely thought.

Sitting in the car, the Patrol Chief puzzledly looked at the criminal’s data.

“This kid is the criminal? The data said he is also a Teikyo University students. His appearance is no different than an ordinary college student. Did you hear the info clearly? Is it just him alone putting the other 17 students in the hospital for serious injuries?”

“I don’t really know about the specific, but the above wants us to

immediately bring the criminal back to the police station for questioning,” Sada replied from the side while driving.

The Patrol Chief looked at the address of the criminal and suddenly found the address seemed a bit familiar.

Half an hour later, the police car arrived at the front of the two storey house.

“Are you sure the criminal really lives here?” The Patrol Chief’s face was full of surprised.

“What’s wrong, Patrol Chief?” The young patrol officer asked after he shut the door.

“It’s here, I’m sure it’s here. Do you know who lives in this house?” The Chief Patrol asked.

“Isn’t this the house of the criminal?”

“But this is also the house of the newly promoted Police Inspector Ryutaro Maeda. When he got married this year, he invited me to eat with other colleagues in this House. So I am definitely not mistaken.” The Patrol Chief replied.

“Does that mean the criminal is Inspector Maeda’s family?” Sada said in amazement.

Sada knew this guy Maeda; he is also his role model that he wanted to emulate. Ryutaro Maeda also began his career as a patrol officer. In serving almost ten years as a Patrol Officer, he's broken through quite a few very tricky cases. Finally, in his thirty-seven years old, he became a Police Inspector. Sada's goal: becoming a Police Inspector, was only one step away.

"So, what happens now?" Sada was a bit overwhelmed.

"We still need to bring the criminal back. But we must make it clear to Officer Maeda first. He is one of us, and has an easy going character, so he should not make things difficult for us." The Patrol Head, after all, has been leisurely patrolling the street for more than fifteen years, he knew very clearly about the ways of the world.

Hearing the sound of the doorbell, Rumiko walked to the door and opened it.

"Excuse me, are you Mrs. Maeda?" Patrol Chief very politely took off his cap.

"Yes, I am, who are you looking for?" Seeing the two policemen stood outside the door, Rumiko's first thought that they were looking for Maeda.

"Is Mr. Maeda home? We are Patrol Officers from Hachioji district, we have something to look for Inspector Maeda."

“Please come in, my husband is inside.”

“Thank you, Mrs. Maeda.” The two bowed and went in.

When the two people entered the living room following Rumiko, they saw Ryutaro Maeda was playing chess with a youth.

Ryutaro Maeda seemed very focused, as if not knowing some people had come in. But the youth slightly looked up when the two police officers walked in.

Sada immediately recognized that the youth was the criminal they were supposed to arrest. He almost couldn't help but cry out.

“Ryutaro, two police officers are looking for you.” Rumiko gently called her deeply in thought husband.

“What?” Maeda finally reacted.

“Good evening, Inspector Maeda.” Patrol Chief said hello to Maeda.

“Turns out its brother Chief, long time no see, please sit down.” To see an old colleague, Maeda was very happy.

“Two officers please have a tea.” Rumiko put two cups of tea on the table in front of them.

“You guys don’t just simply come here to see me, right. Speak, what happened?” Maeda asked straight to the point.

“Em....” Patrol Chief seemed a bit embarrassed to look at Rumiko.

“You guys slowly talk, I’ll go to cut some fruit, Masashi, you come help me.” Rumiko very considerately stood up.

After glancing at the two policemen, Lei Yin stood up and followed Rumiko.

After Rumiko and Lei Yin walked away, Patrol Chief asked: “That young man just now, what is his relationship with Inspector Maeda?”

“He is the son of my wife with her former husband, my stepson,” Maeda said succinctly.

‘It turns out to be so,’ Patrol Chief coughed and said: “This might offend Police Inspector Maeda, but this is our duty, we have no choice. It’s like this....”

Maeda gently knocked Lei Yin’s bedroom.

“Please come in.”

After opening the door, he saw Lei Yin for some time had put on

a civilian clothing sitting on the bed reading a book.

“Masashi, you’re going out?” Maeda asked.

Raising his head to look at him, Lei Yin smiled: “If I didn’t guess wrong, the two policemen are looking for me. Am I right?”

Maeda sighed, “So what they said is true?”

“I didn’t hear what they say about me, but there should be some discrepancies. I’ll go back to the police station with them, and you find some reasons to explain for mom and Rumi.”

“I’ll go with you. Since I know you, I’ve told more lies than in my previous ten years.” Maeda said with a wry smile.

Seeing the look of concern from Rumiko, Lei Yin opened the car window to comfort her: “Mom, don’t worry, I just need to go to the police station to recognize a thief, nothing would happen.”

“You have to be careful, and remember not to let the bad guy see your appearance or they will come and take revenge on you.” Rumiko urged.

“Rest assured, I’ll protect Masashi.” Maeda also opened the window and said.

“Ryutaro, you also have to be careful.”

Watching the gentle and loving Rumiko, Patrol Chief Harayama was very envious, 'if only the tigress at home is half as gentle as her, I would happily laugh secretly to myself.'

In a quiet police station, Maeda, a bit depressed, sat outside the interrogation room, smoking.

Because he is Masashi's relatives, and this area is also not in his jurisdiction, he can only bail the currently being detained Masashi.

In the interrogation room, the officer in charge of interrogating Lei Yin was also depressed. Because no matter how he asked the question, this guy's answer was watertight.

"There are more than ten people consistently confessed that you are the one who attack first. In addition to your three friends and yours, are there no other witnesses to prove your innocence?" The police officer asked a question.

"If my friends can't be the witnesses, then those people can only be a plaintiff and not as a witness. You should call them to find out if they can provide any witness or evidence that I attack first, rather than ask me, the defendant, to provide." Lei Yin replied.

The police officer knew there was no use to ask, he walked out of the interrogation room. After closing the door, he took out a mobile phone.

After returning to the interrogation room, the officer said to Lei Yin: “To be honest with you, we also know that those guys started it first. But the people that you hit, some of their parents have a very high background. They said they want you to go to jail. We just act according to the command from the above. Although not working in the same area, your father is, after all, one of ours, so we don’t want things to get out of hand. If this thing really went to court, it will become very troublesome. So I suggest you take the initiative to admit your crime and apologize to them. Moreover, we will also help you deal with them, so maybe they won’t continue to pursue this matter anymore. You think about it.”

Lei Yin looked, and after a while said: “Even though you are not a principled police, there’s no denying that you are a good person. I’m sorry, I refuse to do so because I did nothing wrong. I request for a face to face meeting with those accusers.”

“You really don’t want to think about it? Do not be swayed by personal feelings which can ruin your future.” The police officer advised again.

“I have decided, please help me arrange it.” Lei Yin said dismissively.

“Very well, since you insist, I will help you arrange. Hopefully, you’ll be okay. But now it’s too late, you have to stay here one night, tomorrow we’ll go to the hospital to see the accusers. If you don’t want to stay here, then let your stepfather bail you out.” After saying this, the police officer walked out of the interrogation room.

“Thank you.”

Seeing the police officer responsible for the interrogation came out, Maeda immediately asked: “How is Masashi?”

The police officer shook his head: “He just said he fought back in self-defense, but he can’t provide effective witnesses and physical evidence that can prove those guys start it first. He also asked to confront those students who were injured and hospitalized.”

“Face to face confrontation? What’s the point?” Maeda puzzledly asked.

“I also don’t know what he wanted to do. But the situation is very unfavorable for him. First of all, all of them confessed that he was the one who attacked them first, and the other, most importantly, those people’s injuries are really heavy, several of them have serious ribs or hands fractures. The lightest one had their jaws dislocated. But he received no injuries at all. With this apparent injury gap, it’s easy for people to stand on the injured side. Besides, you also know that several of them have parents that are untouchables. I just persuade him to take the initiative to apologize, but he refused.”

Maeda paused and then said: “In any case, I will not let anything happen to Masashi.”

The police officer looked at him and didn’t make any sound.

“Hey, how did you do it?” Takeda looked at Lei Yin.

“What do you mean?”

“With Sanada and Eguchi’s character, they are not so easy to give up. Moreover, their father’s are congressmen, I thought they were going to sue you, but finally did not. I want to know why?”

“They actually plan to do so, but then I went to the hospital to confront them. Finally after a few words with them, they confessed that they attacked me first. In order not to let the incident get out of hand, those so-called congressmen parents didn’t pursue the matter any longer.”

“Is this true or false? Are they so easy to confess?” Takeda said doubtfully.

“For others, this may not be easy, but for me, it was.”

“Sometimes I really don’t know whether what you say is true or false.” Takeda sighed.

At the same time, the police officer who interrogated Lei Yin looked at the recording tape in his hand.

In his years of handling cases, he had never seen such a thing.

When the youth named Gennai Masashi went to the hospital with him to confront those students, the guy just asked a few words, and those people, one by one, readily confessed that they attacked him first. Their cooperation attitude was unprecedented.

The only explanation was that the youth might have used some kind of hypnosis, but he had never heard anyone who can hypnotize a person so quickly. Unreasonable, completely unreasonable.

In any case, the matter is resolved.

Chapter 141 - Park

Perhaps because it was part of human nature to protect the environment, for example, many people living at residential areas are focusing on protecting the environment, making fur from a wild animal is more noble compared to human skin, not bothering with plastic flowers and instead buying flowers that would wither. After all, no fool would propose to a woman while holding a plastic flower.

If this viewpoint is correct, then it is understandable why some people like to live in the wild.

Tachibana Park is a very ordinary park, but since the start of the construction of a movie theater near the place, it had become a popular spot for couples. And most of those who would have just finished watching the movie and came out of the cinema were couples who would come to the park and take a break as if it were natural. Overtime, that had become common.

During holidays, one could usually see couples everywhere affectionately sticking together in the park. The deeper you go in the park, the quieter it was, one would also occasionally hear the place filled with ambiguous short gasps. And the next day, the park's staff would be responsible to clean up a lot of different styles of condoms.

12:00 am, when most people have already left the park. In the depths of the park, there was a couple springing.

As if a bear hiding in a bush, violently shaking.

“Well....Let’s go back, it’s getting very late.” A girl whom was unnaturally panting said.

“What’s the hurry, tomorrow’s Sunday, let’s do it again.” The male was also breathing unnaturally answered.

“No, it’s dark and scary here, I thought there was someone watching us. Let’s go back.” The woman said.

“You think too much. Everyone has already left, one last time, after that we’ll leave.” The man said as he began to twitch.

The woman had no choice but to match his action.

Without knowing the reason why from the beginning up to now, she felt that she was being watched. This feeling made her very uneasy. And now she just wanted to finish up with her boyfriend and leave as quickly as possible. She vowed in her heart, never to follow him to such a terrible place and do such a thing the next time.

Although she felt uneasy, her body was gradually being invaded with pleasure, slowly forgetting her surroundings.

When she started to moan in ecstasy, she suddenly felt something cold was on her face, as if a drop of water had landed on her.

Rain? The woman slightly opened her eyes.

“Ahh!” The woman screamed loudly.

The boy thought that in his effort, he had made her reach climax. Thinking of this, he was instantly filled with pride.

Then, however, he heard a strange gasping sound above his ear, feeling his neck somewhat cold, as if a drop of water had fallen on it. When he turned his head to look, the man's eyes instantly shrunk, his whole body became ice cold.

Gruesome screams came from the park.

—

“This is already the third case this month and now I'm starting to believe that there truly is such a thing as a vampire in this world.” A 30-something police officer forcefully slammed the report on the table.

“If you're hearing this again from that woman, you must certainly scold her.” Another young officer said with a smile.

“What, do you really think I'm afraid of that woman? I'm already a professional police, what will a patrol officer like her who just writes reports in the office know?” The police officer shouted.

“Now I know that you only think of me as someone that only sits and writes a reports.” A female voice came in from the front of the office of Metropolitan Police department of crimes.

The two who were chatting were surprised and immediately stood at attention and saluting towards their female superior.

At the door they saw a slender young woman with straight hair, wearing a black skirt that still showed her perfect legs, practically catching every man’s line of sight.

She was standing very straight that reflected her commanding disposition making her appear as if she was a strong woman.

In one’s eyes, her soft facial features appeared sharp. But there was no way of denying that she was a real beauty.

Coldly glancing at them, she coldly said: “Instead of using your extra-time talking about your boss, you might as well hurry up and investigate this case diligently.”

“Yes, sorry.” Hearing what his female boss had just loudly said, the police officer blushed to say.

“I don’t want to hear an apology, did the report of the deceased’s autopsy come out?”

The young officer in the criminal department crossed her hands over the pit of her stomach, this sort of involuntary action beautifully revealed her astonishing size. The police officer at the side unconsciously swallowed his saliva.

“Ma’am, the autopsy report has come out. The two that were found dead were a couple, it was inferred in the time of death, that the crime was possibly committed between 1 and 11, while the couple was....” At this point, the police didn’t know if he should go on, after all his boss was a young woman.

Seeing the way he trailed off, the battalion leader Eiko impatiently said: “The two found dead were doing what? Officer Tsukuda, please don’t waste my time.”

“At that time they were having sexual intercourse. The forensic examination found the dead man’s semen in the deceased woman’s vagina.” Tsukuda finally said it.

“Is there more? Please continue.”

Seeing that the battalion leader Eiko had no reaction, Officer Tsukuda finally relaxed, recognizing that this woman was worthy of being called the IceCold Woman.

“The two had the same cause of death, they were both sucked dry of their blood and died. Also there were very obvious teeth marks on their necks. And the teeth marks on the both of them looked the same as the last case, as if it was the teeth marks of a wild beast. The forensic team is still not sure if it was an animal’s teeth marks

or wounds caused by dentures. In addition to that, they had discovered animal-like claw marks on their bodies. Apparently, the two violently struggled before they died.”

“Put the forensic reports on my desk. You two continue to investigate the scene of the crime.”

“Yes, ma’am.” The two police officers saluted, replying immediately.

After looking at her slender and graceful figure before their eyes walking out of the office, the two police officer involuntarily let out a sigh.

They feared the crime department adviser Eiko Kotoshi, 26 years old, she was one of the so-called professional class, that was indicated by the national A-level exams, and was also recruited as one of the high level bureaucrat of the National Police Agency. After graduating from college she immediately came to the police department, and after a three-month internship as well as nine-month training, she was promoted to be in the police department, continuing her civil service as a police, but after two years and three months she was promoted again by the National Police Agency, and obtained a high-level bureau chief position of a small headquarters, and she was only 25 or 26 years old when she became a “bureaucratic chief”. The total number of police throughout Japan numbered 22 million, of which less than 500 people were in the professional class, and less than 400 people were a high-level elite member ruling a huge and stable police organization.

Eiko Kotoshi was one of the best, graduating from the Faculty of

law, arts and all other classy subjects in Teikyou University, she had also passed the judicial examination, diplomat examination as well as the national A-level exam, allowing her to directly join the police department as an intern, and immediately being promoted as a police in the police department, and finally being promoted with a high rank within the National Police agency, quickly being promoted three times since she had joined.

She was very famous for her promotion speed. Her excellent looks when she had first entered the police force, had attracted a large group of unmarried and married young as well middle-aged police. Only every one of them was rejected by her cold character. There were even rumors that Eiko Kotoshi wasn't interested in men, but was a homosexual. Privately, people had called her as "Snow Woman", which meant that she was created with snow. Now, she only had two remaining suitors, who was also in the professional class, one was an inspector while the other was in the ministry police. Theoretically the police who is in the same task as her would have a much greater chance of success in pursuing her, simply because a police investigator and a ministry police were in two completely different area, therefore the opportunity of them meeting were not too many.

Compared to Ryoutaro Maeda who was ten years older than her, Eiko Kotoshi was better, compared to her he was promoted quite slowly, it wasn't because he was lacking in ability, but because he didn't have the back ground of a first-class family, rising step by step from the lowest level of the investigation, by contrast, he was of course much slower.

In a quiet office, Eiko Kotoshi was seriously reading the forensic report. After a while, she placed it on the table, and then stood up

and walked towards the window.

Looking at the heavy traffic outside through the window, she said to herself: “Does this world really this so-called vampires?”

—

“Masashi, there’s some people looking for you outside.”

Looking at Takeda who was showing a spectacular smile, Lei Yin a little reluctantly said: “Which club is it this time?”

“Good guess. This time it’s the karate club.” Takeda finally couldn’t hold it in and started laughing.

Since they’ve come, we might as well make them comfortable, considering the matter as an exercise. Lei Yin put down the novel in his hand, he walked.

Takeda followed closely behind while informing Yoshikawa on the phone.

Ever since he had sent the students that provoked Lei Yin, more students that were also harboring ulterior motives came such as the boxing club, judo club and other martial arts club, maliciously exaggerating the matter when Lei Yin had intentionally refuted the history teacher in the classroom. Thus, those club had been instigated, immediately coming to Lei Yin. Although they had nominally said that it was a contest, but everyone knew it wasn’t

so.

At first Lei Yin didn't want to take care of these warm-blooded fools, but several days later, a huge amount of curse letters as well as letter of challenge were sent into his locker, in addition to people clamoring about him every day whether it be in class or near his home. Some people had also placed mousetraps and nails frequently trying to harm him, just like a ninja.

Finally, one day, when Lei Yin was taking a nap, he was suddenly awakened by those people. He finally couldn't take it anymore, and run ominously towards the boxing club, giving the members a good meal.

It didn't matter that they were beaten all over, as the matter had rapidly turned into a storm. The next day, it was the Judo club's turn to find trouble.

In any case he had beaten not just one, but two clubs, Lei Yin had complied with their wishes, and immediately fought the Judo club.

When he went out of the Judo club, except for the terrified club manager, no one inside the club was able to stand.

The third day, it was the Aikido club's turn. But the result was still the same, as every one of them had been beaten black and blue.

After the three fights, the name 'Gennai Masashi' was known by

everyone in the entire school. Some people called him ‘a human weapon’, while others called him ‘public enemy’.

The matter turning into something like this, was completely contrary to what Lei Yin had wanted of getting by school leisurely and carefree.

But Takeda, Yoshikawa Jiro as well as Shiraishi Akira who had started out by trying to help him, had gradually turned it into a show courageously watching the fun at the side. Takeda and Yoshikawa were even betting how long Lei Yin could keep on going like this.

When Lei Yin arrived outside the classroom building, he saw a troop of morethan 200 young students wearing a karate suit, looking at him, ready to battle. Among those people there were black belts as well as white belts, only that the majority of them were white belts, after all there were only a few people that would be willing to concentrate fully on practicing and get a blank belt, and would focus on their exams. Around them, there were students watching at the side. And at first glance, the scene was quite spectacular.

“Masashi, the Karate club is Teikyou University’s strongest martial arts club, their numbers are also the largest. It looks like they’re all sent out. If you’re not sure you can win, it’s best not to fight.” Among the trio, Shiraishi Akira had said something to Lei Yin in a low voice.

“I’ll handle it, later no one would ask me for trouble.” Hearing his words, Lei Yin had another idea.

Shiraishi Akira smiled bitterly, I really don't know how this guy's head is constructed.

The other two had saw Lei Yin's fearless look. So Takeda had ridiculed the white guy who looks a bit like a snowman.

"I am the Karate club's captain, Soma Nakaichi, on behalf of all the members of the Karate club, we challenge you, Gennai Masashi." A very tall young man came up to Lei Yin and loudly said. He didn't bother saying that it was a like a competition.

"Cut the crap, you should know my rules, the challenge is no problem, but you all have to sign the agreement." Lei Yin placed a bookmark on the open book in his hand.

"I know, we'll immediately sign." After looking at the article above, the Karate club captain was the first to sign his name on the paper, then passing it to the next person to sign.

Yoshikawa had came up with this agreement. Although he only had learnt law for less than half a month, but making this kind of agreement was not a problem. The general content was that in the case that people were injured in the contest, the other party would not bear any legal responsibility. This was to prevent last time's matter of more than 10 young students accusing him for attacking them.

Although Lei Yin with his powerful spiritual force, in a short amount of time had hypnotized them in the hospital for them to

tell the truth, but the process was cumbersome. Lei Yin didn't want to repeat the same mistake again. So he specially called for Yoshikawa to make this agreement.

After all of the members of the Karata club had signed their name, Lei Yin carefully looked at them, receiving the agreement back. Then he said to the Karate club captain Soma Nagaichi: "Is the location at your dojo?"

"If Gennai-san doesn't designate a location, we hope that it will be in our dojo." Soma Nagaichi said humbly.

"Among these many people, your manner is the best one. Let's go."

"Please come with me." Soma Nagaichi went ahead, while the members of the Karate club followed closely behind.

Other than the Karate club members, there were also people who very excitedly followed, watching them behind.

Chapter 142 - Inside The Club

There were many viewers who would be classified as outsiders that were following with them, but their enthusiasm was heartlessly extinguished when the door to the dojo had been closed in on them.

Even complaining was useless, which massive club would possibly be willing to show outsiders the scene of them being swept.

Among the audience, there were many that stubbornly refused to give up, but the people who felt the most depressed were Takeda and Yoshikawa.

“We’re that fellow’s friends, they’re not even giving us a little preferential treatment?” Takeda vigorously kicked the Karate club’s door, loudly protesting.

“Let’s smash their windows.” Yoshikawa picked up a stone as big as a tennis ball, without the others knowing where he picked it up from.

“Hey, if we use something that big we’ll get beaten to death. Go find a smaller one.” Takeda reasoned.

“I hope that Masashi can take on a hundred enemies otherwise there will be more clubs coming to bother him afterwards. Earlier we had an agreement, that in the future I would merely be a passer-by, don’t even try getting me into your trouble.” Shiraishi

Akira leisurely said.

“Still we had best consider not smashing the windows or we’d soon be dead men. And if the stone we had thrown accidentally hit Masashi, it wouldn’t be good.” Yoshikawa casually threw the stone in his hand aside.

“You coward, the worst thing that could happen to us after breaking the windows would be that we would need to replace them.” Takeda angrily said.

Shiraishi Akira didn’t have time to deal with the rebellious duo’s conversation, right now he was more concerned about Masashi, hoping that he would come out without anything bad happening to him.

Different from the prior three clubs, which had only numbered slightly more than 35 people which was considerably less compared to the Karate club’s. After he seeing the scene when Masashi had beaten them up, which looked more exaggerated than Bruce Lee’s fighting scenes in the movies, he felt as if this guy had inhuman abilities. But this time the club causing him trouble was too big, so it was extremely worrying.

After waiting for nearly half an hour, the crowd outside began to leave. And only a few more than 10 students were anxiously waiting for the final results. They even recognized people like Tanigawa who were in the newspaper club, it seems like they wanted to get in the first-hand scoop on the situation.

It was worth mentioning that since the newspaper club wrote an article about Masashi's accomplishments in causing casualties, which was composed of blood and tears just like a memoir, more people had read about 'Gennai Masashi' regarding the devil that crawled out from the very hells. But it was because of Masashi's special contribution that the newspaper club that no one ever regarded, all of a sudden became popular, almost all their prints were sold out. And it must be said that the only person in the entire school who was grateful to Masashi was the president of the newspaper club.

After another half an hour passed, Tanigawa and Takeda started to get worried. Against the previous clubs, Masashi had only used 10 minutes before coming out. But this time it had actually dragged on for nearly an hour.....

"It looks like that fellow couldn't come out unscathed this time. That piece of shit, I had also betted for him to win." A student complained.

"I told you that guy wouldn't have a good ending. You really were stupid enough to bet for him to win. Wasn't the result obvious? The Karate club excluding the basketball club, is the biggest club in the school. That fellow is fierce but it's still impossible for him to overthrow these many people."

"What did you two pieces of shit say? Do you dare say it again and see what happens." Takeda was an impulsive kind of person and without thinking he ran towards them.

"It's none of your business, we're not talking about you." Seeing

Takeda run towards them, as well as Yoshikawa slowly walking towards them, the two began to get scared.

“In short, you’re saying that you’re extremely unhappy with my friend.” Under the influence of Lei Yin who had beaten up three clubs, Takeda these days became obviously energetic.

Yoshikawa Jiro joined Takeda, making sound as he pressed his fingers one by one and then imitating the fighting stance in the Fist of North Star.

The two students were afraid to say anything, and hurriedly ran away.

Takeda feeling a little accomplished happily looked at the two who had fled.

“We can’t wait for him again, we need to go in and see what has happened.” Shiraishi Akira said with a deep voice.

The other two nodded, and went to the club door.

Knocking on the door, there were no reaction, while Yoshikawa found the discarded stone on the flowerbed.

“What do we do now? It isn’t good to smash the window.”

“Fool, don’t you watch movies? To open a locked door, the best

solution is to break it open with a heavy object.”

“You’re the idiot, isn’t using your feet better?” With that, Takeda kicked the door.

And sure enough, the wooden door started to show signs of getting loose.

When Takeda had once again kicked the door, it suddenly opened. Opening the door, the three who were hoping that nothing had happened to Masashi were instead greeted by a person wearing a karate suit while a white belt was tied up on his waist, a member of the Karate club.

Seeing a member of the Karate club just after opening the door, the three’s complexion changed. It seems likely that there was an accident.

Takeda was the first to get upset, asking himself why they hadn’t stopped Masashi who had went inside alone. He thought that he was blinded by his self-confidence towards him.

“You three are Gennai-san’s friends? Our captain had asked you to go in.” Seeing the polite manner the of a member of the Karate club had towards them made them a little surprised.

The Karate club was the second largest club, the place where they practice were 1.5 times bigger than a basketball court. Moreover, inside there was also a small reception room as well as a restroom.

The member of the Karate club had exactly taken them to the reception room.

Seeing that along the way, the members of the Karate club weren't actually hurt in any way and were doing their usual punching and kicking exercise, had made it seemed like World War II didn't happen.

What was this about, with Masashi's strength, even if he had lost, he would have at least overthrown one person. Surely these guys had used despicable means to beat him. Takeda had now imagined Masashi's end his heart was filled with intense grief.

Yoshikawa's face also changed, although his relationship with Lei Yin was not as close as Takeda, but since the time they had met, he felt that the guy was really a very nice person to get along, even making him feel at ease.

Japan had a hierarchical system, even in university it was also so. Looking at the Karate club member gently knocking on the door, unsure if the Karate club captain and his staffs were inside.

"Please come in." Takeda knew that voice, it was Soma Nagaichi. Thinking that the guy had done something Takeda was on fire.

It seemed like the karate club's fund was really a lot, inside the reception room, there was a faux Italian style leathered sofa. The floor was spotless. On the oak-made coffee table, there was a white porcelain tea set. The staffs immediately greeting the guest.

Seeing Lei Yin leisurely sipping tea like he was a guest, Takeda and Yoshikawa's jaw almost fell.

"Are you here for tea?" Seeing his friend's safety, the rebellious youth was filled with a strong emotion of grief yet again.

"Why, can't I have tea here?" Lei Yin asked.

"Weren't you here to beat them up? Why are you comfortably sitting here enjoying a cup of tea?" Takeda asked with aggrieved appearance, worrying about this guy for so long and to think he was just enjoying an afternoon cup of tea. They felt deeply discontented.

"The fight had already finished, of course, I wanted to have a good rest. But since Soma Nagaichi invited me for a cup of tea, I stayed. If you weren't arguing too much outside, I wouldn't have wanted you to come in. After all, they had used their fund to buy the finest tea, and I was just a guest, so I was embarrassed to ask them to let you guys come in." Lei Yin righteously said.

"Gennai-san...." Soma Nagaichi a little embarrassedly said.

"Rest assured, I won't tell people that you were using your club's money to buy the finest tea as well as the finest tea set.

Soma Nagaichi wryly smiled. He already knew that he shouldn't say too much to this fellow.

“What’s the matter?” Seeing that the two who supposedly just had a life and death battle were now chatting like friends Takeda and Yoshikawa were bewildered.

After Soma Nagaichi greeted them the three sat down and each were given a cup of tea.

“Much thanks to Gennai-san for showing mercy, and not injuring many of our club’s members.” Soma Nagaichi said to Lei Yin, which was equivalent to tell the other three what had happened.

“The way people treats me, that’s how I treat them. Because you weren’t like the other three clubs, claiming that it’s just a contest, and then all rushing towards me. In contrast, you had sent members one by one in the competition, so I had regarded it as just comparing notes.” Lei Yin had a favorable impression of Soma Nagaichi.

“Although those people had said nothing good about Gennai-san our karate club isn’t like the other clubs confusing right and wrong. We, after closely investigating Gennai-san and having collected all evidence know that these people were just spreading rumors and causing trouble for you. However after looking at Gennai-san’s skill, as a martial artist, I had hoped to have a competition with you, if we had offended you, please forgive us. Seeing Gennai-san’s skillfulness, I Soma Nagaichi am sincerely convinced.”

“Come on, you’re just a student, for you to use such an old tone at such an age is inappropriate, while you do look older than your actual age, you’re not as serious as an uncle.” Lei Yin didn’t know

how to digress in such a situation.

Takeda and Yoshikawa had an urge to roll their eyes, this guy really doesn't deserve any sympathy.

“Well, it's getting too late. We'll be going.” Lei Yin stood up and stretched.

“Gennai-san, as thanks for your guidance, we the karate club will strive to clarify the truth for you. I hope you won't refuse.” Soma Nagaichi followed up.

“It's up to you, anyway, what they like to say to others is what they want them to believe. If it's too much trouble, I'd advise you to leave it, I really don't mind, at worst I'd just have to fight many of them again. Good, you don't need to send us out.”

“I hope you'll come back here with a few guests, the karate club welcomes you.” Soma Nagaichi opened the door of the reception room.

Seeing that Lei Yin and Takeda came out neatly, the newspaper club who were waiting at the entrance cheered. Tomorrow they'll have another good headline: Godzilla swept the Karate Club away, who will try to save Teikyou University this time?

“What is wrong with them?” Lei Yin looked at the people who were strangely happy.

“Don’t know, too shock maybe.” Takeda speculated without minding them.

—

In the command room at the third floor of the police headquarters in Tokyo, a police officer in his early thirties was using a projector explaining the course of action to his other colleagues sitting around the table.

“The top brass have attached great importance to this case, in order not to cause public panic we are to solve this case as soon as possible. So, if you don’t have any other questions, please act according to the plan, the district police will also cooperate with us.” Watanabe Muramasa paused to say.

“I have a question.” Suddenly, a cool female voice rang in the dark room.

“Please ask, battalion adviser.”

“Why are all the policewoman in the district responsible for being the bait to make the criminal come out? According to the report, that blood-sucking freak doesn’t seem to have a tendency of attacking any sole females. Unless Watanabe-san of the National Police Agency still believes that women are more vulnerable to attacks and is more suitable for being the bait?”

The words of the policewoman had caused a lot of police officers

to discuss among themselves. Some even showing an ambiguous smiles on their faces.

The expression on Watanabe Muramasa's face appeared to be a little awkward, he coughed saying: "Battalion adviser, this is part of the plan, the top had also approved of this."

"Is this the top's thoughts or police Watanabe's personal thoughts?" The Battalion adviser Eiko's voice resounded once again.

Watanabe of the National Police Agency was against her, and in heart was irritated, when he was about to speak, suddenly, a man at the side spoke: "I believe that making lone female police officers carry out such a dangerous task shouldn't be considered. Although there are other police officers in the peripheral ready to move and make the operation under control, but there is no guarantee that no accidents would happen, so I think that delegating a male police officer to take the bait would be quite better. I hope that the battalion adviser doesn't think that I'm a sexist." Ryoutaro Maeda said with a deep tone.

Although he had a small family background, he was still the most experienced in crime investigation, so other police officers don't dare to ignore his opinion. And quickly, some of the police officers had also supported his suggestion.

"Since every one has objected to the plan, I will discuss it with the top again. As for other matters, does anyone have any questions?" Police Watanabe subconsciously looked in the direction where Battalion Adviser Eiko was sitting.

Fortunately, she didn't bring up any other embarrassing questions making Police Watanabe relieved at heart.

After leaving the meeting room, Battalion advisor Eiko walked towards Ryoutaro Maeda and said: "Maeda-san, are you interested in drinking a cup of coffee with me?"

"I remember some people have said that rejecting a beautiful woman's request is a crime. I am honored." Maeda said with a smile.

"I didn't know that Maeda-san knew how to crack jokes, it seems like your wife's contribution was not small." Eiko Kotoshi smiled.

"Eiko-san, do you have time to talk?" Police Watanabe came up and said.

"I'm sorry, I have an appointment with Maeda-san, maybe next time. Let's go, Maeda-san." Eiko Kotoshi revealed a cold expression.

Ryoutaro Maeda looked at Police Watanabe, and afterwards bowed following closely behind the female police officer.

Police Watanabe watched helplessly as she got farther away from him.

Outside the coffee shop, Eiko Kotoshi was absentmindedly stirring her steaming hot coffee.

“Maeda-san, what kind of person do you think about this time’s murderer?”

Maeda placed down his cup of coffee, “To be honest, this time’s murderer is a little strange.”

“Strange?” Eiko Kotoshi didn’t know how to react to what he had said.

“What I’m saying is contrary to being a professional police officer, but I think that this time’s psychotic killer isn’t so simple even I’m not sure if the killer is human or not.”

“Maeda-san, what you’re saying is very confusing.”

“You should have seen the forensic reports of several of the deceased, I believe you’re like me, and had a profound impression of the teeth marks as well as the claw marks on the deceased bodies. I also thought that the killer may have deliberately put on artificial teeth and sharp claws before committing the crime. But after seeing the bodies of several of the deceased, I started to doubt my own judgement. In particular, the emergence of the fourth casualty, had made my doubts increase. The deceased’s right thigh was broken as if the person himself held an enormous strength. How could an ordinary person twist a struggling adult man’s thigh into something like that?” Thinking about the forensic photos, Maeda temporarily lost his appetite to drink his coffee.

“You mean monsters really do exist?” Eiko Kotoshi felt something stirring in her mind from their discussion.

“We still don’t have any witnesses nor any image of the murderer, so can’t conclude so quickly. In any case, we’d better be careful when handling this case.”

“Thank you for Maeda-san’s reminder.” Eiko Kotoshi were one of the very few who appreciated Ryoutaro Maeda’s talents. She appreciated his solid principles as well as honest attitude. In addition to that she wouldn’t mind him becoming her boss, this point was very important.

“This maybe a bit offensive, but to be honest, you’re kind of like someone I know. No, you’re older than she is, but she’s kind of like you. I don’t mean that you look the same, but your temperament is very similar.” Maeda suddenly said something that had nothing to do with the case.

“Can you tell me who that is?”

“My stepdaughter, she’s called Kazumi, now in her first year in Teikyou University.”

“She should be my junior then.” Eiko Kotoshi smiled.

Chapter 143 - Gratitude

“Fool, don’t go that way. Take the right.”

“Idiot, why did you open that door? Quickly closed it!”

“Hey, you two are so noisy, can you keep your voice down?” Lei Yin can’t endure anymore and loudly protested.

But no one cared his protest, the two people indulging in the game completely forgot the other person’s existence.

The protester somewhat reluctantly said: “I really don’t understand, what’s the fun playing this RPG game. Always staying in one place, not only a waste of time, but it’s also meaningless.”

“You shut up, this is the first time I play again King of Fighters 97 which I found it in an elderly’s antique store, so you’re unworthy to say such a thing.” Takeda continued the journey of treasure hunting while loudly refute. (TL: the author clearly never played KOF)

“Then how come the two of you just casually come in and out to someone else’s house, and also secretly wrest away and hog other people’s TV set to play that d*mn game.” Lei Yin expressed his dissatisfaction again.

“We sympathize with you living here all alone, so we especially come over to liven up the atmosphere.” Yoshikawa didn’t even

show a trace of repentance.

“Since the two of you are so determined, when you leave, please clean your garbage and sweep the floor.”

“Eh, Takeda, which way to go next?”

“Go left, no, go right.”

The rebellious duo calmly shielded their minds off from that last sentence.

Lei Yin turned around and saw sitting across him Akira Shiraishi was still thinking. He didn't push him but gently picked up the cup to take a sip of tea. They were not playing fast chest, so they could take the time to think about their next move. But life is not necessarily like this. If everything is according to the plan, where's the fun in that? People who do so should not be a lot.

Lei Yin was interrupted once again, this time, it came from the outside doorbell.

Kazumi, troublemaker, salesperson, a few words appeared in Lei Yin's mind.

When he opened the door, he found all of his guesses seemed wrong.

Outside stood five people, three boys, and two girls, all were college students. Nothing in their hands can be regarded as weapons, nor there were items to sell.

“Excuse me, are you student Gennai?” A boy with a flat head first asked.

“I am Gennai Masashi, what can I do for you?” Lei Yin abandoned his pointless speculation and concentrated on listening to their purpose of coming here.

“We are all Chinese students enrolled at Teikyo University, this time, we come to express our sincere gratitude to student Gennai.” That boy earnestly said.

”Gratitude? Let’s look for a place outside to talk about it. One moment please.” Taking into account that their group members were many, plus his place was already occupied, Lei Yin thought it would be better to find some other place to talk.

“Akira, I’m going out.” Lei Yin went back to the house and said to Akira Shiraishi.

“Come back quickly.” Akira Shiraishi didn’t want their game to be over.

“It should not be too long.” Lei Yin went out.

Not that Lei Yin is particularly fond of coffee, he just thought the

cafe was quieter, so he brought the several college students to the nearby coffee shop.

After the waiter had delivered their cups of steaming coffee, Lei Yin asked the student who talked first, “Can you make it clear? I remember that I don’t seem to know any of you, let alone helping you about something.”

“Student Gennai, I would like to introduce myself, I am Zhang Mingyu, from Xiamen, Fujian, now studying Business in Teikyo University for the third year. The other are also like me, all are Chinese students.”

After being introduced one by one, Lei Yin nodded to everyone as a way of greeting.

Apart from Zhang Mingyu, the other two boys names were Wu Yanfang and Zhang Donghai, respectively come from Hubei and Zhejiang. As for the two girls, one named Fang Xiaolei, also come from Zhejiang. Another one is called Zhang Shan, an equally quiet Sichuan girl.

Zhang Mingyu was the longest in Japan as he had followed his father to Japan when he was still in high school. That was five years ago. The shortest time in Japan is the boy called Zhang Donghai, he was this year’s freshman just like Lei Yin. Perhaps because he was still not too skilled in Japanese, he didn’t always make a sound.

“Student Gennai, the reason why this time we come to you, is

because we wanted to thank you for speaking with a sense of justice in that history lesson. Once we know of your performance that day, all of us Chinese and Korea's International students are very excited. For your righteous words and deed, all of us students are very grateful. So, the few of us on behalf of all the Chinese students now give you our sincere gratitude." Zhang Mingyu was getting more and more excited.

"You're welcome, I was just speaking the truth."

"You...." The several people were startled because he just spoke with fluent Chinese.

"Is it strange? Or I still have problems with my pronunciation?" Lei Yin continued to say fluent Chinese with a smile.

"Unexpectedly student Gennai can speak Chinese so well. This really surprised us." Zhang Donghai of Zhejiang still could not conceal the surprise in his face.

"Student Gennai, may I ask where did you learn Chinese? Do you have family members that are Chinese?" The square faced Wu Yanfang asked.

"I have long admired the Chinese culture, so I taught myself Chinese." Lei Yin didn't want to use Chinese surname to deceive them.

Hearing his answer, Wu Yanfang was slightly disappointed.

“We know some people who maliciously slander you from behind. If student Gennai does not mind, all of us are willing to help you.” Zhang Mingyu said sincerely.

“Thank you for your kindness, but I don’t need any help. You all came here from far away to study, I don’t want you to meddle in this matter. Every big rumor will one day subside. Therefore, you don’t need to pay attention to the words of those people.” Lei Yin asserted his rejection.

“But....”

“There’s this saying, ‘the more you touch things up, the darker they get’ (to only make matters worse), I believe you should understand what I mean.” Lei Yin didn’t want to discuss this topic.

Lei Yin totally wanted them to stay out of this. Now inside the campus there were only some students who extremely hate “Gennai Masashi,” but if these students meddle in this matter, then it could turn into a confrontation between Japanese and Chinese students. At that time, the situation will become very complicated.

Zhang Mingyu bowed his head to think for a moment, and then said: “I think I understand what student Gennai means. If you need us in the future, we will certainly help you as best as we can.”

“Thank you.”

Over time, the topic slowly turned into a form of gossip. Lei Yin, because it has been quite a long time didn't talk to his own people, engaged in a deep conversation with them. These several Chinese students were surprised to find this Chinese-speaking Japanese guy's understanding of China is far beyond their imagination.

There were many historical events about China and some local native product that they heard for the first time. In the face of this Japanese who was more Chinese than the Chinese, Zhang Mingyu and the other boys couldn't help but blush with shame. But the other two girls were getting more and more curious with this mysterious boy.

After chatting with ease for almost an hour, Lei Yin finally said goodbye to them. Those several students were reluctant to part with him, and only after they exchanged contact information, did they bid him farewell.

Returned to the apartment, Lei Yin saw Yoshikawa and Takeda were still playing games, but he did not know where Akira Shiraishi went.

"He went to buy the cigarette." Eating chips while holding the controller easily, Takeda vaguely replied.

"Hey, what times are you guys going to go? Tonight, I have to go back home." Lei Yin has arranged a date with Naoko tonight.

"Do not send, remember to bring back some souvenirs for us."

Yoshikawa seemed to hear only the last sentence.

Looking at their stubborn look, Lei Yin had no other choice.

At this time, the door was opened, Akira Shiraishi came back.

“Masashi, there’s a letter outside the door.” After taking off his shoes at the entrance, Akira Shiraishi handed Lei Yin a letter.

“Is that a challenge letter?” Takeda hurriedly paused the game and turned over.

Since Lei Yin safely came out of the Karate Club, for several days nobody sent challenge letters to him, but the number of cursing letters continued to increase unabated.

“See for yourself, I want to take a bath.” Lei Yin casually threw the letter to him, and then went to the room to get a change of clothes.

When Masashi finished his shower, still dripping with water walking out into the living room, Takeda suddenly said to him in a loud voice: “Masashi, this is not a challenge letter, this is a love letter.”

—

In the metropolitan police underground firing range, the sound

of gunfire constantly blared out.

After firing the last bullet, Eiko Kotoshi put down her earmuffs.

This firing range is the place that she often comes. This young female police who always tries to outdo others is not willing to be treated as a person who only knows how to write reports while sitting in the office. Therefore, since she took over the position of a staff officer, as long as there is time, she will insist on coming here for shooting practice. But today, she spent more than half the usual amount of bullets.

After handing over the gun at the reception desk, this female adviser felt a bit tired.

For over a week, the so-called trapping plan seemed to have no effect at all.

Cooperating with various districts police station, they've sent their people posing as ordinary persons in the areas the killer may appear as bait to lure him out. But now, it appeared that the results were unsatisfactory. Every two or three days, somewhere they'll find victims with blood being sucked out. As with the previous Tokyo Ripper, it's hard to lie to the public anymore. The folk started to spread various version of vampire stories. Some people even hung cross with garlic on their entrance door. Although it seemed amusing, it also showed that the public anxiety continued to expand. The pressure from the top was also growing.

Although the local police have been working overtime to catch

the murderer, the investment was not directly proportional to the results, making a lot of people depressed.

The blood-sucking freak seemed to know about the police movement, and so far never appeared in the sight of the police. 'Does this mean we neglected all of those victims?' The policewoman pondered as she continued to drive.

Although such driving habit is not conducive to the traffic safety, at least, so far, there have never been rumors about a report of a female police inspector negligent driving causing an accident.

But this rumor seemed to appear tonight. Because she failed to hit the brake on time, this female police officer's car hit some road sign railing.

This kind of result happened not because of the bad driving habit of the female police officer, but because she heard a sharp scream.

Having no time to feel guilty about the crooked road sign, the female police officer fiercely turned the steering wheel toward the direction of the scream.

Although the overly rational Eiko Kotoshi did not believe in something as vague as intuition that has no scientific basis, at the moment, she felt she was getting closer and closer to the murderer.

Now it's 10 PM, although most parts of Tokyo are equipped with adequate lighting, this doesn't guarantee that there would be light

in all the dark areas. And this was precisely the place where the scream came from, in one of those neglected corners.

When Eiko Kotoshi drove her car to a place near the residential park, she no longer heard the sound.

Under the lighting of the street lights, there was only her.

The trained policewoman knew that in this dark environment, getting out of the car is a very dangerous thing. So, she did not do that, and only held the pistol with her right hand while slowing down the car speed to search forward.

After driving half-way through the park, just as she was about to turn the car back, she finally saw something like a human body lying on the ground.

If you want to know the temperature of the water, the best way to do it is to try it by hand. In order to determine the real situation, Eiko Kotoshi finally opened the door to go out of the car.

Just like a person who usually does not believe in ghost, if late at night, that person found himself in a deserted graveyard, he would still feel afraid. In this circumstances Eiko Kotoshi also felt very nervous, her right hand that was holding the gun was numb because she was holding it too tightly.

She has determined that the object a few steps away in front of her is a person. She just didn't know whether that person was alive

or dead.

When she touched that person's hand, she felt it was somewhat warm, but she knew he was already dead. Because he has lost his breath.

When she turned the dead man over, she saw the person was a man of about 30 years of age, and he also had a strong smell of alcohol. Opening his collar, sure enough, on his neck artery, she found a gruesome teeth marks, a trace of blood poured out of the wound.

Seeing that flow of blood, Eiko Kotoshi's heart moved. According to previous autopsy reports, all of the victims are being drained out of blood, nothing was left behind. This trace of blood flow was the first time she saw it. Therefore, there was only one possible explanation, that is, before the murderer sucked all the blood out, he was interrupted by her arrival. If this assumption is true, that means, the killer has just left, or....He was still nearby.

Suddenly, she felt goosebumps all over her body, forcing her to immediately stand up.

She seemed to hear a burst of beast-like panting sound resounded in the vicinity.

Chapter 144 - Not Suitable For Driving At Night

Starting from high school, Eiko Kotoshi rarely watches movies or TV. In her views, instead of wasting time on useless entertainment, might as well go jogging or fishing, which contribute to physical and mental health. And within those useless entertainments, the one she most despised of is the so-called horror films. In her opinion, while the cinema makes those unnecessary noises, the perverts use this as covers to make preparation before they attack their dates.

But unfortunately, she became the heroine of the horror drama tonight.

Driving the car, Eiko Kotoshi looked at the rear view mirror, after determining there was nothing in the back, she would slow down the speed again. Then, while her two knees clamped the barrel, her free left hand was responsible for the bullets.

She didn't remember how many times she fired her gun, luckily before she emptied the bullets, she successfully closed the door, otherwise, she might become tonight's second victim.

At that time, because of the dark, she didn't see what that thing look like, except for the eyes. Although this was a bit illogical, she really can't imagine "it" as a human being.

Because no human has that kind of hungry for a long time wolf's eyes.

Sometimes someone will be branded as “beast in human clothing” by other people, that just mean to scold the person for behaving like an animal, but still, that person’s appearance is a human, after all. But she believed that tonight, she encountered a real beast, although it has a very similar shape as a human.

Accustomed to deal with people, the female police, faced with this case for the first time, there was a certain degree of out-of-control. She continued to shoot that thing, but none of her bullets hit the intended target. Because that thing dodged the bullets with extraordinary speed backward, it’s degree of sensitivity and its shape did not match. Then, it once again hid under the darkness of the woods.

At the top of her speed, she ran back to the car and then drove away from the Park. However, when she came at the Park exit, she stopped the car.

She has a very crazy but consistent with her own career idea: to lure that thing out. This might be a good opportunity to catch it.

Because around this park was full of residential buildings, and easily accessible, it was not suitable for hunting purpose. So she first returned to the police station. After clearly explaining what happened, she immediately issued instructions to immediately find the nearest suitable place to round up, and then all the people have to be there ready for the collection.

In the dull waiting moment, a local Patrol Chief with 15 years of

duty, through the phone, provided a location that was more in line with the condition. It was a place two kilometers away from the park where there were slopes on its left and right. That place was still in maintenance, relatively far from the residential area, and more suitable for large-scale hunting operation.

After analyzing the terrain, Eiko Kotoshi decided to accept this proposal, then commanded them to prepare, and to notify the other areas police station for cooperation.

The plan was laid down, and she only needed to lure that thing out.

Now she only hoped that thing has not left, or all the preparation that have just been made will be in vain.

Eiko Kotoshi drove back again to the Park, and then deliberately slowed down the vehicle speed while taking this opportunity to reload the bullets.

When she vigilantly watched the surrounding environment as she fumbled with the bullets, all of a sudden, from above her car came a burst of strong vibration. Because this vibration was quite large, and it happened very suddenly, Eiko Kotoshi's hand hasn't had the time to properly insert the bullet, making it dropped under the seat.

Having made the mental preparation, Eiko Kotoshi immediately pressed the revolver wheel back into the gun and, without taking another thought, fired a shot toward the roof.

After the gunshot, from above the vehicle roof came a wheezing sound of the beast.

Women's intuition told her that the thing got shot. For this overly rational Eiko Kotoshi, this was a big step forward. Before this, she completely did not believe this intuition kind of thing.

‘Maybe I don't need those men,’ Eiko Kotoshi thought.

However, when she fired the second shot, a hand twice as large as a human hand with the tips glowed with black glossy giant claws, suddenly broke the glass window, and then moved all the way to grasp Eiko Kotoshi.

Fortunately, she did not wear the seatbelt. Immediately lie down on the side to get out of the way from the claw was the policewoman's only idea at that time.

If that once on the back said Eiko Kotoshi was just “an officer who will sit in the office writing reports” officer Tsukuda also on the scene, he would certainly exclaim in surprise for this female boss' excellent reaction.

But the sharp claw still has not given up poking inside the car, the female police lie on the side facing upward, and then fired two shots toward the top of the window.

Two full of anger roaring sound was heard. That lying down

unexpected visitor on the roof finally jumped off from the place it did not belong to.

Eiko Kotoshi acted decisively and immediately sat up and jammed her foot on the accelerator.

Driving the car on the road outside the Park, the female police went straight toward the intended destination.

When the car was almost two hundred meters away, Eiko Kotoshi slowed down the vehicle speed again.

If this were an ordinary beast, after experiencing the taste of bullets, it most likely would flee. Now she only wanted this beast to be more angry than its fear of bullet. Otherwise, the rounding up scheme can't be implemented.

But when she turned a corner heading to the top lane, she felt that thing might not come after her. Because it was too bright here.

Subconsciously, she completely regarded herself as that blood-sucking beast. According to her understanding of the general biology, wild beasts are afraid of the strong light. The first time she saw bright lights on both sides of the lane, a sense of resentment generated within her.

Eiko Kotoshi immediately took out her mobile phone. She wanted to change her plans, calling all the police officers back. It

was not the question whether to carry out the operation at this time or not, if the lights were still there the thing that she came across just now might run away.

“Hey....” When the phone has just connected, there was a strong shock coming from above the roof once again.

Shortly thereafter, a giant claw again stretched in from outside the window.

Really has no creative attack mode, Eiko Kotoshi had to once again lean her body to the side to dodge the claw attack.

When she once again aimed her gun and pulled the trigger, she heard “klik, klik” sounds of empty air, her pistol has no bullet anymore.

Eiko Kotoshi whispered curse words and then slammed on the accelerator while she still leaned sideways.

In this sudden acceleration, the guess who fell on top of her vehicle roof, because of the inertia effect, almost fell down from above.

The giant claws instinctively grabbed the edge of the window, while its other hand clutched the other side.

Eiko Kotoshi, who now can slightly raise her head, continued to step on the accelerator ruthlessly, while her other hand rotated the

steering wheel left and right.

Like the highway chase scene in the gangster film, on a deserted road, a speeding car kept moving forward while swaying left and right. Like a drunken man. On the car's roof, one can vaguely see a seemingly person-like object lying there.

Chapter 145 - Knight

Speeding away at more than 100 kph, two kilometers is just a few minutes distance. But the female police couldn't shake off the guest above her vehicle roof at the intended destination. In this thrilling fight, the car moved past the other forked road.

Right now, do not say stop, even slowing down a bit would result in her being caught by the claw. At the same time she was also glad that there were no other cars on this road at night, otherwise, with the way she drove the car, even if she did not crash into another car, the other vehicles would be hit.

But then what to do? The female police has no time to think about this question for the time being. Perhaps if she persists for a while, the above friend will lose the ability to act because of motion sickness, Eiko Kotoshi self comfortingly thought.

Ten minutes later, Eiko Kotoshi saw a white car parked 100 meters away in front of her. Next to the road, a man was waving toward her.

‘Bastard, why did your car has to break at this time.’ Eiko Kotoshi scolded a sentence unsympathetically in her heart.

Fortunately, this is not a one-way street, in order to avoid that stopped in the middle of the road car, the female police had to temporarily take the reverse traffic route and somewhat narrowly passed that car.

She seemed to hear the man in the back loudly cursed.

Not long after that, Eiko Kotoshi began to adapt to this erratic driving. She controlled the steering wheel with her left hand, while her right hand held the phone, dialing the police headquarters once again.

Now she did not have the time to look for another convenient place, and the car may stop at anytime because there might be another obstacle at the front that can't be easily evaded as the last. So, her command was very simple: everybody rushes over to her as soon as possible.

The car gradually marched toward the city center. From the completely destroyed glass, her view on her surrounding was completely unhindered as she saw the blocks of houses and tall buildings.

Perhaps she would become the first police officer who brings danger to the City, Eiko Kotoshi self-deprecatingly thought.

Tokyo's nightlife is world famous. Therefore, different from the previous road, the vehicles on this road gradually increased.

Fortunately, the road is wide, the other cars just quietly gave way, they would not want to take a surprise hit by this road racer coming from the mountain road.

However, not all drivers are so obedient, after driving

unhindered for nearly 15 minutes, the car traveling in front of Eiko Kotoshi suddenly stopped. The reason was simple, there was a red light at the front. Stop when the red light is on, this is a simple truth that all the people who know the traffic rules understand.

Seeing the flocks of vehicles crossing through the front intersection, the female police inspector changed direction again, taking a right turn.

After turning over, Eiko Kotoshi bitterly smiled. There was no other open lane, other than a parking lot behind a restaurant. As anyone can imagine, this was likely to be the finish line of this automobile test of strength match, just hoping that this would not be the end of her life.

The female police suddenly relied on her car once again as she sped up the vehicle, and then when the car was about 100 meters away from the end of the parking lot, she suddenly made an emergency brake. The screeching sound of high-density polyester tires in close contact with the ground was heard. The guess on the roof finally thrown off by the powerful inertia, its whole body flew into the parking lot.

If this were ordinary people, they would at least fell into a serious injury. But for that thing, the female police did not want to take any chance. She immediately made a big U-turn and sailed back to the driveway again.

She did not immediately leave this place because she still wanted to continue to lead the thing out, continuing the roundup plan that she did not even have the confidence it would succeed.

Suddenly, she heard a woman's scream coming from the inside.

‘There's still people in the parking lot?’

This understanding made Eiko Kotoshi's scalp went numb.

If for her own sake, someone else has to die, she would have nightmares every night. After finding a reason to turn back, Eiko Kotoshi immediately bent over and fumbled under the seat for the bullets that previously fell but didn't have the time to pick up.

Although she only found five, there was no time to find the others. She quickly put those bullets on the revolver cylinder as fast as possible.

Having the loaded gun in her hand, the female police calmed down a lot. She immediately opened the door and ran to the parking lot.

After the terrifying encounter with that thing, Eiko Kotoshi thought when she arrived at the scene, she would only see a corpse. But in the parking lot on the place not brightly lit by the lights, she saw an incredible sight.

—

Previously, four hours ago.

Naoko was very happy today, because she had a dinner appointment with him this evening.

Teikyo University was quite far away from the apartment where she lived; it was an hour drive away in distances. She didn't want him to move around so hard everyday. There was also the traffic safety consideration, so she begged him to come look for her on holidays. Finally, he promised her.

After enduring for so many days, today is the day where they will finally meet. Starting from this morning, Naoko was in an excited mood.

Wearing the one-piece hanging from the shoulder, miniskirt dress that he bought for her, Naoko blushingly looked at herself in the mirror. 'How could the bad guy send me such a dress, didn't he say he doesn't like others to see me wearing a miniskirt?'

After putting a little bit of moisturizer on her face, and carefully combed her shoulder-length hair, Naoko picked up the handbag and left the room.

"Lei, we can go now," Naoko said, subconsciously lowered her head. She didn't dare to look at him looking at her.

The places where he swept his vision seemed to have a strange burning sensation. Naoko blushed again.

She was really very suitable to wear that dress. Lei Yin, for Naoko's perfect pair of slender legs with the bare snow-white skin, was full of incessant heartbeat.

Gently holding her in his arms, Lei Yin said in her ear: "Fortunately that kid is not here, I'm thinking of eating you as my main course for the night." As he said that, he put his hand on her upper thigh and slowly stroked. This kind of amazingly elastic, as smooth as cream, and too wonderful to touch skin made him unable to put his hand down.

"Lei....not here, do not go wild here, okay? I'm afraid Aiko would suddenly come back...." Naoko said with a trembling voice.

"Very well, let's go to dinner first, you're hungry, right?" Lei Yin bowed and kissed her on the forehead.

Naoko gently nodded. She really liked this occasionally showed action of him. She felt, in his eyes, she was like a spoiled child.

Living together for a long time, Naoko found her beloved man is a fine food lover. He would often lead her to a seemingly ordinary looking but have amazingly tasty food on the inside restaurant or snack bar.

However, tonight Lei Yin didn't take her to a snack bar, but to a very famous restaurant. After all, tonight's subject was two people being together, rather than to enjoy food, of course, it was better to find a romantic place.

Even in the most bustling avenue, nobody can ignore Naoko's existence, especially when she dressed so sexy.

The two people, upon entering the restaurant, as long as the men who saw Naoko was straight, without exception, they all gave her the hungry wolf staring at the prey look. While all the women who saw her showed the look of intense jealousy coupled with hostility.

"May I ask if the two have a reservation?" The restaurant manager managed to pull his gaze away from Naoko's body.

"Yes. My name is Gennai." Lei Yin replied.

"The two please come with me." The manager quickly found the reservation record, immediately took them into the dining room.

At dinner time, Naoko asked Lei Yin's college life with great interest.

"It's okay, not too stuffy, perhaps because I knew several eccentric students." Lei Yin introduced Takeda et al. with all of their peculiar characters to Naoko. When he told her Takeda had wrested away his apartment and stubbornly refused to leave, Naoko could not help but laugh.

The dinner was spent in a very relaxed and pleasant atmosphere.

"In accordance with the normal procedures, after the meal, we should go to see a movie, you like it?" After settling their account,

Lei Yin asked.

“Em.” Naoko gently took his arm out of the restaurant.

In the parking lot, when Naoko was about to open the door, suddenly she heard a burst of rapid braking sound. Then she noticed a human-shaped object came flying at her....

Chapter 146 - Retreat

Influenced by Western literature or films, a lot of girls aged between little girls and teenagers will more or less fantasize about having a handsome and strong knight that would always protect themselves. Author note, the knight here does not refer to a person riding a motorcycle or bicycle.

When teenagers grow into young women, along with the increased age and experience, will slowly become obsessed with a real and handsome star.

Looking at the man who occupied the exclusively reserved spot for a Knight in front of her currently engaging in an intense confrontation with that monster, Naoko in addition to heartache and worry, there was no joy.

There were several deep and penetrating wounds on his shoulder blade, constantly overflowing with blood. That was just the injuries he received for protecting her.

If this were a normal situation, to meet with such an opponent, Lei Yin would be thrilled.

The strength in each of this guy's attack and the speed were not something that a normal human can withstand.

If he had a knife in his hand, Lei Yin would not put this level of opponent in his eyes. But this assumption in the present circumstances is not established.

Naoko stood just behind him, so he cannot take a step back.

This kind of flesh action felt really good, but he knew he couldn't delay this for too long because his wounds continued to bleed.

This monster not only have sharp claws, his skin and flesh were also thick, hitting them felt like hitting a tire.

Although Lei Yin was incessantly complaining in his heart, Eiko Kotoshi who rushed from the outside actually has another feeling.

She can't imagine there's a human that could fight hand to hand combat with that monster on this level.

Looking strangely at the person who was currently in a fierce struggle, she had a feeling that those two combatants were inhuman.

But obviously, that man is much more skilled.

He used a very ingenious or should she say marvelous technique to get rid of its claws, and then she could hear an audible sound of harsh blow against that guy's body.

—

Although she has been a free driver for that thing this night,

until now, Eiko Kotoshi never saw the real appearance of this little-overlord passenger.

From a distance, it looked like a normal human, because it stood upright like a man, but the most important thing was, it was wearing a pair of pants with a gray shirt??

This ultra avant-garde dress made the policewoman thought of those synthetic clothing that were put on pets by their masters.

Although that piece of clothing has been broken and tattered and might as well be worn by a bum, it is indeed something that called a shirt. From the damaged spots of that shirt, the female police can clearly see the yellow-brown hair inside.

Compared with the shirt, that pair of pants were much more complete. It was just covered with dirt making people unable to see the original color.

Because that thing was facing the man, she can't see its face and only saw something similar to yellow hair on its head.

Its two body parts that can be called hands were also covered with yellow-brown fur. The reason why she previously thought they were much bigger than normal, was perhaps because of those furs. In the fingers section, she can clearly see the long and sharp black claws.

This thing made Eiko Kotoshi reminisced about the mythical

creature called “Werewolf.”

“Woman with a gun over there, you still have time to watch this lively spectacle?” Even in this intense exchange situation, Lei Yin still has a certain perception of the surrounding environment. Besides, that woman was standing behind the monster’s back, he can see her with using just his peripheral vision.

Hearing the man’s scolding voice, Eiko Kotoshi woke up from the shock, but she was also quite uncomfortable with the man’s attitude.

Though unwilling, she knew what she should do. Therefore, she ran over there.

To be honest, Lei Yin did not want to let this suddenly appeared woman to meddle in this, but now the situation has become more and more disadvantageous to him.

Using his full internal force, Lei Yin’s blows seemed pretty effective. The beast was constantly wheezing in pain. But it seemed that thing never encountered such blows, which only made it completely enraged. His full of bloodshot eyes emitted a faint red light. The black shiny claws’ dances produced the sound of rattling wind, under its violent rage, it just wanted to tear the enemy in front into pieces.

Although his opponent’s attack was fairly repetitive, Lei Yin’s situation was even more unfavorable.

From his wound on the back, the blood continued to pour out and have soaked his whole coat. The feeling of punch that was getting weaker and weaker was evident.

If this was Lei Yin in his heyday, this level of opponent, even if he did not have any weapon, as long as he sends his best shot he doesn't need to send the second shot. But to make his body reach his heyday was truly elusive.

Once he got very lucky, he reincarnated into the body of a child under eight years old. He reached his apex after fully immersed in practice for nearly two decades. Since then, he never reached that pinnacle of humanity state again.

But because the body that he occupied right now is stunted, the meridians were blocked, practicing time was too short and various other reasons, he only reached 20% of his heyday ability. To flat a person is more than enough, but to do a melee fight with such a monster, it is somewhat inadequate. Of course, if there's weapon in his hand, that's another matter.

Seemingly able to smell the familiar scent of Eiko Kotoshi's gunpowder in the barrel, before she approached, that thing slightly turned his head and took one look at this female police.

From that brief glance, Eiko Kotoshi finally saw that thing's appearance.

She didn't see the imagined protruding fangs, but admittedly, the sharpness of its teeth is not much difference than the wild wolves.

That severely distorted face fully covered in long hairs made her remember the depictions of ancient ape in the illustrated book in high school biology class.

That thing's hatred toward the female police seemed to be more intense than toward Lei Yin. When he saw her, he immediately left Lei Yin and rushed to her.

Two sharp gunshots sounded in the empty parking lot, causing very uncomfortable echoes.

Although it was furious, the memory of the weapon in her hands was still fresh in its mind.

When it was dozens of meters away from her, it saw the woman held up the black stuff, and it immediately made a swift action that completely incompatible with its body size; quickly jumped on the roof of a nearby car, and barely dodged the flashing bullet. And then, like Tarzan, constantly hopped on top of the cars all the way toward the exit direction to flee.

Eiko Kotoshi immediately followed behind it and fired a shot; the bullet grazed the edge of its scalp. After that, it loudly roared, increased its speed, and quickly jumped out of the parking lot.

After seeing the monster and the woman ran out, Lei Yin breathed a sigh of relief. Then he felt a burst of dizziness and quickly put a hand out to the car to hold his body.

“Lei what happened to you?” Naoko teared up as she held him. Just now because she was afraid to divert his attention, didn’t dare to call out, but now seeing him covered with blood, she could no longer hold back anymore.

“Don’t be afraid, I’m fine. Help me take off my coat, and then tear it and strapped it on my wound.” Because of the excessive bleeding, Lei Yin felt his whole body was getting cold.

Naoko bit her lips not to cry and quickly took his coat off.

Seeing beside the five flesh wounds on his back there were also deeply visible bone deep terrible wounds, Naoko felt as if her heart was pierced by a knife.

After using all her strength to tear the coat, she was unable to rip it open. Just like when in a nightmare being chased by a monster but can’t run fast.

Since she can’t tear it by hand, she wanted to use her teeth to bite it, but the result was still the same.

“Fool....don’t force it, the quality of this coat is quite good. No need to tear it....Just use it to press my wound. We’ll wait here for the ambulance.” Lei Yin comforted her and slowly sat down on the ground.

Unfortunately, they wounds were on his back, otherwise, he can stop the bleeding using acupuncture technique. Lei Yin smiled

bitterly in his heart.

While trying hard to press his wound, Naoko called an ambulance.

During the long wait, Naoko anxiously stared at the exit.

“Don’t worry, as long as....you keep pressing, the bleeding can be stopped. I’m not going to die because of this small injuries. But it seems, I can’t go to the movies with you tonight.”

“Lei....” Naoko silently cried.

Chapter 147 - The Two In Their Own World In The Hospital

When Lei Yin woke up, he found himself lying on a hospital bed.

Looking at Naoko lying her head on his bed, asleep, his heart was filled with a deep sense of love and affection.

This fellow must have stayed up all night and stayed here for me.

He tried to sit up, but felt his limbs were weak, he knew that it was the side effect from blood lost.

Forcing himself to sit up, Naoko suddenly woke up.

“Lei, you’re awake.” Naoko said with surprise. Although the doctor had said that he only lost blood, and so long as he gets a good rest he’ll be fine, but she still couldn’t be at ease, however, now that she saw him wake up, her heart settled down a bit.

“I’m sorry to wake you up.”

“I’m going to call the doctor.” Naoko ran out in a hurry.

After running through the check up process, the 30-year-old doctor told Naoko: “The patient has recovered, there are no symptoms of inflammation in his wounds, as long as he stays here and rest for a few days, he’ll be able to leave.”

“Thank you doctor.” Naoko gratefully bowed to him.

“Your younger brother really is fortunate to have you as his elder sister. Please rest assured Hase-san, I’ll certainly do my best to take good care of your younger brother.” The young doctor’s also showed that he was very serious.

Younger brother? Naoko looked at the young doctor a little puzzled.

“Then I’ll have to trouble you doctor. Right, I almost forgot to introduce you, she’s my fiancée, not my elder sister.” Lei Yin said with a false smile.

“No, I’m sorry. If there’s nothing else, I have other works to do. There are also many patients waiting for me outside. So I’ll have to take my leave first.” The doctor, who had reached a marriageable age, felt devastated as he hurriedly ran out of the hospital ward.

Lei Yin revealed his middle finger towards his back.

“Lei are you hungry? I’ll come back and buy you something to eat, okay?” Naoko said as she wrung the towel, then gently wiping his face.

“No need, while hospital food doesn’t taste good, but asking you to buy it would cause too much trouble. I’m not hungry, so just sit down and accompany me.

Naoko then put down the towel, and sat at the bedside.

“Does your wound hurt?” Looking at his gauze, Naoko asked in a soft tone.

“Don’t worry, I’m fine.” Lei Yin said, as he stroked her face.

Naoko didn’t say anything, and just held down his right hand tightly pressing it on her face, tears then flowed down slowly.

If it was all right, she would rather be the one to get hurt.

She really didn’t know how much she treasured this man who had protected her with his own life on the line.

“Lei....” Other than constantly repeating his name, she couldn’t say anything, while tears brazenly rolled down her face like a flood.

Not knowing how to comfort her, Lei Yin hugged her tightly in his arms. His strength was nothing like a bleeding patient.

Due to not resting for a whole night, it was certain that she would have wild mood swings. A few minutes later, Naoko finally couldn’t resist any longer, and fell asleep on Lei Yin’s arms, her face was still wet from her tears.

Lei Yin could only move his right hand, and after putting some effort, he was able to put Naoko's whole body on the bed with great difficulty.

Then after putting half of the bed sheet on top of her, Lei Yin looked at her sleeping tranquilly, then smiled contentedly.

Sitting up on the bed, Lei Yin unconsciously recalled the battle last night.

Disinclined to think about the fight against the monster again, although compared to the monster his internal force was too far off, but if not for his injury and bleeding unceasingly, the chances of him winning were very high.

But what Lei Yin had really care about was that nothing happens to Naoko.

At the time that the monster flew, Lei Yin was already in the driver's seat, while Naoko was just about to board the car.

When the monster had suddenly threw itself towards Naoko, while the car happened to be in his way. And without enough time for him to rescue her, without knowing why, he suddenly used that power unconsciously. Like last time, the time around him seemed to suddenly slow down. He then jumped towards Naoko hugging her around his arms taking the claw instead of her, which had resulted in the wound on his left shoulder.

The important point was, even though he had used that power again, his body wasn't scrapped.

Perhaps, after surviving the previous disaster, there were changes that quietly took place that he himself didn't even know.

—

After knocking on the door, Naoko opened the door to the hospital ward.

Apart from Lei Yin, she saw another man in the room. They looked like they were talking to each other.

In order to not to affect their conversation, Naoko gently place the meal on the table.

Seeing Maeda look at her, she hastily nodded to him.

"Masashi, this is?" It was the first time Ryoutaro Maeda saw Naoko.

"She was my high school teacher in the past, but now she's my fiancée." Lei Yin said with a smile.

"What?" Even though Maeda was usually calm, but hearing this he still couldn't help but cry out aloud.

Naoko didn't think that Lei Yin would tell a bystander about them like this, so she was suddenly both happy and embarrassed, at the same time.

When Naoko had arrived at Lei Yin's bedside, he said: "Do you know who this guy is?"

Naoko shook her head.

"He's my mother's husband, that is, your father-in-law."

"What?" Naoko said aloud.

"Uncle, please forgive me, I just didn't know." Naoko reacted quickly, and bowed towards him.

"Being called uncle when you're not even 40 years old, you must have mixed feeling, right?" Lei Yin didn't miss the chance to ridicule him.

"You guys always surprise me." Maeda said with a wry smile.

"Uncle, you wait, I'll go get you some tea. Right, have you eaten yet? I just bought some food from the restaurant outside, eat with us. Or we could also eat outside." In order to give a good impression on Lei's family, Naoko rushed to greet Lei's stepfather.

"Fool, don't be so nervous. Although this guy is my stepfather,

he's also my friend. Rest assured, even if he's opposed to us, in the future I'll still marry you." Lei Yin took her hand and said with a smile.

"Lei...." Naoko was both embarrassed and nervous.

"Well, never mind about this guy. He already had dinner at home, so let's just eat together."

"Uncle, do you want to eat with us? I bought a lot, It should be enough for the three of us to eat." Naoko ignored what he had said, and turned her head towards Ryoutaro Maeda.

"Thanks, but no need. I already ate. You eat, I'm going to buy a pack of cigarettes, wait for me to come back." Ryoutaro Maeda stood up, and walked outside.

"Uncle take care." Although Ryoutaro Maeda turned his back towards her, Naoko still bowed to him very respectfully.

"Good, you are being too tactful to him, If he hadn't left, you may have gotten a stomach ache. well, let's eat. What did you bring back?" Lei Yin asked interestingly. Although he was already prepared, but he had tried the hospital food at noon, so Lei Yin was opposed with Naoko's decision to buy it again.

"Didn't you say that although hospital food doesn't taste good, buying food outside is too troublesome, so why are you so concerned about what I bought?"

“Hey, I heard from someone that a person had insisted in going outside to buy food which was probably you, I just didn’t want to waste it. Don’t say anything else, I’m a little hungry.”

Naoko looked at his eyes, a bit charmingly and angrily, and then opened the lunch box.

When Maeda came back, Naoko was already tidying up the tableware. Seeing Maeda come back, she hastily bowed to greet him.

While she had went to the bathroom sink, Maeda asked Lei Yin in a low voice: “Hey, when did this happen?”

“In addition to me missing for more than a year, it should be two years now.”

“Does Rumiko and Kazumi know this?”

“Lucky for you, you’re the very first person to know about it.”

“I don’t think I’m actually lucky. Well, this wasn’t the thing that I wanted to talk about, I came to see how you are, and at the same time ask what had happened the night before. I heard that you fought against that murderer. Do you know who that guy was?” Maeda indicated his purpose in coming here.

Murderer? Lei Yin looked at him, and said: “I see you really don’t know about it. I remember there was a woman holding a gun, she should be a peer of yours, right?”

“You’re talking about Eiko Kotoshi. I’ve asked her about this matter, but she told me not to meddle in this matter, and that she was ordered not to tell anyone about this by the top, however, she then quietly wrote down your hospital address to me. At that time when I saw your name, I almost jumped out of my own skin.”

Lei Yin thought for a moment, and then said: “It seems that your peer’s mouth is sealed. But she isn’t willing to just end this matter, so she urged you to continue and pursue this matter. The matter is much more complicated than you think, and may even involve many people. If you would like to continue, than you would have to retire as police, I urged you not to ask about this.”

“It’s really that serious?” Maeda frowned.

“When something dirty can’t be accepted by people, the top will be involved considering a so-called top secret. Since your peer’s mouth had been sealed by the top, it should be obvious that this matter is something that can’t be exposed to light. Of course, standing before you as a friend, if you really want to know, I will tell you the truth. But after hearing about it, I think you’d better not interfere in this matter.”

“A person’s curiosity is much more poisonous than gut feeling, but I still want to know exactly what happened that night.” Maeda wanted to know the truth.

“Good, if you’re dismissed, I’ll lend you money to open a shop. Naoko, you also come here.”

“Lei, you continue with your talk, I’ll go out to buy something.” Naoko didn’t want to interfere their conversation.

“Fool, it’s already late, how can I let you go out by yourself. Sit down, in any case you were also on the scene at that time.”

“What, Miss Hase was also there?” Maeda asked in surprise.

“Yes, if not for that matter, we would have gone to the movie theater to watch a movie that night.”

Under Lei Yin’s insistence, Naoko finally sat down at his bedside docilely.

—

“Hey, it’s almost time, have you found him yet?” Yoshikawa looked at a table next to him, and asked.

“Since yesterday, I’ve been trying to call that guy’s phone, but his phone always seems to be turned off. What can I do about it then?” Takeda said a little helplessly.

“I really wanted to see what kind of girl would even write a love

letter to that guy. Does he fear that he'd gut punched after denying her?" Yoshikawa touched his chin as he said so.

"It think she should be an eight-foot woman that has arms thicker than our waist. Maybe she thought that the only one that can be with her was a humanoid monster like Masashi." Takeda laughed a bit obscenely.

"Idiot, where could we found such a woman in our school. Well, anyway, that guy can't come, as his friend, we'll sacrifice ourselves for him." Yoshikawa said with great loyalty.

"Approved." Takeda answered when someone finally said these words.

"Akira, you'll also go, right? If it's a trap, the more of us, the higher the chance for us of escaping." Yoshikawa was really worried about this issue.

"If I refuse, will you let me off?" Shiraishi Akira looked up and asked.

"Nope." The two shouted in unison.

In accordance to the described address in the letter, the three man came to the appointed restaurant with the tables already reserved.

"Hey, what are you looking at? Girls tend to like being late, don't

be in a rush.” Yoshikawa sat as he looked at Takeda who was looking around the restaurant and said.

“Fool, of course I’m looking for the nearest exit, just wait, if this really is a trap, we could at least escape right away.” Takeda said seriously.

“You’re the fool, where would you find people who would do that in a restaurant. Although I knew from the very moment you were born that you are slow-witted, but I didn’t think it would be this serious. This is my mistake; I should have urged your older sister to take you to see a doctor.”

“You say one more word, soon you’ll find someone who’ll stand up in a restaurant and give you a good beating.”

“Hey, you two are arguing again, the girl who wrote the letter to Masashi wouldn’t dare to come after seeing you fight like this.” Shiraishi Akira suddenly said something.

“What do you mean, did she come?”

“In the letter she said that she’ll wear a long white dress, and on the right side of her chest there would be an inscription of a purple flower, as well as a handbag in her other hand.”

“How do you know? I don’t remember you reading the letter.” Yoshikawa said strangely.

“Because there’s a girl dressed like that coming over to this side.”

“What?”

The two immediately turned their head, and saw a girl wearing a long white dress coming over to their side.

“No way?” Yoshikawa couldn’t believe it, and muttered.

“It can’t be her, I think she’s just going to pass through us.” Takeda’s face also had a look of disbelief.

“I think it’s her.” Shiraishi Akira whispered.

“You shut up.”

Finally, the girl went to their table. Yoshikawa and Takeda then had a dizzy feeling.

“Hello, I remember asking Gennai-san to come, for what reason would you be here during our appointment?” The girl asked.

Yoshikawa and Takeda immediately fainted.

Chapter 148 - Visitors

When Naoko's eyes moved away from the computer screen, she subconsciously looked at Lei Yin, who was sitting on the bed. Only to find out that he was actually looking at her without blinking.

"Lei, do you want anything to drink, or do you want to go to the bathroom?" Naoko quickly went to his side.

"I just found out that you look really attractive when you're seriously working." Lei Yin took her left hand placing it near his lips, and kissed her.

"Fool." Naoko blushed, quietly sat down, and leaned on his right shoulder.

Although, the tip of their nose was filled with the smell of disinfectant, that wasn't pleasing to their nose, but it still didn't stop them from snuggling.

"Lei, did your mother know that you are hospitalized?" Naoko, just like a cat, closed her eyes, and asked.

"She shouldn't know, I've told Maeda to help me keep it a secret. If we are to let her know, then she would worry too." Lei Yin thought that the advantage of studying was that he didn't need to go home every day. Even if the situation was serious, as it is now, so long as he could conceal it properly, he wouldn't let Rumiko know.

“Uncle Maeda probably feels like he’s become an accomplice, after listening to his complaints, I think you should let him help you before you tell a lot of lies, okay? On one side is his wife, and the other is his overbearing step-son, it must be very hard on him.” Naoko couldn’t bear but smile.

“I only hope that fellow doesn’t have any habit of speaking in his sleep, otherwise I’ll die a tragic death with him.” As Lei Yin was talking, he at the same time moved his hand inside her skirt.

“Lei, don’t do this, you’re still hurt.” Naoko said with a weak voice.

“Don’t you know that accelerating the blood and circulating it in body is the best medicine for a flesh wound?”

“Where did you get such an idea.” Naoko said in a low voice, revealing a charmingly angry look, but she didn’t stop him, and had instead placed her face on his shoulder, not daring to look him in the eye.

As long as he likes it, it’s fine. With this thought in mind, the mature beauty firmly held the bed sheet with both her hands, enduring the feeling of shame, and the unceasingly pleasant sensation violently coursing through her body, constraining herself not to cry out as much as possible. But just as the hand that reached out for a yard after taking an inch, touched her sensitive body, she didn’t know how long she could patiently endure this.

Before, because he was afraid that it would affect Naoko's writing, Lei Yin didn't turn on the television, so the room was very quiet. Moaning in this quiet environment, had only made Naoko's rapid breathing increasingly noticeable.

Although, because it was inconvenient to move, and trying not to overwhelm her with ecstasy, but with this level of intimacy, Lei Yin was very satisfied. When he lowered his head and appreciated her outstandingly beautiful appearance, he was then overwhelmed with passion as he seized this stunning beauty in his arms, as if he seized the god.

There were many words that can be used to describe women, such as beautiful, strong, weak and cute. But in Lei Yin's opinion, this couldn't be compared with "a woman who could infatuate anyone" this sentence is most suited to describe Naoko.

"Lei....." Along with her rapid wail, Naoko's whole body shook violently, then immediately after her whole body became stiff, curling up her perfect thigh and delicate calf. Her radiant white toes as well as her jade-like neck, became radiant. At the same time, Lei Yin felt that a warm heat slamming on his fingers.

After a while, Naoko's whole body was lying limp in his arms, constantly panting just like a patient who doesn't have air, and at the same time her body's skin turned rosy pink.

Gently rubbing his face with hers, he kissed her lips, trying to comfort her.

After her panting slightly slowed down, he whispered in her ear: “Did you like it?”

“Bad guy....” The mature beauty leaned on his chest, acting like a spoiled brat.

“Do you want to try again?”

“No, I’m afraid that someone will come. Wait for tonight when nobody’s around, okay?” Naoko pleaded.

“Rest assured, aside from Maeda, no one else knows I’m here.”

“But if the nurse comes in to help take your temperature, what do I do?” Naoko said in her final effort.

“My temperature had just been measured, so she won’t come again before the next meal.” Lei Yin didn’t need to do it, and had just wanted to tease her, and see how would she refuse him.

“But...but....” Naoko really didn’t want to do it in a place like this, as someone could come in at any moment.

At the same time, Lei Yin suddenly looked at the door.

“What’s wrong?” Naoko looked at him.

“Someone’s coming. I’ll let you go for the time being. Go tidy yourself in the bathroom.” Lei Yin kissed her, and let go of her.

Hearing the word “tidy”, Naoko blushed, and quickly went to the bathroom.

After a while, she really heard someone knocking at the door outside.

“Please come in.” It was the sound of Lei Yin’s voice.

She then heard someone opening the door, followed by the sounds of high heels hitting the floor.

After a while, a cool female voice sounded: “Hello, I’m the Battalion Adviser Kotoshi Eiko, it’s not the first time we met, but I wonder if Gennai Masashi still remembers me? Or should I call you schoolmate Gennai.”

Looking at her black skirt, and her calm expression, Lei Yin said lightly: “How can I help you?”

Without his consent, Eiko Kotoshi sat down on the chair. She then looked strangely at Lei Yin.

“If I hadn’t personally seen it, I couldn’t have believed that you actually fought that thing to a standstill. You and I are strangers, so I won’t make an excuse and tell you that I’ve come to visit you. I only have one goal; I want you to help me trace it.” The

policewoman straightforwardly said her intention.

“I think you’ve made a mistake, I’m only an ordinary student, and not a detective, moreover isn’t it the police’s responsibility to find criminals?”

“I believe that your stepfather had said my situation to you, just like he said, the top forbade me to continue pursuing this matter. If there was another way, I wouldn’t have come to see you.” The policewoman had a very serious expression.

“Since your superiors don’t want you to pursue this matter, it indicated that they have a method to solve the problem. So why don’t you just stay out of this? Also, why do you think that I’ll help you, because I fought that monster to a standstill? If it’s only this, I urge you, to seize that monster, it’s best to bring heavy weapons like machine guns, it’s really useful, rather than having an ordinary student contain that kind of monster, having a sniper behind that monster would give you a better chance.”

“I don’t want to answer your first question. And as to why I want you to help me, it’s not just because you have a monster-like strength, but because I know you have a close relationship with Sakurai of the Tokyo underworld organization. As far as I know, Sakurai, more than a year ago, had secretly sent someone to protect your family. Although I don’t know exactly what kind of relationship you and Sakurai possess, but one thing’s for sure, your relationship isn’t ordinary. You should also know that to pursue this matter, it would require a lot of manpower as well as intelligence network, and Sakurai meets this criterion.”

Sakurai was in charge with the business of the Black Dragon branch in Tokyo. This matter, besides the senior team in Black Dragon, the people that knew were absolutely not over three. Outside the organization, the only one that knew this was the Yamaguchi-gumi, a similar underworld organization. It seems that this woman, although did a very detailed investigation about him, but she still couldn't know his true identity.

“You're a policewoman, even if it's just teaming up with an underworld organization for an investigation, it would still become an scandal. Does this case really worth so much to you?” Lei Yin felt that this woman was insane.

“So you admit that you have a relationship with Sakurai?” The policewoman looked him in the eye.

“I didn't say that.” Lei Yin said with a shrug.

“Although the superiors are forbidding me to look into this matter, but they didn't forbid me to investigate about you and Sakura. In order to reduce your own trouble, I hope that you work well with me. I don't need you to do anything, I only want some useful information.”

“I'm sorry, I can't help you. If someday you have something dirty against me, at that time come and discuss with me, about the conditions again.” Lei Yin had no intention of being a Messiah.

“We'll meet again.” Eiko Kotoshi stood with cold feet.

“I won’t send you off.” Lei Yin said something behind her.

“Lei, is this really unimportant?” After Eiko had went out of the hospital ward, Naoko walked out from the bathroom.

“You want me to help her?”

“I didn’t mean that, it’s too dangerous, so you might get hurt again. I just thought that she is a little pitiful. You may not know, that night when you had lost so much blood and fainted, she was the one who sent you to the hospital.”

“I don’t have the slightest gratitude towards her, after all, she is the one who brought over that monster, and had almost gotten you hurt. But hearing you say that, I also thought that she seemed so persistent about this case.”

Naoko didn’t make a sound, but had instead leaned on his shoulder while looking at him.

—

Three days later, Lei Yin’s injury had mostly recovered already.

Fed up with the smell of disinfectant, he decided to leave the hospital earlier.

After a night of love making with Naoko at their house in

Shinagawa, he returned to school the next morning.

Outside the apartment he had rented, he saw Shiraishi Akira taking out the trash.

“You’re back?” Seeing Lei Yin, Shiraishi Akira simply said something.

“You didn’t live here while I was away, right?”

“Not me, just them.”

If the hygienic Shiraishi Akira wasn’t here, Lei Yin couldn’t imagine what the house would be like.

“I advise you not to go in.” Shiraishi Akira suddenly said something.

“Why? Did those guys invite a woman and made a mess in my house?” Thinking about the two’s playboy-like character, Lei Yin was convinced that this was likely the case.

“No, it’s just two bored men getting jealous, and wanting to cause trouble.”

Lei Yin was confused, and finally opened the door.

Chapter 149 - The Author Of The Love Letter

Although there has been a certain degree of heart preparation, seeing the apartment like a refugee camp, Lei Yin has a kind of horrible feeling.

Cigarette butts, beer bottles, snack bags, and instant noodles....all kinds of modern youth's unhealthy lifestyle representation. The entire living room was filled with the unpleasant smell of smoke and alcohol, and the TV also continued to show the game titles. The original creators of this misery, the evil pair Takeda and Yoshikawa were like tramps, lying down unconscious on the couch and on the floor.

Lei Yin felt sorry for Kazumi, who every now and then come to help him clean the house.

In order to assume the responsibility for bringing in the wolves into the house, Lei Yin has to clean up.

“Masashi, are you hurt?” Akira Shiraishi from the side found his left hand moved a bit, seemingly somewhat inconvenience.

“Minor matter only, it'll be fine in a few days. Has my sister came to see me these few days?”

“Heard from Takeda she seems to come once, but when she saw you're not here, she left.”

‘It seems I need to give her a phone call later, lest she worries.’ Previously in the hospital, he said on the phone that he would be out for a few days.

When the two men spoke, Yoshikawa and Takeda gradually awoke by the glare of light coming through the window.

“Masashi, you bastard.” After some confirmation, they have no doubt about the person, Takeda first jumped up and rushed at him with a roar.

“You didn’t brush the teeth, don’t come near me.” Lei Yin used the broom in his hand against his chest, not letting him get close.

“You heartless pervert, you don’t even spare your friend’s girlfriend, I’m going to kill you!” Takeda attempted to break through the police blockade like a mob, constantly trying to rush.

“You shut up, please brush your teeth first, okay? Your mouth stinks.” Lei Yin kept blocking the guy with the broom while holding his breath.

“Your eloquence is smelly, you bastard.” The angry youth behaved more and more like a mob.

Seeing the slowly crawled up like a zombie Yoshikawa, Lei Yin called out: “Yoshikawa, quickly hold your childhood sweetheart. This guy took the wrong medicine.”

“Masashi you bastard.”

How could this sentence seemed familiar? Seeing that he can't hold back Takeda any longer, plus Yoshikawa was coming at him like a mad dog, Lei Yin quickly retreated back to the door.

“Shiraishi, quickly come and help me stop them.” Single-handedly, Lei Yin was a bit difficult to simultaneously cope with the two thugs. Of course, if he were willing to use a heavy hand, that would be a different story.

“Sorry, I'm in the middle of something. I have long warned you, told you not to come in.” Akira Shiraishi had the I-told-you-so indifferent look.

“When did you warn me? Hey, the two of you restrain yourself a bit. I wasn't introduced to your bad breath first, so you use this as a pre-emptive strike.”

“Assh*le....” Have just woken up and with the corner of the eyes still have some discharge, they didn't see the danger in Lei Yin's eyes, still desperately trying to rush at him.

“The two can rest in peace.” Akira Shiraishi on the side put his palm together toward the two reckless guys.

“If there any last words, say it when you visit their graves.” Lei Yin flicked his right hand, the broom in his hand moved like a swimming dragon, stabbing the two angry youths.

“Ah...”

“Ouch...”

Two different styles of scream almost simultaneously sounded.

Just before they fell to the ground, the two rebellious youths remembered that the man in front of them was terrible, but it was too late.

“Reckless guys. Enough, now you can tell me exactly what happened?” Lei Yin threw away the broom and then lifted his feet to sit on the sofa watching them.

—

“Are you sure the author of that love letter is the so-called campus’ nascent beauty, Nari-em-muko?”

“It’s Narimura Haruko! You didn’t even know her name, I really don’t understand what she likes about you.” Yoshikawa has the look of someone having diarrhea.

“Maybe what she likes is this type of violent man, if I knew that I would have made my move earlier.” Takeda’s tone was like a juvenile delinquent.

“There can’t be such a thing, Narimura Haruko is not a masochistic girl.” Yoshikawa didn’t seem to have a certainty in his tone.

“Otherwise, how do you explain this? This guy in addition to his ability to fight, I don’t see any other point that will make girls like him.

“You two bastard shut up.” Being described as a man who beat his wife, Masashi finally unable to endure anymore.

Still feeling the ache from broom’s strike, the rebel duo immediately didn’t dare to make a sound, just looked at him with resentment.

“I don’t care what that woman wants, this father has no interest in that kind of pretty face. You satisfied now?”

“Do you mean it?” Yoshikawa at this moment was like a death row inmate that has just been acquitted, could hardly believe his ears.

Takeda was like a cat that was awakened by the sound of footsteps.

“But I have conditions.”

“What conditions?” Yoshikawa asked almost as soon as Lei Yin finished.

“You two assh*les immediately clean up this house. If you don’t clean until it becomes spotless before I get back, I will immediately call the woman for a meal, and then go to the hotel to book a room.” Lei Yin suddenly stood up and roared at the two bored youth who made the apartment looked like a refugee camp.

Although the words were so harsh and evil, the rebel duo actually heard as if those were gospels. No sooner had he finished, Yoshikawa picked up the broom on the floor and began to sweep, Takeda was stunned for a moment before hastened to pick up the garbage on the table.

“Let’s find something to eat. What are you looking at, I’m not talking to you, be serious.”

Being stared at the two hastily bowed their heads to continue cleaning.

After Lei Yin and Akira Shiraishi walked out of the apartment, Takeda said to Yoshikawa: “Hey, do you think that guy will keep his promise?”

“If he dares to lie to me, I will not let him off.” Yoshikawa a bit guiltily cried.

“No action talk only guy. Don’t forget that guy is a human weapon, if you want to deal with him, first write your will.”

“None of your business. By the way, why are you so nervous about this thing, don’t tell me you also have a liking for Narimura Haruko.” Yoshikawa suddenly remembered a problem.

“What’s with this nonsense, I already had a liking for that young girl. Although she can’t be compared to my sister, to be my girlfriend, however, that’s entirely possible.”

“You bast*rd, always try to snatch things away from me since you’re still a kid, this time, you even want to get your hands on your sister-in-law, you really are worse than animals.” Yoshikawa cursed.

“What sister-in-law, you’ve already given many flowers and gifts, but the other paid no attention to you, yet you still have the nerve to say this self-comforting words.” Takeda defiantly retorted.

“Shut up, you sister complex pervert.”

“You’re the pervert, you dare to say it again.”

“Do you think I’m afraid of you? You really are a sister complex pervert.”

“B*tch, I’m going to kill you!” The angry youths once again transformed into a mob, shouted out as they threw away the trash in their hands, rushing toward their childhood friends.

Finally, a low-level insult turned into a low-level melee, the

refugee camp also gradually upgraded into a concentration camp.

If Lei Yin were there, he would certainly regret allowing them to remain in the apartment.

At this time in the university cafeteria, Lei Yin and Akira Shiraishi encountered two people. One of them was the original source that led to the scuffle of the two childhood friends.

“Hello, student Gennai.” When the two people were eating, two female students suddenly arrived at their table and stood by their side.

Lei Yin raised his head, “Hello, what can I do for you?”

A sexy short skirted Narimura Haruko said with a smile: “I never thought that I could coincidentally meet with you here, so I want to come to student Gennai to say hello.”

Lei Yin briefly looked around and found many students were tightly watching them with various kinds of vision. If a class have these many focused eyes, the teacher would be moved to cry and shed bitter tears.

“If you don’t mind, please sit down and have a talk, okay?” In Lei Yin’s mind, two such beautiful girls standing around talking seem too noticeable.

Narimura Haruko smiled and sat down gracefully. While her

companion, after a bit of hesitation, also followed to sit down.

As they sat down, Lei Yin found no improvement to the situation, even becoming more serious. Several boys even want to rush at them.

A group of guys in heat. Lei Yin didn't bother them, in any case, no one will dare to come looking for him asking for a duel.

“Can I ask a question to student Gennai?” Narimura Haruko's voice was very clear, although the sound was not loud, could be clearly heard.

“What?” Lei Yin lifted the cup to drink some tea.

“Don't know how the result of this time you went back home for a blind date?”

Fortunately he responded in a timely manner and didn't spurt out the tea in his mouth.

“May I ask, who told you that I went home for a blind date?” Lei Yin put down the cup and asked.

“It's student Yoshikawa. He told me the reason why you missed the appointment was that you went home for a blind date. Isn't it?”

It really is the good deed of those two guys.

“Something like that.” Lei Yin casually replied.

“Then can you tell me the result?”

“I have no plan to get married so soon.”

“Then I’m relieved.” Narimura Haruko smiled.

Lei Yin didn’t make a noise, just quietly sized up the nascent beauty in front of him. And Narimura Haruko also didn’t speak, very graciously let him watched herself.

After a while, Lei Yin recovered his vision, and then casually lifted the cup to take a sip.

“Don’t know what student Gennai usually do to pass the time in the evening?” Narimura Haruko asked.

“I generally sleep relatively early.”

“I thought student Gennai would have a very colorful nightlife. In fact, I also have nothing to do at night, generally in the apartment just reading books, watching TV or the likes. To be honest, sometimes it’s kinda boring, like tonight.”

“Security is not very good at night in Tokyo, if it is all right, better to stay at home.” Lei Yin’s tone of voice was like the Discipline Director.

After a while, seeing Lei Yin didn’t seem to continue his words, Narimura Haruko had to continue to say: “I’ve heard recently there’s a film starring Haruka Suzuki, I wonder if student Gennai is interested to go and see.”

“Haruka Suzuki? Listen to her name she seems to be an actress, does she appear in a horror movie or science fiction? I’m sorry, I only watch horror or science fiction films.”

“Em, She only starred in romance....”

“Romance? Sorry, everytime I see artistic films I will fall asleep in the middle of the movie. Because I think the love that can occur within two hours is more like a one-night stand.”

“.....”

Akira Shiraishi looked at this nascent beauty with some sympathy. But the female companion of Narimura Haruko looked at Lei Yin as if she was watching a monster.

—

When she opened the door, Eiko Kotoshi saw her mother was watching TV with the guy called Yaetera.

“Eiko, you’ve come.” Sayaka Kotoshi said a sentence as her daughter changed her shoes on the porch.

“Eiko, good evening.” Yaetera, with a heavy Kansai accent that is very repugnant to the policewoman, said hello.

“I’ll go to my room, there’re some reports that I need to see.” With that, Eiko Kotoshi with indifferent expression walked to her room.

“I’m sorry, Eiko is having a lot of pressure because of work recently.” Sayaka Kotoshi apologetically said.

“It’s okay, I know that she still can’t accept me. Don’t worry, I believe after spending some period of time, she would accept me.” Yaetera said with confidence.

Sayaka Kotoshi smiled and nodded, and then secretly sighed, thinking.

‘Unless she is informed of her father’s death, Eiko will never accept anyone who might become her father.’

After arriving at her room, Eiko readily threw her briefcase on the bed and turned on the computer.

Taking advantage of the loading time, she took out the files from

her briefcase.

A moment later, she was suddenly filled with a sense of boredom. Can't bear to look anymore, she put down the reports in her hand.

Although the room have an excellent sound insulation, she seemed to be able to clearly hear the man outside with the nasty Kansai accent shouting words.

She really can't understand how a woman with 30 years old look and good figure like her mother would fancy a man like him.

She no longer wanted to lie down, walked to the front of the computer and sat down.

After she opened the mailbox and didn't see any new email, she can't help but feel depressed. It seemed her several informers haven't obtained any useful information.

Even so, she did not give up.

Ever since she saw that monster, she knew the few dark and hard to read paragraphs that her father wrote in his diary, actually has a very deep meaning.

She felt that the mysterious disappearance of her father years ago must have a connection with this case.

In any case, she must press ahead. Unfortunately, the available manpower that she had right now have too little information.

Thinking of this, a youth named Gennai Masashi suddenly appeared in her mind.

Bastard!

Chapter 150 - Honored Visitor

Economic Theory class, middle aged teacher Fujita sputtered to speak about Japanese economic development history. But few listened to him, many students were sleeping or chatting in low voices, some even ate snacks and played GameBoy as it was in the high school. In this situation, it's hard to believe such a scene could occur on an elite campus like Teikyo University.

Perhaps this has something to do with the listener being a first-year student, completely without a sense of crisis. Moreover, the teacher gave the students a dull lecture; that's the other reason. Even so, the absentees are few, because this is a required course in Economic discipline. For the average college student, this course credit is everything.

“In the analysis of the early postwar Keynesian macroeconomic theory in Japan, of the implication on Japan macroeconomic policy, the role of the renowned economist Shigeto Tsuru should not be overlooked. Shigeto Tsuru is beyond just an economist, during his academic visit to the United States, he concentrated on studying Keynes ‘General Theory’ and macroeconomic theory, and often get together with US famous scholar Samuel and others for discussion and consultation. In the early postwar period, he served as Vice Chairman of the Committee on economic stability. In 1947, Shigeto Tsuru presided over Japan's first white paper on ‘Economic Reality Report,’ the use of Keynesian macroeconomics theoretical analysis of the economic situation of Japan, and put forward relevant macroeconomics policies. This theoretical framework of economic white paper has a significant impact on the establishment and formation of Japan's macroeconomic.

But after the seventies and eighties, China and United States formed a long-term friendly diplomatic relation. Both in terms of economic theory or substantial economic cooperation, there have been considerable development and benefits.”

Hearing the deep sense of reverence from teacher Fujita, Lei Yin removed his gaze from the novel in his hand and then sneered.

When Japan experienced the bubble economy, the US said it was because the Japanese Bank management system has a problem. The Bank of Japan, in particular, is fond of making forged account, this was very serious, and only by learning from the US can Japan get out of this trouble.

While Japan local economists said Japan's economic bubble is due to Japan adopting financial policies based on John Maynard Keynes; the money supply is too large while the bank rate was too low. However, Japan after the fifties has always been implementing financial expansion policies; just when the situation was particularly bad it shrunk a bit, but it never emerges from the 90's severe recession situation. After the collapse of the bubble economy, Japan has also imposed financial contraction policy, but still having no positive result.

Others said that the reason why Japan's bubble economy happened is that the United States forced the appreciation of the yen. Although these words are not entirely right, it is said that it is one of the major causes. As the result of the 1985 “Plaza Accord”, the yen appreciated, which fundamentally undermine Japan's economic competitiveness, thereby leading to the bubble economy. After The Plaza Accord was signed, the yen appreciated sharply,

the imported product prices dropped significantly, leading to Japan Consumer Index sharply fell, and the Japanese enterprises suffered great difficulties. In order to get out from this problem, the Ministry of Finance started to implement expansionary financial policies, for several years in succession the annual growth of currency circulation was more than 10 percent, while significantly reducing the bank rate. This stimulated the growth of exports. However, the growth of exports did not bring a new growth cycle. The Japanese found that, in the situation of the large appreciation of yen, the foreign trade was tired, the profit is far less than before. But the people have accumulated a large amount of currency. They later gradually found that stocks and real estate are the two places that are good to add the value of their money, so they desperately invested their money into it. Later, all financial institutions were green with envy and began to break the rules by giving excessive loans and credit expansion. This is what the US said "Institutional Issues."

Regarding this forced appreciation of the yen, to a large extent it did cause the Japan to have the bubble economy, making the Japanese seriously deteriorate to the state of "Friendly Neighbors", and the so-called economists who tightly clung to the textbook now sounded their eulogy.

In this sleepy atmosphere, the classroom door was suddenly being gently pushed open. Then, two graceful figures quietly walked in.

A male student who was sleeping soundly was hit awake, when he was very unhappy to look for the bastard woke him up, he suddenly saw the beautiful face of Narimura Haruko. At that moment, he thought his whole body was electrocuted.

“Please let me pass.” That completely-not-inferior-to-idol pretty girl whispered some words.

There was some time before the male student reacted; He immediately stood up like a javelin, but because he used too much force, the chair was almost knocked over.

The following noise attracted the few gossipy students to turn back to take a look.

“I’m not seeing wrong right, isn’t that Narimura Haruko? How come she’s here?”

“That’s really Narimura Haruko. Even Taomori Junko is here.”

“Why is Narimura Haruko here, isn’t she in the Literary Department.”

For a time, this was the topic that the students who saw Narimura Haruko were talking about.

The dull economic theory became ever more lively, but unfortunately, the attention of the students lies on the one sitting in the last row Narimura Haruko, rather than the wizened old man standing in front of the podium.

“Student Gennai, we meet again.” After sitting next to Lei Yin,

Narimura Haruko said with a smile.

“I never thought student Narimura is also interested in Economics.”

“Does student Gennai really think I came here in order to listen to the lecture?” Narimura Haruko asked.

“Isn’t it?”

Narimura Haruko didn’t speak, just looked at him strangely.

All the students were looking with envious eyes toward Lei Yin who leisurely sat next to Narimura Haruko.

Based on Masashi’s horror reputation, in the eyes of everyone, those two sitting together are the modern example of Beauty and the Beast.

Aware that he has nothing to say to the beauty, Lei Yin patted the sleeping like a dead hog on his right side Takeda.

“The class is over?” Takeda awoke and gave a knee-jerk response.

“Look who’s here?” Lei Yin turned his head to the left.

“It’s, it’s Narimura Haruko. He, hello, my name is Takeda

Hidetoshi.” This rebellious youth acted like he is a kindergarten kid.

“Do you want to swap places with me?” Lei Yin turned his head back to him.

“What did you say?”

“Want to change places with me?”

“Is it true? Yes, good, good.” At this time in Takeda’s eyes, Lei Yin’s body exuded a sage-like light.

“Idiot, continue your greeting first then you can thank me later.”

“Does student Gennai really hates me?” Seeing Lei Yin stood up prepared to change places with Takeda, Narimura Haruko’s face became cold as frost.

“Please don’t get me wrong, I just thought student Takeda is more suitable to talk to student Narimura. I did this to prevent you from being bored.”

If not for fear Narimura Haruko would suspect the two of them were gay, Takeda would certainly hold this fellow and madly kiss him.

After five minutes, the classroom gradually restored to the

original quiet atmosphere, but many students still looked back from time to time.

“Haruko, can I call you like this? Good, since you do not mind, later on, I’ll call you like this. I know a nice restaurant, let’s go there for dinner tonight?”

“Sorry, I have no free time tonight.”

“No problem, let’s do it tomorrow night.”

“I won’t be free tomorrow.”

“So, you’re free after that, good then, I’ll pick you up at the appointed time. I wish I could see your look when you wear a short skirt, are you going to wear it?”

“Student Takeda....”

“Haruko you are too kind, just call me handsome. That’s what my family members call me.”

Others said he has no advantages, but Takeda was born cheeky. He continued to do his best to lure Narimura Haruko into talking, even though the other clearly showed the lack of interest.

Narimura Haruko’s companion Taomori Junko curiously looked at the “human weapon” sitting next to Takeda, who was leisurely

reading the novel.

Publicly satirizing the history teacher, and then single-handedly duel with four martial arts communities. If she didn't see it for herself, she would never believe this ordinary looking boy could do such unimaginable things.

But more importantly, she never saw any boy that can be so indifferent toward the campus belle Haruko.

He is also different than those boys who pretend to be cool to attract Haruko's attention; his indifferent attitude is definitely not fake.

Then she suddenly remembered some of the girls' private evaluation of this guy: An aloof eagle.

Lei Yin didn't know that in addition to being regarded as a humanoid monster by the boys, he was also regarded as a bird by the female students.

—

“Masashi, let's go look for a restaurant outside campus to eat. Occasionally there should be a change of taste.” Takeda suggested.

“Okay, I'll call Yoshikawa and the others over.” Lei Yin took out his mobile phone.

“Don’t call Yoshikawa.” Takeda loudly cried.

Taking a glance at Narimura Haruko, Lei Yin smiled. ‘So this guy wants to do something in secret.’

‘Very well, lest this two guys fight with each other because of Narimura Haruko at the appointed time.’

When he was about to put his phone down, it suddenly rang.

“What happened, Yoshikawa?” Lei Yin looked a bit funny at the nervously watching Takeda beside him.

After taking the phone, Lei Yin said to Takeda: “It seems there’s no other way, that guy is in a hurry to find me. Why don’t you go by yourself.”

“Forget it, just let him come,” Takeda said in frustration. He was not confidence to go meet with Narimura Haruko alone without Masashi, after all, she agreed to come because she is attracted to Masashi.

Five minutes later, Yoshikawa and Akira Shiraishi arrived. But they didn’t come alone, there were also two girls with them.

Seeing those two girls, Lei Yin was completely surprised. He did not expect to see them here.

Seeing Lei Yin, a girl in a blue dress immediately rushed over.

“You....”

But before he could finish, the woman suddenly threw her handbag at him.

“Hei....” Lei Yin immediately blocked with his right hand.

“Bastard! You didn’t tell me you’ve come, let me worry for so long. I will not forgive you.” After the failure of the handbag attack, the girl immediately punched him in the face.

“Hey, listen to me.” Lei Yin dodged sideways to avoid being labeled as Panda’s eye.

“You even dare to dodge, go to hell.” That girl rushed at him like a bull.

“Hey, let’s stop this, okay? We can slowly talk things over; you can’t catch me.” Lei Yin said while running.

“You let me hit you first, and then we’ll talk, otherwise don’t even think about running away.” After catching her breath, Kurata Ryoko loudly said.

“First, let’s come to an agreement, then you can hit.” Lei Yin

thought he has no other way, so he had to talk about the conditions with her.

“Quickly come here!”

Lei Yin wryly smiled, he was actually reduced to take the initiative to let other people beat him.

When Lei Yin came forward, Kurata Ryoko suddenly hugged him.

“You bastard, you actually use your teeth to bite.” After being hugged by her, Lei Yin suddenly yelled.

“This is just the interest, I’ll slowly deal the rest with you later.” Kurata Ryoko smiled smugly like a door to door debt collector.

When the two returned back to the front of the crowd, all of them looked at the duo as if they were ghosts.

It seemed they were scared to shed out cold sweat looking at the two cousins reunion scene.

“Em, Masashi, is she your girlfriend?” Takeda managed to say some words.

“Please don’t say such terrible words. She is my cousin, Kurata Ryoko.” Lei Yin rubbed his bitten shoulder as he introduced.

“I’m sorry to scare you guys just now. Because this guy quietly disappeared more than a year ago, I was worried about him. But after he came back, he didn’t even give me a single phone call, making me worry for so long. Therefore, when we met, inevitably I became a bit excited.” Kurata Ryoko said with a smile.

‘This is called a bit excited?’ Lei Yin thought.

“Hey, how’d you get here?” Lei Yin asked.

“You still dare to ask me that, were it not for a few days ago I gave aunt a call, I wouldn’t know that you have returned. D*mn you, you didn’t even give me a call, do you still consider me as your cousin?” Kurata Ryoko became more and more testy, and can’t help but raise her foot to kick him.

Takeda’s eyes almost fell out. This was the first time he saw a girl in a short skirt dares to raise her foot to kick.

“I’ve thought about giving you a call, but you’ve changed your phone number, what can I do then?”

“Why don’t you call my home to ask?”

“I forgot.” Lei Yin replied very honestly.

“Bastard, you even forgot such a thing.”

“Hey, aren’t you tired yet? Let’s go find something to eat. Even if you’re not hungry, I am hungry.” Lei Yin has no intention to continue this without nutrition dialogue.

“I’ll let you go this time. Hurry up.” After a series of futile endeavor, Kurata Ryoko also felt a bit hungry.

“As you can see, if you guys don’t want to get beaten, let’s get out of here.” Lei Yin said to the other people.

Chapter 151 - The Diary

“Hi, I’m looking for Professor Amuro, where is he right now?” Eiko Kotoshi, in a white dress, said to the staff at the reception.

“Please wait a moment, I’ll enquire for you.” The young receptionist said very politely.

“Thank you.”

As she was nationally recognized as a policewoman, who had graduated from The University of Tokyo which is regarded as the the highest institution in Japan.

Tokyo University’s predecessor, the Tokyo Kaisei Academy and the Tokyo Medical school, was founded during the Meiji era. Tracing farther back, in the early Bakufu period, [Dutch Studies] mechanism, [Method of Astronomy], a proper leveled Osaka Academic Prefecture, and the development of planting culture were established. During the initial period of the Meiji Restoration, the Japanese government announced a ‘a new educational command system’ opening the gateway to the European and American studies, in 1877 according to what the Ministry of Education had instructed, the two schools merged to become Tokyo University. At that time, the amount of students enrolled were more than 500 people, in a university which only had 4 faculties which were literature, law, science, and medicine. The Ministry in charge of the Tokyo Law school soon concurrently merged into this school, which was under the French Education Ministry. In 1886, the Meiji government because of national need made the ‘Imperial University System’, and had made Tokyo

University as one of the Imperial Universities. Which was divided into separate fields such as Business, Engineering, agricultural, and one after another the engineering field and agricultural field had also become part of the Imperial Universities. Several education ministries also become part of it such as; Hosei University, Medical College, Liberal Arts University and Science University respectively; and began to set a graduate program, becoming a real University. After World War II, the Japanese Government changed the unreasonable system by removing the Imperial Universities, and restoring Tokyo University to its former state. After the restructuring of Tokyo University, there was established a new foundational faculty, the faculty of Education, the medical field which was a part of the Tokyo Imperial University, the Tokyo High school and had also incorporated many old and new faculties, establishing a huge number of research centers. Today, the Tokyo University has 11 graduate schools, 12 research institutes, and tens of thousands of students and staff in the University.

Having such a long history and being famous worldwide, Eiko Kotoshi, compared to most people, has a special feeling towards this place. Because this was the place where her father used to work.

After five minutes, the receptionist returned to the reception room.

“Miss Eiko, Professor Amuro is in his office at the biological research institute, I’ll lead you there.

“No need, I’ll do it myself, I’ve been there before.” The policewoman stood up.

“In that case, please take care. If there’s anything you need please feel free to contact me.” The receptionist’s tone was a bit that of a waiter working at a restaurant. Being unable to walk together with the beautiful woman, he was genuinely disappointed.

“Thank you.” The policewoman said, stepping out of the reception room.

Really attractive, stature is also pretty good, what a pity that she is a bit cold. Looking at her back getting further away, the receptionist made an appraisal at heart.

Arriving at the entrance of the research institute, the policewoman suddenly found herself lost. Compared to several years ago, there wasn’t too big of a change towards the surrounding of the research institute, just that it had made a layer of renovation outside. Moreover, many flowers were planted in blue rock on both sides of the road, but the most noticeable change was the tree standing erect at the roadside, which looked bigger and more luxuriant than the one several years ago.

Still remembering about the last time she had come, when she was still a high-school student. But ever since her father had gone missing, she had never visited this place again.

After asking the attendant in the building where Professor Amuro was, Eiko Kotoshi walked over to where it was.

After obtaining permission to the room, Eiko Kotoshi opened the

door to the office.

“Eiko, I didn’t think you would really come here to look for me, please quickly sit down .” In the peaceful room, a person with half of his hair that had gone white, greeting her very happily after seeing the child of his old friend,.

“It has been a very long time, Uncle Amuro, how have you been recently?”

“I’m still getting by. I’m old already, so my body couldn’t avoid getting a few minor problems. How’s your mom doing?”

“She’s very good.” Eiko Kotoshi omitted the rude man who was together with her mother.

“Since high school, I haven’t seen you and your mother. Still I didn’t think that you’d grow more beautiful, do you have a boyfriend right now? If not, I’ll introduce you to my son, how about it? He has at least graduated with a master’s degree; he should be worthy of you.” Akito Amuro said with a smile.

Eiko Kotoshi didn’t have any intention of talking about the matter of her marriage, so she interrupted him and said, “Uncle Amuro, this time I’ve come here to ask you something.”

Seeing her serious expression, Akito Amuro put away his smile, “tell me, what’s the matter?”

“I would like to ask, before my father disappearance, was there anyone who was fairly close with him?” Eiko Kotoshi asked directly.

Akito Amuro bitterly smiled, “the question you’ve asked, the police had also asked me. But to be honest, I don’t really know, because I was studying abroad at the time.”

“If I may, aside from Uncle Amuro, my father never went out with any of his fairly close friends. I believe you know why I’ve become a police officer, and more than half of the reason is because of my father. After so many years, I think I’ve finally found a clue, so I looked for Uncle Amuro to confirm it.”

“What clue?” Akito Amuro asked a bit surprised.

Eiko Kotoshi didn’t immediately reply, but instead took out a small yellow book, turning to the last few pages of the book.

“Uncle, my father had the habit of writing a diary, this is one of the diaries he left behind. When I was packing his thing six months ago, I’ve stumbled upon it. And in the last pages of his diary, I am very much confused about what he wrote.” Eiko Kotoshi gave Akito Amuro the diary.

Taking the diary, Akito Amuro found out that it really was her former friend’s handwriting. Being apart from him for so many years, and having finally able to see the writing of his good friend once more, he was assailed.

After a pause, he carefully read the contents of the diary. Only a few words were written:

He came to me, and this time he made a generous offer.

To be honest, I'm really starting to get moved. But not because of the pay he offered, but because of the sample he brought.

The thing he specially brought over to me, is definitely not from an obsessed man only thinking about money. Moreover, it appears that there were even more brilliant people behind him. Perhaps his peers, is what my instincts told me.

Akito Amuro turned over to the second page, only to see one sentence:

Maybe I should have complied to him, I'm starting to regret it now.

Turning over to the third page, Akito Amuro suddenly discovered that the dates written above the two pages were unexpectedly separated by nearly three months. But the above handwriting was much clear than the previous page.

As a human being, I can't do it, it's just too cruel. But as a scientist who pursues the truth, I absolutely can't suppress this desire.

It is also said that the human desire is the devil itself, and if you

accidentally take this demon out, it will eat your soul away. I thought I was going to be devoured by this demon.

Turning to the next page, the date all of a sudden jumped over half a month, but the handwriting was even more illegible. As if it was written by a drunk man.

Today, the 3rd to 5th experimental bodies appear to have changed with that of a beast's. But they seemed to have lost their mind, as I was even almost bitten by the experiment No.5. In this stage, the experiment was successful. But, what have I actually become? I have lost the conscience of what humans should have. Perhaps, at the same time I was swallowed by the devil, I had also turned into a devil too.

I haven't gone home for a long time, because I'm afraid to see Sayaka and Eiko. They might not know that standing before them, is only a demon dressed in human skin.

When Akito Amuro turned the page, he found that the diary had come to an end.

After getting back his composure, Akito Amuro thought for a moment and asked: "This diary, have you handed it over to the police?"

"Uncle Amuro, did you forget? I myself am a police. In accordance with the normal procedures, in the case that no bodies are found, it would only be a missing case, and will not be appointed more staffs to search. But as he is my father, I have to

find out the truth.” Eiko Kotoshi revealed an unquestionable resoluteness in her eyes.

“But can this diary alone prove anything? It has, after all, been 8 years already.” Akito Amuro sighed.

“Uncle Amuro, please carefully recall, several months before my father went missing, has he ever mentioned about anyone to you?” Eiko Kotoshi was going to talk about meeting that monster, but thinking that it was the police’s internal secrets, she had to hold it back.

Hearing her question, Amuro lowered his head trying to recall his memories.

Eiko Kotoshi had a complicated look as she closed the diary.

Her father after graduating from Tokyo University, stayed to work in this institute.

He was an introverted person, and at the age of 30, her parents met in a blind date arranged by their mothers. And after a short few months of dating, they got married, and then the following year she was born.

A few years later, after his father published several papers on his biological research, he suddenly became a well-known biologist. Afterwards, according to him, he also thought that it was inconceivable. But at that time Eiko Kotoshi had thought that it

was natural that it had happened. Because she personally saw her father earnestly doing his job. Sometimes she felt more like he was a religious fanatic, but instead of believing in god, he believed in biology.

Although he was not a good husband, or a good father, but for them he was the best person alive.

She would never forget her father waiting for her at school, often rubbing his hands standing in the cold outside.

While in her second year of high school, there was a time that her father suddenly became strange. This good honest man in the eyes of outsiders, became a person who frequently did an all-nighter, moreover he, who in the past didn't smoke nor drink, came back home covered with alcohol each time.

Her mother who began to suspect that he was seeing a different woman outside, but she was sure that her father would never do that. But seeing her father become like this, she became increasingly worried.

Later, something unexpected happened and fearing that something might happen to his family: Her father went missing.

The police had investigated for several days, but he has yet to come back. This made her exceedingly furious.

She thought that even if it was just once in a while, her father

would still come back. But after waiting for him for 8 years, he didn't come back.

Now, after reading her father's diaries as well as seeing that monster with her own eyes, she finally found a small clue.

She had mixed feelings, she wanted to continue , hoping to find her missing father, but was also afraid that the monster had something to do with her father.

“Eiko, I suddenly remembered something, I don't know if it would help you thought.” Akito Amuro suddenly looked up and said.

“What happened uncle?” Eiko Kotoshi quickly asked.

“I remember the day as I prepared to go abroad to study, your father sent me to the airport. Just before I had to go on the plan, he suddenly received a phone call. Although I didn't listen to their conversation, but I vaguely heard him on the phone saying [Is this Goyama-san?], If I haven't remembered incorrectly, that should be the person's name. Because before your father bid farewell, they talked very briefly on the phone.”

Goyama? That name seems to be very rare, it seems like I'll have to go to the police department's personnel file system, and check. Thinking of this, Eiko Kotoshi continued to ask: “In that period of time, did you seen anyone who walking towards father?”

“I think there wasn’t anyone who did. But I remember that for some time his temperament had suddenly become fierce. Once, when an intern had accidentally poured tea on his desk, he shouted at him. I’ve never seen him like that, his temper was good, and he never cursed at other over such trifle matters.”

Eiko Kotoshi thought for a moment, then bowed and said, “Thank you, uncle. I’m sorry for disturbing you so much of your time.”

“No need to be polite, I watched you grow up, so it’s natural for me to do so. Right, the matter I’ve talked to you about my son, are you interested in meeting him?” Akito Amuro didn’t lose heart and said.

“Sorry, before I get any good news about my father, I don’t plan on considering this matter. Uncle Amuro, if you remember anything else, please call me as soon as possible.”

“Okay.” Under the bright room, Akito Amuro had a look of disappointment.

Saying goodbye to Akito Amuro, Eiko Kotoshi immediately went out of the research institute.

—

“Masashi, you....bastard, I was worried about you for so long. Damn guy....” Kurata Ryoko was still hammering away.

“Masashi, now what?” Seeing Kurata Ryoko covered with alcohol, Yamaguchi had a confused look.

“First look for a nearby hotel for her to stay in, then will wait for this fellow to sober up, and talk again tomorrow. Sometimes I really suspect if this fellow really is a woman, she could actually drink more fiercely than men.” Lei Yin said with a headache. Then supporting Kurata Ryoko who couldn’t stand up, he went out to search for a hotel.

Following behind was Yamaguchi Tomoko, who was laughing, “Seems like she’s really happy to see you again. After knowing that you were missing, I knew that she was very worried about you. She just refused to talk about it.”

Lei Yin was a little touched, he came to learn that in addition to Naoko who was now a part of his family, there were also other people who cared about him.

“Masashi, that beautiful girl Narimura Haruko, is she your girlfriend?” Yamaguchi Tomoko asked while walking.

“No.”

“But looking at her, she seems to care a lot about you. When you two were eating, she just kept looking at you every time.”

“That means nothing. Maybe she just wants to ask me for help,

after all, she's always surrounded by two perverts all the time."

Thinking about Takeda and Yoshikawa who were both filled with jealousy, Yamaguchi Tomoko couldn't help but laugh.

On the other hand, at the same time, after the two were described as a pervert, Narimura Haruko who was now sitting in a luxurious car, came to pick her friend Taomori Junko, who was also sitting with her,.

After they had gotten inside, Narimura Haruko put on a serious look, not making a single noise. Seeing this expression, Taomori Junko didn't dare say anything.

After the car drove for nearly ten minutes, Taomori Junko finally couldn't bear it anymore and in a low voice said: "Haruko, I think it would be best if you don't continue."

Narimura Haruko coldly looked at her, and then said: "You mean to say, I'll lose?"

"I didn't mean that, I'm just saying that Gennai-san isn't worth doing all of this." Taomori Junko carefully organized her words.

Hearing her words, Narimura Haruko's face eased a little bit.

"It isn't about what his worth, just that I don't want to lose to that woman Ji Zi. In any case, I will make that Gennai Masashi listen to my words like a dog."

“But that fellow looks troublesome, I think he’s probably a little different from all those male students before.” Taomori Junko said a little worried.

“Well, in my opinion, him being different from the other boys, is just only part of an act, and in the end he will become obedient to me.” While that was what her mouth was saying, but if she could choose, she would rather change with Ji Zi, as this Gennai Masashi was indeed much more troublesome than she had ever imagined.

If it was the other boys, not to say inviting her to dinner or seeing a movie, just talking to her would make them feel helpless, making her pestered just like those two sexual harassers. But in the eyes of that fellow, she actually couldn’t see any eagerness when he saw her, which made her lose confidence about her appearance for the first time.

I don’t know how things are with Ji Zi? Hopefully compared to that student council president who only has looks, would not be able to easily catch him, otherwise I really will lose to that woman. This was the result she least wanted to see.

Narimura Haruko looked outside the window in a trance.

Taomori Junko repeatedly tried to persuade her, but without any better option she sighed. Sometime she just couldn’t understand why they were so keen on this so-called game between the two rich princess.

Perhaps princesses from wealthy families really does think differently from ordinary people. Taomori Junko explained to herself.

Chapter 152 - Invitation

“Hey, would you two hurry up already?” Yoshikawa called out from the side.

“Please pay attention to your words, I would have been ready, if it weren’t for someone still trying to decide what to wear.” Lei Yin corrected him.

“Okay, long-winded fellow.” Takeda turned away from the mirror.

“Masashi, what do you think about this suit, does it look too old? I still think the one with the light color is better compared to this one.” Takeda wasn’t satisfied with the suit he was wearing.

“Even if you don’t wear anything no one would care. Hurry up, or else we’ll be late.” Yoshikawa looked at his watched, and urged again.

“You guys always have ill intentions, it’s only natural that you want me to make a fool of myself in front of Haruko.” Takeda exclaimed pointing at him.

“Whatever you think, but since you still don’t want to go, then I’ll go first.” With that, Yoshikawa turned around and walked out of the apartment.

“Yoshikawa you bastard, I won’t let you get away, Masashi let’s

go quickly.” Takeda was ashamed, and sped up like a soldier turning off the apartment lights, running right behind his friend.

Just the other day, Narimura Haruko had suddenly invited Lei Yin to the birthday dinner party, that her father held in celebration of his friend.

Lei Yin didn't want to take part in such a boring party, but since the rebellious duo was there, the two immediately held him down regardless of the danger they were in. Then after much shameless haggling, the two finally had finally haggled two extra tickets to the dinner party, and had assumed the great responsibility of bringing Masashi to the party.

Later, after they had gone back, the rebellious duo took turns pleading Lei Yin, he finally couldn't stand it, and had promised to go with them to the dinner party.

In order to impress Narimura Haruko at the dinner party, the rebellious duo was intensely making preparations.

The dinner party was held at the prestigious Keio hotel in Shinjuku.

When the three got there, they saw the parking outside was full with all kinds of cars.

“What kind of person is that birthday guy, to be able to unexpectedly have this many rich people come, and celebrate with

him?” Takeda said a little amazed.

Although Yoshikawa thought that the cars were good, but parking so many cars here, he felt like someone would steal it after they abandon it at the parking lot.

After looking at the three's invitation, the personnel responsible for the reception immediately invited them to go inside.

Inside there were several huge crystal chandeliers, and at a first glance, all these men dressed in formal dress were all with a woman, some were talking in a group, while others were walking around slowly. On the east side of the hall, there was a long rectangular table, as long as the hall, waiters were constantly walking back and forth placing all kinds of food on top of it.

Transparent wine glasses, silver cutlery, ladies filled with expensive jewelry and so on, were radiating a blinding light.

All of this gave off a film-like feeling.

Of course, only ordinary people would have such a feeling coming to this sort of place, but to those rich men coming from the upper circle of society, who frequently went to socials, this was only a very normal social activity.

Although in recent years there was a downturn in the Japanese economy, but it didn't seem like it had any impact on these rich fellows. The amount of money to have a banquet at this place,

would be enough to feed a large number of hungry people in Somalia.

Not long after Lei Yin was admitted, Narimura Haruko who was wearing a white dress walked over.

“You finally came.” Narimura Haruko said to Lei Yin in a low voice, as if they’ve surpassed the boundaries of being ordinary friends.

“Haruko, tonight you look quite amazing. Certainly, I didn’t mean that you are usually unattractive, but just that tonight you look especially attractive.” Without waiting for Lei Yin to reply, Yoshikawa was the first to open his mouth.

”Thanks.”

“You look really beautiful tonight.” According to the lessons he learned about love, in the book called [Encyclopedia of Courtship], Takeda at this time had deliberately said something in a deep voice.

“Thank you.” Narimura Haruko just like before, replied very politely.

When an outstandingly beautiful woman splendidly dress up, her attractiveness could exponentially increase.

Dressed in an elegant white gown, her body's proportions were revealed. Although it wasn't the suicide bomber type of beauty, but her figure was still full of curves giving off a sort of reverie.

On her neck was a diamond shaped pendant, reflecting off light, giving a bright luster. Her beautiful black long hair was specially set up, looking like a young girl mixed with the flavor of a mature woman.

Seeing that figure, they were immediately enchanted by her, which made Narimura Haruko very satisfied. Looking at Lei Yin at the other side, she actually discovered that he wasn't looking at her, but was instead silently observing the hall.

This discovery had made Narimura Haruko surge in an intense anger.

In order to give a strong visual impact to this hick, who had never seen the upper class social life, she had spent a much longer time than usual to dress up. Her efforts weren't in vain, as when she walked outside the venue in addition to the people at the same level as her parents, she saw that all men were looking at her who couldn't wait to swallow her with their eyes, including the two perverts in front of her.

But he still treated her as if she was nothing.

This wasn't just a bet with Ji Zi, but also her dignity in question. At this moment she pledged that she would do anything just to

make this man to be death set on her just like a dog.

“You haven’t eaten yet, right? Just wait a minute, when the ball starts, you’ll be able to get something to eat.” After recomposing herself, Narimura Haruko smiled more sweetly.

“In fact, I’m not hungry, I only want to talk to you.” Yoshikawa was indeed a long time veteran in terms of love, as he soon responded like a professional playboy.

Narimura Haruko sighed at heart, it would be nice if the target was Yoshikawa or Takeda. I don’t even have to be passive to get them.

As they continued to talk, three people came up to them. Two of them were young man wearing a suit, while another was a stylish beauty.

“Haruko, I was just looking for you, so you were here.” A tall, straight young man was the first to speak.

“I’m sorry, my college friends came, so I had to go and greet them.” Narimura Haruko said with a smile.

“The three of them, which one’s your boyfriend?” Just as Takeda was looking at the three of them, the woman who was tightly holding the young man’s arm asked with a smile.

“No need to guess, they’re all my good friends.” With that, she

deliberately looked at Masashi with a hint of bitterness.

“Haruko, why don’t you tell us about your classmates?” At the same time the other young man who had a long hair that reached his shoulder spoke, the three of them were carefully observing Takeda.

After a brief introduction, the young man with the long hair said: “Seeing that Haruko is together with some boys, I thought you already had a boyfriend, it really threw me off. Don’t forget what I told you before, if you want a boyfriend just think about me first.”

“Narita, you’re talking nonsense. Careful, your girlfriend might find out about this afterwards.”

“When did I have any girlfriends? Even if there were, if you’re willing to be my girlfriend, I’ll dump them right away.”

“Them? So you’re saying you have more than one? Narita, you’re so unfaithful, how would you make Haruko feel reassured being with you?” The beautiful woman who has been holding the tall young man’s arm, Ryotani Reimi interrupted to say.

“I’m sorry, I spilled the beans.”

Seeing the several of them were talking and laughing merrily, Takeda and Yoshikawa since the beginning couldn’t interrupt their conversation, and could only smile as they watched them at the side.

Takeda's face muscle began to stiffen a little, he then turned his head to look at Lei Yin, only to discovered that he was leisurely drinking red wine, as if nobody was around. Takeda couldn't help but get angry and at the same time find it funny, but also felt a little envious of him.

Besides the tall youth Awamaru Akimasa, the other young people were all college students. But even so, it was all right as in the business world nothing was accidental nor casual. Although they hadn't officially inherited their family's business, but whether it was intentional or not, they chose to help their business by creating relationships with other people.

Although they were aware of this fact, Yoshikawa and Takeda still felt very depressed. Yoshikawa especially hated the man named Narita, as he could see clearly that Narimura Haruko was interested, and seem to have a good impression of him.

In the bathroom, after washing her hand, Ryotani Reimi said to Narimura Haruko who was putting her make up on: "So which one of them is Gennai Masashi, the object of your bet with Ji Zi this time?"

Narimura Haruko was a little surprised, putting down her makeup box, she looked at her and said, "How do you know about the bet? I know, it must be Ji Zi who told you."

Ryotani Reimi didn't deny it "You and Ji Zi are in college now, but you two are actually still having childish fights. But to also

make a bet in this way, you might want to be careful, you might be playing with fire.”

“You’re her cousin, of course you’ll help her.” Narimura Haruko a bit unhappily said.

“I don’t favour anyone, but I’m only going to tell you this. That guy seems hard to deal with.”

“Why do you say that?”

“It’s just my hunch, but he’s the type of man that’s difficult to grasp, and just as we were talking, he didn’t even listen to us.”

“That fellows just putting on airs.” Narimura Haruko said a little bit angrily.

Ryotani Reimi shook her head saying: “I forgot to tell you, Ji Zi will come tonight.”

“What? Didn’t she go to Tahiti, how can she be so quick?” Narimura Haruko was startled.

“I don’t know, she probably just went back earlier.”

Narimura Haruko’s face suddenly changed.

She now regretted it, if she had known that woman would come, she wouldn't have asked Gennai Masashi to come to the dinner party. If Ji Zi were to see Gennai Masashi's stingy attitude towards her, she would certainly be happy.

When they got out of the washroom, the ball had already started.

All the guests were looking at the podium, where Ikeyama Togoto was standing, holding a microphone to make a speech.

“Thank you for everyone who participated in my birthday. During the next years I'll very grateful if you give me your support and help. Aside from tonight's banquet, there is one more thing I would like to announce, I will participate in the next senate election. I hope that everyone would continue to support me.”

The audience immediately burst into warm applause.

In Japan, politicians and their business partners would always have a close relationship. The cost of this half-open banquet, how much of it really came from this old man's pocket? After all, government officials receiving political donations were normal, so that they would never forget to pay attention to their people.

Ikeyama Togoto was apparently very satisfied with their reaction, and went on to say: “Now, let the party begin, I hope you have fun.”

It wasn't long before he spoke that a melodious music orchestra

group who were in charge of the music, began to play at the side. This had also meant that the ball had officially started.

Although she was prepared to a certain extent, but when she actually saw Mingyu Ji Zi wearing a similar dress as her, Narimura Haruko's complexion became increasingly ugly. Especially when she saw the student council president at her side, she wished that she herself didn't come here.

"Isn't that Haruko? It's been a week since we saw each other, I really miss you, cousin Reimi too." Wearing a purple dress, Ji Zi smiled as she held the student body presidents arm.

Compared to Narimura Haruko, Mingyu Ji Zi's appearance was slightly inferior, but she beat with her shape that could make most man's heart beat rapidly.

"Thank you for troubling you, and worrying about me." Narimura Haruko's expression turned cold, and said.

"Ji Zi when did you get off the plane?" Ryotani Reimi asked.

"This afternoon, I had to ride the plane for such a long time, I almost died of exhaustion. Senpai, can you help me get some juice?" Mingyu Ji Zi turned her head towards the student council president and said while acting like a spoiled brat.

"Okay, you wait." After taking a look at the well-known prettiest girl in the new students, the student council president turned

around, and walked over the table at the other side.

Mingyu Ji Zi very proudly looked at Narimura Haruko, and said: “I heard that Gennai-san’s here, can you introduce him to me? However if you don’t want to, then so be it.”

Looking at her self-satisfied smile, Narimura Haruko really wanted to slap the face of this woman.

“Whatever.” Managing to control herself, Narimura Haruko said something.

Mingyu Ji Xi smiled, and followed right behind her.

Arriving at Takeda’s side, she saw the three eating together. If possible, she really wished that these three would immediately disappear.

“Masashi.” Approaching Lei Yin’s side, Narimura Haruko gently patted his shoulder.

Hearing her affectionately call his name, Lei Yin’s face grimaced.

“What’s the matter?”

“Can I introduce my friend to you?” After speaking these words, Narimura Haruko felt humiliated.

She never thought that there would be one day that someone would talk to her with such a tone, moreover it was this sort of man.

Looking deeply into her eyes, Lei Yin nodded, "I'll have to trouble you."

Hearing him comply, Narimura Haruko subconsciously relaxed.

"You must be Gennai-san. Hello, my name's Mingyu Ji Zi, a student of Teikyo University in the Foreign Languages Department of Literature. Just like you, I'm also a new student. Moreover, I'm good friends with Haruko, and we grew up together." Without waiting for Narimura Haruko to open her mouth, Mingyu Ji Zi first introduced herself to Lei Yin.

Seeing that she had introduced herself with such a charming smile, Narimura Haruko sneered in her heart. This woman was sending off her sex appeal again.

Even so, she nervously looked at Lei Yin's expression. After all, this woman had enticed a lot of men.

"Hello." Lei Yin said dismissively.

Hearing his exceeding short answer, Mingyu Ji Zi was stunned. Seeing this, the nearby Narimura Haruko had a strange sense of pleasant revenge.

“Gennai-san, you’re classmates with Haruko right? To what extent is your relationship with Haruko now?” Mingyu Jizi soon replied with a sweet smile, then looked at him and asked.

Narimura Haruko didn’t think that she would be so direct, and immediately retorted: “It seems like this has nothing to do with you, Mingyu-san.”

“Haruko how can you say that, I’m your best friend, so it should concern me. Right, Gennai-san?”

Lei Yin didn’t speak, and had instead raised his glass and took a sip.

At that time, the student council president suddenly came holding a glass of juice, “Ji Zi, I looked everywhere for you, this is the juice that you wanted.”

“Senpai, I forgot to tell you, I don’t like to drink orange juice, can you help me get a glass of apple juice.”

“This, it’s fine, I’ll go get another glass.” The student council president a little reluctantly placed the drink on the dinner table, and walked back to where the drinks were.

After he walked away, Mingyu Ji Zi said, “Haruko, did you know? I thought that Yasumasa-senpai was a difficult person to approach, but after only a few days, I found out he is actually a very easy-going person. Haruko you also have to work hard,

otherwise falling behind numerous things is rather boring. Well, I want to go dancing with senpai, so if the two of you will excuse me.”

Although she knew perfectly well that she was demonstrating herself, so Narimura Haruko protested, and was even secretly angry, but she could only watch her leave a bit helplessly.

Seeing that she was about to go away, Narimura Haruko stopped him and said: “Gennai-san, can I talk to you alone for a bit?”

Lei Yin looked at the table where Takeda and Yoshikawa were still eating, he then nodded.

They left the hall and went to the quiet balcony.

Standing on the balcony with carved railing, Lei Yin asked: “What’s the matter?”

After Narimura Haruko looked at him for a while, she then said: “Gennai-san doesn’t seem to have any favorable impression of me?”

“I am not very clear with your meaning.”

“You should understand. I like you Gennai-san, are you willing to give me a chance?”

Lei Yin calmly looked at her, and hadn't said a single word for a very long time.

Narimura Haruko didn't like how he looked at her.

"Honestly, I'm bored."

Narimura Haruko didn't imagine that he would say such words.

"What do you mean?" Her tone began to turn cold.

"Although I don't know for what purpose you have to get close to me, but one thing's for sure, I absolutely don't have the slightest feelings towards you. Whether you smile delightfully or display such a gentle character, you can't hide it in your eyes, your temperament. You're a good actor, but by no means are you a very good one. In my opinion, your acting can only deceive those small boys with IQ lower than you."

"You..." Narimura Haruko's expression turned ugly.

"So please don't bother me again, all right?" Lei Yin added.

"You....Bastard!" Feeling that she was completely seen through, Narimura Haruko felt angry and couldn't control herself anymore, slapping him in the face.

Grabbing her by the wrist, Lei Yin said flatly: "You are not

qualified to do so. Please don't let yourself become a bitch." With that, he let go of her hand.

Narimura Haruko looked at his eyes, cursed, and then quickly turned around and walked out of the balcony.

Done? Lei Yin sneered as he looked at her back.

After stopping for a moment, Lei Yin felt he wasn't full yet, so he stood up and went inside the hall.

Suddenly, he heard a noise outside.

From the balcony he saw several police cars parked at the gate. But dozens of police were being stopped by the hotel manager at the front of the hotel.

It appears as though there was something unexpected happened.

Chapter 153 - Hiding

In order to listen to their speech, Lei Yin sent his internal force into his ears.

“Police officers, you really can’t come in now. Tonight is the birthday party of Ikeyama Togoto. Congressman Fukuda, Executive Director Yokoyama, Congressman Tachibana, and all other high-ranking guests were also there to offer their birthday congratulations. At the same time, there are also celebrities and business people, if you rush in there, it will disturb them. So, please wait until after the party is over before you conduct your search.” The Hotel Manager wouldn’t budge from the entrance and said.

“But I received orders from above; it said that there’s a fugitive hiding inside. If this delay result in casualties, who would bear the responsibility? Please don’t make our job difficult.” The negotiating with the Hotel Manager middle-aged police officer still pressed on.

“Fugitive? Just now the police officer said the one hiding here is just a thief, how all of a sudden become a fugitive?” Hearing that the one hiding inside was a fugitive, the Hotel Manager’s complexion suddenly changed greatly.

“Which police officer told you this is just a thief?”

“It’s the few police officers guarding the back door of the Hotel.” The Manager answered.

The middle-aged police officer cursed in his heart, ‘I really don’t know what kind of orders did those old men sitting in the office sent. Just know that they ordered all the local police in the Shinjuku area to go all out to catch people, but none cooperate with the external experts.’

He also felt very confused. Although they were ordered to catch people, he hasn’t even seen the fugitive’s face. He was just being pressed to become interim commander here by the order of the one surnamed Kamata, to surround the area.

“In short, we will immediately go in, but we will not enter the Hall, we’ll just deploy our men on the perimeter, and will not harass other guests.” The middle-aged police officer dryly coughed and said.

“But....” The Hotel Manager did not know what to do. If so many uniformed police officers went in, it’s impossible not to disturb those important guests. Moreover, this will not be good to the Hotel reputation. But if there’s a fugitive hiding inside, and it causes casualties, no one could afford to take this responsibility.

When the Hotel Manager was hesitant, a senior police officer vehicle arrived.

When the car stopped, two men walked out.

“Good evening, Head Matsuyama.” The middle-aged police officer immediately saluted to one of the men. He never thought

that even the head of the Police also come.

“What is the current situation?” The 50 somethings Police Inspector Matsuyama asked.

“Report to Head, the Shinjuku Police Officers and we have completely surrounded the Hotel.”

“So why not go in and search?” Police Head Matsuyama somewhat dissatisfied.

The middle-aged police officer wanted to say, he didn't know the look of the fugitive, but felt this was too stupid, and besides, the Hotel Manager was also watching. He can't say that after he had received the order from the above, he hastily rushed over here with large group of people and surrounded the place without asking for the details of the fugitive, although it was certainly according to the instruction.

Therefore, he said the concern of the Hotel Manager.

“This is indeed troublesome, never thought that Congressman Fukuda and Congressman Yokoyama are also inside.” Police Head Matsuyama began to hesitate. Those are important people that he can't afford to offend.

Police Head Matsuyama suddenly turned to the man next to him and said: “Mr. Yamahara, do you think you can wait until after the party is over before you go in and search?”

Wearing a black jacket middle-aged man said to the middle-aged police officer: “Where is Kamata?”

“Mr. Kamata is with the Shinjuku Police Officers guarding the back door.” The middle-aged police officer replied.

“You go and tell him to come here.”

“Yes.” The middle-aged police officer immediately made a radio call after he performed the salutation ritual.

“Police Head Matsuyama, unexpectedly there are so many congressmen inside, it would be better if we wait until after the party end before we search.” The Police Officer surnamed Yamahara said to the Police Inspector.

“Thank you for Mr. Yamahara’s understanding.” Police Head Matsuyama saluted him very gratefully.

The middle-aged police officer who has just finished radioing the police officer guarding the backdoor can’t help but shock to see this mysterious man. Although he didn’t know who this man is, to see Police Head Matsuyama was so respectful toward him, the middle-aged police officer knew that this person certainly has a very important background. Looking at his neither Congressman nor Police Officer appearance, the middle-aged police officer can’t figure out his identity.

Compared to the confused middle-aged police officer, the has been standing on the balcony watching the whole process Lei Yin already knew who this man surnamed Yamahara really was.

‘Even this guy is also here, who exactly is the person they want to catch?’

‘Surprisingly, after two years, I am actually able to see him here, it really is ‘enemies on a narrow road.’ Lei Yin sneered.

‘It seems like a good play will commence after the end of the party.’ Lei Yin took another look, turned around and returned to the Banquet Hall.

After Lei Yin arrived at the dinner table and was about to continue to eat, suddenly Takeda hurriedly came.

“Masashi, what did you just say to Haruko? Why does she look so angry?”

“Where’s Yoshikawa?” Lei Yin looked up and asked.

“Going out with Haruko.”

“Takeda, as a friend, I offer you a word of advice. That girl does not suit you, do not waste your time.”

“What do you mean by this? What happened between you and

Haruko just now?”

“It’s nothing, just talking clearly with her.” Lei Yin dismissively said.

His answer was similar with Takeda’s guess.

“Masashi, you really don’t have any interest toward Haruko?”

“Takeda, I ask you, what exactly do you like in Narimura Haruko? Don’t tell me it’s just because of her appearance.

“Hey, that’s too direct. Haruko is very good, her look is so beautiful, and her attitude is also very good. Ordinary people will like such a girl. Let me ask you, what exactly you don’t like in Haruko?” Takeda asked.

“Forget it, only by being subjected to a number of setbacks will a young man grow. You slowly pursue your daydream, but after you get dumped, don’t come to my apartment to get wildly drunk.” Lei Yin gave up his unnecessary piece of advice.

“You actually curse me getting dumped, assh*le!” Takeda angrily jumped.

“If you yell again, be careful they’re going to kick you out from here.”

Takeda looked around at the well-dressed upper-level celebrities and immediately didn't dare to call out. Only his mouth whispered: "If I knew early on, I would have followed Haruko out, it's too cheap for Yoshikawa, that son of a b*tch."

Lei Yin was too lazy to care for him, continued to choose something to eat from the table.

But after five minutes, his eating was interrupted again.

"Fellow student Gennai, aren't you together with Haruko? Why are you alone here?" MingYu Ji Zi came over and asked.

"She seems to have something to do and have walked away." Lei Yin somewhat reluctantly put down the plate.

"Ah, that's too bad. Other people still want to have a good chat with her." MingYu Ji Zi unintentionally straightened out her proud twin peaks as she spoke.

Seeing the deep cleavage revealing out from her low-cut dress, the standing nearby Takeda's eyeballs almost fell out.

"Since Haruko have walked away, why don't fellow student Gennai accompany me for a dance?" MingYu Ji Zi's gleaming eyes were looking at Lei Yin.

Hearing her words, Takeda hated it. 'Has just left, here comes another, do all the beautiful women have masochistic tendency?

What exactly is good about this guy?’

“Ji Zi, how can you walk away, didn’t I just tell you to wait there for me?” At this time, the student body President hurriedly came over.

MingYu Ji Zi’s face sank, and then said coldly: “Senior, can’t you see I am talking to someone else?”

“Ji Zi....” The student body President was at a loss. He had never seen such an expression from Ji Zi.

MingYu Ji Zi didn’t bother with him anymore, but continued to say with a sweet smile to Lei Yin: “Fellow student Gennai, let’s dance.”

Looking at the angry look of the student body President that were directed at him, Lei Yin thought it was time to stop this farce.

“I’m sorry, just as most people do not like to eat unwashed fruits, I am also not used to dance with people that I don’t know. Excuse me.” With that, Lei Yin took a plate containing the food from the table and walked away.

The student body President and Takeda were shocked to see him leave. And MingYu Ji Zi’s expression was surprisingly rich.

“What the hell, I don’t know which shameless guy did this, but he actually ate a plate of Tuna Sushi.

“You’re kidding, right?”

“It’s true, that plate of sushi is so expensive, the Catering Manager Masahiro has thrown a fit, he said we must find the people who steal it. If found, that guy will definitely be fired.”

“I think it’s probably Koji Hiteki. That guy loves to eat.”

“He should not be so bold. It’s actually fine if he just ate a little, but this time, the whole plate has been eaten.”

When Lei Yin came out from the bathroom, two waiters have just walked away from his side.

Hearing their conversation, Lei Yin’s heart was moved.

He didn’t want to return to the hall so quickly. Instead, he leisurely strolled toward the direction of the kitchen.

Although the meals for the party have mostly been carried out, the kitchen staff did not relax. Some dessert snacks were continuously being brought out from the kitchen.

Lei Yin did not go in, just walking around in the vicinity of power

distribution room or utility room, and several other rooms.

After he had adjusted his heartbeat, he carefully listened to the sound in every room.

After a while, after making sure there was no one around, he gently loosened the Utility room door and went in.

After closing the door, he did not immediately turn on the utility room light but quietly walked to the middle of the room.

“Come out, I know you’re in here. I am not the police. Maybe I can help you.” Lei Yin’s voice softly sounded in the darkness.

He was still surrounded by silence.

‘I’m probably too meddlesome.’ Lei Yin began to hesitate and wanted to leave to pretend he knows nothing.

But in the end, he decided to stay, because he wanted to see who is the person Jiro Yamahara (see Chapter 57) wanted to catch. That guy is, after all, not a good man, if he can pull his leg off, Lei Yin would be very glad to do so.

“Hey, I repeat, if you don’t come out, then I’ll come there myself.”

There was still no sound in the utility room.

It seemed like he was alone in there. However, if he put himself in the other side situation, it would also be impossible to whistle him out with just those two silly lines that he said just a moment ago. Lei Yin was not worried that the guy has a gun, if he really has that kind of thing, the police outside wouldn't be so relaxed to wait until the banquet is over before they come in to catch people.

Lei Yin walked step by step toward that corner filled with debris. He felt that the guy's breath have become more rapid as he continued to approach. 'Looks like I'm not welcomed here.'

When he was about two or three meter distance away from the guy, all of a sudden, a figure from the dark quickly jumped straight toward Lei Yin.

Well prepared, Lei Yin moved sideway to dodge, and then his right hand seized this opportunity to throw the guy down on the ground.

When the guy wanted to get up and attack, Lei Yin twisted his right hand behind him, and then pressed him on the ground.

"Enough, playtime is over." The opposite party's attack was worse than what Lei Yin thought.

When he clearly saw him on the ground, Lei Yin can't help but wryly smile.

He never imagined that the person Jiro Yamahara personally wanted to catch turned out to be a teenage boy.

“Let go of me, you beast.” The youth loudly scolded him.

Chapter 154 - Chaos

“You are a Nepalese?” Lei Yin was surprised by this kid’s curse language.

Hearing Lei Yin asked him in fluent Nepali, the youth obviously stunned for a moment. But soon, he began to struggle again.

Lei Yin released him and stood up.

After reclaiming his freedom, the youth first retracted back to that corner.

“Answer me, those police outside is here to catch you?”

Lei Yin did not think it was necessary for Jiro Yamahara to personally deal with this kid, but listened to their talk, the people who came here to catch this kid did not seem to come from various units.

The youth did not answer his question, just looked at him in panic and nervous.

“I am not coming here to get you. Maybe I can get you out of here, but first, you have to tell me why those people want to catch you.”

The teenager’s eyes were without any changes, still full of alert

looking at him from the ground.

Lei Yin got a little headache. He originally thought he was going to discuss conditions with an adult, but he did not think it would be with such an ignorant little brat.

But on the other hand, because the other side was just an underage boy, he could not bear just to leave him alone.

This is the contradictions in Lei Yin's personality. He can be ruthless to those adults who provoke him, and willing to make them disappear. But he can not harden his heart to do the same thing to a minor even if this minor provoked him like those adults. Like the previous transfer student Nagasaki; He just burned his house as a warning, and not be ruthless as to eliminate him.

Based on this same mentality extension, in the past, he had rescued ReiLi from being hunted down and received him as a disciple. The same goes for Amy. ReiLi once said to Changan behind his back that, Master is definitely qualified to become the President of the World Association for the Protection of Children.

At this time, this someone, which once being talked behind the back as eligible to inherit the post of President of the World Association for the Protection of Children, had a headache; He did not know how to get the trust of the kid in front of him.

If this kid did not eat something, he could probably use food to lure him to speak. But knowing that this fellow has just eaten a whole plate of super expensive sushi, he can not use this trick.

Under such a situation where he can not think of a way, Lei Yin became somewhat fired up. Because of the lack of patience and not suitable for doing parental work, the man walked in front of the teenager and raised him up.

“Hey, I asked you a question. Say something, at least you can fart (say nonsense), right?”

The frightened teenager wanted to break free from his hand, but found the man’s hand was like a pincer; he completely unable to break free. Therefore, he used his teeth to bite this man’s hand.

Lei Yin has no intention to become this kid’s dessert, with his free right hand he took hold of his chin and raised his head up to look at himself.

“Now I am not in the mood to slowly develop feelings with you, I will say it again, if you do not make a sound, I will pretend to know nothing and get out of here. As for when you get caught by those people later, it has nothing to do with me.

Being overpowered by force, the teenager finally decided to look at this man in the eyes.

Through the dim light, Lei Yin also can clearly see the teenager’s appearance.

Typical Asian people with dark skin; facial features were not

great, but the eyes were quite bright. Such a teenager can be seen everywhere in Nepal. Lei Yin became more and more curious of why this Jiro Yamahara is bent on capturing the teenager. He hoped the reason that guy used so many police officers to catch people is not because of some disgusting tendency.

After a while, perhaps believing that Lei Yin came from the same area as him, the teenager finally opened his mouth.

“You, you really are not with them?”

To see him finally willing to speak, Lei Yin put him down.

“If I am with one of their group, I can just hand you over to them, do I need to talk nonsense with you here?”

Although not yet fully trusted him, the alertness in the teenager’s eyes went away a lot.

“Now it is your turn to answer my question. Are those police really here to catch you?”

“Yes.”

“Why?”

“I....I do not know.” The teenager did not dare to look him in the eyes.

“Very good.” Lei Yin sneered, turned around, and walked toward the door.

“Do not, do not go.” The teenager quickly pulled his hand tightly.

“I am not going to help people with unknown origin. If you do not say anything, then I am sorry, I can not help you.” Lei Yin looked at him calmly.

The teenager was now in a dilemma, after being chased by those people for so long, he has been very tired. His instinct told him the man might be able to help him get out of here. But....

After struggling with these thoughts for a while, he finally made a decision.

“I escaped from them.”

“Them? You mean the police?”

“No. I escaped from a group of people dressed in white.” The teenager’s voice trembled a bit.

“Were you the only one to escape?”

“There are other people who escaped with me from there, but I was separated from them. Now I am alone. When I came out

yesterday looking for something to eat, I was accidentally discovered, and therefore being pursued by them now.”

“Those people in white clothes, what have they done to you?” Lei Yin then asked.

Hearing this question, the teenager’s face showed a frightened expression, suddenly retracted to the corner and loudly screamed.

Lei Yin thought that his reaction was too big, hurriedly rushed to cover his mouth.

At this time, the teenager lost his reason and desperately struggled.

Lei Yin has no choice, with his hand, he firmly grabbed the teenager’s two wrists, while another hand tightly covered the teenager’s mouth.

“Hey, wake up, it is okay now.” Lei Yin hammered his head using his forehead.

The teenager felt dizzy, after a while, he finally stopped struggling.

“I beg you, do not ask anymore.” The slowly recovering teenager pleaded in tears.

Afraid that he would yell again, Lei Yin had to stop asking.

“Very well, I do not ask. Now I tell you one thing, the area outside the Hotel had been surrounded by the police. After the guests are gone, they will come in and search.”

“Then what should we do?” The teenager helplessly watched Lei Yin.

‘His grandma, why are you looking at me?’ Lei Yin cursed in his heart. ‘Looks like this kid is dead set on eating me.’

Lei Yin did not speak, just walked to the junk cabinets in front of him looking for something. The teenager unblinkingly stared at him, for fear that he would leave.

‘Seems like it is not here.’ Lei Yin said to the teenager: “You wait for me here, I will be back soon.” With that, he walked to the door.

The teenager immediately ran over and tightly pulled his clothes, not letting him go, “Do not abandon me!”

“I said, I will be back.” Lei Yin did not bother to explain to him, just gave him a stern look.

The teenager was a bit afraid of him, and quickly let go of his hand.

Lei Yin walked to the door, after making sure no one is near, immediately opened the door to go out.

The utility room returned to the previous dark state, and the teenager continued to retract to the corner. At this time, his mind was very anxious. He was afraid the man might not return, or worse, to lead those people outside to this place. 'Brother Jabin said, those people outside are untrustworthy.'

He wanted to leave, but he feared after his departure, in case that man is really here to help him, he may lose the last man who could save himself.

The teenager constantly struggled, hesitated to decide whether he should leave or stay.

Finally, the frightened mood prevailed, he decided to get out of here.

When he ran to the door to open the door, the door suddenly opened.

The teenager jumped out of his skin and quickly ran back.

"Hey, it is me." From the darkness came the man's voice.

Hearing his voice, the teenager's heart was surprised, it seemed like he was really here to help him.

The teenager stopped and turned to look at him.

“Quickly put this clothes on.” Lei Yin threw a bag of stuff at him.

The teenager was a bit overwhelmed looking at these clothes.

“What are you looking at, hurry up.” Lei Yin was a bit impatient.

‘This man is terrible.’ The teenager thought as he wore that set of clothes on.

‘A kid just like Amy, but Amy is much more cuter, if not because I can not bear to, really wanted to just walk away.’ Lei Yin secretly thought.

Unaware of his serious gender discrimination, he caught a glimpse of the lower part of the boy who frequently annoys him, it seemed like a very young man indeed.

Thus, ReiLi’s complain that his Master is excessively eccentric was not unfounded.

After the teenager changed his clothes, Lei Yin carefully looked a bit.

It was a waiter’s uniform, though he had picked up the smallest size, to this around 14 or 15 years old teenager, it was still a bit too

big.

But now, he can not care about this so much. After helping him tidied up the long sleeves and trousers, Lei Yin said: “You wait for me here, do not walk around. When the chaos occurs outside, I will come and take you away from the hotel.”

“Chaos?” The teenager puzzledly chewed this word.

“Listen, your chance is only one time, remember to wait here for me.” Lei Yin exhorted.

The teenager looked at him for a moment and then nodded.

After coming out from the Utility room, Lei Yin nonchalantly walked back to the Banquet Hall.

At this time, the party has entered the later half period, and he can clearly see some of the guests had already left.

“Masashi, where have you been? I have been looking for you everywhere.” Takeda walked toward him.

“What about Yoshikawa, he has not come back?” Lei Yin asked, changing the subject

“That guy ever since he went out with Haruko, he never came back, and might have gone back home. By the way, how do you

know MingYu Ji Zi?”

“Do you know that woman?”

“Please, who in our school do not know MingYu Ji Zi? She and Narimura Haruko is equally famous beauties, in the campus voting for the number one new beauty, she was just a few votes shy away from being number one. I heard that her family and Haruko’s family are good friends.”

‘Good friends? Those two women do not even look half-friendly, enemy is more likely.’ As one can imagine, when two equally famous beauties appear at the same time, if both characters are not good, the opportunity to become enemies is very large.

“Be honest with me, when did you know MingYu Ji Zi? Do not tell me you just met her. Really do not know why you this guy could be so lucky, there are actually two beauties who treat you so well at the same time.” Takeda became even more excited, just stopped short at grabbing his friend’s collar to question him.

“You guess it right, I really just know that woman called Ji Zi in this party. Takeda, did not I tell you before, your view of women are too superficial, do not think that every beautiful woman is a good woman. If you keep on maintaining this idea, you would later die miserably.”

“Bastard, do not think that you can be so proud that there are two beautiful women fancy you.” Takeda completely took his words of advice as cynical remarks.

“Lend me a lighter.”

“Why do you want a lighter, you do not look like a smoker.”

“Who says I do not smoke, it is just once in awhile. Cut the crap, hurry up and fetch it.”

“Asking to borrow something, but with a bad attitude,” Takeda muttered from the side as he took the lighter from his body.

After taking the lighter, Lei Yin walked out of the Hall.

“Hey, where are you going?” Takeda from the back loudly asked.

“This is not a smoking area, I will go to other places.” Lei Yin said without turning back his head.

“This is a non-smoking area?” Takeda with a strange expression looked at the big cigar on the fat man’s mouth not far away in front of him, muttered.

‘Do not know in just a minute how will the chaos here look like, really want to watch how these parade of upper-class people would react.’ Knowing that a good show was about to begin, Lei Yin was filled with a sense of excitement, and could not help but quicken his step.

Japan is an earthquake-prone country, therefore, for the Japanese, the occurrence of an earthquake will not alarm them, because they have become accustomed to it.

However, if there is a fire, how would they react?

When the Hotel fire alarm rang loudly, all the people's face in the Banquet Hall could not help but become pale.

“What is happening?”

“The building is on fire?”

“What exactly is happening here?” Someone loudly shouted.

The people still have not responded from the shocked, suddenly, the automatic anti-fire system installed above the Hall constantly sprayed out water. Everyone in the room suddenly drenched in water, became soaking wet.

Those classy ladies were now screaming like a frightened chicken. And those men in suits could no longer keep their gentleman poise, all of their faces showed panic expression. At the moment everyone appeared to be in an extremely difficult situation.

After knowing that there was a fire, the crowd in the Hall began to become very chaotic; everyone desperately tried to run toward the direction of the exit.

At the same time, the Hotel guests who stayed upstairs were also constantly rushed down from above.

Keio Hotel is 47 stories high, a well-known Hotel frequently visited by foreign tourists. Usually, during the tourist season, there were more than 1600 guests, of which more than half are foreigners.

Such a large crowd suddenly rushed down; this is a scene that one not often can see.

Two group of people gathered on the exit.

But relatively speaking, the number of people rushing down from the upstairs was much more than the number of people coming from the Banquet Hall.

The humanity herd mentality is sometimes very frightening, although no one really saw the flame or smoke, when one saw others running outward, few can really stop it. In this extremely chaotic situation, the mutual jostling or trampling each other were inevitable.

Suddenly, pitiful yell, squeal, scold, and shrill sounds filled the entire lobby.

The people fled outside like they were being subjected to Termite invasion.

The road outside the Hotel, because of the sudden appearance of the people, became very congested. In that entire section of the road, the long queue of vehicles became longer and longer. The nearby passers-by were also attracted to this rarely seen chaotic scene and stopped to watch.

The surrounded by the crowd moving outward Takeda at the moment was all wet. But he has no time to feel bad about his newly bought Armani suit. Though he was a bit worried about his friend's safety, in this case, trying to find people is simply impossible.

He did not know that Lei Yin was 50 meters away from him at the moment. At his side, there was a thin and short, dressed up as a waiter fellow who followed him.

Regarding this mad influx of people, the police guarding outside were also panicked. They did not know what was going on inside. But at least they know one thing, the time is not the right to perform their duty, if anyone dared to stand in the front, he would surely be flattened by the crowd.

Seeing this much more chaotic scene than what he imagined, Lei Yin could not help but a bit surprise. This play seemed to be a little bit bigger.

Having no time to think, he took the Nepalese teenager to walk on another road.

Because of the chaos, the resultant traffic jam became more and more serious, almost all the vehicles in the vicinity were forced to stop.

In this case, the two people can only walk forward.

Finally able to leave the Hotel, the Nepalese teenager was excited. Becoming surer that this man is not one of them.

—

On the crossroads not quite far away from Keio Hotel, the youth dazedly looked at Lei Yin talking Japanese on the phone.

After a while, Lei Yin hung up the phone and then said to the teenager in Nepali: “We wait here, in awhile, someone will come to pick us up.

Hearing there were other people, the teenager subconsciously became tense.

“Do not worry, those people are not here to catch you. Because I can not live with you, I had to ask them to help you find some place to stay.” Lei Yin glanced at him and explained.

Hearing these words, the teenagers quieted down.

“By the way, I still do not know your name?”

“My name is Ji Teba.” The boy replied.

“You were with your family members sneaked into Japan, right?” Looking at his emaciated appearance, Lei Yin knew he was not a tourist.

Ji Teba nodded, “I was with my father on a boat to Japan.”

“What about your father?”

“He....is dead. He was killed by those people.” At this point, the teenager’s eyes for the first time exposed a strong hatred.

Lei Yin very much wanted to continue to ask what exactly those people did to them, but was afraid he would go mad again, and had to temporarily hold back his questions. ‘Better wait until we come to the safe place to talk about it.’

“Since your father is dead, what are you going to do?” Lei Yin asked another question.

“I, I do not know.” The teenager’s face grew more dazed and helpless.

“How about this, I will find someone to send you back to Nepal, what do you think?” Lei Yin hoped this kid had loved ones at home, even if he has no other relatives, he could send him to Nepal orphanages. He has no intention to take another disciple.

“Thank you.” The teenager’s eyes exposed a grateful look.

“It is nothing.” Lei Yin said dismissively.

The two people kept waiting at the crossroad, as time passes, the teenager slowly began to calm down.

At this time, the has been standing by the wall with closed eyes Lei Yin suddenly opened his eyes.

“Come with me.” Lei Yin held Ji Teba’s hand and ran to another street without waiting for his reply.

“What is happening?” The teenager asked as he ran.

“Someone is coming.” Lei Yin replied.

“Is it those people?” The teenager nervously asked.

“I do not know. I want to see if they will follow us.”

After running to an intersection, Lei Yin pulled the teenager to

hid in a street corner.

After hiding, Lei Yin attentively put his attention outside to hear the sound with total concentration. The teenager also raised up his ears to listen.

Five minutes later, the teenager heard two rapid footsteps approaching them, his face suddenly turned white with scare.

Lei Yin turned his head back and watched the teenager with strange eyes.

“Let us get out of here.” The teenager whispered.

“It is no use to run, it seems they have a way of knowing where you are.” Lei Yin said in heavy voice.

“Then what should we do?” The teenager was so nervous that his whole body covered with sweats.

“You stand here and do not move, I want to go nearby to ambush them.”

“What, you do not want to mess around, those people are very powerful.” The teenager was greatly anxious.

“Nonsense, if they are not powerful, why would I need to use this trick? Anyway, do not move, lest I accidentally hurt you.” Lei Yin

exhorted him.

The teenager looked at him for a while and finally nodded.

Lei Yin immediately ran to the street corner on the other side to hide.

If this was an ordinary people, he simply would not need to pay attention, but if the two people were like Jiro Yamahara, he had better be careful.

As the footsteps were getting closer, the teenager's heart almost jumped out.

Finally, the two men came to a stop in the vicinity.

“Come out, I know you are here.” One of the men said aloud.

Chapter 155 - Bullet

Although it was a very rough Nepali, the teenager very clearly heard it, and his heart almost jumped out.

“Kamata, you go and catch him.” Jiro Yamahara ordered a thin man seemingly a bit like a drug addict.

“Yes, Director Yamahara.”

Hearing the sound of footsteps of that man coming to him, the teenager immediately wanted to run away.

But he had promised the man that he would not move. Therefore, while the teenager’s body trembled in fear, he eventually did not move.

“You better go out. Otherwise, if you make me angry, that would be bad.” Although aware that the teenager does not understand Japanese, he still a bit unhinged-ly licked his lips and said.

This man named Kamata once abused five women to death. When police searched his house, they found it full of all kinds of torture instruments, and even the imitation of European medieval torture instruments was included in his collections.

Rather than simply have sex with women, he became addicted to watching those tortured women’s faces, especially the excitement that came from the outpouring of painful expressions.

With what he had done, even being put to death by dismemberment, he deserved it. But Jiro Yamahara actually used his connection to free him. Therefore, Kamata is absolutely loyal like a dog to Jiro Yamahara.

But Jiro Yamahara did not save him because he wanted a faithful dog, what he really like was the unknown ability in his body.

In this world, there is a kind of people. They were born with some kind of superhuman ability. Although each of their abilities is different, people who know they exist would call them Espers or Superpowers.

Espers are very small in numbers. In a city with tens of millions of individuals perhaps there are only a handful of such persons. Compared to those who go around saying they have superpower showing off to swindle people, these are different. The real Espers will definitely not have the chance to show their faces in public.

Because to the Government, they are exceedingly rare and secret resources. Once one is recognized as Esper, very soon they will be contacted by a special organization. After a test, if the power is considered to be of practical value, it will be mandatory for them to join the Organization for Government use. But if the power is unusable, they will be warned to keep their lips sealed.

Kamata's power was discovered after his arrest. When he touch someone else's body, he can induce that person's brain to think of everything, including mood changes or making them see pictures

or scene.

This is not a very special ability, however, in the interrogation, this ability can play an unexpected effect. Because unknowingly, no matter how a person disguises himself, everything that person had in mind can not deceive other people. This was the original reason Jiro Yamahara insisted that he must come.

For Kamata, his ability is a non-attack ability, so, he actually did not need to participate in this hunt. But because others were busy chasing down the other escapee, there was a shortage of manpower, and Jiro Yamahara had to let him out with him.

Finally, Kamata arrived at the corner where the Nepalese teenager was hidden.

Hearing the teenager's irrepressible horror mood leaking out with the heavy breathing, Kamata kind of have a tyrannical delight.

Suddenly, he felt something close to him, when he subconsciously drew the gun, a hand tightly grabbed his wrist where he held his gun, at the same time, he felt his throat was being caught by a pincer-like hand; he wanted to call but unable to.

“Kamata, what are you doing there? You can not even catch a kid?” After a long time Kamata still did not come out, Jiro Yamahara began to get a little impatient.

After a while, Jiro Yamahara saw Kamata finally came out walking backward.

“You got him?” Jiro Yamahara asked.

Suddenly, the half exposed back Kamata fell down to the ground, his mouth filled with blood. Then, a figure quickly jumped out right after Kamata fell. In his hand, he was holding Kamata’s gun.

The highly trained Jiro Yamahara reacted very fast, seeing Kamata fell down to the ground, he knew an unforeseen event had happened.

When he saw the gun in that man’s hand, he first jumped to the roadside flower base to take cover.

Lei Yin did not give him any respite. After he jumped, he immediately held out the gun and rushed over.

When Jiro Yamahara just took his gun out, with a sound of gunshot, a bullet came through the opening between the flower base and hit his appeared-ready-to-fight-back wrist

The middle-aged man bellowed, and the gun in his hand accidentally fell to the ground.

When he wanted to pick up the pistol, a bullet wonderfully struck the gun on the ground, all of a sudden putting that pistol 10 meters away.

“Beast.” Jiro Yamahara cursed while he stood up to run to the nearby street corner.

But Lei Yin already rushed over to him in a straight line.

At this time, the has been unable to dodge Jiro Yamahara suddenly faced the direction where Lei Yin is coming at him and held out his left hand.

The sound of gunshot sounded, a bullet flew straight toward Jiro Yamahara’s chest.

This time, Jiro Yamahara was not able to dodge, but the bullet actually did not enter his body.

Because, the bullet stopped half a meter away in front of Jiro Yamahara’s body.

Like the special effect scene in the films, without any reason, the bullet just stopped. But the bullet was not static, it was still moving forward in a spinning movement, but no matter how, its position still has not changed, still fixed there.

‘Telekinetic?’ Seeing such a strange scene, a word came into Lei Yin’s mind.

In the long course of rebirths, this was not the first time he

experienced an Esper.

In the past, ESP was treated as sorcery and Espers often banished from the community. Now the situation is not that much different. The only difference is, in the modern world an ESP ability is more clearly defined, and not treated as a monster or uncanny. Two years ago, when he first met with Jiro Yamahara, Lei Yin knew he has ESP ability, but not clear about his exact power. Now he was relatively certain.

Lei Yin saw that the rotational speed of the suspended in mid-air bullet slowly weakened, it seemed like it will not be long before the guy can free his hand.

But Lei Yin did not give his opponent this opportunity. “Bang, bang,” with these two shots, two bullets flew past almost at the same time. Then, like the previous bullet, the two bullets stopped half a meter away from Jiro Yamahara. The three bullets almost drew a straight line, side by side they rapidly rotated.

Although the result was the same as before, the middle-aged man did not seem to give his free performance toward Lei Yin with ease.

One can see the exposed blue veins on his forehead, and a line of blood flew out from his nostril.

“Uncle, seems like your age is not suitable to do such a strenuous exercise.” Lei Yin said with a sneer.

Jiro Yamahara lifted his head very difficultly, seeing the appearance of the man who made him in a very distressed position, he said with a tone of surprise and anger: “It is you, this bastard.”

“It seems you still remember me, so to say, you have yet to arrive at a senile stage.”

“Beast, I will not let you go.” Jiro Yamahara was looking at him full of hatred.

Jiro Yamahara initially wanted to run away, but by his reaction, it was simply impossible. The bullet came close before he can get out of the way, therefore, he had to brace himself to face it head on. He can only hope that these few bullets can stop as soon as possible.

“Please make no mistake, this beast word is your special-purpose name, and I do not dare to recognize it as mine randomly. Moreover, I have the same idea as you, I am also not ready to let you go.” With that, Lei Yin gave him the rest of the bullets until the gun was completely empty of it.

Have yet to stop one wave of bullets, the condition of Jiro Yamahara when the last wave of bullets arrived before him was difficult to describe.

Although he successfully caught the additional two bullets, these two bullets were different than the previous three, because these bullets was only a palm distance away from his chest.

The fast spinning bullets stopped in front of his chest with varying spinning speed. In addition to the change of complexion, Jiro Yamahara's face was severely distorted because of overexertion. Moreover, not only his nose, now even his ears and eyes began to flow out blood, looking very disgustingly terrible.

“Uncle, when you arrive in the underworld, remember to send my regards to your mother.” After throwing away the pistol, Lei Yin rushed forward in stride.

Seeing Lei Yin came at him headlong, Jiro Yamahara, for the first time, had an alarmed look in his eyes.

When Lei Yin was two or three steps away from him, Jiro Yamahara suddenly shouted, all the blue veins on his face inflated out, then, those five bullets suddenly dropped to the ground.

At this time, Lei Yin also happened to arrive in front of him.

As if he imagined thing, when he rushed to less than one meter away from Jiro Yamahara, he felt like there was an invisible wall in front of him, blocking his movement so he could no longer move forward even just a centimeter.

Seeing he was able to successfully blocked the bullet before his energy ran out, and therefore, can stop Lei Yin in his path, excited look flashed through Jiro Yamahara's eyes. Although he was in a very bad situation right now, to deal with an ordinary person, it would still not big of a deal to him.

But one thing he guessed wrong, Lei Yin is definitely not an ordinary person like he imagined.

He was surprised to find out that the man is slowly coming closer to him.

‘What is going on here?’ Jiro Yamahara was shocked and afraid to look at this man sneering at him while continued to approach.

Just like what Lei Yin estimated, Espers are not invincible. Otherwise, he would already long finished when he fought with those Espers in those days. Based on Jiro Yamahara’s telekinetic power, he can easily raise a kg of matter with his mind, but it does not mean he can similarly raise a ton of matter. Just like human’s physical strength, ESP abilities also have their limits.

And according to his understanding, because ESP ability is part of the special mental ability, usually it can not often be used, and once used, it takes a long time to recover.

Thus, in this case, where Lei Yin is using his full internal power, Jiro Yamahara can no longer suppress his action.,

Seeing Lei Yin’s hand almost pinched his neck, Jiro Yamahara once again shouted, increasing the intensity of his control. But at the same time, from his facial features, the outpouring of blood all of a sudden increased a lot, appearing even more terrifying.

But this time, Lei Yin had not been suppressed just like those

bullets. He briefly paused and then moved the hand that was about to pinch Jiro Yamahara's neck to the chest.

Jiro Yamahara's eyes revealed a desperate look. He wanted to open his mouth to beg for mercy, but because he was using excessive force, he was unable to say a word. He can only helplessly watch as that hand slowly entered his chest and into his heart.

“Pa” lighter sound was heard when Lei Yin pulled his hand out from the middle-aged man's chest, and the invisible force field around him suddenly disappeared. Then, Jiro Yamahara slowly fell to the ground, with face full of disbelief.

Crouching over touching the middle-aged man's neck artery, Lei Yin determined that he was already dead, and then he stood up.

Since his rebirth to this body, this fight is the most exhausting one.

Overall, Jiro Yamahara has no great enmity with him, only mutual dislike. If Lei Yin was only by himself, no matter what kind of opponent, he would not care one bit. However, in order to prevent Jiro Yamahara from targeting his family or friends, he must, therefore, eliminate this potential witness.

For fear the previous gunshots would lead to other people coming here, Lei Yin immediately dragged this once-make the bullets stop in mid-air, middle-aged uncle's body to the previous intersection.

There, he saw his two men driving a car coming to pick him up.

“Good evening, Mr. Gennai. This man is....” Two men in suits saw Lei Yin dragging a corpse, can not help but somewhat surprise.

“You two put him in the trunk, and take him away to dispose of later.” With that, Lei Yin put down Jiro Yamahara’s body and then walked toward Ji Teba’s hiding place.

After the two men looked at each other, they immediately lifted the body into the trunk.

“Ji Teba, it is alright now, you can come out.” Lei Yin used the Nepali language to call out against the dark.

After a while, a thin figure slowly came out, the still shaken Nepalese teenager.

“Those, those two men, what about them?” The teenager was afraid to look at the two men standing ten meters away in front of him.

“It is okay now, let us get away from here.” With that, Lei Yin dragged the corpse of Kamata backward toward the car.

The teenager nervously followed him.

After the two corpses had been placed inside the trunk, Lei Yin

said to the two men: “You two take care of these two bodies carefully, remember never to let other people know. When you are done dealing with this corpses, take this kid to a safe place and let him have a good rest.”

“Yes, Mr. Gennai.”

“Yes, almost forgot, this kid may be implanted with a tracking device or something like that, you must first find a way to deactivate the device on his body before you take him to the safe place.”

“We will immediately call the expert to handle it. Please rest assured Mr. Gennai.”

Lei Yin nodded his head and then turned to the Nepalese teenager and said: “You go with them, they will take care of you. Within a day or two, I will go looking for you.”

“You do not come with me?” The teenager said nervously.

“No, I have to go back, or my friend would doubt me. Rest assured, they will take good care of you.” Lei Yin comforted him.

Although unwilling to leave his side, the teenager can only reluctantly get into the car.

After watching the car slowly drove away, Lei Yin lazily stretched his waist, and then slowly walked along the intersection.

Seemingly for a long time never wandering in the street, Lei Yin walked while thinking of things.

If he meets an opponent like Jiro Yamahara, he would be able to deal that one opponent with certainty. But if there are several of them coming at him at once, then it becomes more dangerous.

Although haste makes waste, in order to prevent one day being gang-up by Espers, he must think of a way to enhance his body's internal force as soon as possible.

While Lei Yin was still walking, a taxi suddenly stopped in front of him.

Then, a long haired girl walked out from the taxi.

After carefully looking at Lei Yin for a while, that girl suddenly rushed over.

“Senpai, it is really you.” The girl said with a pleasant surprise.

Lei Yin, who was thinking of things, suddenly heard a familiar sound. He looked up and saw a girl wearing a light green dress standing in front of him. That girl is Rumi.

Chapter 156 - Long Hair

“Rumi? Why are you here?” Lei Yin was a bit surprised to see the girl with the long hair before him.

“I was accompanying my classmate to a concert tonight. And as we were riding, we passed by you, I thought it was the wrong person, but it really is you senpai. Senpai, what brings you here?”

“Nothing, just accompanying my two classmates to a boring party. We’ve just finished, so I’m preparing to go back now.”

“You’re going back to school?”

“Yes.”

“But it’s already late, you should go home and rest for the night, don’t you still have classes tomorrow?”

Lei Yin looked at the time, and found that it was already past 11.

“Well, let’s go back together then.” Lei Yin thought about it, and nodded.

Rumi was very happy, pulling him to the parked taxi.

In the car, Lei Yin saw another girl with a short hair sitting inside, it seemed she was Rumi’s classmate.

“Senpai, she’s my classmate, Soseki Eimi. Eimi, this is Gennai Masashi, remember the senpai I was talking to you about. He’s now a student at Teikyo University first grade.” Rumi introduced them to each other.

“Hello.” Lei Yin greeted the girl with a smile.

“Hello.” Soseki Eimi’s face was red, as she said something in a low voice.

“Rumi, actually I don’t oppose.....” Lei Yin wasn’t able to finish, as his phone suddenly ringing.

As soon as Lei Yin answered, right away Takeda’s shouting voice came over the phone.

“Masashi, you bastard! Where did you go? Why did you suddenly turn off your phone? I thought you were dead!”

Because of all useless complaints, Lei Yin moved the phone a foot away from him.

After a while, when he heard him say “hello, hello” on the phone, Lei Yin pulled it back near his ear.

“I’m fine, I’m about to go home. Where are you?”

“I just came back from the hotel, this sucks, I just bought this suit and it’s already all wet....”

“Well, just tell me about it when we meet tomorrow.” Lei Yin didn’t want to hear any more of it, and immediately hung up.

“Senpai, was that your classmate?” Rumi asked.

“Yes, he is a very troublesome guy.”

“What did you just want to tell me?”

“Well, although I was interrupted in the middle of my preaching, but it’s not going to be long. You girls wanting to go watch a concert or a movie is very normal, but next time don’t be so late, understand?”

“I’m sorry, senpai.” Rumi said, as she lowered her head.

“Fool, I’m not blaming you, just worried that something might happen to you.” Seeing Rumi being serious, Lei Yin reworded what he had said, so as to avoid giving off a heavy feeling.

“Gennai-senpai, in fact I’m the one who pulled Rumi along, please don’t blame her. Because it was hard to find a taxi, so I dragged her until this late at night.” Soseki Eimi timidly explained.

“It seems like I turned into a nasty warden uncle. Well, next time

this happens, remember to give me a call, and I'll come to pick you up."

"Thank you, senpai." Rumi looked at him without blinking.

Soseki Eimi looked at them at the side with a strange look.

Because of the traffic on the nearby route, the taxi had to take the long route.

"Senpai, I heard there was a fire at a nearby hotel, but fortunately you weren't there." Rumi said as she looked at the crowd who were nearby the traffic.

"Sorry, I just came out from there. The fire at Keio Hotel, I was also there with my classmates, because of the fire incident, I ran away from there."

"Were you hurt?" Rumi held his hand, and very nervously asked.

"Rest assured, I'm all right. In fact, my classmate just called me because of that event, and seems like he had also safely returned."

Hearing Lei Yin's answer, Rumi was finally relieved.

Half an hour later, after Rumi sent Soseki Eimi home, and since Rumi's room wasn't too far, she suddenly proposed to walk there.

“Hey, it’s already very late.” Lei Yin warned.

“We haven’t talked for so long senpai, just this once, please?” Rumi’s beautiful eyes widened, as she begged him.

“I really don’t know what to do with you.” saying this, he walked towards the taxi.

After paying the fare, Lei Yin turned his head towards her and said, “Good, let’s walk fast.”

Rumi very excitedly rushed over, grasping his arm.

“I thought you’d grown up a little, but it seems like you’re still a kid.” Lei Yin doted on her, and pinched her face.

“Senpai you too haven’t changed, always treating me like a child.” Rumi blushed as she said.

“You are still a kid. But to be honest, I don’t know how I’ll get used to what you’ll be like when you grow up.” Lei Yin grabbed his chin as he said so.

Hearing him talk with a father-like tone, Rumi couldn’t help but smile.

“Senpai, it’s the first time I’ve seen you put on a suit.” The young kendo girl suddenly stared at him.

“I also don’t like it and I’ve also thought of going there while wearing a t-shirt, but I was afraid I would appall everyone there.” Just like for so many years, Lei Yin still didn’t like wearing suits.

“But it looks very good on you.” Rumi lowered her head, and said something in faint voice.

The kendo girl had mixed feelings. She haven’t seen him for nearly two weeks, and seeing him here, was an enormous surprise for her. But now, seeing his neatly-slender figure, she suddenly felt like his back was getting farther and farther.

Her senpai wasn’t like all the boys she had met before. He had always been so calm and elegant. And seeing him put on a suit, he gave off a mature feeling to her.

Although their age difference was only two years. But in her senpai’s eyes, she seems to be just a child who was slowly growing up.

She desperately wanted to go to University with him, just to keep up with his pace.

However, can she really keep up with him? Rumi was suddenly agitated.

“What’s wrong?” Seeing Rumi suddenly stop, Lei Yin, puzzled, looked at her.

The kendo girl didn't make any sound, and after a few minutes she slowly raised her head.

Lei Yin was taken aback, and didn't know since when the girl's eyes were so full of water.

"Rumi, what happened, is someone bullying you?" Lei Yin tried to make his voice calm.

The girl shook her head, and then fell into his arms, her two hands fiercely held around his waist.

"Rumi, tell me, what really happened?" Lei Yin asked, softly stroking her long hair.

Rumi shook her head again, and whispered: "Senpai, I'm fine."

"Are you really fine?"

"Um, I'm just thinking about you a lot." The young girl looked at Lei Yin, and smiled.

Looking at the young girl's beautiful face filled with tears, Lei Yin was taken aback.

Somehow, the little girl had grown into a lovely girl.

“You almost scared me to death.” After getting his composure back, Lei Yin lifted his right hand and gently wiped the tears from the corner of her eyes.

The young girl stuck out her tongue, and leaned her head on his chest.

So long as I can keep on being at senpai’s side, it will be enough. The young girl had a sudden sweet thought in her heart, after all this time, this was the first time she was so intimate with her senpai, while being in his arms, she felt as if she had ripped off some profit.

“Rumi, your hair is longer compared to before, isn’t it troublesome to take care of it?”

Although the young girl was in a happy mood at this moment, but Lei Yin on the other hand felt a little awkward. Since he couldn’t shove her away, he had to say something to ease up the mood.

“No, I gradually got used to it. Just that I use up shampoo really fast, and about half a month I’d have to buy a new one again.” Still in his arms, the girl innocently replied.

“It turned out to be this way.” Lei Yin didn’t know what to say for the first time, and had a strange feeling.

“Senpai, do you prefer girls with long hair?” The girl suddenly asked a strange question.

“Not necessarily, a singer doesn’t need to be good at singing, just like how a person wearing someone’s clothes, doesn’t instantly make him thief, it could have been just a belonging of the person’s family. Some people wearing casual clothes appear very pleasing to the eyes. So with regards to hair length, it would also be different from person to person.

“But you used to say so.” Rumi angrily said in a charming way.

“What did I say before?” Lei Yin was a bit stunned.

‘Sometimes senpai’s very nasty, always forgetting what he had said to me. He must have forgotten, that he said before to me that girls looks better with long hair, so I had deliberately made my hair longer, but for him to say such a thing.’ The girl thought angrily.

“Then I’ll cut my hair tomorrow, ok?” The girl asked tentatively.

“If that’s what you like. But from my perspective, it would be such a pity, it actually looks good on you.” Lei Yin gently stroked her long hair.

“You swindler, I’m going to keep it even though it’s extremely exhausting, only a moment ago I wasn’t really planning to cut it.” The girl was suddenly very happy, and made a funny face to him.

She was still unclear why she had cried a while ago, but now she had become increasingly happy. Looking at her funny yet lovable face, Lei Yin felt it was harder to understand the thought of this little rascal more and more. Well, if I don't understand, then I won't think about it,' this has always been how Lei Yin was like.

“Rumi, it's very late now, let's go back.”

“Un.” The young girl complied and moved like a cat.

After a while, seeing that the little girl in his arms didn't want to let go of him, Lei Yin smiled bitterly.

—

“Last night, I've suffered heavy losses, especially the new suit that I bought. I don't even know if it can still be dry cleaned.” Takeda sighed.

“Since you like that suit so much, why don't you make a funeral for it, and tell your family to bury your body wearing it.” Yoshikawa sneered.

“You bastard, do you dare say that again.” Takeda's anger rose.

“Hey, you two are being noisy.” Lei Yin looked away from the book he was reading.

“This guy started it.” Takeda’s anger still didn’t disappear.

Lei Yin and Yoshikawa looked at him, and found that there were eye bags under his eyes, and looked as if he couldn’t sleep last night.

“Yoshikawa, some things can’t be forced. Think carefully.” Lei Yin said dismissively.

Yoshikawa glanced at him, then laughed, “You’re right, but I’m also not willing to give up. Am I mean? The more a person want to buy the same thing, the more he’ll be able to become aware that the salesperson is a fraud.” His laughter was filled with a bitter taste.

“Although I want to sympathise with you, but I always thought that the way you speak resemble that of a complaining woman.”

Yoshikawa couldn’t help but laugh out loud.

“That guy seems somewhat strange today.” Takeda walked towards Shiraishi Akira and whispered.

“Nothing, that fellow just has some excessive hormone, causing it to flow out.” Shiraishi Akira replied.

“What do you mean?” Takeda continued to ask.

“If a woman shows up during spring, then the man would go into heat.” Shiraishi Akira’s expression didn’t change as he said so.

Takeda almost laughed out, but he quickly put his hand on his mouth, looking somewhat funny.

Just as they were talking, Lei Yin’s phone suddenly rang.

In less than a minute, Lei Yin finished and hung up the phone.

“I’ll be going out, take your time, but remember to lock the door when you leave.” Lei Yin said at the entrance, putting on his shoes.

“Do you think we’re idiots, such a trifle matter doesn’t need to be reminded.” Takeda was somewhat dissatisfied.

“You are more troublesome than idiots, at least they won’t fight in other people’s house.” Lei Yin once again indirectly attacked Takeda and Yoshikawa, and finally left the apartment like a typhoon.

“Leave, you boring fellow.” Takeda showed him his middle finger.

When Lei Yin was driving, his car was just like how a snake would insert itself towards the front, his car crossing over to other cars like in a drag race. After about an hour and a half later, Lei Yin

drove to a very secluded place at the suburb.

Finally, he parked his car in front of what seemed to be an old wooden cabin.

Behind the wooden cabin, a black Honda was parked.

Although it was an old house, but the doorbell, was a peephole that was still commonly used.

After pressing the doorbell several time, a young man dressed in casual clothes opened the door. The man was the one who picked up Lei Yin last night.

“Hello, Gennai-san.” The man bowed towards him.

“Take me to see the little rascal.”

“Yes.” The young man closed the door behind him, and took him inside.

After opening the door, he also saw the other man there, who had also came to pick him up last night. But this time, his left hand was tied with white bandages.

Walking towards the bed, he carefully looked at the Nepal youth who was on the bed, Lei Yin asked the man strapped with bandage on his hand: “What’s going on?”

“You’ve returned Gennai-san, actually I’m also not very clear with it. At noon today, I brought food, and I don’t know why, but this child suddenly lost his mind, and desperately tried to get out, continually scratching the wall like a cat, and finally he bit my hand. So we had no choice but to knock him out.

“When he went crazy, describe to me what he looked like.” Lei Yin’s heart moved, and he thought that Jiro, definitely, had something to do with it.

The man, with an injured left hand, with a lingering fear said: “He looked very strange, both of his eyes became red. Moreover, he was extremely strong and aggressive, although his nails weren’t very long, but we were still scratched by him several times. In short he looked like a wild beast.”

“Is there anything else?”

“There is still one thing left, just as we helped him change his clothes, we saw....”

After a while, listening to the man, Lei Yin fell into deep thought.

It seems that he had accidentally gotten himself involved into other people’s matters once again.

Chapter 157 - Backing

When the Nepalese youth woke up, he saw Lei Yin standing with the two men and talking to them.

“You, you finally came.” The youth was pleasantly surprised, and immediately crawled out of the bed.

“How are you, is there any part of your body that feels uncomfortable?” Lei Yin turned to look at him.

The youth shook his head, “When did you arrive?”

“I just came, are you hungry? Let’s eat first.” Lei Yin received a lunch box from one of the men.

The youth hadn’t eaten all day, and he was really hungry. So, after opening the lunch box, he gobbled it all up.

“You two go outside, I have something to talk about with him.” Lei Yin said to the two men.

After saluting him, the two men left the room.

After waiting for him to finish eating, Lei Yin said to the youth: “Ji Teba, there is something I want to ask you.”

What is it?” The youth put down the teacup in his hand.

“Do you still remember what happened at noon?”

“I don’t remember.” The youth didn’t dare look at his eyes.

“Ji Teba, there are some things that can’t be resolved as long as it is buried. In your present situation, even if you return to Nepal, what use would it be?”

“I, I really don’t know what you’re saying?”

“Don’t tell me you don’t remember losing your mind. Also, don’t tell me that, that thing of yours is inborn.” Lei Yin suddenly tore off his clothes.

The youth suddenly screamed, and immediately jumped away from Lei Yin. Heading straight towards the bed, he covered his body with the bed sheet.

Seeing the youth looking at him with a very terrified look, Lei Yin didn’t stop and instead walked towards him.

Seeing that Lei Yin was getting closer to him, the youth shrunk his head like a wounded beast and started roaring loudly.

When Lei Yin was at his side, he instantly moved his finger towards several of his meridian, immediately stopping the youth’s squeals. Then, Lei Yin grasped his head with both of his hands to

make him face him.

“You listen to me, you’ll only tell me the things that happened to you without excluding anything, I have a way to help you. Otherwise, you’ll never be a normal person again.” Lei Yin said loudly to him.

The youth was awed by how loud his voice was, and could only stare at him.

Taking advantage of this opportunity, Lei Yin continued: “You’ll have to believe me, maybe I can help you restore your original appearance.”

Hearing the words “Restore your original appearance”, the youth’s eyes revealed some anger.

He tried to speak with his mouth opened, but couldn’t say anything.

Seeing that he had something to say to him, Lei Yin immediately touched his meridians.

“You...you can really change me back to how I looked before?” Tears were streaming down the youth’s face, as he looked at Lei Yin.

“Although I can’t guarantee it, but I’ll help you with everything I have.”

The youth began to calm down, and the startled look in his eyes disappeared.

“My body can turn into this, it was created by those bad people.” The youth finally, slowly, began to talk.

“Are you referring to those people wearing white clothes?”

Hearing those men with white clothes, a frightened expression appeared on Ji Teba’s face, and he then nodded.

After 10 minutes of telling his painful story, the youth collapsed on his knees as he tried to stand up.

“So, if you didn’t take the medicine they give you in a certain period of time, you’ll go mad?” Lei Yin asked.

“I’m not sure, I only know that if we don’t eat those pills, my body would sometimes become very hot, just like when you have fever. And then, at the time when I woke up, I had already become a mess, and my fingers, as well as my lips, were bleeding. I think it’s due to my own doings.” The youth said with his head down.

“Then the hair on your body, did it also emerge after you were injected?”

The youth sorrowfully nodded, “I’ve tried to pull it out, but it

would always grow back.”

“How many people did you run away with?”

“That night almost all the people there ran away, but many of those were gunned down, and died while trying to escape. So, those who had escaped shouldn’t be many. However, Brother Ye Bin had certainly successfully escaped, because he is a very intelligent person. I was together with him, but we soon separated because of the chaos.”

“Is, Brother Ye Bin, the person you said who was also Nepalese?”

“Yes, in there, not many were Nepal, in addition to me there were only five people.”

“Who were they? I mean, which country were the people there from?”

“There were seven or eight Vietnamese, more than 10 Chinese, and more than 20 Malaysian. There was also a man with golden hair, I’m guessing he may be American, but Brother Ye Bin said that foreigners looked, almost, all the same. So, even, he couldn’t guess which country the man was from.” With the gradually deepening conversation, the youth talked more and more smoothly.

Although his guess was about the same, but Lei Yin still felt uncomfortable in his heart.

It seemed those people, who were crazily being experimented, are some of the illegal immigrants smuggled into Japan, so they didn't need to worry about where the body came from, nor did they fear that others would investigate it. But even illegal immigrants that are captured can't be sent to the lab right away, without the assistance of the government officials, the darkness involved may be going much deeper than he had expected.

However, this matter unexpectedly involved people, regarding this, Lei Yin didn't know, if he should step in and investigate the matter himself.

The reason being, just like how Jiro had thousands of reasons to die, was because if he stepped in to investigate, even if he was careful, there would still be a chance that his identity would be found. He wasn't afraid of the people that were going to get him, but that they'll move in towards his family or friends. This was something Lei Yin didn't want to see. So, now he needed to find a man who can replace him, and with the use of the power of the Black Dragon behind him, he could conduct an investigation. And at the time he gets the evidence, he could then expose it all through someone.

‘An agent?’ A face suddenly emerged in Lei Yin's mind.

—

Seeing Tsukada's expression, as if he had just attended a funeral, several other police officers laughed gleefully.

“Let me guess, that snow woman scolded you, didn’t she?” Sanada Daisuke grasped his own chin, and asked.

Tsukuda then furiously threw the report, in his hand, onto the table, and then grumbled: “I wonder what that woman ate, recently she has been scolding me almost every day. If this is because she’s on her period, then this is just too long.”

“I had already reminded you, that recently her complexion looks very bad, probably because of a family matter. At this time, you should be careful not to make any mistakes, but you’re always so careless, you should know that she’d even notice little things like, when you read magazine during work.”

“I didn’t imagine that it would be this bad.” Tsukuda said with regret.

“But there’s something I just don’t understand, why does she tell you to investigate a college student named Gennai Masashi. This kid looks like he’s just an ordinary student, more importantly he doesn’t have any criminal record, it’s really strange.” Sanada Daisuke looked at the photos in the report, as he spoke.

“Who know what that woman is thinking. Perhaps she sees something in this guy. Or perhaps, she’s using the guise of work, for her own interest, and help her look up other....” Tsukuda wasn’t able to finish what he was saying, when Sanada Daisuke suddenly patted him hard.

“What?” Tsukuda was a little discontented for being interrupted, but he quickly knew the reason why he did that.

He saw Eiko Kotoshi wearing a black skirt, walking out of her office.

“Battalion Adviser, please take care.” All the police officers immediately saluted to her.

After all the police saluted, she said to them: “You can go back earlier.”

“Thanks.”

After going out of the criminal department, all of the police officers couldn't help but relax.

“Why, why is she going early today, she usually works till late at night.” Sanada Daisuke felt it was strange.

“She probably has an appointment; didn't you see the violet flowers sent for her downstairs?” Another police officer replied.

“I didn't think that someone would pursue that woman. But why must they send her a violet flower instead of a red rose?”

“How would I know? But to be honest, that woman Eiko Kotoshi is actually pretty good. Out of all the female officers in Tokyo,

she's the most beautiful one, she also had a deadly figure, unfortunately her character isn't good. Alas." Sanada Daisuke said while shaking his head.

Several other officers also felt the same, and nodded.

.....

"Eiko, I want to talk to you about something." As she was eating, Sayaka Kotoshi suddenly said something to Eiko Kotoshi.

"What's the matter?" Eiko Kotoshi raised her head, and looked at her mother.

The more than 40 year old Sayaka Kotoshi suddenly blushed, and after a moment, said: "Yesterday, Yaetera proposed to me, and I, I don't know if I should accept or not."

Hearing her mother's words, Eiko Kotoshi's face instantly sank.

"This kind of thing, you decide on your own. I've had enough." With that, the police woman stood up, and walked to her room.

"Eiko...." Sayaka Kotoshi shouted at her, but the Eiko didn't stop.

After seeing her daughter close the door, Sayaka Kotoshi was at a loss.

And at the same time, on the other side of the door, Eiko Kotoshi was also distressed.

Why mother, why would you marry that kind of unbearably rude man? The policewoman furiously threw the pillow on the ground.

Dad, if you don't come back, my mother would no longer be your wife.

Eiko Kotoshi looked at the photo on top of her bed, staring at the photo inside the frame, there was a gentle man holding a baby. And next to him, was a young Sayaka Kotoshi.

Actually, deep down in heart, she had always sympathised with her mother for being alone for eight years. Eight entire years... How much of a woman's life was eight years? A lot that's how much.

Although she intellectually understood, but she just couldn't accept her mother with another man, particularly a, huge, uneducate like Yaetera.

Although she urgently wanted to find her father's whereabouts, but the recent investigation amount to nothing. Looking into the

Police Department's personnel file, she found that there weren't many people that had the surname "Goyama", but the total number of people who had that surname exceeded a hundred. After some screening, she only chose the people between the ages of 30 and 60, and then analyzed their information one by one. After that, she divided them once more, which resulted with only 30 people remaining. Among these thirty men, she carefully looked at their information, but she found that they weren't actually in any especially suspicious place. Moreover, these people lived all across Japan, so it was impossible for her to track them one by one. As a result, her investigation reached a bottleneck.

She even suspected, that the person, whom her father talked to that year, "Goyama" may not at all be in those personnel files.

This wasn't based on mere speculation, and as far as she knew, from the personnel file in the police force, although it was the most detailed registration system of the population, but that was only the case for public people. For those in high position, it would be nearly impossible to find any information of them.

After so many years, the so-called "Goyama" the chance that he had achieved a higher social class, was very likely.

She urgently wanted to know the truth, but she couldn't find a single clue, feeling that she was powerless, she felt irritated.

Perhaps I shouldn't be a police women, but rather run for congress, maybe that would give me access to some inside information. Eiko Kotoshi self-depreciatingly thought.

At this time, she suddenly remembered something, and then took out a card from her pocket.

This card was with the ribbon wrapped around the violet flower sent to her today.

At first, she thought that the flowers were sent to her by one of the men pursuing her, but now that she looked at it, that was an unlikely case. Because there was nothing written on the card, except for an email address. After she asked the person responsible for delivering the flower, she only got to know that the person was a man wearing a suit and sunglasses, so the man wasn't able to see that man's appearance.

Seeing that the end of the email address was "Hotmail.com", she immediately sat on her chair, and turned on her computer.

After opening the computer, she opened MSN, and logged into her email account, and then searched the email address written on the card.

After some searching, she soon found the email-address.

She found that the person using the email address was online, so she put his email address in her MSN.

Haven't been added for a long time, the other person suddenly sent over a message: I've been waiting for you for a long time.

Who are you? Eiko Kotoshi replied.

I won't tell you, but that's not the point. The point is, I have the information you need.

What information?

About your investigation regarding that monster.

Seeing these words, the policewoman's heart quickly jumped.

Who are you really? The policewoman typed the same thing, she just did earlier.

I have already said that's not the main point. If you don't believe me, then just act as though you don't know my existence.

Well, I believe you. The policewoman was afraid that he would log out, so she had immediately replied.

To be honest, I don't have too much data at hand right now, but I know from where that monster came from. In addition, I will continue tracking down who is the head behind the scenes. In the future if I get more information, I will continue communicating with you through MSN. Now, I'll only tell you once, but in order to not be detected, I want you to read it quickly, and immediately delete it, in addition to that, the card must be immediately

destroyed.

I promise you that. Please tell me quickly. Eiko Kotoshi's heart started beating faster and faster.

An hour later, the mysterious man responded to the policewoman's question, and logged off of MSN.

And only then, Eiko Kotoshi finally loosened her left hand which was making a fist that was full of sweat.

Although, she has some doubts about the mysterious person, but her hunch said that what the person said was all true.

Thinking of that, Eiko Kotoshi immediately deleted the message, and after remembering his email address, she burnt the card.

She suddenly felt that she had a strong backing. Making Eiko Kotoshi feel her body lighter, the sense of oppression, that she didn't know when had started, had been reduced by half.

What kind of person is that fellow?

Chapter 158 - Injury

After closing the laptop with his hand, Lei Yin walked to the living room.

Seeing the half lying on the couch already asleep Naoko, he smiled slightly.

After turning off the television, he went to the sofa next to her and sat down, enjoying her tranquil and serene sleeping appearance.

The delicate and beautiful features, the crystal clear and transparent comparable to finest white jade, slightly pink color of the skin, constituted a completely without-the-need-for-makeup-already-enough-to-excite stunning face.

The few beautiful strands of jet-black and bright long hair can not conceal her slender snow-white neck. In contrast to the average size of Asian women, her not even inferior to the European and American female impressive twin peaks fluctuated up and down along with her regular breathing.

Behind that loose nightdress hem, a pair of white and slender, causing breathing to stop, perfect leg line were revealed to him. And at the bottom of that pair of slender, beautiful legs, there is a pair of exquisite delicacy, making one unable to bear but want to hold that jade feet in the hands, to carefully appreciate.

Looking at that half lying on the sofa the completely ripe

outstandingly beautiful stunner, Lei Yin felt a fire started to burn in his heart.

Did not have the heart to wake her up, Lei Yin adjusted her breathing, and then carefully lifted her up.

Although his action was very light, the sleeping beauty still woke up.

“Lei.” Naoko rubbed her sleepy eyes with the back of her hand.

“I am sorry, for waking you up.” Lei Yin lowered his head and kissed her on the cheek.

Naoko shook her head, “Just unwittingly fell asleep. Have you finished using the computer?”

“Yes. Told you not to wait for me, really do not know what to do with you.” Lei Yin discovered that the just awakened Naoko has the usually can not be seen seductive appearance.

“People just want to wait for you.” Naoko held his neck like a pampered little girl.

Lei Yin smiled, and could not help but lean forward to kiss her luscious red lips.

The sleeping beauty with a slight moaning voice gently

responded.

After turning the light off, Lei Yin held her as he walked into the room. Seemingly knew what was going to happen next, Naoko's body suddenly became very hot and then very shyly buried her head in his arms.

After placing Naoko down, Lei Yin followed to crawl up to sit back on the bed, and then picked her up in his arms.

"What did the doctor say in today's follow-up appointment?" Lei Yin asked while slowly stroking her hair.

"She said I am in a stable condition, and no sign of any deterioration of the heart, so do not worry about it." Naoko affectionately stroked her lover's face.

"Going to the hospital for a follow-up is such a big thing, you should notify me to go with you. In short, in the future, no matter what happens, be sure to let me know, you know?"

"Em, I know." She very meekly complied, head leaning on his arms.

After a while, Naoko, as if she was dreaming, whispered: "Lei, I beg you, no matter happens, do not leave me okay?"

"Fool, how all of a sudden say that? Do not let your imagination run wild."

“I know I am silly, maybe it is because I am too happy, so I am more and more afraid to lose you.”

“Never, I promise you.” Lei Yin full of love and affection kissed her on the forehead.

“Lei, you will spoil me.” Naoko foolishly gazed at her.

“Fool.” Lei Yin smiled and gave her a kiss.

“Lei....” Her mood surging up, Naoko could no longer restrain herself, clinging to him. Really did not know how to love him, she wished she could be dissolved into his body, becoming a part of him.

After cuddling for a while, Lei Yin held her elegant jade foot and played with it.

Even after experiencing countless centuries, Lei Yin rarely saw such a perfect woman like Naoko.

First, regardless of her gentle and submissive personality, her appearance alone is enough to make most of the women feel envy and jealous.

As long as it is a normal man, he believes no one can resist the charm of dressing up or in a miniskirt Naoko which can almost

poison people's mind.

If a man sees her directly, he would first be attracted to her erect and protruding chest as well as her slender legs, and then her beautiful face. But if it is from behind or the side, the men's first line of sight is usually focused on her feet.

Slender and rounded thighs, the beautiful line of the lower legs, the thick fiber suitable for leg ankles, and then the white as jade beautiful feet. If coupled with a pair of narrow high-heeled shoes, it can absolutely cause all men horny in a matter of seconds.

Lei Yin did not have foot fetish, but he also unable to put her foot down.

Although Lei Yin is a man who experienced the era of female foot-binding, in his view, the foot-binding kind of thing is really devastating to woman's mental and physical state.

Though Naoko did not bind her feet, they seemed to be very slim and lovely. There are no calluses, no sharp nails, and no deformation of toes. Only, like the other places, delicate skin, clean, smooth, and wonderful to touch, as well as toenails that exude a pearl-like shiny light.

Knowing that he liked to play with her feet, Naoko tried very hard to maintain her feet. Usually tried not to use a tight, high-heeled shoes, everyday after the bath maintained her thigh and feet with moisturizer, and then tried to take time each day to go to the gymnastic class. In addition, she also participated in cooking

classes to learn to cook new dishes. She did everything, just to let her beloved man happy. These were all known to Lei Yin, therefore toward this stunner who always tries so hard to please him, his heart is filled with pity.

Could not help but also hold her other leg with his hands to slowly appreciate it, Lei Yin lowered his head to kiss the beautiful jade's eyes in his bosom.

“Naoko, you are so beautiful. If there are angels in this world, I think you are one of them.”

“Since when....did you become a liar?” Naoko coquettishly looked at him, her breathing became rapid.

“Fool, I am telling the truth.” Lei Yin lifted one of her jade foot to his lips and kissed it. There was no unusual smell, just a touch of moisturizer fragrance.

“No....it is so dirty there....” Naoko uncontrollably called out, her cheeks appeared like the alluring peach blossom, and her watery eyes were looking at him.

Seeing her passion surged up, Lei Yin's left hand continued to play with her feet, his right hand slowly stretched out along her jade-white leg into the inside of her nightdress.

Feeling the thin layer of cotton was wet, Lei Yin whispered in her ear: “You know, I am just touching your feet, but it has already

turned you on like this.”

“Hateful....do not say that.” Naoko’s breathing was getting heavier, at this time she started to feel her physique became excessively sensitive, as well as feeling endlessly ashamed and angry.

Lei Yin suddenly remembered something, so he leaned close to her ear and said: “Let you try something new.” With that, he gathered his internal force into his right hand, and then lightly delivered it out through his hand, slowly stimulating the sensitive spot on her genital with his internal force.

Soon, Naoko felt a faint trace of familiar warm-water-like air current constantly invading her like a snake.

“What....how....” After a while, never experiencing this fantastic pleasure constantly escalating and spreading throughout her body, Naoko felt she was about to collapse.

After she adapted to the low-level stimulation flow, Lei Yin slowly increased the stimulation flow rate on her sensitive spot.

Before long, Naoko thought she was going to go crazy. This kind of infinitely increasing pleasurable sensation made her uncontrollably groaned, the sound was also getting more and more loud. For a time, the entire room echoed with the moan of a mature woman which can make anyone blush and increase heartbeat.

“Lei....” Naoko almost whiningly called out a name.

“Do you want it?”

Naoko full of shame nodded her head, and then looked at him with pleading eyes.

“What do you want?” Lei Yin while continued to stimulate with his internal force, his right hand also began to rapidly fiddle.

Naoko suddenly uttered a sad call like a wounded reindeer.

“Lei....do not....bully me like this....” Being stimulated in various ways, Naoko’s naturally sensitive physique could no longer withstand the stimulation and cried.

Did not have the heart to continue to tease her, Lei Yin tenderly kissed away the tears in her eyes. And then gently pulled off her nightdress as well as pulling down the completely soaking wet cotton panties.

“Lei....” Naoko, with her perfectly delicate naked body, looked at her absentmindedly with teary eyes.

“Sweetheart, relax.” Lei Yin kissed her red lips and then switched off the desk lamp. His hands began to walk forward slowly, gently teasing her.

Soon, the darkness once again echoed the uncontrollable delicate moan of Naoko.

—

In the morning, the half asleep half awake Naoko subconsciously hugged to the side, but only caught empty air.

‘He is gone?’ Naoko felt very lost looking at the empty pillow.

However, when she heard the sound of rushing water coming from the bathroom, she smiled.

She put out her hand to prop up her body but found out her body did not have even a little bit of strength. Slightly pulled up the bed cover to look inside, she saw above the bed sheet was a mess, her whole face immediately blushed.

Although they have not seen each other for several days, the bad guy really went too far last night. If not for her continuous plead, she would not know when it would end.

Naoko bashfully breathed his smell on the pillow happily.

After a while, the rushing water stopped. Knowing that he will soon come out, Naoko did not know how to face him, and had to close her eyes pretending to sleep.

Lei Yin with a faint scent of shower gel walked to the bedside and sat down. Watching her, in spite of everything, blushing face, he felt at peace. When hearing Naoko's sometimes slow sometimes fast breathing, Lei Yin knew she was awake.

Gently smiled, like last night, he hugged her in his arms

"Fool, when are you going to stop pretending still asleep?" Lei Yin said with a smile in her ear.

"How did you know?" Naoko whispered with a flushed face.

"By listening to your breathing." Really loved her shy look, Lei Yin could not help but try to kiss her.

"No, I have not brush my teeth." Naoko slightly turned her head to the side.

"Fool, I am not afraid of that, what are you afraid of."

"No, so dirty." Naoko pleaded.

"Really do not know what to do with you, want to take a shower together?" Lei Yin's hand slowly stroked her smooth upturned ass.

"But had not you just washed?" Naoko's breathing started to become rapid.

“Just now I washed myself, but now I help you wash, how is it the same?” Lei Yin smiled evilly.

“Bad guy....” Being hugged in his arms to stand up, Naoko charmingly beat his chest.

After having the lunch, watching Naoko fully absorbed in cutting the Pear from the side, Lei Yin had the feeling of appreciating a beautiful painting. But he believed no one’s work is better than what he had right now.

“You really do not need me to stay with you?” After she cut the fruit, Lei Yin rubbed her face with his left hand.

Naoko shook her head, then gently smiled and said: “You still have classes, and your college is too far away from here. It is enough if you can come to see me every week.”

“Putting off such a beautiful fiancée to read those outdated textbooks, no matter what benefit is there, is just too silly. Therefore, from now on, I will often come to see you. Do not worry, I will try to slow down a little bit.” Lei Yin put her index finger into his mouth and gently bit it.

Naoko laid down sideways to put her head on his lap and then looked at his face in a daze.

“Lei, why are you so good to me?”

“You are really a fool.” Lei Yin bowed his head to suck away her tears.

—

When Lei Yin returned to the college, it was already four o'clock in the afternoon.

This was no problem for the completely serious in skipping classes Lei Yin, but the dinner is going to be in an hour.

Suddenly, his cell phone rang. He looked at the numbers shown above and then received the call.

“Takeda is it?”

“Bastard, where have you been? Why is your phone always off, what do you think your phone is for? I have been looking for you all day.” Takeda yelled on the phone.

Because he didn't want to be disturbed, Lei Yin had a habit of shutting off his phone whenever he meets with Naoko. The complaint of the angry youth was just a wind blow to him.

“Say it, what happened? Do not tell me you look for me just to find someone to take you to dinner.” Lei Yin said as he yawned.

“Assh*le, this is about your sister. Your sister was injured, and

now she is in the college's infirmary.”

“Where are you? I will be right there.” Lei Yin immediately ran to the clinic while talking on the phone.

Chapter 159 - Reason Things Out

Under the fluttering light music in a cafe, a pair of man and woman seemed to be talking. However, at this moment, the face of that seemingly 30-something years of age man appeared to be bitter.

“Eiko, your request for me this time is really difficult to do.” The Inspector Police Officer Watanabe frowned, unconsciously used a spoon to stir the cup of coffee before him.

“Since you do not want to help, then just forget what I just said.” With that, the female police stood up and walked to the counter. She always has this habit of going Dutch.

“Eiko, wait a minute, that is not what I mean. Sit down for a minute okay?” Watanabe Muramasa immediately stopped her.

If this was just a typical case, Eiko Kotoshi would never consider of staying. But this matter is important, after taking a glance at the man in front of her, she finally sat back to her seat.

“You are still so impulsive. I am not saying I would not help you, at most, after I go back, I will ask my uncle, who worked in the National Archives for two years to help you find what you are looking for.” Inspector Police Officer Watanabe somewhat reluctantly said.

After getting a call from her last night, Watanabe was thrilled, thinking that she finally figured it out, ready to accept him.

Although on the phone, she was just asking him out for a talk, he fell into men's common wishful thinking, thinking that she was just finding an excuse to take the initiative to go out with him. Now he knew she really has something that needed his help. If this was just a regular request, no matter what the request from the beauty was, he would go all out to help her. But her request was very troublesome.

Hearing that he was willing to help, Eiko Kotoshi smiled, "Thank you, Mr. Watanabe."

Watanabe Muramasa just stared at her rare smile. He could not think that this usually impassive-looking snow woman has such a moving smile. Sometimes he himself does not understand, a thirty years old police officer with a bright future like him has met with not a few women, but he has always been obsessed with this woman, feeling like the first love of a high school student.

After failing to react, to cover up his gaffe, Watanabe Muramasa asked: "Eiko, why do you want to investigate this man name 'Goyama,' can't you find him inside the police personnel file system?"

"I tried to find in the personnel file system, but did not find what I was looking for. Otherwise, I would not have to trouble you."

Watanabe Muramasa also knew about the inside of the Police Department's Personnel File System, so her answer did not surprise him.

“You are too kind. Your business is my business, and I will certainly do my best to help you.”

“Thank you very much. If there are any results, please let me know as soon as possible.” Regarding Watanabe Muramasa’s words that almost implied a confession, Eiko Kotoshi pretended not to understand.

Looking at her calm expression, Watanabe Muramasa could not help but become a bit discouraged. But he immediately perked up, pulling out two movie tickets from his body.

“Eiko, before I came, I bought two tickets. I heard from the review that this film is incredible, let us go look at it after this.”

Looking at the two movie tickets that were placed on the table by Watanabe Muramasa, Eiko Kotoshi frowned.

“Okay then.” After considering for a moment, the female police finally nodded. After all, she just asked other people for help, so now is not the right time to reject. Thus, it can be seen that Eiko Kotoshi is not an ungrateful woman.

Seeing her agreed to his invitation, Watanabe Muramasa was jubilant.

“Mr. Watanabe, do you usually play with MSN?” Eiko Kotoshi looked at him and suddenly asked a sentence.

“What, SN?” Only caught the last two letters, Watanabe Muramasa almost spurted out the coffee in his mouth.

“It is MSN, forget it, just pretend I did not say it.”

‘It seems like he is not that person,’ Eiko Kotoshi thought in her mind.

—

Teikyo University is a private school, so the facilities inside are quite perfect. Even the clinic is much bigger than the average University, looking like a mini hospital.

At the moment in a health care room, two women were talking.

“You should not have told my brother about this.” Kazumi sighed.

“Why?” Take Asasei curiously asked.

“If he knows, there will certainly be chaos.”

“You mean....”

Before she finished, the sound of knocking suddenly came from the door.

Take Asasei quickly stood up to open the door.

Opening the door, she saw the somewhat sweating on the forehead Lei Yin standing outside.

“Is Kazumi inside?” Seeing his sister’s classmate, Lei Yin immediately asked.

“She is inside.” Take Asasei moved aside to let him in.

Lei Yin walked in and, sure enough, he saw Kazumi laying on the bed. Her foot was covered with a white gauze.

“Kazumi, what happened to you?” Lei Yin came to her bedside and asked.

“Brother, I am fine, do not worry,” Kazumi said with a smile.

“What did the doctor say? The injury is serious or not?”

“The school nurse said my foot just has an ordinary muscle sprain, in a few days, it would be fine.”

Hearing her saying that, Lei Yin felt much relieved. He now noticed that not only her foot but even her arms also have several band-aids.

“How did you get injured?” Lei Yin sat down on a chair by the bedside.

“I just accidentally tripped over.”

“Is it true?”

“Of course, it is true, why would I lie to you?”

Lei Yin did not say anything, just looked at her eyes. After a while, he suddenly said: “Kazumi, you are not a careless person, you are lying.”

“How could I, do not randomly guess.” Kazumi’s heart was a bit surprise, immediately pretended to be angry and turned her head to the other side.

Seeing her reaction, Lei Yin suddenly looked back and said to Take Asasei: “Which bastard did this?”

“It is Okada from the Basketball Club....ah!” As soon as she said these words, Take Asasei immediately covered her mouth, but it was too late.

Lei Yin smiled, ‘a mere child only.’

“Kazumi, you rest here, I will go outside with your classmate for

a talk.” With that, without waiting for her reply, he grabbed Take Asasei’s hand and walked outside.

He dragged away Take Asasei in order to save the face of her friend lying on the bed, but Kazumi in addition to being anxious has no other thought.

Because Lei Yin’s legs were relatively long and his movement was fast, after being dragged out of the waiting room, Take Asasei started to feel a bit behind.

“Kazumi’s brother, do not walk so fast, other people can not keep up.” Take Asasei piteously said.

“Just walking a few steps and you are already said tired, if you go on like this, before you reach 30 years old, you will start to gain weight.”

‘What the.’ Take Asase glared at him from behind.

Lei Yin did not slow down. After pulling her to the balcony, he finally came to a halt.

“Okay, now tell me exactly what happened.” Lei Yin did not wait for her to finish catching her breath, directly asked.

“I, I can not say it, otherwise, Kazumi will scold me.” Take Asasei slowly said.

“If you do not say it, I will now scold you, moreover, I will also curse you.”

Being taken by his momentum, Take Asasei began to feel miserable, ‘how could there be such a siblings.’

“I will say it.” She eventually gave in.

After saying a few words at the beginning, Take Asasei’s words began to flow smoothly, and finally, if Lei Yin did not stop her, she would not know where to stop.

“So, the man named Okada deliberately shoved Kazumi down?” Lei Yin thought for a moment before he said.

“Of course, otherwise on such a wide staircase, and at the time no other people, how could he had a difficulty to walk and actually push Kazumi to the side? Moreover, after knocking down Kazumi, he did not even say sorry, but immediately walked away. I have never seen such an excessive man, although I previously often go to see him play.” Take Asasei became more and more angry.

“Thank you for notifying Takeda that Kazumi was injured, otherwise, I would not know this thing.” After a while, Lei Yin said to her.

“You are welcome, I was just scolded by Kazumi for being meddlesome. So, what are you going to do now?” She was a

faithful reader of campus magazine, therefore, for Kazumi's brother legend of terror, she also often heard.

"I will deal with this matter. You can go back now, I want to make a phone call." Lei Yin has no intention to satisfy her curiosity.

Although she has this unprecedented enthusiasm of gossip, she has no choice but unwillingly leave the balcony.

After this somewhat noisy girl walked away, Lei Yin took out his mobile phone to dial a number.

"Hey, Takeda is it?"

"I just saw my sister, she is all right, just having a bit of ankle sprain. I will not speak of this, I have something to ask you, do you know Okada from the Basketball Club?"

After a while, Lei Yin returned back to the health center and said to Kazumi: "I will send you back now, your foot is injured, you need to rest in the apartment these few days, do not attend the class."

"But..." Kazumi hesitated.

"This is just for a few days, it will not have any effect on you. With your grades, you just need to read textbooks and take notes and you will be fine."

“I am not like someone who can pass through the University Entrance Exam even after skipping classes almost everyday. I am just an ordinary people.” Kazumi grinningly said.

“Come on, ordinary people.” Lei Yin scolded as he arrived by the bedside to hug her up.

“No, I can walk by myself.” Seeing his action, Kazumi immediately loudly said in shame.

“Excuse me, how can you walk right now. I am your older brother, why would I want to eat your beancurd (take advantage)?” Lei Yin carelessly said.

“But it is too unsightly.” Kazumi continued to protest.

“If you close your eyes, will you be able to see it?”

“I mean other people will see it.”

“Even if someone else see you, you are still covered in clothes.”

“In short, I do not want to.”

“Wow, there is a flying saucer outside.” Lei Yin suddenly pointed outside the window and yelled.

“Please, do not treat me like a child okay.” Kazumi somewhat weakly said.

Since the lie did not work, Lei Yin had to use the hard way. Therefore, he ignored the struggling Kazumi, and hugged the girl up from the health care bed like a rogue with evil intention.

“Bastard, quickly put me down.” Kazumi angrily called out in shame.

“Go on, shout as you like, best to shout a bit louder. Even if you shout indecent assault, that’s okay, in any case, I do not care.” Lei Yin still held the struggling girl as he walked to the door.

Kazumi has no other method to deal with this super thick skin guy, for fear that she would attract other people’s attention, she had to give up her struggle, letting him hold her as her face went red.

From the beginning of their quarrel, Take Asasei had been dumbfoundedly looking at this quirky brother and sister. After Lei Yin brought her best friend out of the room, she immediately followed them. At this time, she suddenly felt it would be good if she had a brother.

Fortunately, Kazumi and Take did not rent the apartment that is too far from the campus, otherwise, Kazumi would not know how to survive being hugged as they walked on the road like that.

After putting her sister on the bed, Lei Yin said to her: “I will get the meals for you here, you just need to rest, I will call you later. I am going now.”

“Brother, you must not act recklessly.” After being together for a long time, Kazumi began to understand his somewhat vindictive temperament.

“Rest assured, I will not do anything reckless. You should be very clear, I am someone who is very reasonable. Do not say too much, I am leaving.” After patting her sister’s head, he walked out of the room.

“Hey, remember, do not be reckless.” Just before he left, Kazumi showed her doubtful look.

When Lei Yin returned to the campus, most of the students have already finished with their classes.

But there was still a very lively place, and that was the campus Basketball Club.

Because the Basketball Club in Teikyo University is quite famous. Every year they would participate in the National College Basketball Championship, and achieved great success. In the Basketball Club there were many tall and handsome players, which attracted a large number of students, especially the attention of the female students. Therefore, almost everyday after the class, a lot of people go to the Basketball Club to watch them practice or having a

match.

Moreover, the girls would set up a fan club for some of the players. Usually, when there was a big match they would unfurl a large banner to cheer for support.

And Akio Okada is one of outstanding player who is sought after by numerous girls.

He was now a second-year student, height 1.85 meter, moderate weight, handsome look, and also sported a long hair which can make girls scream. Due to his incredible skill in Basketball, he was usually responsible for the center position.

Teikyo University Basketball Club has an indoor basketball court. In addition to the sidelines, on the second floor of the building, there was also a ring with fence designed for the audience to watch the game.

When Lei Yin opened the Basketball Club door, he saw the basketball club members were doing dribbling or shooting practice. Though the practice was so monotonous, on the sidelines and on the second floor, there were still many students watching them practice with relish, in which the majority of them were female students.

“Is Akio Okada here?” Lei Yin walked to the sidelines and asked the female who seemed to be the manager.

“He is doing the shooting practice there, why are you looking for him?” The female manager somewhat strangely asked.

“He is the one wearing number 5 jersey right?” Lei Yin pointed to the opposite court where a male student was doing a shooting practice.

“Yes. Please....”

Before she finished, she saw the man suddenly went to Akio Okada.

Lei Yin arrived at the number 5 player with a long hair. Akio Okada was doing practice, and had not realized someone approaching him.

“Hei, you are not allowed to wear leather shoes on the court.” A player saw Lei Yin and loudly called out.

Akio Okada heard this voice, turned around and looked, but he suddenly saw someone standing behind him.

“Who are you?” Akio Okada somewhat discontentedly looked at the man who was staring at him.

“Are you Akio Okada?”

“Yes, what do you want?” Akio Okada felt that the man’s tone

was a little unfriendly.

“Then good.” With that, Lei Yin suddenly grabbed him by the neck.

Akio Okada suddenly felt like being gripped by a pincer.

“Hey, what are you doing?” The loud player who called Lei Yin just now came running at him.

Taking a glance at that noisy person, Lei Yin dismissively said: “I am here to kick someone’s ass, so back off.”

Chapter 160 - BACK OFF!

Suddenly, a strange boy appeared on the basketball court, and he all of a sudden grabbed Akio Okada by the neck, which made everyone present extremely surprised.

“Fighting in the court? Where do you think this is?” A player said in a loud voice.

At this time, other players quickly rushed over to their side.

Lei Yin ignored them, turning away, he looked at Akio Okada, and coldly said, “Did Narimura Haruko told you to hurt my sister?” As he spoke, Lei Yin mixed in some of his qi, which made Akio Okada’s mind to be in chaos.

For a moment, Akio Okada thought that he saw some strange light in Lei Yin’s eyes, and after seeing that light, he felt tired and unable to think properly.

“Narimura Haruko asked me to do it, she said that....” Akio Okada said something that even he didn’t dare think he would do.

“Very good.” Lei Yin didn’t bother to listen anymore. He sneered and restored his vision, and dragged him outside.

The answer was as he had expected. When he had asked Takeda on the phone about this man, he immediately knew that the accident was caused by one of Narimura Haruko’s powerful

suitors. so, he began to suspect that this guy may have been ordered by that woman to go hit Kazumi. At that time, he was still a bit unsure whether that woman would really do such a silly thing. But in any case, this guy still pushed Kazumi, and afterwards, walked away without apologizing to her, which made Lei Yin very pissed. The only difference was that, if this guy had truly intended to, he would have seriously harmed her.

As he took a few steps, several players immediately stopped him.

“What do you want? Hurry up, and let go of him.” A player who seemed to be the team captain appeared before Lei Yin, and using his nearly two-meter-tall body, he blocked Lei Yin.

“Go away. I have something, I want to talk with this guy.” In order to prevent Okada Akio from struggling, Lei Yin sealed his internal force using acupuncture. And he quickly seized the No. 5 player’s throat, who was already unable to use his full strength.

“This is the basketball club’s court, and not for people like you to come and fight. Quickly release him, and get out of here.” If it weren’t for him being afraid to cause a scene, then the big guy would have already used his fist and hit him.

“I’ll say it one more time, immediately leave before I get mad.” If Takeda or Yoshikawa were here, it would have been very clear to them, just by looking at Lei Yin’s eyes, that the situation was going to become extremely dangerous.

At the same time, the onlookers who saw this were talking

among themselves.

“That person looks familiar.”

“Idiot, that’s Gennai Masashi. My God, what does he want to do this time?”

“He really is a human weapon, what does he want to do with my man?” a female student almost fainted.

“It seems like the basketball club didn’t offend him, but then why is he holding Okada’s neck?”

“This time, it looks like they will have a good play.” A male student gloated.

And, several people in the basketball court, continued their fight.

But, at that moment, Lei Yin’s patience had finally reached its limit. He was too lazy to say anything, so he dragged Akio Okada and walked around the captain as the two-meter-tall person looked down at him.

Those players who stood in front of him simply didn’t know, that so long as they try to stop him, their fate will become miserable.

“Bastard, I told you to let go of him.” The team captain flew into rage, and rushed towards him.

Lei Yin just sneered, as he moved and suddenly appeared in front of him, when suddenly a strong voice called out, “What exactly is happening?”

“coach” The team captain immediately stopped and bowed towards the middle-aged man standing at the doorway. The other players also bowed towards him.

“I just went out for a while, for it to become such a mess, can anyone tell me exactly what had happened?” The coach walked up to several of the players, and yelled at them. The female manager behind him jumped up in surprise, as the coach was calling for her.

“Coach Tanimura, this person wanted to cause trouble, and I’m just about to drive him out.” The team captain replied.

From the start when he had arrived, the middle-aged man had been watching Lei Yin. He then shouted at the Lei Yin who was making trouble, “I don’t care who you are, but you’re not welcome here, leave.”

“Excuse me, I’ll go.” Lei Yin was surprisingly obedient, but when he was about to walk out, his hand was still grabbing the No. 5 player.

“What do you want, immediately let him go, or I’ll notify the Student Union.” Coach Tanimura couldn’t ignore such behavior, so he immediately stepped in front of Lei Yin, and shouted.

If it were those players doing this, then Lei Yin would have already smashed them down. But this guy was after all a teacher, he also didn't want to be the first student to beat a faculty member in Teikyo University and get expelled from school. So he said to the man in the jersey, "I just want to have a word with Okada student, so please don't stop me."

"If you just want to talk, then why are you seizing him by his neck? I'll warn you once, immediately release him, or I'll call the student union to deal with this matter." Coach Tanimura said resentfully.

It seems like now isn't the good time to get revenge. Lei Yin shrugged, letting go of the No. 5 player who wasn't able to breath.

Just as Akio Okada was released, he immediately gasped for breath, but found it very hard as he felt a burning sensation on his throat.

"Okada student, we still haven't finished our talk, so I'll be patiently waiting for you to come out." Lei Yin said with a smile.

"You bastard, what do you actually want?" Akio Okada, who tried very hard to breath, pointed at Lie Yin and shouted at once.

"I can't believe you're so quick to forget what you had just said. Don't worry, I'll make you remember it again."

Seeing Lei Yin's expression, Coach Tanimura knew that he would absolutely not give up. And one day he would come here again, and possibly cause trouble. Right now, the basketball club was preparing for the upcoming summer tournament, so he didn't want the team to get affected because of this incident.

“Although I don't know what matter is between the two of you, but this is a basketball court, and if you agree, I hope that you can handle this matter in a civilized manner.”

After speaking these words, Coach Tanimura started to stated his own proposition.

After hearing his so-called proposition, Lei Yin said to Coach Tanimura, “Although I don't mean to make fun of you Coach Tanimura, but don't you think your idea is a little boring?”

“Bastard, what did you say?” The team captain, who was the person that most respected Coach Tanimura, immediately shouted.

As far as Lie Yin was concerned, he wasn't trying to make fun of anyone. But, he had made fun of Coach Tanimura, and said to him expressionlessly, “Don't tell me, you think this is just a fight? If your answer is yes, then I am sorry, I'm sorry to tell you that's just pure ignorance. And The person who is ignorant, and is unable to use his brain properly will never understand anything if you don't use actions to make him understand.”

“Coach Tanimura, you're not supposed to be a basketball coach,

but rather a critic. Because what you said is similar to critics using words to abuse politicians.”

“Since you want to be a hoodlum, then I have no other alternative. But this is the basketball court, and only people that play or watch the game are welcomed here, so please get out.” Coach Tanimura knew that what this person was saying was his own bloody belief.

Lei Yin didn’t say anything, and just looked at the audience and players glaring at him. He then suddenly laughed, “Maybe what you’re saying is a bit true, sometimes it’s better to use your own brain, I accept your proposition.”

Coach Tanimura’s eyes revealed a self-satisfied look, he said to Lei Yin, “I want you to promise, that if you lose, later you can’t come here to cause trouble again, and can’t look for Okada and trouble him again.”

“And if I win?”

“So long as you don’t cause trouble here, I won’t interfere in your matter again.”

“Then so be it, it’s a deal.” Lei Yin readily agreed.

—

“Do you want to change your shoes; I don’t want to hear you say

that you lost because of your shoes.” Coach Tanimura looked at the shoes Lei Yin was wearing.

“No, I never wear someone else’s shoes, because I’m afraid that I’ll get infected by someone else’s foot.” Lei Yin told the truth.

Coach Tanimura didn’t blame him, he could only blame himself, ‘for asking to humiliate himself’. He quickly cheered up, and shouted at the players, “Quickly come in the court.”

Hearing the coach, who was obviously angry, the players sped up and immediately picked up the balls, putting them away, emptying the court.

“Do you have any problem, if I be the referee for this game? If you feel it’s unfair, you can choose someone else.” Coach Tanimura said.

“I don’t have any issue with it.”

“If that’s the case, then I ask you to quickly get in the court.”

Lei Yin shrugged, and walked towards the center of the basketball court. There, Okada Akio sneered from where he was standing.

Coach Tanimura was holding the basketball with one hand, and walked towards their side, “I’ll repeat the rules again, the score will be up to ten points, in ten minutes, the two sides will take

turns attacking, there's no rest time during the game, the side who first score ten points wins. If the two side haven't scored ten points in ten minutes, then the side that has the most scores, WINS. Is there something that you can't understand?"

After a while, seeing that both side didn't said anything, Coach Tanimura immediately exclaimed, "Begin." With that, he threw the ball into the air.

In the case of jump ball, Okada Akio, who was taller obviously had the advantage. He jumped up, and as expected caught the ball in midair.

The result was as he had expected. But he felt it was a bit strange, because just when he jumped for the ball, Lei Yin just stood there motionless and didn't jump.

Maybe he knew that he couldn't jump as high as me. Okada Akio thought to himself, and quickly dribbled to the opposite side of the basket.

A competition between two people just having half the court would be enough, but Coach Tanimura thought that Okada Akio was an official player, if he had won purely because of his basketball skills against the student causing trouble, he thought it wouldn't be enough. So, he wanted to give Okada a chance to make Lei Yin realize that he lacked physical strength. He thought that Lei Yin likely didn't exercise, so his physical fitness couldn't be compared with that of a regular player's. That's why he had also made a rule to not let them rest during the competition.

In his view, this wasn't simply a basketball game. He did this to stop students from coming here to make trouble. So he didn't intend to conduct any unfair competition. An ordinary person playing against a basketball player in a basketball game, was itself quite unfair.

On the other hand, Okada Akio was very happy. He didn't think that this fellow would comply and compete against him at his own game. He really wanted to beat this guy, and make him lose face. Haruko, see how I'll beat this guy.

Thinking of this, he quickly dribbled under the basket. And at the same time he heard footsteps coming from behind him.

It seems like this guy isn't slow, but what's the point?

He suddenly stopped, and stood in front of the two-point line, and just when Okada Akio prepared to shoot, he suddenly felt that his hands were empty, and found that the ball was gone?

He was startled, immediately turning his head, he unexpectedly saw the ball in Lei Yin's hand. Lei Yin had taken it without him realizing it.

After Lei Yin grabbed the ball, he didn't immediately rush to the other side, but instead dribble as he waited for him. And finally with his left hand, he dribbled the ball through his legs.

Feeling belittled, the No. 5 player screamed in his mind, and immediately rushed to the other side to get the ball back.

When Okada Akio ran to him, Lei Yin finally made his move.

His speed was no way inferior to Akio Okada's, as he ran to the other side of the basket. Feeling a sense of crisis, the No. 5 player immediately picked up his pace, thinking of stopping him.

When Lei Yin was in front of the three-point line, he suddenly stopped. Okada Akio quickly stopped in front of him, trying to stop him from shooting.

But Lei Yin didn't shoot right away, instead he sneered at Okada Akio, and then he flashed through from his side, and threw the ball into the basket.

The process was simple, yet almost nobody could clearly see how Lei Yin flash through Okada Akio was blocking him, even Okada Akio himself couldn't see it clearly, even though he was in front of him, and yet he had all of a sudden appeared right behind him.

Okada Akio wasn't able to react til the ball went into the basket.

"Nothing special." Facing Akio Okada's astonished eyes, Lei Yin said softly.

Asshole! Okada Akio was furious. He vowed in his heart, never to let this guy get any more points.

And at this time Coach Tanimura who was acting as the referee actually felt something unusual, even he hadn't clearly saw how this fellow dodged Okada. He has been a coach for many years, but even he couldn't tell what had happened.

It was the second player, Lei Yin's, turn to attack, he walked slowly from his side, and brought the ball to the opposite side of the court. Seeing Okada Akio waiting for him to come at the three-point line, Lei Yin suddenly made a move that made everyone here shocked.

His action in other people's perspective can only be described as amateurish, as they watch how he shot the ball in the basket. But that wasn't the surprising part, the thing that was truly unacceptable was the fact that he was shooting from the middle of the court.

Everyone was waiting to see how the ball would fall in vain, but the next scene made everyone unable to believe their eyes.

Swoosh

No matter how they looked at it, it seemed like a desperate shot, but unexpectedly the ball didn't even hit the board, and instead went into the ring. That was a shot made from the middle of the court.

No Way? Everyone had the same thought when they saw this scene.

Seeing this, the basketball club captain's jaw almost fell down, and he couldn't help but want Lei Yin in the team.

At that moment, the whole stadium became very quiet, almost everyone there knew a little bit about basketball, as they looked at the, calm looking, monster who had shot the ball from the middle of the court.

Beep After the whistle was blown, everyone finally reacted and pondered for a bit, but nobody could regard the competition to be a one-sided game any longer.

Because the game didn't have any time for rests, the game continued.

Seven minutes later, astonishment appeared on all eyes.

Because, there were only two people playing, Coach Tanimura couldn't use the rule 'of holding the ball for 30 seconds'.

The audience, who were watching the game, began to wonder which one was the real basketball player.

Until now, Okada Akio looked like an amateur. He had even said, to Lei Yin before the game, that he would score seven points in less than a minute.

And, he was the one that was the representative of Teikyou University in every basketball game, and was also the one in charge of making the team win.

He was 1.86 meters tall, possessing a handsome look, he had also kept his hair quite long, the female students called Okada Akio [The Prince of Basketball], but contrary to the name he still couldn't score a single basket.

Any person who watched Okada Akio's basketball game wouldn't think that he was lacking and instead think of him as an outstanding player.

However, such a well-respected player was unexpectedly unable to score a single point in this game, people could hardly believe what they were seeing.

However, this unimaginable scene was actually really happening in front of their eyes.

Everyone could see, that so long as the man was holding the ball, Okada Akio wouldn't be able to successfully steal the ball away from the guy.

If Okada Akio were to stand on guard at the restricted area or the three-point line, that person like before, would stand outside the three-point line or at the middle of the court, and accurately shoot the ball as if it was done with magic.

And when he's in front of Okada Akio, he would simply feint and with amazing speed attempt break through the basketball club's elite, in a very relaxed and quirky way, and then going straight to the bottom of the basket, he would shoot the ball and without a doubt go in the basket. His action was so enchanting, making every person who knew about basketball have a kind of emotional feeling.

It was now Okada Akio's turn to attack.

Okada Akio wasn't a three-point shooter, he was a player who was good at breaking through the bottom of the basket, that's why he didn't dare to shoot the ball at the three-point like just like Lei Yin. If the guy accidentally caught the ball, he absolutely didn't have the confidence to steal the ball away from him. The several plays before had totally extinguish his self-confidence. So he could only try to block Lei Yin, and then breakthrough the bottom of the basket to shoot the ball.

However, not once could he do it.

He didn't know why, but so long as the person was in front of him, without knowing when, the ball he was holding would suddenly disappear and appear in the other guy's hand.

Feint, steal, block, he tried everything he knew, but the result was still the same. He still couldn't figure out when the guy had snatched the ball from him, he couldn't even see when the ball had disappeared from his hand.

After the ball was stolen from his hands once again, Okada Akio helplessly looked at the guy making another basket.

He wanted to go back, but was too tired to move any further.

He didn't think that just one game would be so tiring. Without any team-mate to pass the ball to, be it offensive or defensive, he had to do everything on his own. In just less than 10 minutes, he had to constantly run back and forth in the basketball court.

If it was just running he would have still been fine, but he felt pain as he was frustrated in himself who is unable to beat the guy, this frustration made him feel more and more tired. He didn't know whether it was because he was too tired, but Okada Akio had a feeling that he was just having a dream and everything that was happening wasn't real.

From the very beginning, the entire basketball court had been very quiet, one could only hear the sound of the ball hitting the floor and sound of the two players running, as well as the sound of the audience at the second floor of the basketball court, Okada Akio was running out of breath, unceasingly gasping for air just like a person with asthma.

Perhaps, this really is a dream, how could there be such a monster like this exist. Okada Akio smiled somewhat nervously, and had completely forgotten that it was his turn to attack.

“Okada, pull yourself together.” Coach Tanimura loudly called out at the side.

Hearing his coach's voice, Okada Akio immediately woke up.

Dead old man, because of your stupid proposition the matter had turned into this. Okada Akio glared at Coach Tanimura filled with hatred, he then picked up the ball from the ground.

“Unfortunately, I only need one more basket. It seems like you have no more chances.”

Hearing what Lei Yin had said, Okada Akio's heart tightened. The game's almost done?

He looked up and looked around the audience, and discovered them looking at him with an expression he had never seen before.

Bastards, I don't need your sympathy. After reading their eyes, he immediately understood what they were thinking, making Okada Akio almost crazy.

Gennai Masashi, I won't let you feel any better. Returning his focus towards the guy, Okada Akio immediately rushed towards him, as he dribbled the ball while he run past him.

At this time, this was the only idea that could occur to him, since running through him wasn't going to work, then he could just run over him. And if he doesn't get out of the way, he would get injured because Okada Akio's height advantage.

Looking at the No.5 player running straight towards him, Lei Yin didn't move. When Okada Akio was half a meter away from him, Lei Yin made a move, taking a step to the side he moved out of the way, and then with his hands he shoved the ball and grasped it. In the eyes of experts, this kind of plan was flawed, and was tantamount to death.

“Bastard!” Okada Akio realized that the ball was taken away from him yet again, he quickly run to catch up with him. He refused to lose, and would even make a foul just to stop him.

Suddenly, he discovered Lei Yin looked behind sneering at him. At this moment, they still didn't know that they would see an incredible sight.

From the two-point line, they saw Lei Yin suddenly jump, Okada Akio had never seen anyone jump so high. He then saw the man with the ball in his hand dunk the ball straight into the basket.

“Peng!” After the loud noise, everyone felt that there never was cut off.

The audience went quiet, one could only hear the sound of the ball continuously bouncing on the floor.

In this silence, Lei Yin suddenly picked up the ball.

“Okada Akio.”

Hearing his name, Okada Akio subconsciously looked towards the direction of the sound.

But just when he looked over to his direction of the sound, he noticed a circular object flying towards. When he had reacted, it was already too late for him to dodge.

Pow Okada Akio's face that made a lot of girls fascinated, was severely hit by the ball, as he felt an intense pain on his face.

"What do you want?" The first to react was the basketball captain, who had immediately come out and went in front of Lei Yin.

"Can't you see? I don't mind demonstrating again." Lei Yin shrugged.

"You've gone too far, you've already won, what do you still want?" The basketball captain was angry.

"I won, so I have the right to do this. Don't forget about the proposition that the coach said before."

"But I also said that you're not allowed to make trouble here." Coach Tanimura said as he was taking care of Okada Akio.

"Excuse me, I forgot." With that, Lei Yin walked towards Okada Akio who was lying on the ground, clutching his nose as he left.

“If you dare do it again, don’t blame me for being impolite.” The basketball captain shouted.

“I don’t know when you have even been polite to me.” Lei Yin glared at him, and quickly moved forward.

“Bastard.” The captain could not stand it anymore, and punched him in the face.

When his punch was about to land, a hand suddenly held his fist. Then, a terrible pain suddenly extended out from his hand.

“Ah!” Never received such a severe pain made this two meters high man bent his waist.

Lei Yin let go of his hand and walked toward Akio Okada, condescendingly looked at him.

Coach Tanimura immediately stood up and looked at him.

“Haven’t you trouble enough? Do you want to be expelled from the college?”

Lei Yin suddenly laughed, “Do you think I am going to hit him? I am sorry, but you are wrong. I just want to say a few words to him.”

With that, he said toward Akio Okada on the ground: “You go tell that woman, if she dares lay her hands on my sister, I will make her life as good as dead.”

Akio Okada very bitterly looked at him.

Lei Yin was pleased with this outcome, disgracing him in front of so many people was indeed more satisfying than beating him.

Lei Yin did not bother with him anymore, and said to the middle-aged man: “I am sorry, Mr. Coach, for borrowing your place, if you’ll excuse me.” With that, he turned around and walked out of the Basketball Club.

Everyone looked at his back in silence as he walked farther and farther away.

Chapter 161 - Intervene

“Are you Eiko Kotoshi?” In the building’s parking lot, four men suddenly stopped the policewoman, and then the man, who looked like a snake, asked with not a kind tone.

“Who are you?” The policewoman coldly looked at the people who were encircling her.

“We’re from the public security. There’s a case that requires you to go back and make a record.” One of the men took out a black document from his breast pocket, and showed it to her.

The Japanese Police, also called the public security police, were said to be police that was generally different, they weren’t covered by the Japanese National Police Agency or Japanese National Police supervision, but were under the “Japanese national public safety commission.” The commission belonged to the government, their power and authority was much higher than that of the normal police. They were a larger organization that has authority to supervise or direct a normal police. Its responsibility was to enforce National Security Policy, and coordinate with the National Police Agency in regards to wide-area criminal cases.

Eiko Kotoshi sneered: “I don’t know any case that would need Public Security to take action. Moreover, investigating cases shouldn’t be the responsibility of the National Police Agency?”

“You don’t need to know that, please go with us right now.”

“What if I don’t go with you?”

“You have no other choice in the matter.”

“It seems like this isn’t just as simple as making a record. In that case, I would like to see an arrest warrant.”

“This time we’re carrying out an official business, so we don’t require any arrest warrant. Please immediately follow us, don’t force us to use violence.” The man suddenly grabbed the police woman’s arms.

“Let me go, I’ll go with you.” Eiko Kotoshi looked at him in disgust.

“That’s for the best.” Even though the man had said that, he still didn’t let go of her.

When Eiko ,along with the men, stopped at the side of a car, she then turned towards her left and suddenly shouted loudly: “Ikeyama-san, save me quickly.”

The men, subconsciously, looked over to the left.

“Ah, this lowly woman.” At this moment, the man who was grabbing the Eiko’s arm, suddenly, pitifully shouted.

The beauty Eiko Kotoshi had simply stepped on his feet with her

High Heels.

The other three men had no time to look at their companion's injury, as they immediately pursued the woman who had already ran several meters away from them.

Although, her job was only sitting down at the office and writing a report and hold meetings that were only talking about nonsense, but she for a long time as well had forged herself, making her physical capability not inferior to professional groups, who do investigations as well as, running around frequently, carrying out different task. Assuming of course, she wasn't wearing any high-heeled shoes.

After running for more than 50 meters, Eiko Kotoshi began to curse the person who had invented high-heels in her heart.

She looked behind her and saw the three men, chasing after her, and were getting closer. She swore in her heart that if she could get out of this, she would buy some illegal guns from a black market.

It wasn't as ordinary people had thought, that police always have a gun with them every day for 24 hours. Actually, when they carry out tasks, they need permission before they could bring a gun, and those police would then have to pass the gun to the police covering the next shift, and later they must return the gun to the police authorities. But because of the last few vampire incidents, they were given an exception. Due to the randomness of the case, those, that were investigating as well as those high-ranked members not on duty were specifically allowed to have a gun at all times.

Although, Eiko Kotoshi was a black belt in Judo as well as Karate, but she couldn't handle simultaneously fighting with those three men. If those three men were really well-trained public security police, even if it was only one of them, she wouldn't be a match and she will be captured with ease. However, she knew that if they were to catch up to her, the only thing she could do was to fiercely struggle.

When Eiko Kotoshi found a chance, she quickly stopped and went towards the man nearest to her. When all of a sudden, a white sedan with great speed stopped in front of Eiko Kotoshi.

Seeing that a white sedan appeared in front of the woman, the three men's complexion immediately changed.

"Quickly get in." A man who sat at the back seat opened the door, and loudly called out to Eiko Kotoshi.

Although, she saw the three men, sitting in the car with sunglasses, had appeared to help her, Eiko Kotoshi still couldn't help but be vigilant, as she had already been provoked by the four men claiming to be Public Security, that made her unable to trust anyone suspicious at the moment.

Totally ignoring the man's cries, she ran towards the car park's exit.

The man, who had asked her to get in, had no way to stop her. Instead, He had to tell the driver to chase after her.

The four men claiming to be Public Security, had already experienced that , also ran to their own car.

After, Eiko Kotoshi ran out of the parking lot, she immediately went to the center square where there were people nearby. She believed that so long as she could get into the middle of the crowd, she should be able to get rid of these people.

At this moment, the white sedan had arrived five meters away from her.

“You listen to me; we were sent out by Outsider-san to help you.” The man in the back seat opened the window, and said to her.

“You really know Outsider-san?” Hearing his words, Eiko Kotoshi suddenly stopped. “Outsider-san” was the alias that the person used in his email.

“It’s true, quickly get in, before they catch up.” The man said, as he looked at the car driving out of the parking lot.

Eiko Kotoshi slightly hesitated, but still quickly sat down inside the car.

“Quickly drive.” After she closed the car’s door, the man said to the person responsible for driving the car.

Ten minutes later, after making sure they were successfully able to get rid of the car behind them, the man looked at the policewoman and said: “We were indeed ordered by that gentleman to help, he told us that if you were to be in trouble, we were to help you out, and also told us to give this package to you.” Then he handed her a black package.

After Eiko Kotoshi opened the package, she found a thin laptop inside.

“Why did he give this to me?” Eiko Kotoshi continued to look at the sunglasses man sitting beside, who still hadn’t taken off his sunglasses. It wasn’t only him, but the other two man in the front seat were like that too, it seems like they didn’t want to let her see their faces.

“That gentleman told us that, if some people try to capture you, it means that someone had discovered that you are investigating this matter. In order to prevent them from tampering your computer, you’ll use this computer to contact him.”

Eiko Kotoshi hadn’t thought that the person would be so careful.

“Who are you really?”

“I’m sorry, no comment.”

Hearing his answer, Eiko Kotoshi wasn’t the least surprised, she knew that these people wouldn’t just simply tell her. Although the

man had answered a lot of her question, and even asked some people to help her, but just feeling that she was kept in the dark, made her uncomfortable.

“Were they really Public Security?” The policewoman asked another question.

“We’re not certain, but we’re going to investigate their identities. To prevent them from getting you, we have rented a house near the police station that you work at, it would be better if you stay there from time.”

“It’s no good, I need to stay together with my mother, I can’t leave her alone.”

“You can live together with her if you live near the police authorities, no matter if they were the public securities, I believe they won’t come and bother you so blatantly.”

“Did the man say this?”

“Yes.”

“All right, I’ll seriously consider it. For now, please take me back.

Eiko Kotoshi felt that she was being manipulated, and it looked like the men have been watching her for a few days now. She was becoming more and more confused of the man’s identity. According to how these men replied, it seems like the man have a

huge backing behind him. Who is that guy?

She, suddenly, thought of a person, but soon rejected the idea, because even though that person has the ability, but he absolutely would not annoy the top just because of this matter, moreover he doesn't have the reason to do so.

—

“Good, I know. This time I've troubled you.”

After hanging up the call, Lei Yin's complexion wasn't very good.

The fire he had started had now become big. According to his people, it would be impossible to quickly discover the truth about the matter. It was certain that she hadn't done anything that would let her be discovered, or told other people about it. He had warned her not to act rashly, and now he began to regret assigning the woman to be his agent.

He was concerned with the present situation, and he had no time to investigate who was behind the previous chase, he also had to find the lab, where they experiment on people, as soon as possible without alerting anyone, and then bring this matter to light.

If it weren't for him being compelled by circumstances, he wouldn't want to use Black Dragon and its wide range connections. Because, those relationships were formed and build for over many

years. Even if he could obtain an accurate information, in the future it may arouse other's suspicion.

It seems that I'll have to personally make a move. Thinking about this, Lei Yin scolded the woman again in his mind.

Going back to the stairs, Lei Yin said to the three youth's waiting for him: "Let's go."

"You had to walk so far just to answer a call, was it your girlfriend?" Takeda said curiously .

"It wasn't. Don't ask, let's go." Lei Yin didn't want to talk about this topic.

When they had left the school gate, Yoshikawa suddenly said: "I heard that you caused havoc in the basketball club yesterday?"

"I did? I don't remember."

"I don't mean anything about it, I just want to remind you to be a bit more careful. As far as I know, Narimura Haruko sometimes has a hot temperament, I fear the she would cause trouble for you again."

"Sometimes, I really don't understand why you like such a woman."

“I don’t know, perhaps knowing that I can’t obtain something makes it good.” Yoshikawa smiled bitterly.

“I really can’t understand how you can like someone for such a long time.”

“Is this a praise?”

“Do you think it is.”

At the corner of Lei Yin apartment, five 30-40 year-old men walked out of the corner and stood in front of them.

“It seems like they aren’t sales people.” Takeda whispered.

“Wait here, don’t intervene, it seems like they’ve come for me.” Lei Yin then said.

“Rest assured, we have no intention of intervening.” Yoshikawa immediately said.

“It’s my mistake, I shouldn’t be saying this kind of crap.”

Looking at the unafraid youth’s, the tallest man in the group finally couldn’t bear it and was the first to talk: “You’re Gennai Masashi?”

“If there’s no other people by that name, then I should be him. Why did you come to find me?” Lei Yin was in a bad mood, and surprisingly, he quickly found a few people to vent his anger, the other side really were considerate.

“Nothing, we just heard that you’re very fierce, that’s why we wanted to ask you to compare notes.”

“A fight is a fight, to say that it’s comparing notes. It seems like what the newspaper had written about the economic downturn is indeed real. Such old men coming out and acting like goons, it seems like our situation is becoming worse.”

“You lowly little rascal.” The tall man shouted, and kicked at Lei Yin’s forehead.

He used his leg’s full force, which average people can’t withstand.

Unfortunately, his leg’s was grasped by Lei Yin with only one hand. And with the use of his wrist, Lei Yin had thrown that man to the ground with great force.

Because he didn’t want the game to end so soon, Lei Yin hadn’t dealt him any heavy blow, so when the man got up from the ground, he wasn’t injured. And just scornfully looked at Lei Yin’s eyes.

“One isn’t enough, come at me at the same time.” Lei Yin bent

his fingers and invited them to come.

The five men gazed at him for a moment, and then without saying a single word, ran towards him.

After a few minutes, Narimura Haruko, sitting in a luxurious vehicle, was looking at the scene with her binoculars with full of terror.

How could something like this happen?

The five man, she had assigned, were her specialized professional bodyguards. But, even they were still knocked down by that guy with such ease.

She heard that he went against the boxing club, karate club, and other fighting club on his own. But, she only thought that it was just exaggeration. But just in case, she had deliberately ordered five bodyguards from her house to punish this guy, but never would have she thought that it would come to this.

That guy easily defeated the five of them?

Sitting in the car, Narimura Haruko slowly retained her composure, and said to the, 40 something years old, driver: "Drive."

"Yes, Miss." The driver immediately started the car.

But in less than two minutes, the car suddenly stopped.

Due to the inertia effect, Narimura Haruko had almost crashed towards the seat in front of her.

“What happened?” She annoyedly asked the driver.

“Miss, a man suddenly rushed out in front of us.”

Narimura Haruko looked out of the window, and saw a man standing in front of the car.

Seeing the person's appearance, she was startled.

“Hey, what do you want, get out of the way quickly.” The driver got off the car and said to the man.”

The man ignored him, and instead walked straight to Narimura Haruko who was sitting in the rear seat.

“What are you trying to do? I'm calling the cops.” Seeing this, the driver immediately took out his phone.

When she saw Gennai Masashi out of her window, for her own protection, Narimura Haruko immediately locked the door.

“What do you want?” the new freshman school flower coldly said to the man outside the window.

“Nothing, I just wanted to talk with you.”

“I don’t have anything to talk about with you, quickly leave.”

“This won’t do. You’d better sit at the back.” Lei Yin showed a worried expression.

“What do you mean?” Seeing the smile on his face, the new freshman school flower had a really bad feeling.

“Nothing, I just wanted to talk to you face to face.” With that, Lei Yin broke the car’s window.

After, smashing the window, small pieces of glasses flew everywhere, but not towards Narimura Haruko’s face. But the sound of the glass breaking made Narimura Haruko scream loudly.

The driver, who originally thought that the two were going to talk, was stunned by this change.

After breaking the glass window, Lei Yin extended his uninjured right hand through the window and unlocked the door.

“Don’t come.” Narimura Haruko placed both of her hands on her chest, as she trembled while leaning on the other door at the side.

Lei Yin didn't speak, but instead swept the pieces of glass on the leather chair with his hand, and then sat down.

Turning his head to look at Narimura Haruko, who seemed to be frightened, he said lightly: "Actually, I only wanted to say a few words to you. If it's unnecessary, I don't wish to hit a woman, so hopefully you won't make things difficult for me." After saying that, he left the car.

Watching his back, Narimura Haruko cried and felt humiliated. Although she wanted to use her hands to wipe the tears, but her hands could not work properly as they were constantly shaking.

Outside the car, the driver was thrown into confusion of whether or not he should call the police.

Chapter 162 - Makeover

South of Tokyo, on the Northern Part of Machida City, there was a large mansion that covered an area of four hundred square meters. This area was previously a park and later, the current President of the Japan Science and Technology Industry Association Zhuishan Zhangci bought this land through his connection. He then turned it into a large mansion.

This was the social reality in Tokyo, the world famous metropolis where the land price was exorbitantly expensive. For some people, to buy a few dozen square meters house required an exhausting work, while others could easily live in a mansion and be merry.

Japan Science and Technology Industry Association was established in the early postwar period in order to unite the Japanese Business Community. The purpose of this organization was to revitalize the Japanese economy. Originally it was named as Japan Industry Revitalization Association, later on, it was changed to the current name twenty years ago. Although nominally belong to the civil society organizations, and the key members were non-officials, but it has the public and semi-public support from the Government.

The Association's current president Zhuishan Zhangci himself was the largest shareholder in a big real estate company. At the same time, It was also said that he was a fanatical patriot.

Zhuishan Zhangci's large mansion was surrounded by 4.5 meters high fence, with a very unsightly barbed wire on top. Perhaps the mansion owner thought that, relative to the visual impact, the

safety in the inside was more important. Just as he once talked with foreign words: It does not matter if the Japanese Self-Defense force is not like an Army, as long as there are troops and weapons with army quality, that is enough.

At this time, it was already one o'clock in the morning. A shadow suddenly appeared outside of the wall of the mansion.

That shadow threw a small stone toward the barbed wire atop the wall to determine whether it was powered with high voltage electricity or not. After determining that it was not, that dark figure slowly climbed the wall.

After climbing the wall, the man did not see a dog coming after him. Therefore he thought: 'Perhaps this Zhuishan Zhangci does not like dogs. Looks like he is the same as me.'

Although there was no dog, the man did not immediately jump over because he saw through the infrared glasses that he wore infrared beams covered the whole area in front of him.

But to this man, it was a much better condition than dealing with watchdogs that he should kill but unable to.

On the other side, at this time, the master of the house Zhuishan Zhangci was doing a strenuous exercise that was not suitable for people of his age.

The man was already more than sixty years old, and few age

spots began to appear on his body. He was leaning over the body of a woman and violently twitched.

Perhaps thinking that he can draw the vitality from a young body, he especially liked younger women. A female college student was his tonight's dinner.

He was very proud of the fact that he can keep such a good effort even when he was over sixty years old.

However, time is unforgiving to human after all. After holding on for a few minutes, he finally collapsed on top of the female college student's body like a dying fish, desperately gasping for breath.

"Mr. Zhui, Zhuishan, you are really good, it was amazing." The female college student deliberately panted and said.

Although inside his heart he knew this was untrue, the words of the female college student pleased Zhuishan Zhangci very much.

"Rest assured, I will help you look for a good position in Daejon trading company."

"Thank you, Mr. Zhuishan, I will never forget your kindness." Although the man's tone sounded like he was giving alms, the female college student still showed a grateful look.

That college girl's expression, to a certain extent, stimulated

Zhuishan Zhangci's sense of superiority. He liked seeing the way other people gave him a grateful look.

“Turn off the light, I want to get some sleep.” Intense drowsiness dispelled his idea that he was ready to do it again.

“Yes, Mr. Zhuishan.” The college girl immediately turned off the light.

After sleeping for an unknown amount of time, Zhuishan Zhangci suddenly was awakened by a sharp pain. He opened his eyes to look and saw a figure wrapped in a black suit from top to bottom also looked at him as well as held his jaw. The severe pain came from his jaw that was caught by the figure in front of him.

Being suddenly grabbed by the jaw like that, Zhuishan Zhangci's heart suddenly was filled with a sense of panic. He wanted to break free from the figure's hand but found that he cannot move his body.

He was unable to move not because of being tied by a rope. He cannot even move his finger as if the body was not his own.

This unprecedented terror experience made him uncontrollably called out. But because his jaw was clasped by the man, apart from calling out “uh, uh” strange sound, he was unable to utter another word.

“If you do not want to die, shut the fuck up.” That man in black

coldly said to him.

The fear of death made Zhuishan Zhangci ignored his strange physical condition and quieted down. Terrified look appeared on his face as he looked at the man in black in front of him.

Because of the backlight, in addition to seeing the full black attire of that person, he did not see the contour of the face of the man in black. But with his tone of voice, Zhuishan Zhangci felt that the person in front of him was not old.

‘Is this a house robbery or an assassin sent by my enemies?’ He vowed that if he can survive this, he would definitely change all the bodyguards. ‘They do not even know someone comes into the house, what a bunch of useless.’

“Are you Zhuishan Zhangci?” That man asked as he loosened his jaw.

“I, I am Zhuishan Zhangci. I can give you anything you want, but please do not kill me.” Although he can talk, this President of Japan Science and Technology Association did not dare to make a sound to call for help, because he knew, as long as he yelled, he will immediately be killed by this man.

“Anything I want? Then I want you to look at me.”

Hearing his words, Zhuishan Zhangci involuntarily raised his head to look at him.

After a while, the man in black slowly asked: “Now, do you know who I am?”

“I do not know.” Zhuishan Zhangci’s panicked look disappeared from his face, replaced by a glazed expression.

“Did Yasuyama Fukuju tell you that there is a woman named Eiko Kotoshi, who are investigating the man named ‘Goyama?’”

“Yes.” Zhuishan Zhangci replied without a trace of hesitation.

“Did you send people to catch Eiko Kotoshi?”

“No.”

Hearing his answer, the man in black cursed in his heart, ‘just another pawn.’

“Who did you tell this info?”

“Ikeyama Togoto.”

“Who is he?” The man in black felt as if he had heard this name.

“He is the Tokyo Metropolitan Government.”

Lei Yin finally remembered the last time he attended the birthday party on Narimura Haruko's invitation in Keio Hotel. The birthday man, who was also the master of that Party, was called Ikeyama Togoto. 'It seems like this matter really involves senior government official. No wonder they dare to catch an Inspector Police like Eiko Kotoshi.'

After some detailed questioning, Lei Yin can no longer think of another question, and had to end the conversation.

After he erased all of Zhuishan Zhangci's memories of him, he let the man continued to lay back on his bed, and then quietly left the room.

After climbing out of the mansion wall, Lei Yin exchanged his outfit for ordinary clothing.

On his way back, he slowly thought about things.

'Tokyo City Government? I hope this guy is the big fish.' He was tired of always moving around in the middle of those small shrimp and small fish.

In order to find out about the lab, Lei Yin used the most direct but also the hardest way, and that is to track the clues one after another to find the inside man.

From the evening of this day, starting from the testimony of police uncle called Watanabe Muramasa, he looked up the names

that appeared from that confession one by one. Although this method was very simple, it can only be done by a man who can use spiritual force to hypnotize other people like him. Because hypnosis is not as magical as one might think, in normal circumstances, if the one being hypnotized produced a strong resistance, even the more powerful hypnosis master would fail to hypnotize that person. But Lei Yin can do this using his spiritual force. And the effectiveness was also many times greater than ordinary hypnosis.

Not only he can use this to obtain the needed information, but the most important thing was also he can use this method to clear his trace, so as not to alert those people. Otherwise, it would be as before, because Ji Teba and the others had escaped, the lab had been completely emptied, and not even a scrap of paper was left behind.

—

Moving her gaze away from the textbook, Kazumi raised her head to look at his elder brother, who was lying down sleeping on the sofa.

Kazumi shook her head, where did this guy fool around in the evening? Recently he always looked like he did not get enough sleep.

Feeling a little thirsty, she stood up and went to pour a glass of water, and then walked over to him.

But when she was just a few steps away from him, he suddenly opened his eyes, quickly sat up and looked at her.

“Are you a cat?” Kazumi did not understand why every time she came near him, he always detected her.

“I cannot control it, so you better get used to it. What time is it now?” Keeping a sharp vigilance toward his surrounding has become his instinct.

“It is two o’clock in the afternoon. Don’t you have a class?”

“I do not want to go to the class. How are your feet?”

“I can walk now, that means I am okay. I am going to go to class tomorrow.”

“Are you sure? Do not force yourself.”

“Of course I am okay, you are so long winded.” Kazumi could not help but laugh.

“Good, some people began to find me annoying.” Lei Yin’s face showed an angry expression.

“Please, do not even try it, you are so fake. Today the weather is so good, let us go outside for a walk.” Having been bored inside the apartment for several days, Kazumi almost felt her body would

grow out molds.

“I am so sleepy. I just wanted to sleep. Moreover, your feet has just healed, it is better for you to get some more rest.” Lei Yin really did not want to move. These few days he almost always came just before daybreak.

“If you do not want to go, then I will go on my own.”

“Really afraid of you, wait for me, I will go wash myself.” Lei Yin slowly stood up and walked to the bathroom.

Knowing that he will certainly accompany her to go out, Kazumi showed a proud smile behind him.

Walking beside his little sister under the bright sunshine, the brother felt that the street was exceptionally dazzling, while Kazumi’s mood suddenly became much better.

“Only now I find that being alive is really a good thing. At least the Sun feels so good.”

“You are still young, do not say like you just out of prison.” Lei Yin yawned and said.

“Hey, I rarely express my feelings, do not spoil the fun for me okay.” Kazumi discontentedly said.

Lei Yin did not speak, just looking at the girls walking in the vicinity. Then he turned his head to look at her from head to toe, and after a while said: “Kazumi, I think you should dress up.”

“Why?”

“You are a college student now, and also a girl. Although I am not a fashionable person, I think you should put on some clothes close to your age, at least you should change your eyeglasses.”

“I do not think that is necessary.” Kazumi flatly refused.

“Your protest is invalid.” Lei Yin knew he would say no, therefore, he took her by hand and walked to the front of a department store.

“Brother, I do not want to go.” Kazumi struggled to break free as she whispered.

“Kazumi, I do not think you should continue to close yourself. Listen to me this time, go make some change for yourself, okay?” Lei Yin knew that the things their beast father Hirota Shori did to her had caused a very serious psychological trauma, so that other than her own brother, she was unable to get along with other men. Since high school, he has been trying to get her to become like an ordinary girl. Unfortunately, it was to no avail.

Watching her brother's full of concern eyes, Kazumi did not want to disappoint him, finally nodded her head.

Seeing that she had agreed to his request, Lei Yin very happily patted her on the head.

As the first step of the makeover, Lei Yin first took her to the store who sold eyeglasses to help her choose a pair of thin frame glasses.

Actually, he wanted her to wear contact lenses, but because she thought she was not used to it, so they postponed it for another time.

Because the lens grinding took some time, he took advantaged of this period of time to take her to the Mall outside to find a hair salon for a haircut.

Looking at the young hairdresser with earrings and dyed golden hair, Lei Yin rudely said to the store manager: "I want to change the hairstylist, help me find a normal one."

"What did you say?" The young hairstylist furiously said.

Lei Yin ignored him and continued to say to the store manager: "I do not want to give my sister to someone who likes to do a human experiment like him. If you want to do business with me, go find me another hairstylist."

The manager had no choice but to pull the furious young hairstylist and then found one who looked like a refined man.

“This is the best hairstylist in the shop.”

Lei Yin looked at him for a moment and then said: “Do not make her follow the current trend, I only ask you to help cut a suitable hairstyle for my sister.”

“No problem. My craftsmanship and your vision are equally well.” That man laughed.

When everything was ready, Lei Yin selected a white silk dress for her to wear in the dressing room.

“Go put on this and let me see it.”

“Do I really have to wear this?” Kazumi paused and then said.

“You do not like this one?”

“No. Alright, I will go wear it.” Kazumi took the dress, turned around, and walked into the dressing room.

Five minutes later, Kazumi came out of the dressing room with head lowered.

Looking at her sister from head to toe, Lei Yin once again could not help but lament that the potential of a woman was really amazing.

“Brother, does it look weird?” Kazumi blushingly whispered.

Lei Yin did not speak, just walked over to pull her black-rimmed glasses, and then helped her put on the new thin-framed glasses, and then smoothly combed her freshly cut hair.

After taking her to the dressing mirror, Lei Yin said with a smile: “I now discovered that I actually have a very beautiful sister. Take a good look at the real you.”

Kazumi slowly raised her head.

“From the ugly duckling turn into a swan, what are your feeling?” Lei Yin smiled from behind her.

Kazumi did not answer, just stared at the girl in the mirror.

Chapter 163 - Online

“Where have you been? Even if you do not want to attend classes, at least you need to tell me about it. If you keep going like this, be careful your grades would fall.” Takeda took off his shoes at the entrance and loudly muttered.

When he walked into the living room, he found out there was another person there besides Lei Yin. Moreover, that person was a girl.

That girl was impressive looking, with smooth semi-long hair that naturally draped over her shoulders. Her face wore a pair of silver thin-framed glasses, plus a white-colored silk dress and high-heeled shoes. She seemed filled with the kind of intellectual beauty that cannot be put into words. Although her age was not big, there was a glamorous style of a mature woman on her brows. And her slightly aloof expression made people made people felt there was a hard to close distance as well as mystery.

“Masashi, is she your girlfriend?” Takeda walked to Lei Yin side and whispered.

Lei Yin ignored him and simply said to the girl: “Kazumi, let us go out for dinner. You can also call your classmate.”

The girl somewhat hesitantly looked at him, “Brother, I am still not used to this.”

“It does not matter, you can slowly get used to it.”

At his insistence, Kazumi finally nodded her head.

The nearby Takeda, who have heard their conversation, looked at his good friend's sister as if he saw a ghost during the day.

“Ma, Masashi, is that really Kazumi?” When walking down outside, the has been in a state of spiritual journey Takeda suddenly pulled his friend to the side and then asked with a look of disbelieve.

“Hey, being slow also has its limit.” After walking for so long, he still asked this question.

“But the difference is too far.” Takeda was helpless, he seemed unable to connect the girl that followed them to the somewhat unsophisticated girl that he previously knew.

“Really?” Lei Yin turned around and looked at his sister who still had the previous somewhat indifferent, as if thinking deeply, look.

Relative to Takeda's reaction, when Take Asasei saw Kazumi's new look, her reaction was much more greater. After a round of yelling that seemed like a high

After a round of yelling that seemed like a high grate yelling voice of a ghost to Takeda, Take Asasei, like a pet meeting its master, hovered around Kazumi, watching her nonstop.

“Haven’t you seen enough?” Kazumi finally reached the end of her patience.

“Ah, you really are Kazumi.” The girl embraced her with excitement.

Kazumi felt somewhat powerless to refuse her action.

At the cafeteria, Yoshikawa and Akira Shiraishi were already there waiting for them.

To Kazumi’s new image, Yoshikawa won over Takeda in comparing how big their reactions were. Besides showing a bit of startled look at the beginning, Akira Shiraishi quickly restored his calm appearance.

Perhaps because she was not used to being watched, at dinner time Kazumi did not say a single word, seemingly even more silent than before. All of these did not escape Lei Yin’s eyes.

After eating the meal, Lei Yin said to her: “Kazumi, let us go to my apartment, I want to talk to you.”

Raising her head to look at him, Kazumi nodded.

“I also want to....” Takeda’s “go” word was forced back into his mouth by Lei Yin’s stare.

“Akira, could you send Kazumi’s classmate back to their apartment?” Lei Yin still did not know Take Asase’s name.

“You owe me one.” Akira Shiraishi smiled and said.

“We go first.” After Take Aasei and Kazumi said their goodbye to each other, Lei Yin led her sister back to his apartment.

After they have walked away, Takeda grabbed his chin and said: “I never thought Kazumi turned out to be so beautiful. If I knew this, I would have treated her better.”

“I do not understand why she previously dressed like that, it was truly a waste.” Yoshikawa felt the same.

“This is also my first look at Kazumi’s new appearance. But tonight I see that she does not seem to be very happy.” Take Asasei could not help but join the discussion.

“Maybe she is not used to it.”

“Masashi’s sister classmate, let us get out of here.” Akira Shiraishi did not want to waste time listening to their gossip.

“Yes.” Still having a strong urge to talk, Take Asasei a bit disappointedly walked toward him.

After returning to his apartment, Lei Yin poured a cup of tea and

placed it in front of her.

“Thank you.” Starting to relax, Kazumi picked up the teacup and took a sip.

After she put down the cup, Lei Yin suddenly said: “Kazumi, I am sorry.”

“Why are you suddenly apologizing to me?” Kazumi became somewhat puzzled and asked.

“I initially thought you can slowly adapt to your new look, but I did not think you would get so uncomfortable. It seems like I am too impatient.”

After looking at him for a moment, Kazumi suddenly laughed, and then slowly leaned her head on his shoulder.

“Brother, do you know what is your greatest weakness?”

“What?” Regarding her question, Lei Yin can only scratch his head.

“You are too soft toward girls, that is not a good habit.”

“Hey, do not make me sound like a Playboy.”

“Fool, it’s not what you think. In fact, I was not nervous because of that. How should I say this? I just felt like I was suddenly not myself. I really do not like this feeling.” Kazumi pondered for a moment and then said.

“Kazumi, even though your appearance has changed, you are still you. On this point, you should know better than anyone else. Before this, you deliberately dressed to reject other people from becoming close to you. You might as well said you refuse to accept your own past.”

Lei Yin felt Kazumi’s body lightly trembled.

He gently pulled her body and, sure enough, saw her eyes were full of tears.

“Listen to me, this may be painful, but humans can only grow if they can directly face with their own past. The past is in the past, you should try to make some change for yourself. Only you can help yourself to walk out of the shadow inside your heart, someone else can’t.” Lei Yin finally decided to speak out his mind.

Lying in his arms, Kazumi cried even harder, and tears soaked the chest part of his clothes.

Lei Yin did not say anything, just tightly holding her.

After an unknown amount of time, when Kazumi woke up, she found herself lying on a bed, and covered with a sheet.

For a time, she did not know exactly where she was. After a while, after looking at the furnishing in the room, she remembered that this was Lei Yin's room.

'Where is my brother?' She slowly sat up.

When she walked into the living room, she saw Lei Yin was doing something with his laptop above his knees.

"Woke up?" Lei Yin turned his head and looked at her.

Kazumi came over and sat down on the sofa next to him.

"Are you hungry? Do you want to order a takeaway?" Lei Yin combed her tilted hair with his hand.

"I am not hungry." Kazumi shook her head.

Just like two years ago at their farewell night, Lei Yin found that the just woke up feeling confused Kazumi was like a child who has yet to wake up.

"What time is it now?"

"Eleven o'clock in the evening. Tonight, you stay and sleep here. You can go back to your place tomorrow."

Kazumi nodded her head, “What are you doing?”

“It is nothing, just accessing the net to check a data.” Lei Yin turned off the MSN.

Kazumi did not ask again, just quietly watched him operate the computer.

After a while, she suddenly said: “Brother, I want to do a part-time job.”

“You do not have enough money?” Lei Yin turned his head to look at her.

Kazumi put her head on his shoulder and gently said: “No, I just want to try to meet with more people. Like you said, I need to go out to make change for myself. Just doing a part-time job, no big deal.”

“Really?” Lei Yin’s tone of voice was tinged with surprise.

“Em. But there’s a possibility that I would be fired within a week.” Kazumi said with a smile.

“Do you want me to help you find a suitable part-time job?”

“Please, if even in this minor matter I need your help, then how

could I find work after I graduate?”

“In any case, you have to be careful, remember to tell me if someone bully you.” Lei Yin knew that for a college student, it was a very common thing to do a part-time job. Therefore, he did not worry about it too much, moreover, to him, this matter was also a good thing for her.

“You sound more and more like one of those gangster, if you do not change it, no girl would like you.”

Hearing her relaxed tone, Lei Yin knew that her mood has recovered.

“In two days, I will go buy some clothes with you, okay? In fact, wearing a skirt is very suitable for you.” Lei Yin tentatively asked.

“Let me adapt to it for a few days, okay? I am still a little not used to this change.” Kazumi seemed somewhat hesitant.

“Well, I am not going to force you, but do not wear that old pair of glasses again.”

“Hey, didn’t you say you would not force me?” Kazumi protested.

“If even the glasses are not changed, what is the difference than the original appearance? You should at least give me some comfort.”

After some bargaining, Kazumi finally agreed.

—

Before she even opened the door, Eiko Kotoshi has already heard Yaetera's cacophony of laughter coming from the inside.

She suddenly cursed in her heart, 'This guy is indeed deep to the bone ulcer. He only moved here less than three days, but he quickly took over the place.'

"Eiko, you are back." Seeing the female police inspector opened the door and came in, Yaetera, who was watching television with great enthusiasm, said hello to her.

Hearing Yaetera's voice, Sayaka Kotoshi immediately came out from the kitchen.

"Eiko, you are back. Have you eaten yet?"

"I already ate." With that, Eiko Kotoshi went back to her room.

"Eiko, I have something to talk about with you." Yaetera suddenly stood up and said to her.

Toward this man, the female police inspector have no interest whatsoever. She gave him a good face and said, "I am sorry, I am

busy.”

“Eiko, can’t you listen to what Mr. Yaetera have to say?” Sayaka Kotoshi could not help but audibly said.

“If he had something to talk about, he can talk it with you. I still have a lot of work to do, if you’ll excuse me.”

Seeing that she continued to ignore him and directly walked to her room, Yaetera was very awkward.

“I am sorry, this kid is too uncultured.” Sayaka Kotoshi very apologetically said.

“It is okay, I will get a chance to talk to her, do not worry.” Yaetera comforted her.

Inside her room, Eiko Kotoshi sullenly took out her laptop from her bag.

During the boot process, she began to regret she had talked back to her mother.

If this was a normal time, she would keep her feelings to herself, but in recent days, her mood was very bad, so bad that she has lost her patience.

The main reason for that was because for several days the

mysterious person has not made any contact with her.

Since a few days ago, after that guy, in MSN, lambasted her for acting rashly, he never talked to her again.

She simply did not care if it was someone else, but that person was the only person who can help her obtain important information. His existence related to whether or not she can make significant crucial progress in her investigation.

If that person really broke contact with her, she really did not know how she should continue. Because what she faced with were not ordinary criminals, but probably some senior government officials with a very real power.

After she connected to the internet, she immediately opened the MSN.

After she entered the MSN interface, she began to look whether that person online or not. But to her disappointment, that person was not online, and there was no information sent to her.

‘Did that guy really break contact with me?’ Eiko Kotoshi’s heart was filled with a rising restless emotion.

Just as she prepared to take a bath to calm down, all of a sudden, she saw that person’s icon lit up.

‘He finally came.’ The female police was pleasantly surprised and

immediately typed him some words.

You came.

That man did not immediately reply. After a few minutes of watching those two words, Eiko Kotoshi's heart started to beat faster and faster.

Listen carefully, I already knew where the laboratory is.

Is it true? The female police replied with her fastest speed.

Yes, it is true.

Tell me where is it? Eiko Kotoshi eagerly pressed further.

After a while, the other party still has not answered back.

Why won't you speak? Quickly tell me where is the laboratory. If the man was in front of her, she would definitely grabbed his collar and forced his confession.

But the man still did not answer.

Eiko Kotoshi was very anxious and immediately typed more questioning words.

After waiting for another two minutes, she finally got a reply from that guy.

I have something to do right now, I will talk to you in details tomorrow night.

After Eiko received this sentence, that person's icon immediately dimmed, showing that he was already offline.

“Bastard! You would not die by typing one more sentence!” The feelings of anxious and anger simultaneously occurred in Eiko Kotoshi's heart, making her loudly cursed with a very unlady-like tone of voice.

Chapter 164 - Secret Investigation

At the intersection between Tokyo Tama City and Fuchu City, there was a land that was preserved for urban development but has yet to be developed and has been covered with a forest of tall trees from the outside.

In the vicinity of this forest, there was an ongoing development of Golf course with several tennis courts. Regarding the construction of a large recreation center here, there have been mixed feelings from the local resident. Except for the middle and small sized businesses that were hoping after the completion of the recreational center would be able to join and the expectation of booming in business for the nearby shops, but more residents were worried that the construction of this recreational center would destroy the natural environment in the nearby area.

Walking for about five minutes from the golf course toward the direction of the highway, one can see a large European-style mansion with garden. This was the current Mayor of Tokyo Shintaro Ikeyama's luxurious home.

Tonight, this place was holding a grand reception, the theme of which was to celebrate Shintaro Ishihara successfully became an official candidate for Senatorial election.

Although Shintaro Ikeyama himself was one of the shareholders in overseas oil development company, it did not mean that he was willing to use his own money to run the campaign advertisement. Therefore, to those business guests who were accustomed to deal with the officials, tonight's Banquet was not a normal celebration.

Otherwise, the man has just become a candidate, why would he need to celebrate it with such a pomp party? If someone accidentally opened the gifts from those guests they would find checks that can be cashed in real-time tucked in there.

Not a while ago those Presidents of the many firms that was present here already gave their gifts at the birthday banquet. And now less than two weeks later, they have to give it to the Mayor of Tokyo. Although they were secretly resentful of his greedy behavior, they have no alternative.

Because although this man was so disgusting, one thing was undeniable. That was, in the midst of so many candidates, he was the most likely candidate to be elected as a Senator.

In the eyes of general public, Shintaro Ikeyama was a powerful patriotic official. Not only he **, he was also actively anti-American. When the United States soldiers in Japan rape girls and do evil conducts, the newspapers reported it. And to this day Shintaro Ikeyama would always speak out about it, and his attitude was equally though. This made some Japanese felt that Shintaro Ikeyama was a hero for daring to speak out. He even wrote a book, which titled 'Japan Can Say "No"'. This book, which flooded with large numbers of vulgar words, turned out to be very popular in Japan. And even some people outside of Japan have followed suit in writing books with a similar topic.

Because psychologically people sometimes needed external though person. The more though that person was, the more he can give people the "Patriotic" feeling. Shintaro Ishihara, with his profound understanding of human nature, naturally knew this.

Therefore, his fame was the highest among the other candidates.

But to people who have dealt with him, knew that this man was a wolf in a suit. He was like a bloodsucking leech with insatiable appetite of sucking someone else's blood.

In the evening around nine o'clock, the invited guests have basically in attendance.

In addition to officials from all level of political circles, the hall was filled with well-known people in the business world. At a glance, there were many well dressed, gentleman-looking men with elegant ladies. In the middle of the hall, everyone let out a large piece of open space for people to dance with their partner.

“Eiko, let us go to the dance floor to dance.” A similarly dressed in neat suit police officer Watanabe asked the woman dressed in a black long dress, who stood next to him, Eiko Kotoshi.

Unfortunately, the female inspector police did not hear his kind invitation, because she was looking at the several other guests talking with the Tokyo Mayor Shintaro Shintaro Ishihara.

“Eiko.” Seeing that his companion did not seem to hear what he said, Watanabe Muramasa gently patted her on the shoulder.

“What?” Eiko Kotoshi finally recovered her attention.

“Do you know Mayor Shintaro?”

“No. What did you just ask me a moment ago?” The female police inspector did not want to be seen through by him, quickly changed the subject.

“Come dance with me.”

“I am sorry, I do not dance.”

“It does not matter, we just do the slow dance.”

“Okay then.” Eiko Kotoshi knew it would not be good if she continued to refuse, moreover, the time was still early.

Watanabe Muramasa was very pleased to take her to the dance floor.

He was somewhat in disbelief that he actually able to dance here with her.

In fact, he never thought to attend this party, but she was the one who first asked him to participate in this event by the Mayor of Tokyo.

Although it felt a bit strange, in his excitement, Watanabe Muramasa did not dwell on it, and hurriedly asked his uncle for the invitation for tonight attendance.

After seeing the appearance of the first time dressed up Eiko Kotoshi in front of him, he cannot help but have an amazing feeling.

Under the sound of melodious music, Watanabe Muramasa slowly danced with her in the middle of the hall. Feeling the flexible and slender waist of her with his hand, he became more determined to obtain this woman.

After the end of the song, Watanabe Muramasa invited her to continue to dance, but Eiko Kotoshi said she wanted to fix her makeup. And then she walked away to the bathroom.

After leaving the hall, while no one was looking, Eiko Kotoshi quietly walked into a large room empty of people.

After closing the door, she immediately pulled up the red carpet on the floor, and then carefully observed the floor.

After determining there was nothing exceptional about it, she went to the couch and pushed it aside, and then looking at the floor behind the couch.

After watching the entire floor of the room, she focused her vision on the surrounding walls.

After a while, she quietly walked out of the room and went into another room to inspect it the same way as before.

Besides the kitchen, she quickly inspected all the rooms in the corridor. However, she did not find the existence of anything similar to a secret door.

But soon, she quickly moved her gaze toward the garden outside.

Without much thought, she immediately unceremoniously climbed out of the corridor window with an unladylike action.

She pretended to slowly take a walk around the garden, while her eyes watching the situation around her to determine there were no other people here.

After inspecting the whole garden, she did not see anything strange about it.

Is that person actually lying to me? The doubt inside the female police's heart became heavier.

After returning to the main hall, the female police inspector came to Watanabe Muramasa's side, only to find he was talking with a very fashionable girl.

“Ah, Eiko, you are back. Let me introduce you, this is my senior sister in the University, I also did not expect to see here.” For fear of her misunderstanding, Watanabe Muramasa hurriedly introduced her to the girl beside him.

“Oh, your girlfriend? Very pretty. Hello, my name is Akira

Murorie.” That girl said with a smile.

“Hello, my name is Eiko Kotoshi, Mr. Watanabe’s colleague.” The female police inspector calmly stated her identity.

Looking at Watanabe Muramasa’s embarrassed expression, Akira Murorie smiled, “I won’t bother you guys anymore, my boyfriend is over there. Junior Watanabe, keep up your effort.” With that, she smiled and walked away.

“Eiko, senior sister Akira really likes to joke, haha.” Watanabe Muramasa forced himself to laugh.

“Mr. Watanabe, I am really grateful for your help.”

“Why are you being so polite? Actually, I did not help you anything.” He was a bit confused about this ambiguous remark of her.

To a person who rarely asked someone else’s for help like Eiko Kotoshi, she did feel she owed this man a favor.

After glancing around the room, the female police inspector did not see Shintaro Ikeyama among the guests, therefore, she said to Watanabe Muramasa: “Do you know where is Mayor Shintaro?”

“Em, let me think about it. I remember that I just see him on stairs. Why do you want to look for him?”

“It is nothing, I am just asking. After all, he is the host of this party.

To hear her say that, Watanabe Muramasa also did not care and continued to chat with her.

After a while, Eiko Kotoshi said to Watanabe Muramasa: “I have to make a phone call, if you’ll excuse me.”

Seeing her walked away again, Watanabe was a bit depressed.

Because there was also a lounge for guests on the second floor, when Eiko Kotoshi went upstairs, no one took notice of her.

After looking at the several open lounges, she did not see Shintaro Ikeyama. Therefore, she asked the waiter on the second floor. From them, she found that he just went to the library on the third floor.

When no one paid attention, she quietly walked to the third floor.

Compared to the main hall or the second-floor lounge, the third floor was a lot quiet. She went to the front of the only room where there was a light, and then put her ear on the door to listen to the sound from the inside. After a while, she really heard the sound of someone speaking in the inside. But because it was blocked by the door, she was unable to clearly hear it.

She immediately pulled her dress up until it reached her thigh, exposing her snow white thigh. On the left thigh tied a P5 made in German pistol that she bought a few days ago from the black market. And on her upper right thigh tied something that looked like a stethoscope.

She pasted the head of that stethoscope-like thing flat on the door and then attached its other side to her ears.

Gradually, she was able to hear the conversation from the inside. She cannot help but feel happy that she also bought this thing when she bought the pistol.

“I told you, now is a very important period. Why did you bring so many people here?” It was a middle-aged male voice.

“Do not worry, this is just a simple party, no one will find anything.” Shintaro Ikeyama uncaringly said.

“Now we cannot take any risk, the above specifically explained to us. The previous matter, we have been very passive, I do not want to have any disadvantageous situation again.”

“Ai, I also do not want to do this. But there are some candidates that pose a great threat to me, so I had no alternative but to hold a party to raise the election campaign money. As you know, I am determined to win this election.”

“You say all this, just to try to force us to support you, right?”
The other man coldly snorted.

“Do not get me wrong, I do not mean that. I have taken such a big risk for you, I think you ought to tell the above about my innermost desire.”

“All right, I will talk to the above about this. But I want you to promise me, before those things have been shipped away, you cannot let anyone to come here again.

“No problem. Please send my regards to the above.”

“You are considerate.”

Feeling that man was going to come out, Eiko Kotoshi immediately put that stethoscope-looking thing away, and then quickly went down to the second floor.

After narrowly returned unnoticed to the main Hall, the female police inspector took a deep breath to adjust her mood.

The things that the man said were the one that she wanted. However, this was, after all, the mansion of the Mayor of Tokyo. According to that person, if at the appointed time she still cannot obtain anything, it would be very troublesome.

After thinking about it for a moment, she finally made a decision.

“Eiko, have you done with your phone call?” Seeing her finally came back, Watanabe Muramasa’s face immediately showed a smile.

“Mr. Watanabe, what time is it now?” She asked while deliberately rubbing her forehead.

“Now it is around ten o’clock. Are you feeling unwell?”

“Yes, from the start, my head hurts a little bit.”

“Do you want me to send you to the Hospital?”

“No, I will just go home and rest.”

“Then I will send you back.”

“No need, I can take a taxi to go home.”

Under her determined insistence, Watanabe Muramasa had to help her call a taxi at the entrance.

“If you need anything, please call me on my phone, I will immediately rush over.”

“Thank you.”

Watching the taxi drove farther and farther away, Watanabe Muramasa felt somewhat lost. Sometimes, he really could not guess what was on her mind.

“Driver, please turned back, I forgot some things.” Fifteen minutes later, Eiko Kotoshi said to the taxi driver.

After the taxi returned back to the mansion, the female police inspector got out of the car and then dialed Watanabe Muramasa’s phone.

After determining that he had left, she immediately returned to the hall as a guest.

In the corridor, taking advantage while no one sees her, she quietly hid in an empty room.

What she needed to do right now was to wait until after all the guests had gone home, and then carefully searched the house. As long as she found the evidence, she can alarm the police to come here.

She actually did not want to go against that mysterious person’s words, but she thought that the approach was a bit too rash. Moreover, up until now, she still has some suspicion toward that mysterious person who provided her with the intelligence. After all, she has never met that person face to face, and that person knew all the details about her. If that person was the enemy in disguise to approach her, then she would be in a very dangerous

situation.

Chapter 165 - Investigation

When all the guests were gone, leaving only those maids responsible for cleaning the dishes and tidying up the places.

At around twelve o'clock midnight, even the maids were already back in their room to rest, and the entire mansion was deserted like it was on weekdays.

From inside the room where she hid for nearly two hours, Eiko Kotoshi quietly walked to the third room with a pistol in hand. And then she went to the study room where she previously eavesdropped the conversation.

Seeing there was no light inside the study room, the female police inspector put her ear against the door and after a while, she did not hear the sound of conversation coming from the inside.

Have they taken the package away? After some consideration, she finally turned the doorknob.

After determining there was no other voice, she slowly opened the door and went in.

But just as she took a step inside, she immediately felt something cold against the two sides of her forehead.

“Do not move.” A male voice rang in her ears.

Eiko Kotoshi's heart immediately sank.

Soon, the P5 pistol in her hand was taken away by the man on the left.

At this time, the still dressed in suit Shintaro Ikeyama, with a tall middle-aged man appeared in the study room.

Watching the already taken care of policewoman, Shintaro Ikeyama very smugly laughed, "Such an unexpected guest."

"How did you know I will come back?" Eiko Kotoshi calmly looked at the present Mayor of Tokyo's nauseating smiling face.

"To be honest, I am surprised that you would come back. In fact, when you listen to our conversation inside the room, the miniature cameras inside the house have already captured your movement. When my men reported to me, I was ready to send someone to catch you. But I never thought you would be back. This allows us to save a lot of effort."

"If I am missing, some people will come here to investigate. No matter what, I am also the Police Inspector of the Metropolitan Police Department, not one of those illegal immigrants that you can make disappear without someone else noticing about it." Eiko Kotoshi grimly said.

"Oh, you seem to know many things, that means I can no longer keep you. But if you tell me the name of whoever provided you

with this information, you might suffer a bit less painful. As for someone who will come to investigate your disappearance, you do not need to worry about it. Because your police boyfriend will testify for us that you are already home.” Shintaro Ikeyama licked his lips like a bloodthirsty wolf.

Hearing his reply, Eiko Kotoshi was even more sure that these people were indeed involved with those experiments.

At this time, the previously silent middle-aged man suddenly interrupted: “No need to say anymore, quickly get rid of her. Tonight has been eventful enough.”

“Yes, Mr. Eguchi.” Shintaro Ikeyama said to the man on the right side of the policewoman: “Cuff her hands.”

That man immediately took out a handcuff and cuffed her hands.

Shintaro Ikeyama went to the front of a bookcase, and then turned to look at the policewoman: “You always want to know the truth, right? Now I will satisfy your desire.” With that, he pulled out two books on the leftmost middle of the bookcase and then reached his hand to press inside.

When he pulled out his hand, the bookcase automatically slid open for more than one meter to the left. A very short rail track was actually installed under that bookcase. After the bookcase has moved aside, Eiko Kotoshi saw on the wall there was an outline of a door similar in size to the sliding bookcase.

Shintaro Ikeyama pushed it open. It turned out it was a door.

Shintaro Ikeyama and that middle-aged man first went in, followed by the two bodyguards and the hobbled Police Inspector.

When they went inside, Eiko Kotoshi was surprised to see there was actually an elevator.

After entering the elevator, Shintaro Ikeyama said to her: “This is my private channel. When I first designed this house, I deliberately left some space to install this elevator. Of course, without a thorough measurement, it is not apparent from the outside. So, even if you searched the whole house, it is impossible to find this place.” When he spoke, he has been staring with his eyes toward the female police inspector’s towering chest.

Although her eyes were disgusted with it, Eiko Kotoshi did not speak out.

The elevator soon reached the bottom. When the elevator door opened, she saw a heavy iron door in front of her.

The After the Tokyo Mayor pressed several numbers on the nearby keypad, the iron door soon opened automatically.

“Although you are not the first woman to come here, it is the first time for a police to be here.”

“I do not feel the slightest pleasure.”

“That is a pity.”

After walking through the iron gate, Eiko Kotoshi found the place was a lot bigger than she previously thought, almost the size of a full basketball court. And that was just one of the rooms; she did not know about the other rooms. The height from the floor to the ceiling was nearly three meters. Hanging from the ceiling above several big fluorescent tubes that illuminated the entire place like the daytime. She can easily see around the room was filled with

She can easily see around the room was filled with a variety of devices and instruments that she cannot name. Some were only half a meter in height, some almost reached the ceiling. Although there were so many instruments, they were neatly placed and did not appear to be cluttered.

Perhaps because the middle-aged man had agreed to his request, Shintaro Ikeyama was in a very good mood. He looked at those instruments and said to the female police inspector: “This place is an emergency shelter basement that was supposed to be built before the war, unfortunately, it was never used. I purposely bought this piece of land and built a large mansion on top of it just to settle on this basement. But these pieces of equipment that you see now are just a part of the original, before this, they were moved from the lab. You are very lucky, because as soon as the construction of the new laboratory is complete, all the things here will be removed. You may be the last person to see these instruments here.”

“Mr. Shintaro, you talk too much.” That middle-aged man frowned.

“Mr. Eguchi, you worry too much. This woman is impossible to escape from here alive.”

“In any case, get rid of her as quickly as possible. I do not want any more problems.”

“Rest assured, after she confesses her partner’s name, I will throw her to those guys as foods. However, it is a bit pity, she is such a beautiful woman. Take her to the interrogation room.” Shintaro Ikeyama said to his bodyguards after he touched her face with his hand,

“If you’ll excuse me, Mr. Eguchi.” With that, the Tokyo Mayor impatiently followed the two bodyguards hobbling with Eiko Kotoshi.

Eguchi sneered behind him, Enjoy her as much as you like, you pig with a brain filled with money and women, before long you will see how you die.

Shintaro Ikeyama and the two bodyguards stopped inside a room. After he gave Eiko Kotoshi an evil smile, he turned on the light.

After seeing the furnishings inside the room, even the calm Eiko Kotoshi could not help but greatly changed her complexion.

In the middle of the room, there was a bed, which was not an ordinary bed. At the upper and bottom part of the bed, there were two knots made of iron, which obviously were used to tie people on the bed. And on the walls, hung a variety of fantastically shaped torture instruments. On the floor, there was a layer of dark red substance. The entire room exuded a hair tingling smell of blood. The female police inspector was very sure that this so-called interrogation room has been used before. Moreover, this was not the interrogation in the usual sense.

“Tie her to the bed.” Shintaro Ikeyama’s tone of voice was somewhat unnatural and has a sense of urgency.

Initially wanting to find a better opportunity, but now she has no way out. Eiko Kotoshi suddenly stepped on the left bodyguard’s foot. Before the man screamed out, she immediately turned around and severely hit the crotch of another bodyguard with her knee. Two screams almost simultaneously sounded.

In the wake of this successful attempt, she was about to run outside, but a somewhat fat body suddenly knocked her whole body to the ground.

“Bitch, I will not let you escape.” Shintaro Ikeyama grimly smiled as he held her shoulders.

Because her hands were handcuffed behind her, moreover, she was also being held on the shoulders, the female police inspector was unable to stand up.

“Idiot, come here and hold her.” Although temporarily he can hold her down, Shintaro Ishihara was not young anymore, therefore, his strength cannot last too long.

The one with the minor injury, the bodyguard that was stamped on the foot by the female police inspector, quickly came.

If she let that guy come over to hold her down, Eiko Kotoshi thought that she would be powerless. She suddenly bit Shintaro Ikeyama's ear.

“Ah!” Feeling the sharp pain, the Tokyo Mayor clutched his bleeding ear and screamed.

Although Shintaro Ikeyama had to let go of his hands because of the pain, his bodyguard has arrived. He immediately pressed down the wanting to go up female police inspector.

The female police inspector initially wanted to use the same tactic against him, but because there was a previous lesson, he immediately raised his head away after he held her down and did not give her any chance.

The situation now was very unfavorable to her. As long as the other bodyguard came to help, then it would really be over to her.

At this time, she heard a strange male voice.

“Such a good appetite, even something so unpalatable is able to bite down by you. Hey, that woman over there, do you want my help?”

Under the influence of that sound, everybody could not help but look, except for Eiko Kotoshi.

While the bodyguard was distracted, she suddenly raised her knee upward violently, which heavily hit that man's vital part. Finally, another man was hit by this move.

Perhaps because of the close proximity, the other bodyguard that was also severely hit, was knocked in place in a flash, and his mouth foamed and then fainted on top of the female police inspector body.

“Fierce, really fierce.” The man suddenly appeared and clapped.

After managing to remove the pressure from the bodyguard, the female police inspector stood up like a horse.

Seeing that the bodyguard that she just hit has collapsed to the ground, while Shintaro Ikeyama's hands were held, and his mouth was stuffed with a cloth by a man whose whole body covered in black, revealing only the eyes.

“Who are you?” Eiko Kotoshi nervously looked at the suddenly

appeared mysterious man.

“You are still unable to guess until now?”

“You are the person who provided me with the information?”

“Yes, I am ‘Outsider,’ do you want my autograph?” The man in black’s eyes flashed with a playful light.

Hearing his name, Eiko Kotoshi knew that he was indeed that person.

“When did you come?” The female police inspector restored her calm.

The man in black did not answer, just said some words that made her angry, “You are the most self-righteous, stupidest woman.”

“Do not think that after you save me you can just insult me, I do not accept your feelings.” Eiko Kotoshi grimly said. She knew that the bodyguards fainted because of him. Otherwise, they would have come together at her.

“Did I speak incorrectly? If you do as I say, you will not find yourself in this sorry situation.”

“If you were in my position, would you, without a search warrant and in the absence of any evidence, conduct a rash search in the

home of the Mayor of Tokyo?”

“Of course I will do that.”

“You....” Eiko Kotoshi felt she was wrong to ask this question to this persistently unreasonable guy.

“In any case, you still do not believe me. Because you doubt my words, you did not do as I said. Is that it?”

Eiko Kotoshi did not answer, indicating she agreed tacitly.

At this point, Lei Yin really did not understand if this using-someone-else-to-do-his-job had any use. He initially wanted her to call the police to put a blockade in here and exposed all its inside. But this self-righteous woman actually took the initiative to come here to secretly investigate. She also thought she can do it in secret, but she did not realize her own skill and experience and was immediately discovered right at the entrance.

But on the other hand, if he put himself on her shoes, it would also very difficult for him to believe a person who he has never met. After thinking through this, Lei Yin no longer blamed her.

“Come here, let me help you open the handcuffs.” Lei Yin took out the key of the handcuffs from the fainted bodyguard.

After hesitating a bit, Eiko Kotoshi finally came over to him.

After opening her handcuffs, Lei Yin put that handcuffs on Shintaro Ikeyama's hands.

“Alright, if you have any questions, just ask. We do not have much time.” Lei Yin pushed Shintaro Ikeyama toward her.

After slightly taking a glance at Lei Yin, she did not immediately pull the cloth on Shintaro Ikeyama's mouth, but suddenly pressed her foot on his thigh rather forcefully.

“Uhm....” Being plugged in mouth made Shintaro Ikeyama's tears flew down through his nose.

Lei Yin was somewhat surprised by this action of hers, which was totally inconsistent with the police behavior.

After she stepped on his thigh, the female police inspector pulled the cloth, and then asked: “Do you know the man named Yasuaki Kotoshi?”

“Do not kill me, please do not kill me. I do not know anything, please, I beg you, do not kill me....” If the public saw the current appearance of the Tokyo Mayor, his support would definitely be reduced significantly.

“I ask you, do you know this man named Yasuaki Kotoshi?” Eiko Kotoshi grabbed his collar and loudly asked.

“I do not know, I do not know that man.” Shintaro Ikeyama’s frightened face looked at the nearby man in black.

“Think carefully, this Yasuaki Kotoshi is the former Director of the Institute of Biology in Tokyo University.”

“I really do not know this man.”

Hearing his answer, Eiko Kotoshi could not help but become a bit discourage. She thought that she had found a lead, but it turned out to be an empty lead.

“Then do you recognize the name ‘Goyama?’” The female police inspector continued to ask.

“I do not know, I really do not know any man named ‘Goyama.’” This answer made Eiko Kotoshi even more depressed. Is there really no other way?

At this time, the nearby Lei Yin suddenly burst out laughing.

“What are you laughing at?” Being in a bad mood, Eiko Kotoshi angrily stared at him.

Laughing slightly, Lei Yin said: “Have you ever heard this joke? It is said that there are three kinds of people who are the most untrustworthy, do you know what are these three?”

“If you have anything to say, just say it, do not keep other people guessing.”

“The first one is the criminal who claimed his innocence, the second one is the drunkard who loudly said he is not drunk, the third one is the politician who said he know nothing. It seems I overestimate your IQ. You should not be a police officer, instead, you should become a kindergarten teacher. I tell you one thing, there is actually no one with the name ‘Goyama.’ In the past, the person who connected with your father is this man in front of you. ‘Goyama’ is just his pseudo name.”

“What? Is this true?” Eiko Kotoshi looked at him with an incomparable surprise.

“Do not ask me how could I know this, in short, believe it or not, that is up to you. Hurry up and ask, we really do not have much time. We need to leave as soon as possible.”

“Quickly tell me, in the past, are you the one who liaised with my father? Are you Goyama?” Eiko Kotoshi grabbed Shintaro Ikeyama and loudly asked.

“I, I really do not know Yasuaki Kotoshi.”

“Bastard, go to hell!” Having fallen into the crazy state, Eiko Kotoshi stamped the thing between his legs.

“Ah!” This was the most shrill scream from Shintaro Ikeyama.

The nearby Lei Yin could not help but laugh, he really never thought that this woman would be so ruthless.

After this pitiful scream, Shintaro Ikeyama finally confessed that he was the 'Goyama' in the past who liaised with Yasuaki Kotoshi.

“Now where is my father?” Eiko Kotoshi asked in a loud voice.

“He, he is already dead.” Shintaro Ikeyama shrunk back his body and said.

“What did you say? You are lying to me, you are lying to me again, right?” Receiving this big stimulation, the somewhat hysterical Eiko Kotoshi grabbed him by the collar and violently shook him.

“It is true, it is true, he really is dead.” Due to his ear wound that has yet to be handled properly, the wound was touched, making Shintaro Ikeyama screamed in pain.

“Hey, calm down, you heard him say it.” Seeing that she did not know how to stop screaming, Lei Yin had to stand up and stop her.

Finally, Eiko Kotoshi slowly calmed down. With an incomparably resentful voice, she said to Shintaro Ikeyama: “Quickly tell me how he died?”

Chapter 166 - Assault

“In those days, the one who contacted your father was indeed me. But I am also being ordered. At that time, together with your father, there were also several renowned biologists who participated in the research.” Shintaro Ikeyama somewhat hesitantly said.

“What are your research?” Eiko Kotoshi restrained her anger and asked.

“Heterologous gene fusion technology.”

“So to speak, you are the one who created the previous monster?”

“Yes. That was one of the experimental body who escaped from the laboratory.”

“Body? Interesting name. Before he underwent your experiment, he should be called a person right?” The nearby Lei Yin sneered.

Shintaro Ikeyama looked at him with fear. Relative to Eiko Kotoshi’s beating, his intuition told him that this man was even more terrible.

Although she probably had guessed it, the female police inspector’s heart was shocked. She had subconsciously resisted believing that her most respected father would involve in this

inhumane experiment. But the fact was entirely opposite with her desire.

“Then how did he die?” Eiko Kotoshi somewhat weakly asked.

“He committed suicide.”

“I do not believe it, you must have killed him, in order to get rid of the witness.” The female police inspector coldly looked at him.

“It is true, he really committed suicide. I can guarantee you on my honor that everything I said is true.” Seeing her full of hate eyes, the current Mayor of Tokyo, all of a sudden, subconsciously covered his crotch with his hand. Seeing this movement, Lei Yin almost burst out laughing.

“Do not make such an empty guarantee. Hey, do not hit him, let him continue to talk.” Seeing that she was about to punch him, Lei Yin immediately interrupted.

The female police inspector took a glance at him and finally held back her fist.

“Your father really committed suicide. At that time, the experiment has made considerable headway, but your father suddenly became very erratic. He began drinking and taking drugs.”

“You said my father was taking drugs?” Eiko Kotoshi was

surprised. She never thought her father turned out to be a drug addict.

“Yes, we only discovered it by accident. At that time, some people reported your father’s situation to the above. But before there was any command from the above, your father has already one step ahead of us.”

“Did he commit suicide?”

“No, in one night, he went to the lab and destroyed all the files and data from the computer. Finally, he also put a fire in the lab, burning down the entire lab. But he himself did not run away and was burned to death along with the entire laboratory.”

Eiko Kotoshi could not think that this would be the result, and was completely speechless.

“Keep going.” Lei Yin patted him.

“Because your father has destroyed all the data and the samples, the research plan was completely paralyzed. Almost all the people participating in the plan were subjected to penalties. I was banished to an overseas oil company for five years to do a small staff job.” At this point, Shintaro Ikeyama’s resentment came to his eyes, it seemed that he took this matter to heart.

“And then I do not know why, the above suddenly want to open this plan again, so they transfered me back.”

“It seems like you are getting along fine. From a small staff to become the Mayor of Tokyo.” Lei Yin joked.

“I rely on my own effort to get this position. Do you know how much money I spent on those greedy Senators for my current achievement?” Shintaro Ikeyama was furious.

“Do you know who you are talking to?” Lei Yin smilingly looked at him.

“I, I am sorry, was careless, please forgive me.” Shintaro Ikeyama suddenly remembered his situation.

Lei Yin ignored him, but said to Eiko Kotoshi: “Hey, you have no more question right? We need to get out of here immediately.”

Seemingly in a trance, the female police inspector slowly stood up.

Watching Lei Yin walked closer and closer to him, Shintaro Ikeyama’s whole face was frightened as he said: “I have already told you everything, what are you going to do?”

“Rest assured, I am not going to kill you, I am not as unreasonable as a certain woman. Since you are so cooperative, I should reward you with something.” With that, Lei Yin made him fainted by punching him.

“Do you really want to kill him that much?” Lei Yin saw Eiko Kotoshi who kept on staring at Shintaro Ikeyama.

Eiko Kotoshi did not say anything, but her hate-filled eyes said it all.

“Unfortunately, now is not the right time, because in this play, he is an indispensable supporting role. If you kill him now, you will be in trouble, moreover, the play would not be able to develop.”

“What do you mean?”

“When you go out, you will understand. All right, let us go.”

Eiko Kotoshi took one look at him, and then looked at the laying on the ground Shintaro Ikeyama, and finally followed Lei Yin out of the room.

After she followed him for about 100 meters, Eiko Kotoshi found that this man did not use the previous route where she came in, but took another channel that was new to her as they ran.

“Where are we going?”

“Nonsense, of course we are going out. Or do you want to stay overnight here?”

Although her heart was annoyed, she patiently asked: “How do you know where the exit is?”

“Sorry, I am not going to tell you.”

If she could, she really wanted to kick his feet.

The two people ran one after the other, and soon arrived to a room with the size of a half basketball court. This room was also filled with all kinds of equipments.

When they arrived in front of an iron gate, Lei Yin suddenly threw himself toward the female police inspector, putting him and her on the ground, and held her on the ground as they continued to roll.

Thinking that she was attacked, Eiko Kotoshi immediately wanted to break free, but just then, a burst of bullets swept over from the front and hit the place where they both previously stood.

Lei Yin held the female police inspector and hid behind a large machine, avoiding the whistling of bullets.

After the gunfire stopped, from the front came the voice of a middle-aged man named Eguchi, “Who exactly are you?”

Lei Yin ignored him, took out a gun from his waist, and then asked Eiko Kotoshi: “Do you have a gun?”

She nodded her head and pulled out her P5 pistol for him to see.

Lei Yin loudly said toward the front: “Are you the one in charge here?”

“Who are you, why do you come here and mind other people’s business?” That man asked.

“Perhaps my life is too boring.”

“You actually dare to tease me?” A row of bullets immediately came again.

For this purely impulsive act, Lei Yin did not make any response. He just looked at the watch on his wrist, and then said to himself: “Time is almost up.”

The female police inspector tightly held her gun as she listened to the sound of Eguchi’s footsteps getting closer and closer.

From the point of view of firepower, Eguchi has a relatively great advantage compared to her pistol. But there were two of them, therefore, they should have the opportunity to win. Eiko Kotoshi analyzed the situation in her heart.

But she soon learned that the dominant one was theirs, because, without knowing when, she saw Lei Yin has taken out a portable

submachine gun from his small backpack on his back.

Although he has the same firepower as Eguchi, Lei Yin did not immediately shoot back, seemingly waiting for something.

When Eguchi was less than 100 meters away from their hiding place, all of a sudden, she heard a totally unexpected huge explosion. The strong shock wave made Eiko Kotoshi almost could not stand still.

Eguchi was also very surprised, but he did not react to it, just hearing the sound of the explosion. Perhaps because of the relative distant, the intensity of the shock wave was slightly weaker than before.

“Bastard, what have you done?” Eguchi loudly shouted.

“Relax, I am not so idiot as to blow up this basement, because I am still here. I just blow up the mansion of Mayor of Tokyo. If I do not do this, I am afraid it would not attract enough the reporters.”

“What?” Eguchi was suddenly surprised.

Just then, Lei Yin suddenly stretched out his hand holding the submachine gun toward Eguchi and pulled the trigger.

Although he only shot it by feel, because of the powerful firepower, Eguchi had to dodge to the side.

At this time, Eguchi had no time to deal with these two people. He had to leave before the reporters arrived here. Therefore, he kept on shooting toward the direction where Lei Yin was hiding, while he ran back.

After Eguchi left, Lei Yin and Eiko Kotoshi immediately continued to run.

Running for almost three hundred meters, they came to a room that was bigger than the previous two rooms. The overall area of the basement was much bigger than Eiko Kotoshi previously estimated.

At this time, Lei Yin suddenly stopped.

“What’s wrong?”

“Do not talk.”

Eiko Kotoshi found that his eyes were a bit strange.

It was very quiet all around them, the female police inspector can even clearly hear her own breathing. Under the influence of this man, she also raised her gun and somewhat nervously glanced around at the several channel entrances connected to this room.

After a while, she heard a burst of gasping sound that became

more clear by the seconds.

Someone's coming? She quickly aimed her gun toward the direction of the sound.

Suddenly, Lei Yin gave his submachine gun to her.

"You take this gun, in a minute I may not have the time to take care of you, you are on your own."

"What do you mean?"

"You still do not understand? It must be that guy named Eguchi who let them out."

"You mean the experimental body?"

"From the sound of it, you will know."

"Can we run away?" Eiko Kotoshi frowned.

"A very small chance. You should know about their speed, ordinary humans cannot outrun them."

"But if it is in the tunnel, using the narrow environment, coupled with the continuous shooting, we should have the opportunity to kill them." The female police inspector calmly said.

“A very good idea, therefore, in a minute you do according to your method.”

When Lei Yin spoke, beastly gasping sounds were getting closer and closer. He can even smell the smell of blood that came out of their mouths.

“What are you going to do?” Eiko Kotoshi could not understand why he gave her his submachine gun.

“I want to fight a duel with them.” Lei Yin said with a smile.

“Your mind is sick.” The female police inspector looked at him like she was seeing a mental patient.

“No matter what, this is my own thing. Stop spouting nonsense anymore, just leave me here.” Lei Yin has no time to explain to her.

After giving him a deep glance, Eiko Kotoshi took the submachine gun, bit her lips, and then ran to the channel in the front.

“Hey, do not die, I do now want to owe you favors.” After entering the channel, the female police inspector suddenly spoke a sentence.

Hearing her words, Lei Yin smiled. It seemed like she must have been mistaken, he never thought he would die young.

At the entrance of the channel, Eiko saw the standing in the middle Lei Yin did not pull out a gun but pulled out a thick back long blade.

He actually discarded the gun for a blade, is that guy really has a problem in the head?

But at this time, she no longer had the luxury to be surprised, because she saw from the left channel five people with monster heads that can only come from horror movies rushed out into the room.

Under the illumination from the light bulb, she can clearly see that they were quite similar to the Wolf-like monster she previously encountered. Their bodies were covered with brown hairs, faces severely distorted, fingertips were long and sharp, with long black nails.

Three of them had long reddish-brown hairs. Apart from the difference in the hair colors, their canine teeth were exposed on the outside lips.

Although these five Wolf-like monsters wore tattered trousers and walked on two legs, it was hard to imagine they were transformed from ordinary humans.

They maintained a certain distance from each other. When they saw Lei Yin standing in the middle, those monsters' eyes became red. Traces of saliva slowly fell down from the corner of their mouths.

Seeing these five monsters appeared at the same time, even a calm person like Eiko, could not help but become pale.

At the beginning, Lei Yin did not understand why the previous monster just sucked the human blood without eating the flesh. Logically speaking, a beast would never settle with just sucking the blood. Then he realized, that monster may still retain some human consciousness, so it would subconsciously refuse to eat human flesh. However, the animal part of its body forced it to taste the blood, therefore it would only suck the human blood.

But now the five monsters in front of him seemed incomparably hungry, perhaps they would even chew the human bones.

Chapter 167 - Blade

Looking at the constantly drooling and eyeing him monsters, Lei Yin's mind was calm like a still water. But deep within this calm, there was an inexplicable sense of excitement like a twisting, constantly tumbling undercurrent flowing far down below the mirror-like surface without causing any ripple.

In the thousands of years of rebirth, he watched as his friends and relatives grew old and then died. The pain from such losses cannot simply be summarized. In order to dispel the boredom of his helpless loneliness, practicing martial art became his only spiritual sustenance.

But after he comprehended the way of the Blade back then, even before he was struck by lightning, and became a spiritual body, it has been very difficult to find a worthy opponent. Moreover, with the passing of times, the excessive use of firearms caused the martial arts to steadily decline day by day. To find a strong and powerful opponent was a rare and almost impossible matter.

Although he has long been accustomed to be way better than his opponent, deep down, he still hoped he can find a worthy opponent. Therefore, when he first met with Jiro Yamahara, who was an Esper, he hoped to be able to compete with him.

He often said that ReiLi was a militant person, but he was clear that he is the real crazy militant. But only if the opponents have the ability to fight with him.

Although the five experimental beasts were unused to light in the room, their strong sense of hunger made them forget everything. In their eyes, the man in front of them was just a piece of meat.

The first who rush at him was one with the long reddish-brown hair, the biggest one among the experimental bodies. There was a clear trace of saliva on the spot where he previously stood.

Two other experimental bodies with the same variety as him immediately followed behind. And lastly, the two Wolf-like with tawny hair experimental bodies followed suit.

These five experimental bodies were like a group of wild animals competing for food. But different from the wild animals, they actually maintained their certain distance toward each other, not fighting among themselves like common animals.

Hiding in the entrance of the channel Eiko Kotoshi soon began to regret not to immediately drag this without brain guy. Although she did not like his arrogant attitude, in any case, he really has given her a lot of help, and even saved her once.

Consider this as my payback to him. When the five monsters began to rush toward Lei Yin, the female police inspector clenched her teeth and rushed out from the channel holding the submachine gun.

Although the distance between Eiko Kotoshi and Lei Yin was nearer, the five experimental bodies' speed were a lot more faster. When she was about 50 meters away from Lei Yin, they had rushed

to the front of Lei Yin. Perhaps she can do something personal to him just before he died, she thought.

At the same, she saw the man, who has been standing still all along, suddenly stirred.

Because his back was facing her, she did not see what he did, just saw his hands seemed to move a bit.

Then, she saw the red-brown monster, who was now two meters away from him, suddenly fell to the ground.

Not all of his body fell down to the ground immediately, just his upper body from the waist up. His lower body, after running two more steps, followed down. This bizarre scene happened because the monster was cut while running.

From the monster's upper body fell to the ground to his lower body completely touched the ground, it only took one second. In that period, Eiko Kotoshi did not know what exactly happened.

But the following scene forbid her to think about it because the other four monsters had also rushed to the front of that man.

At this time, the man made a casual yet very fast dodged to the side, avoiding a direct contact with those four monsters.

And then, she finally saw the man's action. But as before, she only saw the movement of his hands.

His hands moved just a bit, but she knew what he had done.

He had cut the nearest monster with his blade.

She knew this not because she saw the blade's movement, but because she saw the light from the blade flashed a bit.

She had no way to describe this blade, she believed no one can describe this blade.

She only felt that the space and time around the man seemed to have been cut by the blade.

This feeling was very absurd. Like when one woke up, only to see the same scene in one's dream. But then, in her heart, she knew that only this ridiculous idea could describe the scene she just saw.

Then, she saw the very similar scene appeared before her. The nearest monster's body was cut in two, from the waist up and the other from the waist down. And because of the momentum effect, the lower body also ran forward a step before pouring out a pool of blood.

Eiko Kotoshi's mind was completely shocked by the terrifying might of the blade.

When she was in college, she was once a member of the Kendo

Club, moreover, she was third-dan. But she was unable to believe the scene that just happened in front her, this was completely beyond the acceptable common sense.

Even a bloodthirsty beast had a considerable intelligent, much less those experimental bodies, who were not mere beasts. At least, not too long ago, they were just ordinary humans, although now devoid of humanity.

After seeing the two of their kind similarly collapsed inexplicably, the eyes of the remaining three experimental bodies showed some fear, and each of them immediately took a step back and tightly stared at him.

Lei Yin calmly watched them, and then said in fluent Chinese: “If you have human consciousness, you do not want to see yourself become like this, right? Let me help you out of this misery.”

As soon as he said the last words, Lei Yin suddenly moved forward with speed not in the least inferior to those experimental bodies toward the Wolf-like monster standing on the far right.

Facing this sudden attack, the experimental body instinctively held out his two paws to grab the man. At the same time, the other two experimental bodies suddenly launched a violent attack toward Lei Yin’s exposed back.

This taking advantage of the opportunity to attack behavior was definitely a move that no beast should have. It showed that these experimental bodies still have some human intelligence.

Seeing Lei Yin being encircled by the three monsters, Eiko Kotoshi's heart tightened.

At the same time, she saw that incredible scene again.

She saw before the monsters' hands grabbed him, the man suddenly squatted half-down and then cut horizontally with his blade.

Like watching a magic show, she saw a white light that seemed like an illusion passed through that wolf-like monster's body without any resistance. And then, in the same fashion, swiftly passed through the second experimental body. Finally, the long blade quietly stopped at the spot a half meter away from the third experimental body.

The faint white light did not disappear because the blade has stopped. It was still like a glowing line as it linked together with the third experimental body.

That cutting the space and time with the blade kind of feeling shocked the mind of the observer once again.

"Pop, pop" Two consecutive sound was heard. They were the sounds of the two monsters' half bodies, who were attacking Lei Yin's flanks, when they touched the ground like dolls.

Meanwhile, the last wolf-like monsters who were projecting his

claws forward seemed to have no change. But when he roared, wanting to continue to pounce toward the man, his body finally cannot withstand the severe twist and separated in two.

Although the five monsters have all been cut, their extreme body structure did not allow them to immediately die. Instead, they howled on the ground in extreme pain. The entire hall was filled with these scalp tingling strange sounds. In order not to let them continued to suffer, Lei Yin had to stab them in the heart one by one.

Initially, he did not want to cut them in two in the waist, which would make them suffer for not dying instantly. But because of the gene mutation that was caused by the experiments, each of their heights was more than two meters, and also much bigger than the wolf-like monster he previously met. Therefore, cutting at the waist was much easier than trying to cut their necks.

After putting the blade back into the scabbard on his back, Lei Yin gently sighed. Although he won this fight, his heart did not have the slightest bit of joy.

If this was a hand to hand fight, almost every one of them can be a match for him. But when he has a blade in his hand, then it can only be a one-sided massacre. Moreover, he just slaughtered opponents that have already lost their awareness, which made him very uncomfortable.

“Let us go, time is running out.” Lei Yin turned to Eiko Kotoshi and said.

In the tunnel, Eiko Kotoshi followed behind Lei Yin as she looked at his back with a complex look.

Until now, she has not able to recover from the previous shock. It was really hard for her to imagine there was really such a terrifying martial arts in this world.

After running for about ten minutes, the two finally came to the end of the tunnel.

It was a heavy iron gate, but Lei Yin did not immediately open the door. Instead, he first knocked the door five times using the butt of the gun. Then, he walked to the keypad right next to the iron gate and pressed several numbers. When he finished, they heard a “klak” sound, and then from the side of the door came the sound of metal against metal.

Lei Yin slightly pushed the door open. Behind the iron door, there was a very narrow space.

“The exit is above the ladder. There is no light here, so you have to be careful.” With that, he shut the iron door, and then slowly climbed up the ladder.

After the policewoman climbed out of the ladder, she found that she was surrounded by a lush meadow, and the nearby area was covered by Mahogany trees. When she looked back at the ladder where she crawled out from, it turned out to be a sewer entrance.

“Where is this place?” She asked the nearby Lei Yin.

“This is a golf course about two kilometers away from Shintaro Ikeyama’s mansion.”

The female police inspector only now truly understood how much larger the scale of the basement compared to what she imagined.

As if knowing what she was thinking, Lei Yin said: “Actually, the main part of the basement was not so big. It’s just that, when they initially constructed the basement, they deliberately build such a long tunnel to facilitate their escape.”

Recalling how well he understood about the basement, the female police inspector stared at him once again, “Who exactly are you?”

“I am not going to tell you. All you need to know is that I am not with them.” At this time, Lei Yin suddenly clapped his hands.

While the female police inspector was still somewhat confused, three heavily armed, similarly dressed in black, black hooded men, suddenly came out from among the trees.

Seeing the sudden appearance of the three men, the female police inspector instinctively pulled out her handgun.

“They came to pick us up. How is that man?” Lei Yin said the last sentence to the three men.

“He has been knocked out by us and now kept in the car.” One of the men replied.

“Very good, we are leaving now.”

The three men immediately led him to walk outside. Eiko Kotoshi hesitated, but finally put away her gun and followed them.

The five people arrived at the outside road. The female police inspector saw there were two cars parked there.

At the first car, she was surprised to find the middle-aged man named Eguchi was tied and lying on the back seat. Beside him also sat the similarly covered in the head with a black cloth man in black.

“Get in the car, we still have some leftover things to do.” Lei Yin opened the back door of another car, looked at Eiko Kotoshi, and said to her.

After taking a look at him, she slowly walked and get in the car.

The two cars stopped in a slightly hidden place near Shintaro Ikeyama’s mansion.

Actually, even if they pulled up right in front of the main entrance, no one would notice. Because at this time, the mansion was even livelier than when there was a party just a few hours ago.

Fire engines, ambulances, police vehicles, as well as varieties of cars were parked outside. Everywhere one can see people constantly running back and forth.

Although there was no serious fire, but on top of the five-story mansion of the Mayor of Tokyo, there were two exceptionally dazzling explosions.

Someone actually dared to bomb the mansion of the Mayor of Tokyo?

Presently, in addition to the firefighters who constantly cleaned up the scene, those journalists as well as curious passersby constantly came like locusts. Even though now was already late at night, for the sake of obtaining the first-hand information, these reporters all made a live coverage.

In this getting-bigger-by-the-seconds case, even the newly appointed Police Head, as well as many Congressmen also came to the scene. When they just arrived, they were immediately being surrounded by reporters holding out their microphones.

“Mr. Director, is this caused by the terrorist?”

“Mr. Hiroshiyama, do you want to make a statement?”

“Sorry, I just got here, and not very sure about the specific, please let it go.”

“Have they found Mr. Ikeyama? Did he die in the explosions?”

“Sorry, please let me pass.”

Ignoring the war-like scene on the outside, after taking down the earplugs, Eiko Kotoshi asked the nearby Lei Yin: “Is Shintaro Ikeyama himself personally recorded this tape?”

“Haven’t you heard his voice?”

“How could he be so honest and tell everything?”

“You do not need to worry about this, in short, I can guarantee you that this tape is real.”

“Then what do you want me to do?” The female police inspector knew that there must be some other purposes for why he brought her here.

“It is very simple, do the things that a police officer should do, expose this thing out in the open. Now it is the best opportunity because those things are still in the basement, moreover, you also have the voice recording of Shintaro Ikeyama. As long as you lead the search with your subordinates as well as those reporters, the

truth will come out. That is why I did not let you kill Shintaro Ikeyama. You have to start now, otherwise, those things will be transferred once again. At that time, even if you want to take your revenge, you will not have the opportunity to do so.”

“You mean you want me to expose those things in front of these many reporters?”

“Correct, if you do not blow these things up, any senior official here can stop you from exposing it. Moreover, this will also ensure the safety of you and your family. You should know, all the official names that are listed in this tape, all of them are incredible figures. If you let them know that you have this thing, they will certainly kill you to close your mouth, therefore, this is your only chance.”

After lowering her head to think for a long time, Eiko finally opened the car door.

Watching her went further and further away, Lei Yin smiled.

Chapter 168 - Eight Years

Looking down from the office window of Criminal Department room, Tsukuda Mada noticed the Metropolitan Police Gate from the morning till now was still being surrounded by various reporters. It seemed like those commonly known as paparazzi was not so good either.

“Looks like it’s getting bigger.” Tsukuda wryly smiled.

“Anybody who wants to be famous need only to shout, ‘I am Eiko Kotoshi’s subordinate, I was also there at the scene.’ I believe he will soon be surrounded by those reporters, and soon become famous.” A police officer sitting next to him said while reading newspapers.

“I still cannot believe such a thing would happen in this City. There are some people in Tokyo who actually did that kind of experiment.” Another thirty-something police officer unbelievably said.

“I do not know whether that woman has a brain or not, she actually wantonly exposed such a thing out in the open. Now Japan is completely famous. I really doubt whether she is actually a Japanese.” A forty-something old police officer sneered.

Hearing his words, several other police officers looked at each other and said nothing.

The man continued: “Just wait and see, the above will definitely

not let her. I really want to see that woman's final fate would be."

"Martin, this seems a bit excessive. Although she is usually somewhat fierce, she was, after all, our boss." Tsukuda opened his mouth to say.

Martin looked up at him and loudly said: "What kind of good thing that woman has given you? You think she did the right thing? Things like these will make our entire Nation down, if she even had a little bit of patriotism, she would not do it like this. This is the same act as collaborating with the enemies, a treason. If this is before the war, she would have been strangled. Even an accomplice who speaks kind words to her like you did will not end well."

"I am just stating the facts, what accomplice. Please pay attention of what you says? Senior." Tsukuda sneered.

"It's because people like you, who only know how to have fun, that Japan become more and more depraved."

"I think it's people like you, who stubbornly talk about patriotism, that will turn our nation into what you said." Tsukuda sarcastically said.

"Bastard, say it again if you dare."

"Do you think I am afraid of you?"

“You two, stop this quarrel.” Seeing the tension between the two was getting heavier, several other police officers quickly pulled them away from each other.

At this time, in the conference room on the third floor of the Tokyo Police Headquarters, the atmosphere was also similarly depressing.

After several marathon interrogation, the police officer sitting in the middle of the room looked at the indifference looking policewoman, “Advisor Eiko Kotoshi, I am very disappointed by your act and decision. Why don’t you call the headquarters to privately inform the situation instead of exposing it to those reporters without permission? Your action has violated the police procedure, a serious act of bypassing ranks. The Director is very concerned about this matter, I hope you can explicitly say your remorse and accept your deserved punishment.”

Looking at the several high level police officers in senior uniform sitting in front of her like she was a criminal, Eiko Kotoshi, with ice-cold tone of voice, said: “After my encounter with the experimental body that escaped from the lab, I was was ready to proceed with the investigation about this thing. My former boss, that has just been removed from office and prosecuted, Police Superintendent Yokoten, ordered me not to investigate this matter. Afterwards, it was proved that he is one of the implicated officials in this human experimental case. I did not know how many high-ranking police officials that were involved with this matter. Therefore, in order to ensure that the truth is out, I did not notify the headquarters without making sure that this thing come to light. I am just being a police officer bound by the duty, if this is wrong, I have nothing to say.”

The several high-ranking police executives did not think that the woman's eloquence was so sharp, and for a time did not know what to say.

After a while, the Police Commissioner dryly coughed and few other police executives immediately reacted.

“Advisor Eiko, no matter what your motives are, your unauthorized action still fall on the bypassing ranks behavior. Moreover, you have stirred controversy in the community, this is an inescapable fact. As for how your punishment would be, after our deliberations, we will notify you. Now we want to ask for the details of the people who helped you escaped from the basement.”

The female police inspector secretly sighed, they still ask this question, “I am very sorry, I really do not know who they are. They all covered their faces, except for knowing their gender, I know nothing else.”

“Advisor Eiko, please do not use this excuse to deflect our question.”

“I am telling the truth, believe it or not, that depends on you.” Her tone turned cold again.

“You....” One of the police executives, who had so far never contradicted her, suddenly angry and stood up.

“Police Head Dashiya, please do not be angry. Advisor Eiko, you go back and think this clearly, if you remember anything, just notify us. We are very optimistic about you, and hope you do not let us down.” The Commissioner said with a kind face.

“Thank you, if there is nothing else, I want to go back.”

“Before we decide your punishment, you have to rest at home for a few days.”

“I know.” For this result, Eiko Kotoshi was not in the least bit surprised.

After she went out of the room, one of the police executives said to that commissioner: “Mr. Furoba, why don’t you remove her from her post, this woman is really an outrage.”

The Commissioner shook his head, “We cannot do it right now. Now everyone knows her existence, if we remove her from office, the people outside will think we retaliate against her, and this will confirm that the police executives are also involved in this thing. Mr. Director specifically told us to handle this case with care.”

“I understand, Mr. Furoba.”

—

For a few days, no matter what time, as long as you turn on the TV, you can see the overwhelming follow-up reports on the human

experimental case. It's rating, for the first time, was higher than the adult programs, so more and more TV stations rushed to present their reports.

Although the basement was only a temporary storage for the pieces of equipment used in the experiment, those reporters, who were accustomed to taking things out of context, completely took it as the test laboratory for the human experiment. Because in addition to those endless number of pieces of equipment and instruments, the police also rescued a lot of illegal immigrants that were kept in the basement. They were all emaciated and dressed in worn-out clothes, which made them even more pitiful.

The 'Patriotic Official,' who has always been loved by many people, the current Mayor of Tokyo Shintaro Ikeyama was taken away by the police and no one knew where he was afterward.

Compared to what happened here, the thing that was referred to as the recording tape of the personal confession by the Tokyo Mayor Shintaro Ikeyama, included the list of the officials involved in the case, which made the entire Japanese Politics greatly shocked.

For a time, various political parties came out to scold those accused parties, after all, they do not often have this kind of pulverizing an already defeated enemy opportunity.

Although one of the Congressmen loudly shouted that the tape was fake, in the face of strong evidence and momentum, his sound was drawn out. Because after the appraisal from the experts, the voice inside the tape indeed belonged to Shintaro Ikeyama's. Just

that no one knew exactly who was the man who kept asking him questions.

Under such strong opposition, to quell the popular discontent, all the officials who were involved were dismissed and prosecuted. But the number of the different political parties, as well as the officials who were involved, were truly unprecedented in the Japanese political history and the world political history.

Just casually opened the newspaper or turned on the TV, one can see the verbal fights between the political parties. This time, the conditions in all levels of government in Japan can only be described with the word chaotic.

But no matter how noisy those lawmakers were, ordinary people still have to work as usual. Only on their leisure time did they started cursing about the subject.

“Unexpectedly there is such a thing.” Watching the TV, who continuously reported about the case daily, the lying upon Lei Yin Naoko sighed.

“Do not watch this show, it will only worsen the mood the more you watch.” Lei Yin picked up the remote control and changed the channel.

“Em.” Naoko turned her head back against his chest, listening to his heartbeat.

“I am sorry, these few days I have something to do so I could not come to see you.” Lei Yin stroked her fine like silk hair.

“No need to say it, I understand.” Naoko slightly propped up her body and tenderly looked at him.

Watching her hair hanging down from top to bottom, her absolutely beautiful face, and her gentle as water eyes, Lei Yin suddenly understood about something. That was, the reason for why at the present age he rebirthed in Japan was perhaps because he has to meet with this beautiful woman.

“Naoko, do you believe in fate?” Lei Yin stretched out his right hand and gently stroked her cheek.

“Previously not, but since I know you, I have started to believe it.”

“And the reasons?”

Naoko’s voice was as gentle as water, “I think I was born into this world to wait for you.”

Lei Yin’s pupils instantly turned into full size. He slowly sat up, and then gently pulled her head. Finally, the two people’s forehead touched each other.

“You know what? I think so, too.” With that, he kissed her tender and luscious red lips.

The beautiful woman was gentle and eager to respond to her lover's request. A trace of tears seeped out from her eye, then slowly fell along her crystal clear skin.

The two people's body temperature continued to climb as they kissed. Did not know when he started it, but Lei Yin's hand was already under Naoko's short skirt, actively wandering around touching the crucial spots. Spurred on by the intense stimulation, the whole body of the lying down beneath him mature beauty became as hot as fire, and her exposed skin was suffused with pink gloss. Intermittent waves of maddening moans from her breathing continuously echoed throughout the room.

Everything happened quite naturally. But when Lei Yin has just completely opened the buttons on the beauty's clothes, a burst of ultra killjoy ringtone sound sounded in their ears.

Lei Yin wanted to pretend not to hear, but the blushing like a drop of red blood Naoko could not help but chuckle.

"Come one, pick it up. Maybe there is something important for you." Naoko gasped for breath and said.

Lei Yin sighed, bowed his head, kissed her cheek, and then picked up the phone from the table.

After looking at the caller id at the screen, "Hello, is this Maeda? What happened?"

“You call me just to ask me out for dinner?”

“Come on, two big men like us, what is there to see.”

“Fine, I will go looking for you.”

After he hung up, Lei Yin said to Naoko, who has not lost her blush: “Maeda is in the nearby restaurant, he wanted me to go to dinner with him, do you want to come?”

“Maybe he has something to talk about with you, I better not go.”

“That guy is nearby, it does not matter. Your stomach should also hungry, let us go together.”

“Em.” Naoko sweetly smiled, after not seeing him for so long, she did not want to be separated from him even for an hour.

Arriving at the appointed restaurant, Lei Yin saw that except for Maeda who blocked his “affair,” there was a woman sitting next to him. Lei Yin was also very familiar with that woman, it was Eiko Kotoshi.

If he had known she was here, Lei Yin would not have come. That night, he covered his face with a black cloth and also deliberately changed his voice, but a person’s body was very easy to read, not to mention that was just a few days ago. He can only

hope that she failed to see anything.

“Masashi, here.” Seeing Lei Yin, Maeda immediately stood up and waved at him.

After taking their seats, Naoko immediately greeted her lover’s stepfather and Eiko Kotoshi.

Maeda did not think Naoko would come, and somewhat unexpectedly returned the greeting.

Lei Yin looked at Eiko Kotoshi and said: “I cannot believe that even police inspector Eiko Kotoshi also come, do you have something official to do?” He started to talk first to let the woman hear his voice so that she did not jump into conclusion.

“No, I happened to be passing by and encountered advisor Eiko who just walked out of the police headquarters, therefore we get together for dinner,” Maeda explained.

“So it’s like this. Have you ordered your food?” Lei Yin was somewhat hungry.

“Not yet, you guys go ahead.”

“I won’t be polite then. Naoko, what would you like to eat.” Lei Yin opened the menu with his right hand and held it in front of her with his left hand.

“You let Mr. Maeda order first. I will order later.” Naoko blushing said. Seeing Lei Yin being so considerate to her in front of his stepfather, Naoko felt both sweet and somewhat embarrassed.

Seeing her like this, Lei Yin smiled, “You are so nervous, later on, how would Maeda dare to invite you for dinner. Do you want to order a package? Too lazy to think.”

“Em.” Naoko blushing nodded.

Although Ryutaro Maeda knew that Naoko was previously Masashi’s teacher, he always thought the six years age difference between them would be their biggest obstacle, but looking at them now, he started to think that maybe this was not going to be a big deal. Perhaps this guy Masashi has always been too mature. In contrast, the very thin skinned Naoko looked smaller than him.

Eating in a relaxed atmosphere continued. However, Eiko Kotoshi has been silent the entire time. Sometimes when Maeda asked, she would give him a polite answer.

Wanting to understand about her situation, Lei Yin nonchalantly said: “Police Inspector Eiko Kotoshi broke such a big case, I wonder if there is any reward from the above? For example, a promotion, a raise or something.”

Hearing his words, the female police inspector’s face immediately fell. And the nearby Ryutaro Maeda desperately

signaled him with his face, meaning that he should not ask about the matter again.

Unexpectedly, Eiko Kotoshi did not stay quiet this time but opened her mouth.

“Perhaps the above will award me with a big vacation.” She said with a sneer.

So she was just being kept out of office, Lei Yin felt relieved. Although the woman has a bad temper, after all, she had used her to come forward to expose this thing. If she was removed from office, then that was a bit too harsh for her.

No longer asking her, Lei Yin turned to Maeda to ask about Rumiko and Rumi’s situation. In order to investigate the matter, he has not been back for nearly two weeks and was somewhat worry.

At this time, Eiko Kotoshi suddenly asked, “Mr. Maeda, is your stepson a Kendo-ka?”

Hearing her question, Lei Yin’s heart was suddenly alarmed, and immediately replied: “No, Police Inspector Eiko why all of a sudden ask this question?”

“Nothing, just think that you look a bit like someone.” The female police inspector looked at him in the eyes.

“Really? It is normal for people to have some similarity.” Lei Yin raised his cup to take a sip and took this opportunity to avoid her gaze.

“Masashi, I heard from Rumiko that you often instruct Rumi in Kendo at home, is that right?” Ryutaro Maeda strangely asked.

His grandmother! Why can’t you just shut up! Lei Yin cursed in his heart.

“In fact, it’s not really an instruction, Rumi only asked me to become a spectator so I can see her moves more clearly. Right, Rumi is attending a cram school right? I remember she said she was ready to participate.”

“Em, I am not very clear about that, I am sorry.” Because of his work, he was often not at home. Ryutaro Maeda always felt guilty about this.

Lei Yin did not ask the follow-up question, just casually asking other things.

Although he was speaking with Maeda, he always felt being punctured by thorns because he sensed Eiko Kotoshi has been watching him.

—

When she got home, Eiko Kotoshi wearily lied on the bed.

She was not tired because of the case, but because of the powerlessness feeling that came out of her heart.

It finally ended. After eight years of waiting, it should be considered as done.

She just refused to think that her father was really dead. And not a glorious way to die either.

But in any case, her father was finally able to reclaim his humanity at the last seconds.

The matter regarding her father, in addition to the man called Outsider, she did not tell it to anyone else. On second thought, she decided to tell her mother about her father's death, she has the right to know about this matter.

She walked to her mother's room and gently knocked on the door.

"Is it you, Eiko? Come in."

Pushing the door open and walking in, she found her mother was knitting a sweater.

"Eiko, what happened?" Sayaka Kotoshi looked at her daughter who has not come to her room for many years.

“Mom, I have something to tell you.”

“Sit down first and then say, what’s the matter?” Sayaka Kotoshi put her wool ball to the side.

Watching her mother’s eyes, Eiko Kotoshi was somewhat difficult to open her mouth.

After a while, she took a deep breath and said: “Mom, dad he....is dead.”

To her surprise, her mother did not look surprised, but lightly said, “Really?”

Seeing her expression, Eiko Kotoshi’s heart filled with a strong anger, Hearing that her husband has died, how could the wife be so indifferent?

Just when she was ready to stand up and leave, Sayaka Kotoshi suddenly said a sentence that really surprised her.

“Actually, I have long known that your father is dead.”

“What did you say?” She suddenly stood up, not because of anger but because she was greatly surprised.

Sayaka Kotoshi went on to say: “One night after he disappeared

for a year, I suddenly got a call from him. At that time on the phone, he is very excited, as if drunk. He said a lot of things, but I did not understand everything. Until two days later when I saw the coverage on the TV, I slowly began to understand what he said.”

“So what happened then, what else did he say?”

“He told me not to wait for him, moreover, he wanted me to find another person to remarry. When I asked where he was, he refused to say anything. In the end, he only said he wanted to use his own life to atone for what he has done wrong. And then he hung up the phone.

After that phone call, I contacted the police but did not find anything. Because I was afraid to make you worry, I never told you about it. I always thought he would come back, turns out he really is dead.” At this point, Sayaka Kotoshi burst into tears.

Seeing this woman, who had waited for her husband for eight years, Eiko Kotoshi was unable to say anything, just tightly holding her bitterly crying mother.

Chapter 169 - Wait

“Masashi, what are your plan for the Summer holiday?” At meal time, Takeda suddenly said.

“Summer holiday? How could Summer come so fast?” Lei Yin lifted his head somewhat surprised, he felt it was not that long ago when he took the entrance exams.

“Are you still a college student? How could you forget such an important holiday?”

Lei Yin figured out the date, and Summer indeed fast approaching.

Japanese school year usually started from April each year and end in March the following year. They generally used the early period (last semester) from April to September, and late period (next semester) from October to March, two-semester system. There were three typical Japanese School holidays each year: Summer vacation from early July to late August, Winter vacation from late December to early January the following year, and spring break from late February to early April.

Summer vacation? He remembered two years ago he promised to take Naoko to Switzerland to look for Amy. However, he took this matter to the back of his head because afterward, the matter of ReiLi being captured continued to drag on for so long. He hoped this year he can successfully complete this idea.

“Masashi, why don’t you come to my home this Summer holiday, you can also bring your girlfriend along.” Takeda had wanted to see what his girlfriend looked like for a long time.

“No, because I might go on a trip abroad.”

“Traveling?”

“Sort of.”

“Oh well, so be it, I just thought more people would make it more lively.” Takeda was a bit disappointed.

“Where do you want to go?” Yoshikawa opened his mouth to ask.

“Switzerland.”

“Switzerland? Take me with you please?” Takeda’s eyes lit up and immediately sat down.

“Absolutely not.” Lei Yin was very firm.

“Heartless guy, didn’t I just invite you to my house to play?” Takeda bitterly complained.

“Do you want to attend the educational trip organized by the school this year?” Yoshikawa asked after he wiped his mouth with

a tissue.

“What educational trip?”

“Just like the high school study tour, this is the tradition of Teikyo University. It held once a year every summer vacation. Depending on the different study location, it ranges from four days to a week at a time. I heard from seniors that last year’s travel location was Shikoku Tokushima, but I do not know where would we go this year.”

“I should not be able to go because I will leave for Switzerland this Summer vacation.” Lei Yin picked up his glass and took a sip.

“Will your sister go with you to Switzerland?” Takeda suddenly asked a question.

“She should not go.”

“Then she would participate in this educational trip, right?” Takeda asked with a hopeful tone.

“Your performance is very suspicious, why would you suddenly so care about her?” Lei Yin looked at him in the eye.

“Caring for best friend’s sister is perfectly normal. Isn’t that a very moving thing?”

“Go to hell, you pervert, don’t you have any ideas about my sister.” Lei Yin saw what he was thinking.

“Hey, shouldn’t a brother hope for his sister to be happy?” Since he has been seen through, Takeda simply said it frankly.

“What you say is reasonable, as long as she maintains a safe distance with you and your bad breath from smoking, she would be very happy.” Lei Yin sneered.

“Bastard, when did I have a bad breath?” Takeda looked like he wanted to bite a person.

“I advise you to give up. You are not my sister’s type.”

“Then what type does she like?”

“To be honest, I do not know, but I know that you are definitely not her type.”

“This is completely biased, maybe she likes a person like me.” Takeda scoffed.

Lei Yin was about to speak when his cell phone rang.

He walked away a few steps and answered the phone.

“That guy is always like this, always answering a phone with a mysterious look. Like he is an agent or something.” Takeda looked at the standing in distance Lei Yin and said to his two other friends.

Tired of listening to his words, Yoshikawa turned to look at Akira Shiraishi: “This summer vacation, come to my house and play. I will take you to a joyride on the mountain, it feels very exciting.”

“I probably can’t go, the Kendo Club is preparing to hold a half a month of intensive training in the summer, I am a freshman, so I can’t skip this.”

“Your Kendo Club is so inhuman, they can’t even let go such an important holiday as Summer vacation, fortunately, I backed out from the Club early on. So be it, we will go after your training is over.”

“Let’s see what happens then.” Akira Shiraishi did not make any decision lightly.

At this time, Lei Yin came back after taking the call, but his expression was somewhat strange.

“Perhaps, I do not have to go to Switzerland.” He suddenly said something after he sat down.

“Why?” Yoshikawa somewhat confusedly asked.

“Because I am going to see the people who are coming to Japan.” With that, he lifted his glass to take a sip. His face revealed a smile full of heartfelt joy.

Three o'clock in the afternoon, a young man was quietly waiting at the arrival hall in the Narita airport.

The flight that he waited for was late for half an hour from its scheduled time, but that did not matter to him as the plane had landed safely. By this time, he breathed a sigh of relief.

He watched the flow of passenger that kept coming out from the exit.

After a while, the flow of people gradually thinned, but he did not see the other people.

Just then, from the exit walked out a tall, model-like beauty.

This one was an outstanding beauty that cannot be ignored no matter where she went. Dark brown long hair that slightly curled on the end draped over the back of her neck. With a pale face and a rare high nose for Asian people. Her most impressive feature was her pair of pale green eyes.

With Asian's delicate skin and European's eye color and high nose, these were features that simply cannot be achieved by

colored contact lens and makeup effects. She was obviously a mixed-race woman. Perhaps because of the long distance flight, she looked a bit tired, but both of her eyes were very bright.

She was pulling a rolling suitcase with wheels in her right hand, while her left hand was holding a bit tired but full of spirit little girl.

Compared with the mature tall beauty, the innocent little girl was easily ignored by the adults.

But the young man who had been waiting at the airport unblinkingly looked at the little girl.

Though he had received her newest picture, it was still different than looking at the real person.

Compared to two years ago, she has grown a lot. Her hands and feet have become slimmer, and she no longer had her former chubby appearance. Her facial features became more delicate and lovely, the only things that have not changed were her big rounded eyes and her milky white tender skin. But no matter how she changed, she still looked like a work of art fine doll, only the size was just a bit bigger than before.

When he looked at the little girl, the little girl also happened to look at him.

At that moment, the little girl's expression turned from anxious

to arrive, to a series of facial expressions, to finally showed a very pleasant surprised; A completely classic ten seconds advertisement.

“Lei!” The little girl screamed, and then released the left hand of the mixed-race woman to rush over to the young man.

For fear that she would fall halfway, Lei Yin followed suit to run at his fastest speed toward her.

When she was less than a meter away from him, the little girl seemingly turned to an athlete as she showed a strength that did not conform to her figure when she crashed into Lei Yin’s arms.

Tightly hugging the petite body that was both familiar and somewhat strange in his bosom, Lei Yin was suddenly filled with mixed emotions.

—

Narita airport was not located in Tokyo but in the adjacent county of Chiba prefecture East of Tokyo, 90 km away from central Tokyo. Upon returning to Tokyo, after sitting inside the bus for half an hour, because of the fatigue from the jetlag, Amy lie on Lei Yin’s chest and fell asleep.

Gently stroking the little girl’s soft fine hair, Lei Yin said to the mixed-race beauty: “You are very tired right? I have helped you booked a Hotel in Shinjuku, you can have a good rest there.”

“Thank you.” The mixed-race beauty nodded to say thank you.

“You gave me a scare when you call me at noon to say that you will arrive this afternoon.”

“First thing first, this was not my business. This was Amy’s idea, she wanted to give you a pleasant surprise.” Alice Lynn said with a smile.

“I was surprised all right, but I was more than a bit afraid. Did the elementary school in Switzerland already start the summer vacation?”

“Yes, it was the day before yesterday when she came back and urged me to buy the air tickets. I had to hurriedly end my work at hands to accompany her.” Alice Lynn somewhat helplessly said.

Lei Yin looked down at the sleeping little girl, her tranquil sleeping face looked like an angel.

“She really misses you. Her favorite activity is to be with you on the phone every week. Now even I am a bit jealous of you.” Alice Lynn whispered.

Lei Yin gently pinched the little girl’s face fondly, and then looked up at the mixed-race beauty, “How long the two of you intend to stay this time?”

“The initiative is on you.”

“What do you mean?”

“To be honest, there are lots of work waiting for me to finish in Switzerland. If you are willing to look after Amy this Summer Vacation, I am ready to leave tomorrow.” Alice Lynn cheerfully said.

“Hey, you are too bold, you actually dare to hand over your future boss to someone else, aren’t you afraid her uncle Rolando would get even with you?”

“Rest assured, Mr. Rolando has agreed to this.”

Hearing her words, Lei Yin deeply looked at her, “Let me guess, you have said everything to Rolando. Otherwise, he would never agree to let someone else take care of their family’s heir, even if it is just for a while.”

Alice Lynn wryly smiled, “Can you sometimes be a bit like a normal young man? If people are too smart, their hair will fall off.”

“Is this an offbeat praise?”

The mixed-race beauty laughed, “You guessed it right, I have told Mr. Rolando all of the things regarding Murphy and Adams because Mr. Rolando is the only person who can see the big

picture. While Adams is dead, but Murphy is still alive. In order to prevent him from harming Mr. Rolando, I was obliged to tell everything to Mr. Rolando so that he can be vigilant.”

“So, Rolando knew that the death of his younger brother Adams is related to me?” Lei Yin showed a playful smile.

“Yes, but Mr. Rolando wanted me to tell you his words. He said that Adams took the consequences for his own action, and he did not have the slightest grudge on you, so he asked you to not worry, and please take a good care of Amy.” Alice Lynn said with a straight face.

“The old Fox is indeed the old Fox, he even figured out the question that I will ask. In my opinion, in the entire Dai-Fei family, the most capable person is probably Mengzhuo Er, the most secretive person is Murphy, but the most intelligent one is that old Fox. In contrast, Adams is just a simple minded arms dealer. Let’s not talk about this, how are you recently?”

“Mr. Rolando put a lot of work to me, and now I am too busy to even catch my breath.” The mixed-race beauty said with a smile.

“Do you have any intention to sue that old man for abusing his employee?”

“To be honest, I am very grateful to him. It was rare that he is so willing to trust me.” Alice Lynn’s tone was somewhat moved.

“Come on, that old Fox is just squeezing your feelings of guilt, how could you speak good words about him. Only now I found that woman is so easy to cheat.” Lei Yin sloppily said.

The mixed-race beauty smiled without saying anything.

“Have you ever thought to find a good man?” Lei Yin saw her in a good mood and casually asked.

“Not right now. Since after my separation with Murphy, I feel a bit tired. Now I just want to properly handle my job.” When she spoke, her eyes revealed a hint of burnout.

“Letting nature take its course is also good. Anyway, based on your conditions, as long as you want, you just need to show a bit of your thigh and whistle, men will rush across the street toward you. It will never be too late for you to slowly pick later.”

“Go to hell.” Alice Lynn laughed, swore, and hit him.

“Hey, don’t wake the kid. By the way, how is she now? Is she getting along with the other people? Or she still resists like before?” Lei Yin suddenly remembered something and asked.

“I do not know if this is because of your ghost therapy session, but she is now a lot more cheerful. She also made some friends at school, and not autistic like before, but she still has a strong resistance to a stranger.” Alice Lynn explained.

“Take your time, in any case, she still has a lot of time, no need to be too nervous.” Lei Yin began to gently stroke the little girl’s hair.

Taking advantage of this lull in the conversation, Alice Lynn carefully looked at the young man who, up to now, cannot be completely seen through by her.

Not seeing him for two years, he seemed more mature now. The slightly green flavor has gone from his straight face, and it started to be filled with the charm of a mature man. Although there was no significant change in his facial features, she felt it was somewhat different than before. As for where the differences were, she could not say it.

Looking at the scene of Amy comfortably lying in his arms like a kitten, she felt it was surprisingly warm and natural.

Chapter 170 - Meeting

“Kazumi, your brother is outside looking for you.” Take Asasei placed a stack of books in the bookshelves and said to the girl.

“Thanks.” After putting away the book, Kazumi immediately walked outside followed by her friend.

In the customer lounge at the bookstore, she noticed Lei Yin leisurely sat on a chair, looking at her coming at him.

However, to her surprise, she saw a smiling little girl sitting on his lap. A beautiful little girl who she had never seen.

“Brother, who is this little girl?” Kazumi came over and strangely looked at Amy.

“She is my daughter.” Lei Yin said with a solemn expression.

“What?” The nearby Take Asasei uncontrollably called out.

Kazumi somewhat weakly said: “Really? Turns out I have become someone else’s aunt, mom must be very happy to have such a lovely granddaughter. Come on, have you ever saw an eight or nine years old little boy have a kid?” The last sentence was directed at Take Asasei.

Hearing her friend’s words, Take Asasei immediately woke up,

this little girl seems to be eleven or twelve years old. And Kazumi's brother, even if he reach puberty really fast, it would still be impossible for him to have such a big kid.

“Are you lying to me?”

Lei Yin laughed, “You do not need to wonder anymore, I was indeed lying to you.”

“Damn.” Take Asasei gnashed her teeth and glared at him.

For the sudden appearance of these two new big sisters, Amy seemed a bit nervous to look at them.

Take Asasei has no defense at all when faced with cute things. Looking at the almost like an oversized foreign-style doll Amy, particularly her perfect pair of big and round eyes which made her expression looked more innocent, Take Asase could no longer hold herself and reached out her hands, wanting to touch her face.

Toward this ‘many hands’ sister, Amy was somewhat angry and quickly drilled her body toward Lei Yin's bosom, to avoid her stretched out hands.

“Hey, you are scaring her.” Lei Yin comforted the little girl in his bosom.

“Come on, other people just want to touch her face. She is really cute.” Take Asasei was like seeing a cute pet, bent her waist to look

at Amy's milky-white tender skin, while her heart was somewhat envious about it.

Lei Yin lowered her head toward the little girl and said: "Kid, do not be afraid, they are good people. The glasses sister is my little sister, and the 'many-hands' sister is her good friend. She meant no harm, just think that you are very cute, so she wants to touch your face."

Take Asasei for the first time heard Lei Yin spoke in English and cannot help but look at him with incomparable surprise.

Although Japan was an economic powerhouse, foreign language penetration was very low as with the other Asian countries. Even the Miss Japan who participated in the Miss Universe contest needed to bring a translator with her. Therefore, when she heard Lei Yin spoke a fluent English, it was no wonder that she would feel surprise.

Hearing his words, Amy lifted her head back and looked at the two sisters. After a while, she suddenly smiled to them and nodded a greeting.

Seeing Amy's lovable smiling face, Take Asasei, with great difficulties, managed to hold back her impulse to reach out and touch her.

"You are about to get off work, right? Let's have lunch together." Lei Yin said to Kazumi.

“Ok, wait here, I will go talk with the manager.” Kazumi pulled her vision away from Amy.

“No need, I will wait here until you finish your work, it is not that long anyway.” Lei Yin thought she was still new in this part-time job and did not want others to have the impression that she liked to leave early.

“Very well, let me get two books for you.” With that, she turned and walked to the front of the shelves to find something suitable for him to read.

Looking at the unblinkingly staring at Amy Take Asasei, Lei Yin unhappily said: “Hey, if you keep on looking, I will have to charge your a fee.”

“Is she your relatives? Let me touch her face, okay? I really want to touch it. Oh, I have never seen such a beautiful little girl. Compared to her, our family’s cousins look almost like a monkey.” Take Asasei looked at him with a pleading look.

It seemed like if he did not satisfy her wish, she would trouble them, Lei Yin had to consult with Amy.

“This ‘many-hands’ sister really likes you, can you hold out your hands and let her touch it?” Even saying these words made Lei Yin feel awkward.

Amy looked at Lei Yin, and then very cutely nodded.

Seeing that she agreed, Lei Yin looked up at Take Asasei and said: “She agreed to let you touch her hands, remember not to grab her too hard, she is still a child.”

Take Asasei loudly cheered, and immediately held Amy’s two small hands and play with it.

“They are very soft and comfortable, I also want to have a child like her. She is really cute.” Take Asasei finally put the little girl’s two small hands on her face and rubbed it there, feeling the pleasantly warm touch from the tender skin.

Watching the excited look of the big sister, the little girl somewhat puzzledly asked Lei Yin: “Lei, what’s wrong with her?”

“She is really happy to make friends with you.” He was going to say “She is a strange woman.” But eventually bore it down.

After having a meal with Kazumi and her friend, Lei Yin brought Amy back to his apartment.

“Kid, are you tired? Do you want to take a nap?” Lei Yin said while conveniently turned on the television.

“Okay.” Amy has a habit of taking a midday nap, and she did feel a bit sleepy.

“When you wake up, I will take you to meet someone.”

“Who?” The little girl a bit curiously asked.

“It is a secret, go to sleep first.” Lei Yin smiled and pinched her face.

Seemingly liking this familiar action, which felt similar to two years ago, Amy very happily hugged him, and then kissed him on the face.

“Amy is very happy, finally able to see Lei.” The little girl’s eyes slowly became red.

“Sorry to keep you waiting for so long.” Lei Yin’s heart somewhat felt guilty. He initially wanted to visit her two years ago to spend time with her, but because he had to save ReiLi, his plan did not materialize until now.

The little girl shook her head, and then leaned on his arms and whispered: “As long as I can see Lei, Amy is happy.”

Lei Yin did not know what to say, just wordlessly stroked her hair.

—

“Hello, Amy, my name is Hasebe Naoko, very happy to meet

you.” The slightly nervous Naoko said hello to Amy in English.

Amy did not answer, just unblinkingly looked at the beautiful woman in front of her.

Seeing no response from her, Naoko felt a bit awkward.

To see these two young and mature beautiful women fell into a stalemate situation, Lei Yin felt somewhat funny.

“Kid, what would you like to eat?” Lei Yin put the menu with English translation in front of Amy.

After taking a look at Naoko, the little girl shifted her gaze toward the menu.

Lei Yin looked up at Naoko and said: “Initially I want to take you to Switzerland this Summer vacation to find this kid, but she suddenly visited here, it seems like this idea has to be postponed again. I had wanted to take you skiing in Switzerland.”

“It does not matter, we can do it at another time. Say, this is the first time I meet with Amy, turns out she is so cute.”

“You are also cute when you were a kid.” Lei Yin has seen her childhood photographs.

Hearing his casual compliment, Naoko’s face went slightly red.

Watching this extremely easy to shy beauty, Lei Yin could not help but reach out his right hand to hold her delicate hand.

“Lei....” Naoko’s face became even more red.

Just then, Amy suddenly slammed the menu on the table, causing a “popping” sound. Then, she took Lei Yin’s hand and suddenly said: “Lei, I want ice cream.”

“Ice cream is a dessert after the meal, you better choose another one.” Lei Yin replied.

At this time, Naoko quietly pulled back her hand from his grip.

“You help me choose, okay?” The little girl used a unique voice that was sprinkled with tenderness.

“Very well.” Lei Yin lowered his head down to look at the menu to find something suitable for her taste.

Whether it was an illusion or not, Naoko felt that Amy seemed to dislike her.

They ate their meal in a quiet and relaxing atmosphere. But during that time, Amy almost totally paid no attention to Naoko. Even when asked, she would just use short words as her answer, or simply pretended not to hear.

Naoko knew from Lei Yin that Amy previously had Autism, so for her nonchalant reaction, she did not think about it too much.

When Lei Yin went to the bathroom, Amy, who up to now always treated Naoko like a transparent person, suddenly asked: “You have known Lei for a long time?”

Being actively asked by Amy, Naoko felt somewhat flattered. She immediately replied: “I previously was a teacher in his high school. I have known him for about three years.”

“Do you like Lei very much?” The little girl looked at her closely.

This question may seem simple, but it made Naoko completely unable to answer it. Although she wanted to make a firm reply, she thought this kind of information should not be suitable for a child her age.

“I....actually....” Naoko was thinking about the more appropriate terminology.

Without waiting for her to think, Amy spoke first, “Lei is mine, I will not give him to anyone, including you.”

The little girl’s tone was very firm.

If her uncle Rolando was present, he would certainly lament that

his niece is indeed a Dai-Fei family, she has the same resolute character like her father.

Chapter 171 - Concern

“You do not feel well?” At Naoko’s apartment’s door, Lei Yin noticed that her complexion was not very good. Therefore, he put his hand on her forehead to check her body’s temperature.

“I am okay, maybe a bit tired.” Naoko did not want him to worry.

“Then sleep early, if there is anything remember to call me. I will see you again in two days.” Lei Yin placed his hand on her face and gently caressed it.

“Em, I know.” Naoko softly answered, his unexpected gentle action always moved her.

Seeing Lei Yin’s car drove farther and farther away, Naoko’s emotion was somewhat mixed.

Perhaps because it related to love, for people who were important to her lover, she really hoped to get their approvals. That was why she seemed so nervous in front of his step father.

Regarding Amy’s emotion, she can understand some of it. Moreover, Naoko can clearly see in her eyes that she has some attachment to Lei Yin. Like being robbed of a most favourite toy, basically, no children would be willing to accept that. Let alone a person who was so important to her.

Fortunately, she would just stay here for the summer holiday,

Naoko comforted herself in her heart.

The next morning, Lei Yin took Amy to visit Teikyo University.

Along the way, the little girl was very excited, “Lei, this is where you study? So big.”

“For impulsive youths, this stocking area may be somewhat inadequate.” Lei Yin said something that was inappropriate for children.

Seeing the puzzled look in Amy’s eyes, he smiled and said: “I take you to the general lecture room, okay?”

Amy immediately nodded happily.

Therefore, in the dreary economic theory class, there was an odd guest.

Many students, especially female students, from time to time turned to look at the cute little girl with milky white skin. This economic theory lecture originally being heard by just a handful of students, but seeing the student’s attention became more divided like this, the lecturer’s mood was more depressed and helpless.

“Is she the human weapon’s little sister?”

“Should not be, I heard her sister is a freshman in the literature

department, perhaps she is the child of his relatives.” Another girl replied.

“If the human weapon is not on her side, I really want to touch her, she is really cute.”

“If you dare to forfeit your life, you can try. Do not forget, he beat the four martial arts club as well as Okada from the basketball club. I have never seen a such a barbaric man like him.” Another girl interrupted her.

“I heard people say, Okada deliberately hit his sister, therefore, he went looking for his trouble.”

“You believe such a rumor? To a man that can only speak brute force like him, do you think he needs any reason? I think he was just jealous of Okada and specifically looked him for trouble. I hate that kind of a simple-minded brute.”

“Don’t you think this is strange? He doesn’t look like a muscular man, but why is he so powerful? Able to beat four martial arts club.” Another girl butted in.

“How do I know?”

Similar arguments resounded in the classroom from all directions. Like when a fly buzzing nearby, although harmless but annoying.

Contrary to one might expect, the subject of discussion was still unperturbed, calmly reading a thick book. Though the title was unknown, it was certainly not a textbook.

As for the little girl that they referred to, she was attentively reading a Japanese manga with added English translation.

Speaking of this manga, Lei Yin felt miserable because of it. These mangas caught Amy's attention in the bookstore where Kazumi did her part-time job. Initially, this did not concern Lei Yin at all, but the text inside were all in Japanese, so the little girl kept on pestering Lei Yin to put all the text translated into English.

When he looked at the thick stack of mangas at the time, Lei Yin even considered to committing suicide.

On the border of each page in those mangas, he inserted the full English translation of the texts in a very unsightly manner. Not until it was two in the morning did he accomplish all of that.

When all the mangas were translated by him, he vowed to never let Amy get close to any Japanese bookstore, especially within ten meters from a manga store.

Although the little girl's expression while reading the manga was very rich, she did not issue any sound, just quietly leaning on Lei Yin's shoulder while doing her own thing.

This was the thing Lei Yin most appreciate about her. Unlike the

other noisy kids, Amy was a very well behaved and quiet kid. She was less likely to bother or disturb other people.

From the side, Takeda was watching them with envy. He really did not understand how could this guy be so lucky that big and small beauties would like him. Looking at the little girl who can only be described as cute, he began to understand why some people have pedophile tendencies.

“Masashi, can you let me talk to Amy?” Takeda finally could not resist said.

“Do you really think you can do that with your rotten English?” Lei Yin squinted his eyes at him.

“Even though my English is not good, at home I am very popular with young children. Didn’t you know that there is a common language called – smile.” Takeda said while grinning.

“Put away your common language, or other people would think your mouth cramp.” Although he said so, he still bowed his head to Amy and said some words.

The little girl glanced at Takeda, and then shook her head.

Lei Yin said to the hopeful rebellious youth: “She said she does not want to play with people that she does not know. Actually, not only you, she also has some resistance to all strangers. Wait until she is familiar with you and you will be fine.”

“It turns out to be so.” Takeda was a bit disappointed.

Lei Yin looked at the time, “It seems like the class will soon end.”

He turned to the little girl and asked: “Do you want to eat outside or in the campus cafeteria?”

“Amy go where ever Lei will go.” Seeing that he was about to have a free time, the little girl very happily hugged him.

Really nice. Seeing them, Takeda once again showed an envy look.

While having lunch, because of the sudden appearance of Amy on Lei Yin’s side, Yoshikawa also felt a little surprised.

“Masashi, when did you start working as a part-time nanny?”

“This joke is not funny.” Lei Yin was too lazy to bother him, readily pulled a chair for Amy to sit down.

After carefully looking at Amy, Yoshikawa said as if he was an expert: “According to my professional point of view, this kid will certainly be a great beauty. Unfortunately, now she is still too young, truly a pity. Is she the one you mentioned you want to meet in Switzerland?”

“Yes, her guardian is very busy, so she asked me to take care of her until the end of the Summer.”

“So you really do work as a nanny? The Summer is very long you know.” Yoshikawa laughed gleefully.

“Amy is so lovely, I do not think it will be hard on me. Anyway, I originally wanted to take my girlfriend to Switzerland to play with her, and now even the plane tickets are saved.” Seeing the little girl seemed a bit nervous because of the appearance of the other strangers, Lei Yin gently held her little hand to reassure her.

“So you are not going to Switzerland? Then will you attend the educational trip organized by the campus?” Yoshikawa asked.

“Do you know where the destination this time?” Takeda asked, interrupting him.

“From today’s student notification, the first and second year students will go to Kagoshima, while the third and the fourth year student will go to Hokkaido. Of course, if you are not afraid being played like a monkey by the seniors, you can also sign up to go to Hokkaido.”

“Are you going then?” Takeda asked Yoshikawa and Akira Shiraishi.

“Of course I am going, but Akira will participate in the Kendo Club training so he cannot go.” Yoshikawa said.

“Very well, I am also going. I hope it will not be as boring as the high school study tour.” Takeda thought for a moment and then said.

“I think it is better for you to not go, in any case, there is nothing fun in it.” Yoshikawa pretended to appear as calmly as possible.

“Since it is not fun, then why are you still going? I know, Narimura Haruko must be going to, otherwise, you will not have this perverted face.” Getting along with him for more than ten years, Takeda immediately sniffed out his conspiracy words.

“Whatever.” Yoshikawa picked up the cup and took a sip.

“Can we bring our relatives in this educational trip?” Lei Yin suddenly asked Yoshikawa.

“Of course you can, we are all adults, to go with a girlfriend or a boyfriend is normal. As long as you pay for the full travel expense, the University will not bother with it one bit. It looks like you want to participate in this, do you want to bring your girlfriend along?” Yoshikawa as well as Takeda very much wanted to see what Masashi’s girlfriend look like.

“In any case, it is just for a few days, I think it is okay for a casual sightseeing. Maybe I will bring my girlfriend to go along with this kid.” Lei Yin himself did not have any travel habit, but since Amy has gone as far away here from Switzerland, he certainly wanted her to have fun, and therefore somewhat tempted by this school

educational trip. Compared to those older persons in the majority of tours, a tour that purely consisted of college students should be a bit more lively. So he thought.

Yoshikawa suddenly laughed a bit ambiguously, “Although I very much want to see your girlfriend, as a friend, I give you a piece of advice, you better go alone.”

“Why?”

“According to the seniors, the school educational trip is also called ‘deflowered tour’ or ‘hunting trip.’ In this trip, many men and women who still retain their virginity from high school will find opportunity to vent it out, let alone those battle-hardened guys. Usually, after the end of the trip, there will suddenly be increased in the number of couples. If you take this kid with you, you will have less opportunity to get close to girls.”

“Meaning, young people will easily release their animal instinct in nature, right? You can use this topic to write a graduation thesis.” Lei Yin said tartly.

“In short, I have warned you, what you want to do with it is your problem.” Yoshikawa shrugged.

Lei Yin did not speak again but lowered his head to think. Will Kazumi attend this educational trip?

“I do not want to attend this trip.” Kazumi’s reply was similar

with Lei Yin's conjecture.

In the afternoon, Lei Yin took Amy to look for Kazumi. After seeing her, he casually asked this question and was simply answered as such.

“The reason?”

“Do not want to go.”

“Apart from subjective reasons, are there any objective reasons?”

“Although there are objective reasons, such as my part-time job. But I think that the subjective reasons are more important.”

“Not used to wearing a swimsuit? Do you want me to take you out to pick several sets? At the same time, I can also help the kid buy two pairs of swimsuits.” Lei Yin smiled.

“Brother!” Angry look appeared on Kazumi's thin and pretty face, making the girl seemingly brimmed with a distinctive liveliness.

Since she got the new image, Kazumi was no longer the previous girl who can be easily ignored by other people. Although she has not put on a bright and pretty dress, the male students could not help but catch a glimpse of her.

“This is a long holiday. If we do not have fun now, we are going to regret it later. Listen to me, let us play.”

“Is this an elder brother’s order?”

“No, this is elder brother’s care. If you really do not want to go, then so be it.” Lei Yin took a step back to advance.

“Let me think about it.”

Hearing her words, Lei Yin knew that she basically had agreed. Because usually when she said she wanted to consider things, at the end, she will generally accept those things.

“Call me if you have made your decision, I go first. Kid, let’s get out of here.” The last words were directed at Amy, as well as Take Asasei who was squatting on the ground holding and kissing the little girl.

Hearing his words, Take Asasei immediately froze and said, “Do you guys have to leave so soon?”

Lei Yin knew she absolutely hate to part with Amy, and could not help but snap: “Since you like her so much, why don’t you make one for yourself.”

“You think I do not want to? But I am afraid it would turn out to be the same as my brother’s kids at home who look so tragic. Moreover, I hear that pregnancy can seriously alter the body, and

will also create many stretch marks. In addition to that, I also hear that the post pregnancy period have some big problems.” Take Asasei seriously said.

“I am sorry, I cannot help you with that.” Lei Yin did not think that his casual words would lead to the appearance of many gynecology issues. Afraid to stay any longer, he immediately pulled Amy away.

Watching them go further and further, Take Asasei whispered from behind, “Mean guy, letting me play with Amy will not make him die. By the way, what did your brother say to you just now?” She totally ignored Kazumi’s and Masashi’s previous conversation.

“He wants me to participate in this educational trip.”

“I cannot believe he would be so attentive, will you participate? I really hope you and I can go together.” Take Asasei has also urged her, to no avail. She only hoped her brother can convince her.

“Maybe I would. He always likes to care about other people’s problem.” Kazumi has a warm smile on her face.

She was well aware of his mind, he always wanted her to be able to get along with others like a normal girl and meet some more friends. He has been doing this since high school.

Take Asasei looked at her lost in thought, smiling face. She suddenly found that Kazumi’s smiling face was actually very

attractive.

“Kid, do you like that ‘many hands’ sister?” After walking out from the literature department, Lei Yin suddenly asked Amy a question.

The little girl thought for a moment and then nodded her head, “Although she made my face full of saliva with her kisses, I think she is a very warmhearted.”

Excessive enthusiasm might be a better term to describe her, Lei Yin went on to ask: “Then what about my sister? That sister with glasses.”

The little girl thought for a moment and then smiled, “Amy also likes her very much. Amy feel her heart is actually very soft.”

“Is that true? Good kid would not lie you know.”

“Amy never lie.” The little girl said with a flushed face.

Seeing her somewhat angry appearance, Lei Yin smiled and grabbed and then pulled her face from two sides.

After gently pulling her face several times, the girl finally could not help but let out a laugh and then drilled her head into his arms, acting like a pampered child.

Chapter 172 - Shopping Mall

With the coming of Summer, another thing that made the students happy and worry at the same also approached.

Some students who were usually absent or sleeping in a class reversed their lazy performance, seemingly transformed into a good student. Those students will circle around the lecturers after the class – which to Takeda, they seemed like an eyesore – hoping to find some information about the exams.

Such obvious flattery behavior was scoffed at by Takeda.

“Look at that guy, he usually looks aloof and ignores everyone around, but now he can’t wait to lick the lecturer’s shoe like a pug.”

Hearing his diatribe, Lei Yin put down his book and looked at him, “I remember your English test result was equally rotten, aren’t you worry about that?”

“Although getting a high test score is unlikely, passing the test should be no problem. I will not become like them just to increase my test result by several points. In any case, my old man does not hold out much hope for me, in his eyes, there are only my brother and sister. Do you know why an unmotivated student like me able be admitted into Teikyo University? I can tell you for sure that I passed the entrance exams entirely on my own efforts. Do you know why I have so much perseverance?” Takeda’s eyes shone, waiting for Lei Yin to ask the question.

“If you do not want to tell me, I will not force you.” Lei Yin had no intention to satisfy his evil intention.

“Bastard, you will not die by asking a question.”

Takeda's voice was quite noisy, Amy, who sat right next to Lei Yin, curiously looked over.

Seeing Amy looked over at him, Takeda grinningly smiled. The little girl took a glance at him, and then retracted her head into Lei Yin's arms. The rebellious youth's smile immediately stiffened.

After a while, seeing there were no signs that Lei Yin was going to ask him the question, Takeda finally said aloud: “Forget it, I will mercifully tell you. So, when I was a sophomore in high school, my older brother told me he cannot tolerate my previous test results and made a bet with me. He came up with a list of several elite Universities and some general Universities along with the prize on top of each University name that I can get if I was able to get admitted to that University. From the Japanese car to Buick, BMW, Ford, Lamborghini, and a variety of other models. But the prizes for the Todai and Teikyo Universities was the best, a sports car, but the model and the price were different. I thought that it was unlikely for me to get admitted into Todai University so I went all out to get into Teikyo University. After more than a year of hellish effort, I was finally admitted into Teikyo University with my own effort. When you come to my home one day, I will let you sit in my car to go for a ride. You should have seen my car, right? I tell you, it was a 2003 Bristol Blenheim Speedster, front mounted with V8 engine, 5900 cc, and can be accelerated to 90 kph or more

in 5 seconds. It also can reach the top speed of 257 kph. There are...”

“How much is it?” Seeing the excited look in his face, Lei Yin felt the need to cushion him

“At the time, the market price is 215.000 US dollars, and it did not drop. This is only natural, when will a Bristol Blenheim Speedster car decline in price? To be honest, the prize for Todai University is more attractive, it is 2001 B-Engineering Edonis, Twin Turbo V12 Engine, 680 HP, accelerate to 100 kph in 3.9 seconds, and a top speed of 360 kph. The price is 600000 US dollars. If you have the opportunity to sit in that car, your life will not be in vain. Unfortunately, Todai University test score was too high, so I had to settle for the second best. Thinking about that year’s death-defying effort, I will still have bad dreams from time to time, dreaming of being surrounded and then buried by a big pile of test review sheets. I really do not know how I can survive through that.” Takeda became more and more excited.

Lei Yin knew he was usually very interested in all kinds of sports cars, but did not think that he could be admitted to Teikyo University for a sports car. With more than 200000 US dollars for the youth’s fighting chance, although he did not dare to say whether the resource was well used, it was definitely expensive. But for an unmotivated youth like Takeda, material rewards was indeed more effective than any spiritual encouragement.

“It seems like your big brother knows a lot about you.”

Takeda suddenly became a bit frustrated, “My big brother is a

very competent person, and has long been in the business world. My sister, while still a student, but as you know, she is already a student council officers, and her achievement is also very good. By contrast, I seem like a dropout. So basically I do not have any status at home, whenever the old man sees me, he would satisfy his craving by scolding me.”

Lei Yin began to understand the cause of his rebellious nature. This was a very common family conflict. When a family has an outstanding family member, those other relatively inferior family members will become the object of comparison. For an adult to receive this comparison, he or she will usually better themselves in order not to lose face, so they subconsciously extended this thinking to their children, thinking they would behave the same as them.

But they never thought that, in this kind of atmosphere, the object who was being compared the most will, over time, generated resistance, creating a rebellious character. It was not without reason that so many criminals have a family problem.

“So what, life is a gamble, we will never know the winner or the loser until the last second. What’s the use in performing better in school? Aren’t many of those cum laude graduates also have to bow in front of their pig bosses to wipe their shoes? Wait until you have more money than your brother and you can point at your old man’s nose and curse, ‘You this dead old man, always says I am useless, see how well I am now?’”

After listening to Lei Yin’s words, Takeda slapped the table and laughed out loud. This loud noise caused the other students in the

classroom to glower at him, but they still did not dare to make any noise.

Slightly after he stopped smiling, Takeda patted his friend's shoulder and said, "Now I know why I am so fond of you. Because you are not a good man, just like me."

"Truly harming others without benefiting oneself conclusion. I have no time to talk with a crazy, I go first." With that, Lei Yin stood up and pulled Amy's little hand to walk out of the classroom.

"Hey, where are you going?" The rebellious youth soon put his things into his bag and followed behind him.

"I am going to accompany Amy to buy a few pieces of clothes, I do not want you to come."

"I want to go."

"No."

"Why?"

"Not all things need to be explained."

"Bastard, I will remember this." Although unwilling, Takeda did not follow him. Because he was well aware that if he really annoyed that guy, it would be a miserable end for him.

Although not as busy as Shinjuku, in Hachioji district, the stores were not just a few.

In the five-story high department store main entrance, Lei Yin saw Kazumi and Take Asasei were already there.

“Did you wait long?”

Kazumi shook her head, “Just came in.”

“Then let’s go. Hey, let’s go.” Lei Yin said the last sentence to Take Asasei who hugged Amy in her bosom, giggling out loud.

Taking a glance at him, Take Asasei said to Amy: “Little Amy, it must be very hard on you to follow this always-like-to-curse guy, right? What, you think I am right? In this case, then why don’t you move to my house to live with me? Oh, you really agree. Kazumi’s brother, you heard what Amy just said right? She said she wanted to live with me. Can you lend her to me for a few days? Please?”

Watching Take Asasei fierce meaningful glance and the blank expression from Amy in her bosom, Lei Yin felt somewhat painful. Too lazy to care for her, he pulled Kazumi into the mall.

“Hey, do you agree or not?” Take Asasei quickly caught up half a foot behind him.

“Kazumi, can you make her shut up?”

Kazumi chuckled: “I cannot believe my brother would finally suffer a headache.”

“Your friend is qualified to be a sacred person because she has a potential for exorcism.”

Kazumi could not help but laugh.

The four people laughingly came directly to the children’s clothing department inside the mall.

They want to buy several sets of swimsuit for Amy to use in the educational trips.

Facing a variety of cute children’s clothing design, Take Asasei made a big fuss as she picked each one of them to compare to Amy.

“This gown is so cute, if little Amy wears this, she will certainly look beautiful.”

“This piece is also very beautiful.”

“The current children’s clothing are all pretty, this one even has a lace. If I have these many beautiful clothes when I am young, that would be nice. Little Amy you are so lucky.”

“Kazumi, see this, this little pants has the same pattern with my pajamas. Come here and see.”

Lei Yin dryly coughed a bit, “Hey, we are here to pick out swimsuits for Amy, please get down to business okay?”

“All right, little Amy, let’s pick out the swimsuit.” Take Asasei has to nod and then pulled Amy to walk toward the swimwear spot. Although she sometimes squabbled with Lei Yin, subconsciously she was still afraid of him. Maybe because she was a loyal reader of the college magazine, therefore she was greatly impressed by Kazumi’s brother tales of terror. Although they have known each other for quite a while and thought that there was nothing to it, the shadow of this stuff was still not easy to eliminate.

The children’s swimwear and adult one were different. Perhaps because there was no curve issue, it was alright as long as the important parts were not exposed. After picking up three sets of swimsuit for Amy, Take Asasei calmly pulled her to look for the other clothes.

“You stay here with Amy to try the clothes, I want to take Kazumi to the other place. Remember not to wander around aimlessly, wait for us here and we will come to pick you up in a minute.

“Ok, no need to hurry.” Take Asasei replied without turning her head.

Seeing Amy's expression seemingly wanted to go with him, Lei Yin said to her: "Kid, you stay here with 'many hands' sister, I will be back. Understand?"

The little girl obediently nodded.

After walking out from the Children's clothing department, Kazumi looked at Lei Yin, "Brother, where are you going?"

Lei Yin mysteriously smiled, "You will know soon."

Within a few minutes, her question was soon answered.

"Do you want to buy swimsuits?" Kazumi was a bit surprised.

"Fool, this is woman's swimsuit department. I am not a pervert, so, of course I am not buying for myself. I want to buy it for you."

"No need, I have a swimsuit."

"If other people said that, I would believe them, but base on your character, your so-called swimsuit are probably those few sets that you got from the swimming lesson in high school. Please, you are a grown-up now, wearing that kind of swimsuit to swim, fifty percent of the time it will stretch open. I believe you don't have a swimming-naked habit right?"

"Brother, you are too meddlesome." Kazumi blushed.

“Who told you to be so passive? Yet, you still dare to blame me? Come on, the kid is waiting for us.” With that, ignoring her protest, Lei Yin pulled her toward the ladies portion of swimsuit area.

“Welcome. Sir, do you want to buy your girlfriend swimsuits?” When they just stepped in, a uniformed lady immediately came up to ask.

“My sister want to buy a few sets of swimwear, please help her choose.” Lei Yin knew that Kazumi may not want him to pick for her, and had to call the lady for help.

“Miss, please come with me.”

Looking at the self-satisfied smile from Lei Yin, Kazumi angrily and funnily followed behind that uniformed lady.

Because he felt a bit awkward just to stand there, Lei Yin did not follow them, instead, he just waited for them outside.

Less than five minutes later, Kazumi came out with two sets of swimsuit.

“So soon?” Lei Yin’s seat has yet to get warm.

“Do you think every woman is slow?” Kazumi refuted.

Lei Yin pretended not to hear her complaint and said to the uniformed lady instead: “Please help me pick out two sets of moderately sexy swimsuit according to this miss’ size.”

“What is moderately sexy swimsuit?” The uniformed lady froze for a moment.

“It’s somewhat revealing but not too much. And it must be able to show the female curve.” Lei Yin gestured with his hands.

The uniformed lady covered her mouth to smile, and then nodded at him and walked inside.

“Brother!” When that lady turned to walk away, Kazumi stared at him, ashamed and angry at the same time.

“Kazumi, I am you older brother, this is what I should do, you do not need to be so touched like this.” Lei Yin evilly smiled as he pinched her face. Since Amy came, he became accustomed to pinching someone else’s face.

“Hateful!” Kazumi had no choice but to resentfully rolled her eyes at him.

After they came out from the Women’s section, Kazumi’s phone suddenly rang.

After answering the phone, Kazumi's eyes were somewhat uneasy, "Brother, just now little Take called me, she said that Amy has wandered off away from her."

Lei Yin was taken aback, but soon calmed down, "Where is your classmate? Let us meet her first."

Kazumi could not help but admire her brother's judgment, who quickly deduced that Take Asasei was not in the Children's Clothing Department.

"She is in the Toy Department, that's where she was separated with Amy."

When they came to the Toy Department, they saw the panic looking Take Asasei still stood at the doorway and looked around.

"Kazumi." Seeing the two of them, she immediately rushed over.

"I am sorry, I do not know when she is gone. I just wanted to help her pick some toys, but did not notice that she was gone, I am sorry...." While saying these, she could not help but tear up.

"Do not cry, children missing inside the mall is a very common thing. Em, you Asasei, go to the information and tell them to broadcast a missing child. Remember to ask them to broadcast in English because Amy only understands English. I will be responsible for looking around along with Kazumi. If there is anything, call us and we will meet at the Information room."

“I, I know.” Take Asasei immediately ran toward the information room.

After she left, Lei Yin said to Kazumi: “We will split up, I will search in the first, third, and fifth floors, and you will search in the second and fourth floors. Call me if you find her, if not, then keep looking.”

“I know.” Kazumi nodded her head.

With that, Lei Yin immediately ran to the first floor.

Chapter 173 - Broadcast

Although the English level of the announcer lady has yet to reach the fluent level, it was enough for an eleven years old little girl to understand.

As the appealing English sound of the announcer lady resounded throughout the Mall, Take Asasei's mood in the announcer room slightly settled down a little bit.

In the pause interval between the broadcasts, the announcer lady poured her a cup of tea, "Please do not worry too much, this kind of thing is very common, you will soon find her."

"Thank you." Take Asasei's eyes were glazed as she said thank you to her.

She was now filled with regret. She should not lead little Amy to leave the Children's clothing department, or she would not be separated from her. If they were unable to find Amy, she really did not know what she would do.

Falling into pessimism, Take Asasei grew more and more afraid and finally could not help but cry again.

Fortunately Amy was an eleven years old kid, otherwise, looking at how worried she was, the announcer lady would think that she was an unmarried mother, seeking for the missing daughter.

On the other hand, Kazumi was also trying her best to locate the missing Amy.

In order to find the little girl, who was very important to her brother, the always taciturn Kazumi began to inspect on all direction while asking the nearby passersby.

After about fifteen minutes, the searching in second-floor will soon come to an end, but she has yet to find Amy. At this time, she also heard the intermittent sound of broadcast in English inside the Mall, which indicated that Take Asasei was also without result.

Did Amy walk out of the mall?

Thinking of this, Kazumi could not help but worry. If she did go outside, the language barrier coupled with her outstanding look as well as walking without adult supervision made for a very dangerous combination.

Although worried, temporarily, she has yet to find any better way and had to turn back to the second floor to start from scratch.

Contrary to what Kazumi thought, Amy was still somewhere inside the Mall. Moreover, she was also not without adult supervision, but that person was a stranger to Amy.

After determining that nobody paid them any attention, a forty years old middle aged man smiled to the little girl and said: “If you are not obedient you are not a good kid, listen to uncle, uncle will

now take you to find your mom.”

Amy did not make any sound, just looked at him with fear while shrinking her body to the corner.

Looking at her pair of frightened-like-a-small-animal eyes, the man became so excited that his blood boiled. He had never seen such a beautiful little girl. Even if it was hard, he has to take her back. In any case, in the eyes of others, she was just a child throwing a tantrum.

“Come, uncle will take you to find your mom, quick, come with me.” With that, he reached out to pull her small arms.

Being caught by him, Amy immediately wanted to break away from his hand. Even though this man’s motive was unknown to her, she has a knack for sensing other people’s emotion as well as what was good and what was evil, making her instinctively afraid of this man.

“You are not obedient, quickly come with me, if you are like this, next time, daddy will come without you.” Seeing a middle-aged woman was looking at him, he immediately shouted out to Amy.

After that meddlesome middle aged woman walked away, he cannot waste time anymore and immediately pulled up the huddle up against the wall little girl by force.

The struggling little girl cried out. The man heard that what she

said was in English so his heart was even more determined. Right now, he was not afraid of being asked.

“If I know you are going to be so willful like this, I will not take you here. After coming home, see how I am going to teach you.” He forcibly tried to hug her as he intentionally increased his voice.

Thinking that he would only need to arrive at the parking lot and put the little girl inside his car, the middle-aged man was so excited that goosebumps appeared all over his body.

At this time, a hand quietly rested on his shoulder.

Then, a clear and bright sound of a young man came from behind, “What do you want to do?”

Hearing that sound, the little girl was suddenly startled, and very excitedly called out: “Lei!”

Because he just turned his head back to look at the person behind him, the middle-aged man did not see the little girl’s expression. After clearly seeing that the age of the young man opposite of him was not sufficient to be the little girl’s father, he said with a smile: “Please do not be mistaken, she is my daughter. Because she is throwing a tantrum, I am going to bring her back home.”

“Really? But her father has passed away two years ago. Do not use your dirty hands to touch her!” Lei Yin moved the hand that was rested on the middle-aged man’s shoulder to seize his neck and

pushed him all the way back.

His huge strength put the man fiercely pressed against the wall, creating a not so small impact sound.

The middle-aged man felt incomparable pain all over his body, thinking that his bones were broken. He suddenly could not help but scream up.

His screaming sound attracted the attention of the nearby people.

Under violent rage, Lei Yin has grabbed him by the neck and pushed him against the wall. But this simple stuff was insufficient to vent his anger, he wanted to hear the pitiful yell sound of this man.

He threw the middle-aged man three meters away to the side to one of the fruit stalls. An endless number of apples rolled down from the stall, sprinkled over the ground. Several middle-aged women around that fruit stall screamed and the scene became even more chaotic.

To a cultivator like Lei Yin, even if he was in a state of extreme anger, he can still maintain a sober mind, which has become his instinct. Although very much wanted to kill him, seeing there were more and more people watching them, he knew that this was not a good time to deal with him.

Brimming with anger, he walked toward that middle-aged man

and pulled him up.

“Don’t let me see your wretched face again, quickly get the hell out of here!” With that, he threw the middle-aged man to the ground.

Although his whole body was endlessly painful, the middle-aged man immediately crawled up and ran toward the exit.

Returning to Amy’s side, Lei Yin as gentle as possible said: “Kid, are you okay?”

“Lei!” The little girl threw herself into his arms, weeping.

“It’s alright, let’s get out of here.” Lei Yin picked her up and whispered in her ear to soothe her.

The little girl did not say any word, just tightly held his neck.

He was secretly relieved, fortunately, she was not afraid of him because of his performance just now.

When he walked to the second floor, he saw several Mall security guards with their walkie-talkies walked to the source of the commotion on the third floor.

Lei Yin stopped looking at them and continued to hold the little girl to walk toward the information room.

Chapter 174 - Guilt

After coming out from the mall, Take Asasei kept on apologizing to Lei Yin.

“Kazumi’s brother, I was wrong, please forgive me. I promise it won’t happen again. No, it will absolutely never happen again. Would you please forgive me?”

Seeing that Lei Yin did not answer her, she immediately put on a sad face, “Why won’t you speak? You can scold me a couple of times if you want. I really knew I was wrong, please say something, okay?”

Lei Yin whispered a few words to Amy, and then turned around and looked at this somewhat boisterous girl, “Help me hug Amy for a moment, I want to buy a bottle of water.”

“Ok, Ok.” Take Asasei was pleasantly surprised and immediately held the little girl in her arms.

After gently patting the little girl’s face, Lei Yin walked toward a retail store right next to the square.

Watching Lei Yin go away, Take Asasei whispered to her friend: “Your elder brother is actually very good, previously I have always thought that he is quite mean.”

Kazumi said with a smile, “You can appreciate him, but you

cannot like him, because he is already taken.”

“Crazy, how could you suddenly say this.” Take Asasei peevishly said, and then apologized to Amy in English.

Amy did not understand why she suddenly apologized and looked at her with puzzled eyes.

Seeing the little girl’s eyes, Take Asasei suddenly did not know what to say. Her level of English was insufficient to clearly explain why would she apologize.

Watching them from the side, Kazumi could not help but laugh.

Holding the bottle of water as he walked out from the retail store, Lei Yin suddenly pulled out a black wallet from his body.

He then pulled out a driver’s license from the inside. Looking at the photo of the middle-aged man, Lei Yin revealed a chilling smile.

After he took out that driver’s license, he threw the wallet into the nearby trash can.

After he returned to them, Take Asasei said to Kazumi after she saw the bag in her hand: “Kazumi, what did you buy?”

“A few pieces of swimsuits.”

“Swimsuit? Didn’t I accompany you to buy two pieces yesterday, why would you buy the same item again?” Take Asasei felt somewhat strange.

“I have said that to someone, but he did not believe, so he actually bought me several pieces,” Kazumi said from the side as she looked at someone with a faint smile.

But that someone’s face seemed to be thicker than she imagined. At this time, he was looking at the sky with great focus, seemingly impervious to any distraction.

“Today’s weather is good.” Finally, someone made such a summary.

—

At ten o’clock in the evening, Lei Yin, who was sitting cross-legged on the bed, suddenly opened his eyes.

After a while, there was a few gentle knock coming from the outside.

Lei Yin opened the door and saw that Amy was standing on the outside holding a pillow.

“Kid, what happened?”

“Lei, can I sleep together with you?” Amy looked up at him.

“Cannot fall asleep?” Lei Yin smoothly combed her slightly tilted hair.

“Em, I want to sleep with you, can I?” The little girl once again looked at him with full of pleading eyes.

Normally, Lei Yin might reject her request. But thinking that she has suffered a shock today, her heart softened, and he finally nodded.

Seeing that he agreed, the little girl was very happy and immediately jumped to the bed, still hugging her cartoon patterned pillow.

Seeing her so happy like this, Lei Yin could not help but laugh.

When Lei Yin lied down on the bed, the little girl immediately squeezed herself into his arms.

After covering the bed sheet on her, Lei Yin gently stroked her hair.

Amy tightly pressed her head on his chest.

After a while, she suddenly whispered a few words, “Lei, Amy is

afraid.”

Lei Yin was silent.

He remembered the thing that happened today and was somewhat scared. If she was simply lost in the mall, then it was not too bad, but if that middle-aged man actually able to take her outside of the mall, then, even if he was able to find the guy's house, it would probably several days later. At that time, even if that guy was cut to pieces, what's the use?

Lei Yin full of guilt said: “Kid, I am sorry.”

The little girl shook her head, “Amy knows Lei will come and save me, Amy always think so.”

Hearing her words, Lei Yin felt as if something blocked her heart, making him unable to say a word. He can only closely hug the little body in his bosom.

—

Exams. Most of the students were filled with tension because of exams.

Although Yoshikawa usually gave people the appearance of a playboy, his exam results were actually very good.

And the rarely spoken Akira Shiraishi turned out to be a top rank honor students.

After knowing about the two men's test results, Takeda was depressed for several days.

As for Takeda himself, just like what he previously said, although his test results were not high, they were passable. So, for him, each subject can be regarded as low-altitude flying.

And even the particularly indifference to all things Lei Yin also easily passed the exams.

After the last scene in the history class, Takeda knew that Lei Yin has a strong sense of disgust toward the Japanese modern history textbook. But thankfully, Economic department did not have any compulsory courses on modern history, otherwise, Takeda really did not know what trouble this noisy guy would create.

After the test, they were waiting for the remaining results announcement. At this time, they have no compulsory course, so everyone became extremely relaxed. Many people began to prepare for their Summer vacation activity.

In a quiet afternoon, an unexpected guest disturbed Lei Yin's peace.

"Can I talk to you?" In the University Library, a conspicuous person walked toward Lei Yin's table.

Looking at that person, Lei Yin somewhat reluctantly nodded.

“Help me borrow these books.” Lei Yin pushed a few books in front of Takeda.

Looking at the glamorous beauty waiting outside of the library, Takeda, seemingly eating a stimulant, grabbed him and asked: “Who is that beautiful woman?”

“A woman who I do not want to see, every time I see her something bad will happen.”

“You are joking, right? A woman with this level of beauty is very rare, even among the entire Teikyo University students. How could you know so many beautiful women? This is too far, why didn't I get the chance to meet some of them.”

“You go back yourself, do not wait for me.” Lei Yin was too lazy to say it. He gently put the already asleep Amy in his arms and went outside.

“Truly valuing girl over friend fellow.” Takeda scolded, full of envy and jealousy.

Chapter 175 - Travel

Seeing Lei Yin came out with a little girl, Eiko Kotoshi froze for a moment, “Your sister? No, your sister should be a freshman just like you.”

“It seems like your intel is not very well informed, haven’t you done your homework lately?” Lei Yin indifferently asked.

Eiko Kotoshi suddenly laughed, “That thing is over, I have no need to find someone to check on you. Forget it, just consider I did not ask.”

Seeing her smile, Lei Yin felt somewhat strange.

The garden work in the Teikyo University was superb. Under the sunlight, the surrounding flowers and trees seemed alive.

“This is really nostalgic for me. Unknowingly, several years have passed since the last time I come here. Fortunately, it does not seem to change much. You should know this, right? I am also a Teikyo University alumni.” Eiko Kotoshi looked back at him.

“Really? This is such a coincidence.”

“I do not want to waste your time, let us sit down and talk.” The female police sat down on one of the stone benches in the park.

Lei Yin sat across from her on another piece of stone benches.

After sitting down, he adjusted the sleeping Amy, so that she can sleep comfortably.

Eiko Kotoshi quietly watched his movement.

After Amy was settled, Lei Yin looked at her, “Well, what happened?”

The female police took a photograph from her handbag and handed to him.

“Have you seen the man in the picture?”

After carefully looking at the photograph for a while, Lei Yin raised his head, “Yes, just a week ago, when I teach him a lesson. Why? Is he going to sue me for intentionally hurt him?”

Eiko Kotoshi deeply looked at him, after a while, she suddenly laughed.

“You are much more smarter than I thought. I thought you would deny seeing this man, it seems like I still underestimated you.”

“I do not quite understand what you mean.” Lei Yin put down the photo.

“Just a few days ago, I took over Tsukuda’s malicious wounding case. The victim is the man in the picture, his name is Yamada Shiryo, a forty years old Managing Director of Bank of Tokyo. Do you know how he is now?”

“If you want to say it, I will listen.”

“Very miserable. Although he is not dead, his condition is worse than death. Not only his lower part is castrated, his spine also suffered a severe blow, resulting in total paralysis. Other than his mind is pretty much awake, he is basically very much like a vegetable. He does not even have the ability to commit suicide.”

“What a pitiful experience.” Although he said these words, he did not even show a semi-sympathetic expression.

“Did you do this?”

Lei Yin sneered, “Officer Eiko, you are a cop, you should know that police must base their case on the evidence. If you have the evidence, I do not mind if you take me back to the police station, but if not, please do not talk nonsense, I have the right to sue you.”

Eiko Kotoshie withdrew her gaze and then put the picture back into her bag.

“Do you know how I know it was you? In investigating this case, I can see that this is clearly an act of revenge. So I looked up this

man's record and found that he once was a suspect to three counts of child molestation cases. But because there was no direct evidence, he has never been prosecuted. But the situation that occurred on that day inside the mall has been recorded by the shopping mall monitoring device. When I saw that the person he was in conflict with was you, I knew that the person who sent others to deal with him was you, because you are the only one who has this ability."

"Really interesting conclusion. Well then, does police officer Eiko want to take me back for interrogation?"

"No. Maybe you do not believe, but I have no intention to continue to investigate this case. For a man worse than a beast like him, I have no interest in doing anything for him. In fact, I came here mainly to ask you one question."

"What?"

The female police's eyes shinningly looked at him, "Were you the man in black that night?"

"What man in black?" Lei Yin cursed in his heart, This woman really recognized me, but do not know how much.

"I know you are certainly that guy." Eiko Kotoshi closely watched his eyes.

"I am sorry, I really do not understand what you are talking

about?” Lei Yin began to know this woman’s card; she actually was not sure he was that person and was just bluffing.

Sure enough, after looking at each other’s for a while, Eiko Kotoshi’s eyes seemed to show a trace of disappointment.

Lei Yin sniggered in his heart. For a thousand years old ghost like him, even if he have to show more absurd lies, the look in his eyes will not have the slightest flaw, so how could this woman be able to see through him?

“Well, anyway, one day I will know.”

To see her so easy to say that, Lei Yin was actually a bit surprised.

Eiko Kotoshi stood up, stretched herself, and then smiled at Lei Yin: “I do not know if this has anything to do with me returning to my Alma Mater, but I feel like my whole body is truly relaxed. Previously I begrudge you for seemingly knowing everything, but unwilling to say anything. But now, seeing that you are studying in this Teikyo University, I realize that you are actually my Junior. Moreover, you are also much younger than me. Perhaps because of these relationships, I begin to feel that your arrogance is kind of cute.”

Being called “cute” by someone, moreover, that someone was a young woman, even the bulletproof-thick-skinned Lei Yin has to feel a burning sensation on his face.

His grandma! When this father began to explore the world, your grandfather's grandfather's grandfather has not even born yet!

“Hey, are you finished? If yes, then you can leave. I do not have much time to chat with you.”

Seeing his discontent expression, Eiko Kotoshi smiled, “Whether you are that person or not, I thank you. Everything has been in the past and my eight years of burden have finally been put down. Well, I won't waste your time any longer, goodbye.” After that, she turned around and walked outside.

Lei Yin thoughtfully looking at her back. He suddenly found that, in a certain spot, this woman is actually quite nice.

Bored by the TV, Lei Yin went back to the kitchen.

Only to see Naoko in a plain apron scooping a spoonful of soup into a little pot of small dish, and then picked up that small dish to sip with her small mouth.

Lei Yin walked over to her and gently hugged her small waist, “How does it taste?”

Naoko turned to smile at him, “You must be hungry, right? Soon you will be able to eat.”

“But I'd rather eat you.” Lei Yin pasted his head on the exquisite lines of her neck.

Naoko's face suddenly reddened, while her whole body limped as a noodle.

On the dinner table, Lei Yin saw the meals which whetted his appetite. Seeing his look, Naoko showed a very satisfied smile.

“Hey, that is not full enough.” Lei Yin put a shrimp in her bowl.

Naoko gave him a look and then lowered her head to eat.

After coming out from washing the dishes in the kitchen, she saw Lei Yin intently watched the midday news. This was the only program on the TV that Lei Yin watched; if the news can be considered a program.

Slowly walking toward him, Naoko kneeled at his feet and then laid her head on his lap.

Looking back from the TV, Lei Yin gently stroked her long hair, while looking at her half exposed face.

“Something in your mind?”

Naoko shook her head, and then looked up at him, “Will there be any issue in putting Amy in your sister's care? I remember hearing you said, that in addition to you and Alice Lynn, she will have a sense of resistance toward other people.”

Lei Yin pulled her up into his arms, “It is much better now. After being together for a few days, she has no resistance toward Kazumi and her friend. Moreover, I only told them to take care of her for one day. Some time ago, because of the exams, I have not seen you for many days, so I want to spend my time together with you alone.”

“Lei, am I a fool?” Naoko posted herself against his chest and whispered.

“Why would you say that?”

“Since Amy came, I feel like you were robbed away from me by her. Sometimes I am mad at myself, why would I be jealous of a little girl.” Naoko’s expression was quite splendid.

Hearing her words, Lei Yin could not help but chuckled, “You are right, you really are a fool.” With that, he lifted her chin to kiss her luscious red lips.

Naoko warmly and tenderly responded, seemingly wanting to transmit her heart’s grievances through her lips toward her lover.

After locking her lips for a minute, Lei Yin saw her beautiful face was sort of breath and said, “You, sometimes you look like a kid just like Amy.”

“Lei, I really miss you.” Naoko’s eyes were red.

Looking at her crazy in love expression, Lei Yin's heart was filled with love and affection. He gently picked her up and then walked inside the bedroom.

Naoko head-over-heels gazed at him and tightly clung her two delicate hands around his neck.

She did not know how long it was, but when Naoko woke up, she felt a hand gently stroked her back. That intimate touch made her feel very comfortable.

When she opened her eyes, Lei Yin caressed her lips with his finger, "You awake?"

"What happened?" Naoko felt somewhat confused.

"You just passed out." Lei Yin smiled at her.

Naoko immediately blushed, under that kind of intense pleasure, she thought she was going to die. Recalling her cry of passion, she was ashamed and totally did not dare to look at his face.

Continuing the gentle stroke on her silky skin, Lei Yin suddenly said: "You really do not want to go with me in this Teikyo University educational trip?"

Hearing his words, Naoko looked up at him, "Lei, are you angry

with me?”

“Of course not, I just ask a question, do not let your thoughts to wander, understand?” Knowing that she liked to keep everything in her heart, Lei Yin immediately added a sentence.

“Actually, I really like to go with you, but your classmates will also come, so I think this is not very good.” Naoko once again showed that awkward expression.

“Well, I won’t ask you anymore. Wait until the next opportunity to go out just the two of us.”

Lei Yin knew that her heart always had a knot. And that was the six years of age difference between the two of them, as well as her being his teacher in high school. Until now, she has not had enough mental preparation to face the scrutiny of outsider’s eyes. He knew that such a thing cannot be rushed, and therefore, did not care for it too much.

“Lei, you really are not angry with me?” Naoko anxiously watched his expression.

“Fool, do not treat me like the kind of stingy man.” Lei Yin kissed her eyes.

Seeing he did not really get angry, Naoko finally breathed a sigh of relief.

“Later on, you must not indulge in flights of fancy. If you have any concern, I want you to immediately tell me about it, you know?”

“Em.” Knowing that he was worried about her, Naoko’s heart was deeply moved.

After calming her down, Lei Yin began to have the urge.

“Would you like to come one more time?” He whispered into her ear.

Naoko’s flushed of shame reached her ears. After a while, she choked back her shame and nodded.

The delicate cries of passion from a mature woman soon became clearer and clearer inside the room.

When the exam results were announced, fortunately, even the most in danger Takeda safely passed. Thus, the four young men’s first Summer vacation in college began.

At the beginning of the Summer vacation, the University educational trip was held as scheduled.

The educational trip this year was similar to last year, that was, the majority of the participants were the first year student. Plus, there were a lot of people who came along with their boyfriend or girlfriend, so the total number was huge. At the starting day, all of

them gathered inside the Terminal building at Tokyo Haneda Airport.

Although the first and second-year student were originally planned to go to Kagoshima and the third and fourth-year student to go to Hokkaido, at the registration time, there were a lot of third and fourth-year student who changed their destination to Kagoshima. Putting aside the pure tourism point of view, those students all have the same characteristic, that was, none of them have any or temporarily not have a girlfriend.

Facing the greedy eyes of myriad seniors, those first and second-year male students became tensed. They even took the shortest time possible when going to the toilet, for fear of leaving their chosen target for too long, in order to avoid being taken advantage of.

“Masashi, where is your sister?” Takeda looked around.

“She is accompanying her friend to buy something, wait a minute and she will be back. What about Yoshikawa?”

“God knows where that guy went. Perhaps he went out to hunt Narimura Haruko.”

“Then why don’t you go with him? Aren’t you participating this educational trip because of Narimura Haruko?”

“Do not mention it, Haruko is too hard to get, when you see

Yoshikawa, you will know what I mean. So I decided to change my goal. Now I find that someone's sister is more beautiful than ever, therefore, as a good friend aren't you supposed to help me?" Takeda brazenly said.

"As I said, you are not her type, I advise you to give it up. But if you insist on trying, I will not stop you, but do not expect me to help you either."

"You don't even want to help, hateful guy," Takeda said bitterly.

Lei Yin was too lazy to care for him. He looked down at the little girl sitting on his lap: "Kid, wait until we arrive in Kagoshima, and I will take you to the Onsen there. The Onsen in Kagoshima is quite famous."

"What's an Onsen?" The little girl widely opened her eyes to look at him.

"In the vicinity of a volcanic crater, there are some rock holes, and from that holes came out the groundwater. Because they are located in the nearby Volcano, the groundwater is boiled by the lava. This boiling hot groundwater is called Onsen. People can soak inside this Onsen." Lei Yin explained to her.

"Then what is the difference between Onsen and a hot bath?" The little girl cocked her head to think for a moment, and then asked.

Lei Yin said with a smile: “Because the water in Onsen is from the groundwater, they are rich in minerals, and that is good for the body. But the feelings when taking a hot bath is indeed not much difference than soaking in Onsen, perhaps the only difference is, the Onsen is much larger than a bathtub. By the way, can you swim? If not, when we’re there, I will teach you how to swim in the Onsen, Ok?”

“Okay.” The little girl very happily smiled.

Half an hour later, all of them boarded the aircraft.

Looking down from the increasingly rising in altitude airplane window, the blocks of buildings were getting smaller and smaller.

I hope this trip won’t be too boring. Lei Yin watched Amy gleefully looking at the scenery outside her window.

Chapter 176 - Island

Kagoshima is located in the southernmost tip of Kyushu Island, one of Japan's four main islands, with warm and wet subtropical climate. It has a total area of 9167 square kilometers, from Satsuma, to two big peninsulas, and Tanegashima. Beside Yakushima and Amami islands, from North to South, there was a total of 145 outlying islands. The biggest characteristic of Kagoshima was the volcanic terrain, which based in Sakurajima. There were also additional six active volcanoes, and therefore, Kagoshima was rich in Onsen. It was one of Japan's best Onsen area. Because of the maritime exchange, artillery and Christianity first spread here, which in turn formed a unique culture since ancient times.

After he put down the luggage, Lei Yin pulled open the floor-to-ceiling glass window. When he opened it, a faint smell of sea breeze went right through, making him felt comfortable.

Watching the somewhat sluggish Amy sitting on the bed, Lei Yin walked over and gently patted her little face, "Kid, are you tired?"

"Em." Although on the plane she was full of spirit, after all, her age was still small. After coming out from the airplane and riding half an hour in the car, the little girl began to feel a little tired.

"Go to sleep first, when it's time to eat I will wake you up."

The little girl did feel sleepy, thus she nodded her head.

Lei Yin then helped her take off her shoes, and then turned on the air-conditioner in the room, and conveniently covered her body with the sheet.

After she fell asleep, Lei Yin went to the bathroom to wash his face, and then walked out of the Hotel room.

When he walked out into the hallway, Takeda also happened to come out from his room.

“Why are you alone? Where is Amy?” Takeda asked when he glanced behind Lei Yin and did not see her.

“She is a bit tired, so I let her sleep. Aren’t you with Yoshikawa, where did that guy go?”

Takeda snorted, “Where do you think, he is definitely reporting himself to Narimura Haruko. Where are you going?”

“I am going to see Kazumi.”

“The rebellious youth’s eyes suddenly lit up, “I am going with you.”

“Whatever.” Lei Yin was too lazy to stop him.

Takeda was pleased and put his arm around his friend’s shoulders.

“Idiot, let me go, it’s hot here.” Lei Yin immediately broke away from his hand.

Takeda was in a good mood and kept on smiling.

When Lei Yin and Takeda came into Kazumi and Take Asasei’s room, they saw Take Asasei was putting her clothes from her duffel bag into the closet.

“Finish packing your clothes?” Lei Yin asked Kazumi.

“It’s just a few pieces of clothes, there is nothing to clean up. Where is Amy?”

“She is sleeping in the room. Are you tired? If not, how about going out for a walk?”

“Em.”

“Wait a minute, I want to go out too.” Take Asasei immediately put down the clothes in her hand.

When the four of them walked to the lobby on the first floor, they came across several people.

Apart from Lei Yin, in Teikyo University, no other people can confront these two individuals.

One of them wore a short white dress, which perfectly outlined her beautiful figure. With slightly curly shoulder-length hair, plus proper anger and smiling expression, she was fully worthy of the title new college beauty.

Next to Narimura Haruko, Mingyu Jizi was in no way inferior to her appearance, which exuded a compelling charm. Compared to her beautiful face, her hot body was the object of lust of most of the men. In particular, she also deliberately wore a semi-low-cut pale yellow dress, which made her lethality increased exponentially.

These two beautiful girls attracted the attention of everyone in the lobby. Standing next to them were several well-dressed male students with various kind of handsome faces. This line of seven or eight individuals seemed like the entourage of the two Queens.

If the distance from the Queen determined the success and failure of these entourages love, then Yoshikawa's recent effort seemed to have some results. He has surpassed several other boys on the periphery to stand next to Narimura Haruko. But Akio Okada from the Basketball Club also stood beside her, seemingly in an intense competition with Yoshikawa.

Seeing Lei Yin went down the stairs, the two beautiful girl's faces almost simultaneously fell. And Akio Okada showed such a big hatred look from his eyes, he will never forget this man who humiliated him in front of so many people.

Yoshikawa originally wanted to greet his friends, but upon seeing Narimura Haruko's face went bad, he had to bear it down. Anyway, with that guy's character, he wouldn't care about such trivial matters.

For those few people resentment eyes, Lei Yin was too lazy to care. In any case, no matter how they see him, it would not hurt him, as long as they did not provoke him.

"They are worthy to be called the school beauty. So many people walked together with them, looking very impressive." After walking out of the Hotel, Take Asasei was still in awe.

"So what if they have many people, do you think this is a fight?" Takeda curled his lips.

"None of your business!" Take Asasei gave him a stern look.

"Hey, no matter what, I am the best friend of your best friend's brother, give me some face will you." Takeda's tone of voice was really unlike a college student.

"I will never give face to a man who never being looked up by a girl." Take Asasei refuted.

Takeda was like a cat being stepped on the tail, jumped up and roared, "Who's never being looked up by a girl? I am telling you, there are many girls who like me. You, this smelly b*tch who never being liked by men, be careful when you talk."

“If you have the skill, go find yourself a girlfriend.” Take Asasei’s whole face was filled with disdain.

“Smelly b*tch, you wait, in two days I will bring my girlfriend for you to see.”

“No wonder no woman ever like you, what kind of man would say this to a girl? You do not even act even a tiny bit like a gentleman.”

Lei Yin felt their quarrel was a bit harsh, so he said to Kazumi: “How about we walk to the beach?”

“Okay.” Kazumi also felt they were somewhat noisy.

The two bickering people did not realize that their friends have left.

Perhaps because she rarely had the opportunity to see the sea, when walking down the beach and seeing the endless waves unceasingly reached the white sand, Kazumi’s mood suddenly became very good.

“Brother, let’s get down there and check it out.” Kazumi pulled her brother’s hand and said.

To see her so excited like a child, Lei Yin laughed, “Take your

shoes off, and we'll walk to the beach.”

“Ok.” Kazumi believed that this suggestion was great and immediately squatted down to take off her socks and shoes.

After Lei Yin rolled up his trousers, she immediately took him to the beach.

Fine sands constantly rubbed the soles of her feet, making Kazumi felt somewhat itch but also very comfortable.

“The water is so cold.” Sensing the seawater temperature, Kazumi welcomed the sea breeze and exclaimed.

Lei Yin suddenly bent down to scoop a handful of seawater and threw at her.

“Ah....” Kazumi immediately screamed as she tried to get out of the way, but was still splashed a little bit.

He did not let go of her and continued to throw seawater at her.

Kazumi constantly retracted her steps to dodge.

“Hateful!” After a moment, she was unwilling to constantly retreat, so she tried to splash him back.

Lei Yin laughed as he dodged, and then seize the opportunity to attack her again.

Both people laughed and called each other names as they continued to mutually attack one another.

“Well, I don’t want to play anymore, I give up.” After playing for unknown amount times, Lei Yin saw that she was short of breath, thus offered a truce.

Unfortunately, before he even finished his words, he was immediately splashed with seawater.

“Good, I accept the invading country’s surrender.” Kazumi laughed out loud.

“You’re so inhumane, I have surrendered, but you still splash me.” Lei Yin complained

Kazumi proudly said: “Humph, see if next time you still dare to bully me.”

Lei Yin could not help but reach out and want to pinch her cheeks. But Kazumi immediately giggled and tried to get out of the way.

Looking at her smiling face, Lei Yin regretted that he did not bring the camera out.

Sitting on the beach, feeling the fresh and slightly salty sea breeze, Kazumi's mind seemed to feel drunk.

“Brother, I think participating in this educational trip is quite good.” Leaning her head on his shoulder, she gently said something.

Lei Yin turned around to glance at her, and then said: “There are a lot of things like this, which looks boring from the outside but when you really into it, you will find that there are a lot of fun things. The so-called investing yourself in life is, perhaps, the meaning of this.”

Stretching out both hands to grasp his arm, Kazumi whispered: “I understand what you mean, I'm going to try.”

Lei Yin picked up a handful of sand from around his foot and then let the sand slowly flew down along his fingers. Looking at the stream of sand that was constantly falling, he mused: “Perhaps the only constant, is this sand.”

Kazumi did not understand what he meant and looked up into his eyes. She found that his eyes have a completely indescribable feeling. It seemed somewhat sad, but also kind of see through everything indifferently.

“Brother, what happened?”

Looking at her face filled with worried expression, Lei Yin smiled, “It’s nothing, just suddenly have some mixed feelings.”

Seeing him returned to normal, Kazumi felt relieved.

“Brother, if you have something in your mind, you can talk to me. For a long time, you have always been taking care of and protecting me, so I really want to help you.”

“Do not worry, it really is nothing.” Lei Yin gently patted her face.

“Good then.” Once again she put her head on his shoulder.

Lei Yin pulled out the cell phone from his pocket to look at the time, and then said: “Let’s go back to the Hotel, I fear if the kid wakes up and does not see me, she would be afraid.”

Kazumi nodded her head, and then all of a sudden laughed, “Sometimes I really envy her. If Rumi is here with us and see that you are so good to Amy, she would be jealous.”

Lei Yin suddenly remembered that a few days ago, Naoko also said something similar to that.

When they walked back, Lei Yin saw Takeda and Take Asasei in front of them.

When Takeda saw them, he immediately ran over, “Masashi, where have you been? [translated by subudai11.com] We’ve been looking everywhere for you.”

“Just strolling on the beach, but now ready to go back.”

At this time, Take Asasei also ran toward them, “Kazumi, you are too much, why don’t you tell me when you walk away?”

Kazumi smiled, “Seeing you so happy talking to Takeda, I did not have the heart to disturb you.”

“What a joke, I don’t have any fun talking with him.” She said, turned around, and gave Takeda a stern glare. But she found that the guy did not even hear what she said, his eyes were unblinking looking at somewhere else.

She followed his gaze and found out that he was staring at Kazumi who, for whatever reason, did not realize that her skirt was rolled up, showing her slender legs.

“Dead pervert, what are you looking at?” Take Asasei cried out in a loud voice.

Being called out by her, Takeda immediately reacted, and awkwardly turned away. He also did not know why would he stare at Kazumi’s thighs.

“Kazumi, I am telling you, this pervert was just looking at your

legs.” Take Asasei immediately complained to Kazumi.

Takeda hastily explained, “Don’t listen to her nonsense, I did not.”

Kazumi patted Take Asasei, “Do not talk nonsense, let us go back.” She said while straightened down her rolling up skirt.

“I am telling the truth, this guy was really looking at you.” Take Asasei whispered to her.

Takeda stood at the back watching Take Asasei talked to Kazumi, and suddenly found out that her figure was actually very good, but because she rarely wore dresses, it was previously covered. Thinking about her pair of beautiful slender white legs that he saw just a moment ago, he felt his heart beating hard.

Back at the Hotel room, Lei Yin was relieved to see Amy still asleep.

Later after dinner in the Hotel, besides the missing Yoshikawa, the idle Lei Yin and Takeda came out of their room to play cards and watch TV with Kazumi and Take Asasei.

By nine o’clock in the evening, Take Asasei who lost the most proposed to take a dip in Onsen, the several other people did oppose to that.

At their Hotel, there was a very large open-air Onsen.

This open-air Onsen was built on the halfway up the waterfall with excellent view. There were no barriers on both sides of the Onsen, just some tall flowers and plants as a natural screen to block the line of sight. Therefore, this Onsen was one of the few who allowed the guests to wear swimwear into the Onsen. (Almost all Japanese Onsen request their guests to be nude)

Moreover, this Onsen was a mixed bath, with female bath area in the East and male bath area in the West. There was only a large piece of wood in the middle which acted as a barrier.

When Lei Yin and Takeda came into the men's bath area, there were already a lot of male students there. Among them, many crowded in front of that piece of wood swimming around and sometimes, every now and then, looked past toward the women's bath area.

"Yoshikawa, why are you here? When did you come?" Takeda found that his buddies were among them.

"I just come from window shopping with Haruko," Yoshikawa answered.

"You mean, Narimura Haruko is soaking on the opposite side of the Onsen?" Takeda immediately reacted.

"So what? Stop thinking about it, she is far away from here and the light is insufficient, so there is simply nothing to see. You see those guys who are still trying to see over there? They are all a

bunch of idiots.” Yoshikawa sneered.

Takeda suddenly laughed, “Needless to say, you must have done the same thing, otherwise, how can you be so clear about this thing?”

“Too lazy to talk to you.” Yoshikawa left him to swim toward Lei Yin.

“Hey, Masashi, can I consult you with something?”

Seeing his malicious smile, Lei Yin squinted his eyes and said: “Tell me about it.”

“Don’t you feel that soaking in the Onsen is very boring? Why don’t we find something entertaining?”

“What entertainment?” Takeda was also interested and came over.

Yoshikawa lowered his voice to a whisper.

After listening to his proposal, Lei Yin could not help but smile, “After all is said and done, you want us to help you get rid of a competitor.”

“In any case, you also have some beef with him, just consider this as settling an account.” Even though his hidden intention was

pried open, Yoshikawa still carelessly said.

Lei Yin thought for a moment, “Very well, I have nothing to do anyway.”

Seeing Lei Yin agreed, Takeda who always liked to mess around, of course, gave his agreement.

Half an hour later, while other people continued to soak in the Onsen, from the female bath area on the opposite side came the sound of a heavy object falling into the water.

Immediately after that came the women’s endless panic scream.

“Ah, how could there be a man here?”

“Pervert!”

“Okada, how could it be you? What are you doing here?” It was a full of anger female voice.

“I, I was blindfolded by three men and thrown here.”

“Humph, you need to find better excuses. Quickly get the hell out of here.”

“Haruko, please let me explain....”

“Get out!”

A male student recognized Narimura Haruko's voice. This discovery made them greatly excited and immediately stood up.

When the crowd was still talking about that controversy, three young men quietly went back to the male bath area.

“Such a good fun.” Takeda covered his mouth hard not to burst out laughing.

Yoshikawa slapped Lei Yin on the shoulder and said: “Finally that competitor is gone now, thank you.”

Lei Yin glanced at him, “It's useless to say ‘thank you,’ just buy me a meal tomorrow.”

“No problem.”

Chapter 177 - Tour

The next morning the students were divided into several groups under the leadership of several instructors to begin the Tour of Kagoshima.

The first stop was Sakurajima, the symbol of Kagoshima, not far from Kagoshima City.

Sakurajima was a large active volcano. According to records, Sakurajima erupted more than thirty times. In 1914, Sakurajima erupted out a massive amount of lava which filled the strait between Sakurajima and the Osumi Peninsula so that the two were connected.

Until now, from near Sakurajima, one can see the thick white smoke ejected out from the crater like a huge steam boiler. In fact, the distance between Sakurajima and Kagoshima, the city of 500.000 people, was only about 4 km, and either way can be reached by ferries for about 15 minutes. In other words, if Sakurajima erupt like it was in the past, the harm that it will cause to Kagoshima is no less than when the atomic bomb exploded in Hiroshima. But the locals did not seem to have the slightest tension or even made the necessary precaution. In Lei Yin's view, this was the classic example of 'refuse to be convinced until one is faced with grim reality.'

The several groups of people have been walking halfway up to the Sakurajima, and along the way, from time to time, they saw the handicrafts stalls as well as the local products stalls.

The local products in Sakurajima were also quite famous, which supposedly to be the world's largest radishes and the smallest oranges. Although he did not know whether this was true or not, seeing the thicker than the thigh radishes as well as the finger size oranges, Lei Yin wanted to try but did not have the appetite. He did not like these excessive looking foods.

But Amy and Take Asasei were very interested in those small oranges and were very excited to hold it in their hands and play with it.

At about 10 o'clock in the morning, on the halfway up the mountain, the students finally reached the Yunotaira observation deck. Because the weather was good today, one can see the distant Kirishima.

Here they have the free time. Some people chose to rest there, but more people chose to enter the nearby volcano theater to watch the projections on the split screens on three sides, with the special sound effects, of the movie The Burning Earth – Sakurajima. The good sound coupled with the visual effects made many people seemed to have an 'eye-opening' sense. Amy watched it without blinking.

At the return trip, when Lei Yin's group arrived at the foot of the mountain, they saw, in front of them, many students stopped and huddled in a group.

"I do not know what happened at the front, let us take a look at it." Take Asasei revealed an excited look.

“38.” The nearby Takeda leisurely said a word.

“Dead pervert, what did you say?” Take Asasei was furious.

“I only said 38, I did not think somebody would reply, haha.” Takeda purposely laughed twice.

“Dead pervert, you remember this. Kazumi let’s go.” With that, she pulled her good friends away to the front, and Kazumi had to follow her.

After they left, Takeda immediately said to his friends: “Let us go and see.”

Lei Yin laughed, “Didn’t you just curse someone else as 38 (Is referred to people or girl specifically who always want to talk about, or intervene other people’s business, privacy, etc. – The word 38 came from the International Women’s day), what do you think about your behaviour now?”

“38 specifically refers to women, for men it is invalid. Stop it, let’s go take a look, maybe someone is fighting.” Takeda said while pulling him forward.

When they walked to the front, Takeda saw a foreign language instructor from literature department constantly using hand gestures while talking in English to a blond foreigner.

The foreigner seemed to be stirred up emotionally as he tried to convey his meaning to the instructor with a flushed face. But because what he said was not in English, the English instructor looked at his action with confusion.

Takeda asked one of the male students, “What does that foreigner want?”

That man casually replied: “I don’t know, just now he suddenly came up and told us a bunch of words, but no one can understand what he says.”

That instructor was helpless so he turned around toward the students on his back and said: “Do you guys know where instructor Gosan is? This foreigner is speaking French, and only instructor Gosan can communicate with him.” He deliberately said the last sentence to the students. He did not want them to think their spoken English were bad.

“Teacher Gosan seemed to not have come with us, he should still be in the Hotel.” A student thought for a moment and then replied.

“This is not good. You go and call him.” The English instructor said to him.

“But it is far away from here.” He regretted that his big mouth answered the instructor’s question.

Suddenly he had a flash of idea, and said to the instructor:

“Teacher, you can call teacher Gosan to translate via telephone.”

“That’s right, why didn’t I think about it.” [Read this on subudai11.com] The English instructor immediately took out his mobile phone to make a call.

But for a long time, teacher Gosan did not answer his call.

The English instructor cursed in his heart, That guy must have been sleeping while the students are away.

Finally, he had no other choice but to say to that student: “The phone can’t get through, just go and call him over.”

That student’s face suddenly sank, in the end, he still had to run down.

The Frenchman saw that they did not understand his meaning. Because his heart was anxious, he pulled that instructor’s hand, wanting to lead him away.

Being pulled by the hand, the instructor instinctively wanted to break away from his hand. But because that foreigner’s strength was bigger than him, in the end, he was suddenly pulled down to the ground.

“What are you doing?” The English instructor very embarrassedly got up from the ground and shouted at the Frenchman.

“Sorry, sorry!” That Frenchman quickly used the only apology word that he knew. Then he started to anxiously gesture once again.

Although many French people know English, apparently he was not one of them.

Seeing this ‘talking at each other in different languages’ scene did not seem to be making any progress, Narimura Haruko felt very irritable.

I really don’t know why these many people want to stop in this d*mn hot place just for this random foreigner.

If she knew this educational trip would be so boring, she would not participate in it. Now she just wanted to go back on the plane right away.

Seeing her look so upset, Yoshikawa very tactfully said: “Haruko, why don’t we just go back first?”

“Can we? If later they count the number of students, then what to do?”

In order to prevent students from getting lost, in every major tourist attraction, the instructor will count the number of students.

“It does not matter, anyway, we are just going back to the hotel. When the others come back to the hotel, we can join them again.”

“There is really not going to be any problem?” She was a bit excited. She really wanted to go back immediately.

“Rest assured, nothing would happen.”

“Okay then, let’s go.”

Yoshikawa soon led the way.

Seeing his proud look, the several other trailing boys could not help but feel jealous and angry.

Suddenly, Narimura Haruko halted her steps and then looked at the front with strange eyes.

At this time, not only her, the other people also looked at the front with the same strange eyes.

They saw a young man hugging a little girl went to the front of that foreigner and said a few words to him.

That foreign man froze for a moment, and then, with a face filled with pleasant surprise, he said a bunch of words.

Hearing his words, the young man thought for a moment and then told him a few words.

That Frenchman immediately nodded his head.

Then, in front of all the others, that foreigner suddenly went to the other direction together with the suddenly appeared young man.

Watching the Frenchman talking with that young man scene, Yoshikawa's chin almost fell down.

This has got to be a mistake, that guy can actually speak French?

Not only him, almost all of the people there looked at the back of that young man with unbelievable expressions.

Take Asasei managed to move her eyes toward her friend's body, "Ka, Kazumi, your brother can speak French?"

Although this was also the first time for her to hear him speak French, she was already somewhat accustomed to her inscrutable brother. So, she was not as surprised as the other people, and instead said: "Let us go see what is going on." With that, she quickly followed behind them.

"Wait for me." Take Asasei also ran up to them.

Seeing the two of them go, Takeda finally reacted and hurriedly went after them.

Under their lead, the other students also slowly followed, including the just about to leave Narimura Haruko.

After following the Frenchman to the lawn specifically designed for visitors to rest, Lei Yin noticed the body of a 30-something years old woman who was foaming at the mouth; the body lay twitching on the grass while her mouth still biting a white handkerchief.

At a glance, Lei Yin immediately understood that the woman was indeed, as her husband put it, having a seizure. But looking at her blackened face, this time's seizure has been going on for quite some time.

Seizure, or commonly known as Epilepsy, was caused by overactive nerve cells in the brain, resulting in clinical manifestation. The general causes were brain lesions or traumatic brain injury. The symptoms were generally divided into a focal seizure and generalized seizure. If it was a focal seizure, it will generally recover in a short period of time. If it was a generalized seizure, in addition to massive muscle spasms, it can also cause respiratory arrest situation. Usually, each episode of respiratory arrest was about 10-20 seconds, so it would not cause any problem toward the patient. But if it was sustained, and repeated, the patient will have a life-threatening situation because of hypoxia. And now, this French woman's seizure seemed to be the worst kind of seizure.

Because the seizure was very scary at the time, many female students who came screamed in fear.

Although the man has stuffed the handkerchief in her mouth to prevent her from biting her tongue, if her convulsion did not stop, she would die from lack of oxygen.

Seeing this, Lei Yin immediately said to the man: “Do you have any antiepileptic medicine?”

The man ruefully said: “I did not bring it; my wife never had a seizure in over two years. I thought she was okay, so I did not take the drug with us.”

Lei Yin cursed in his heart.

This woman can't wait any longer. Even though he had called the emergency number, while waiting for the ambulance to arrive, she might have died.

Lei Yin has no other choice but to walk to the woman's side and pressed both of his thumbs on the acupuncture points on both sides of her neck.

After pressing that points for a moment, he pressed several other acupuncture points on her neck and collarbone.

“What are you doing?” That man looked at him in bewilderment.

“When your wife opens her mouth, I want you to give her artificial respiration.” Lei Yin continued to proceed with his action while replying to him.

“Can she?” The Frenchman doubtfully looked at him. He was well aware that the epileptic patient’s jaws will close when having a seizure, so he stuffed the handkerchief in her mouth to prevent her from biting her tongue; how could she open her mouth?

Lei Yin ignored him and continued to press the woman’s acupuncture points.

After about two minutes, seeing the woman’s face turned into purple-black, even ordinary people knew that her situation was very dangerous. Noticing this, the man couldn’t bear anymore and frantically rushed toward the man, who messed things up, to knock him over.

But when he was about to hit that man, the man suddenly reached out and grabbed him by the wrist and then threw him to the side. This action was very fast that no one can clearly see what he had done.

“If you want to save your wife’s life, do not bother me.” Lei Yin coldly said a sentence, and then continued his treatment.

That man got up from the ground and looked at him.

A minute later, when the Frenchman was about to be in despair, suddenly, the woman on the ground miraculously relaxed her clenched jaws.

Seeing this, Lei Yin immediately pulled out the handkerchief from inside her mouth, and then loudly said to the man: “Quickly give her artificial respiration.”

That man froze for a moment, and then, with a pleasant surprise, immediately gave the artificial respiration toward the woman on the ground.

At this time, Lei Yin said to his sister nearby: “Kazumi, go to the store and buy me some toothpicks.”

“Okay.” Kazumi immediately ran to the nearest store.

Lei Yin continued to press that woman’s acupuncture points, but now the area was on her limbs.

Soon, Kazumi bought back the toothpicks.

Lei Yin took a few toothpicks from the package and split each toothpick in half with a knife.

To everyone’s surprise, he turned up that woman’s cloth and then stuck those toothpicks in her body.

Fortunately, the man who was helping his wife by doing artificial respiration did not see his action, otherwise, he would jump up in emotion.

But if there was someone here who knew a little acupuncture, that someone would also emotionally jump up. Because by splitting the toothpicks in half and stuck these half-thick toothpicks into the human body, the difficulty of this 'brilliant' technique cannot be simply summarized with words.

Soon, after more than ten toothpicks were inserted into the French woman's body, Lei Yin put his hand on the woman's wrist to check her pulse.

"What, what is he doing? That English instructor turned his head to ask the students.

But there was no answer, everyone was looking at the unfolding scene in front of them with stunned expressions.

"What are you doing?" The Frenchman finally saw his wife, who was stuck with toothpicks like a porcupine, and angrily shouted.

"You shut up and just continue to give her artificial respiration." Lei Yin raised his head and gave him a stern look.

That man slightly calmed a little. After thinking about it, he quickly bowed his head to continue doing artificial respiration.

After a while, seeing that the woman's seizure has stopped, Lei Yin knew it was time, so he slowly took away the toothpicks.

"Okay, you can stop, she should be able to breathe by herself now." Lei Yin said after finished checking her pulse.

The man paused, then looked up at his wife, and sure enough, she had recovered her breath, and her body stopped twitching.

"How, how is she?" The man asked incredulously. He had just wanted to ask the man to call an ambulance but did not think this man actually brought his wife back to normal.

"I have phoned the hospital, the ambulance will come soon. After you arrive at the hospital, tell the doctor to give her detailed check." Lei Yin picked up the spilled toothpicks and then put them in the nearest trashcan.

"Can you tell me what have you just done to her?" The Frenchman still did not understand what he had just done.

"First aid measure. In the future, don't forget to take the medicine." With that, he hugged the little girl who stood watching next to him.

"Thank you, thank you very much." That man very excitedly looked at him.

"If you want to thank someone, thank this kid, if she did not

open her mouth, I may not be too meddlesome.” He was telling the truth.

“Thank you.” The man said again with quivering voice.

Amy opened her big and round eyes to see the man at a glance, and then smilingly pulled Lei Yin’s arms.

Chapter 178 - Wind

At meal time in the Hotel restaurant, Kazumi suddenly smiled and said: “Brother, do you feel some itchiness in the vicinity of your neck?”

“My skin is thicker, so I do not feel it.” Lei Yin turned a blind eye toward those strange vision at the restaurant.

Kazumi watched him with a smile, “It seems like brother has become the object of resentment by other people.”

“I am used to it.” Lei Yin said while wiping off the cream from Amy’s mouth.

“Kazumi’s brother is amazing, that was the first time I saw someone spoke French in real life, moreover, it was from the person that I knew.” Take Asasei’s whole face looked at him adoringly.

Lei Yin did not want to continue discussing this topic and asked Kazumi: “Where are we going today?”

“I heard that because we have too many participants, the cruise ship cannot hold us all, so we have been divided into two groups. One group will go to Amami and the other group will go to Yakushima. Where do you want to go?”

“Either way is fine, in any case, I have not gone to either place.”

“Then how about we go to Yakushima, I’ve seen the pictures on the brochures, the scenery there seems quite beautiful.” Kazumi thought and then said.

Lei Yin nodded his head.

But in the afternoon when they were about to board the ship, they were told that the ship to Yakushima was nearly full. There were only three positions left.

Seeing this, Lei Yin had to change his destination and boarded the ship to Amami.

Kazumi wanted to go with him but was advised by him to go back.

“Takeda, take care of them along the way.”

“Don’t worry, I know what to do.” Takeda madly hit his own chest.

“Brother, see you at the hotel tonight.” Kazumi reluctantly parted way.

“Alright.” After saying goodbye to them, Lei Yin walked to the ship carrying Amy.

The number of students and tourists were too much. Moreover, the ships were medium-sized ferries usually used by tourists, so even to Amami they needed two ships, and Lei Yin and Amy were on the second ship.

Truly ‘enemies often cross each other’s path.’ After boarding the ship and saw Narimura Haruko sitting in the ship hold, that phrase immediately appeared in Lei Yin’s mind.

There were several familiar faces milling around Narimura Haruko, but Yoshikawa, who never left this school new beauty, was not one of them.

The reason for Yoshikawa’s absence was known to Lei Yin. That guy would get seasick, moreover, it was the worst kind of seasick. If he forced himself to sit for ten minutes, he may have survived. But the trip to Amami or Yakushima will take, at least, more than an hour boat ride; midway through the journey, he would certainly throw up unconscious. That image-conscious guy will choose death rather than showing that scene in front of Narimura Haruko.

Lei Yin did not want to see their faces so he chose the position near the ship room.

“I never thought that guy would also come.” A male student sitting next to Narimura Haruko sneered.

“He won’t be coming with us right?”

“Who knows what that weirdo is thinking about.”

“Haruko, Haruko.”

“What happens?” After looking back at the man in the back, Narimura Haruko turned to the male student next to her.

“Let’s go sing karaoke after dinner, yesterday I found a place with a pretty good design.”

“Let’s talk about it later.”

Seeing that she was not very interested in that suggestion, that male student looked disappointed. While the other two boys showed a gloating expression.

At this time, Lei Yin, who sat on the stern, said to Amy: “Kid, did you enjoy these two days?”

The little girl nodded, and then tilted her head to think for a moment and said: “You said you wanted to teach me how to swim, but why didn’t you teach me when we soaked in the Onsen?”

“Little fool, you were in the women’s bath area, if I go there they will call me a pervert.” Lei Yin smiled and pinched her face.

“What’s a pervert?” The little girl showed a puzzled expression.

Lei Yin did not know how to explain that term to her, and had to say: “Pervert is a very, very bad people.”

The little girl nodded her head, seemingly not really understand.

“If you want to learn how to swim, when we get back, I will take you to the beach and teach you.”

“Ok.”

Looking at her smiling face, Lei Yin’s mood became much better. Unwilling to watch the TV in the cabin, he picked her up and went outside to see the sea.

Seeing every now and then, from the side of the hull, there were fast swimming fishes, the little girl very excitedly called up.

The little girl’s crisp laughter coupled with her lovely countenance attracted the attention of a pair of elderly foreign couple. That elderly couple came over, wherein the tall foreign woman could not help but hold and kiss Amy’s face, while her mouth constantly called “little angel.”

Receiving this sudden ‘attack,’ Amy instinctively withdrew into Lei Yin’s bosom. Seeing that the couple has no malicious intention, Lei Yin whispered the girl to comfort her. After a while, Amy finally poked her little head out of his bosom and smiled to the couple. Seeing her lovely smile, that American woman could not help but send several fierce motherly kisses to her.

Hearing Lei Yin was, unexpectedly, quite fluent in English, the gray-haired man was very pleased and patted him on the shoulder and then started to ask incessantly.

Regarding this enthusiastic elderly couple, Lei Yin, without any better option, has to spend words chatting with them.

Seeing him speaking fluent English with a foreign couple, many students aboard the ship showed jealousy and envy from their eyes. As for those female students, they were unblinkingly staring at the “human weapon,” as if this was the first time they saw him.

“Humph, what’s the big deal, it’s just some foreign language, but still using it non-stop here.” The guy sitting next to Narimura Haruko could not help but sneer.

At this time, Narimura Haruko suddenly said dryly: “If you are fluent in two foreign languages, you are also eligible to do so.”

“Haruko, you....” That guy never thought she would say such words. The other two guys also showed a surprised expression.

Aware of her gaffe, Narimura Haruko immediately added: “I just don’t want to discuss that person again. By the way, how long does it take to Amami?”

Hearing her words, those few guys immediately felt relieved.

They were now going to Amami archipelago which consisted of Amami Oshima, Kikaijima, Tokunoshima, Okinoerabujima, Yoronjima, and other islands. These islands have hibiscus, bougainvillea, and other subtropical plants. There were also rare animals such as black rabbit. In the vicinity of the islands there was also a rare colored coral. In the seaside resorts in the Amami archipelago, one can do sailing, yachting, scuba diving, and other various water sports.

The ship has been sailing for about an hour or so, and in the cabin, many people have started to feel drowsy.

Lei Yin said to Amy: “Kid, you go get some sleep, wait until I wake you up.”

Having been sleeping quite late these few days, the little girl was a little sleepy, so she nodded and laid her legs on a chair while using his leg as a pillow.

Bored, Lei Yin had to look up at the slightly boring TV show.

After about half an hour, when Lei Yin almost fell asleep, he suddenly found the light that was coming through the windows from the outside began to darken. When he raised his head to look at the outside of the ship, he saw large parts of the sky outside has turned dark.

Seeing this, his heart suddenly had a bad premonition.

At the same time, the Captain of the ship also stone-facedly looked at the birds in the sky. He remembered very clearly that the maritime authority did not inform him if there were going to be any special changes in tonight's weather; but how could he explain this?

Ten minutes later, the clouds in the sky became thicker. Not only that, the sea waves also gradually grew up; the sea gradually lost its original calm.

The increasing fluctuation of the ship made the people in the cabin lost their drowsiness. The students strangely looked outside at those thick black clouds.

“Is it going to rain?”

“I think so.”

“This is really a bad luck, why would it suddenly rain when we travel?”

Compared to those students who moaned about their situation, Lei Yin's face was much more serious. He was not afraid of the rain, he just worried that this rain was not going to be so simple.

After another five minutes, the waves on the surface of the sea became even larger. A faint trace of rain floated into the cabin mixed with the sea breeze.

“Hateful, it’s really raining. Hey, you quickly close the window.”

“How could a nice weather suddenly change and begin to rain?”

“Hey, what’s going on with you? Your face does not look good.”

“I, I want to throw up.”

“Don’t vomit here, quickly go to the washroom.”

Because the ship was rocking harder, several students in the cabin began to feel dizzy.

“Lei, what’s going on?” Being awoken by the shaking of the ship, Amy rubbed her eyes and asked.

“It’s okay, it’s nothing but rain.” Lei Yin took her in his arms and comforted her.

At this time, in the bridge, the 50-something years old Captain’s face nervously added the speed of the ship to its max.

He has been able to affirm that this was definitely a seasonal storm, and it was a big storm.

The seasonal storm was the ship second most feared weather phenomena after Typhoon. Because, compared to the observable

large-scale Typhoon, they were created by the sudden fluctuation in sea temperature differences, but they usually happened most often in the months of Spring and Summer.

After years spending his life on the sea, the Captain was well aware of how terrible this storm was. If it was a large or super large ship, this storm will only cause the hull of the ship to swing, and there won't be any danger. But this ship was only a small-medium passenger ship, if it encountered big waves, then it cannot be taken as a joke. So now, the only solution was to take the fastest speed to rush to the shelter on the nearby Island.

As the rain continued to strengthen, as well as the increasing amplitude of the hull swing, the Teikyo University students with several other tourists clearly felt that this was not going to be a simple drop of rain.

Looking out at the black environment as well as the constantly turning up large waves, a lot of people started to show panic look in their eyes.

Before taking part in this trip, most of them were just ordinary young people living in the metropolis of Tokyo, when would they ever saw the power of nature.

Just as the Captain predicted, this was a big storm. Later, most of the people on the ship have to hold on something, or they simply cannot stand on the cabin. Strong winds howled outside the window, creating loud noises. The hull constantly swung up and down just like the Pirate Ship ride in the Amusement Park, except, no one felt fun in this one.

Most people lost interest in talking, all of them turned pale as they clutched the armrests to keep their body fixed in place. Some female students could not help holding the handrail side crying out loud together. They just came here to travel and have fun, who would have thought that they will encounter this unlucky thing.

On the outside, dark clouds wrapped the whole sky, looking like it was 7 or 8 in the evening. Watching the environment outside, the Captain decisively turned off the engine. To continue the journey in such a low visibility was a very stupid act. Because it was possible for the ship to unknowingly bump into some dark reef. Now the only thing one can do was to wait for the storm to past. Assuming, of course, the ship has not been overturned.

“Lei, I am afraid.” This was the first time the little girl encountered such a situation and could not help but be scared.

“Don’t worry, it will be alright.” Lei Yin softly comforted her.

“Em.” The little girl replied with a sound and then quietly shrunk to his arms.

Suddenly remembered something, he stood up and, with one hand holding the little girl while the other hand holding on the window frame, slowly walked to the cabin’s front door.

Many students sitting on the chairs looked at him strangely, they did not understand what he wanted to do.

Lei Yin went to the ship front locker, knelt down and opened the cupboard and, sure enough, saw that it was filled with red-orange life jackets. He immediately took one out and put it on Amy, and then he put one on himself.

Because the cabin constantly shook, it took him nearly five minutes to put on the life jackets on the little girl's body, as well as his body. After they put that on, he walked back to his original seat while holding on the window frame. He then said to the other students: "There are life jackets here, if you want to put them on, you can put it yourself."

Hearing his words, several students immediately came over and took the life jackets.

After arriving at their seats, Lei Yin pulled out two life jackets and threw them toward the elderly US couple. That elderly couple very gratefully thanked him and immediately put on the life jackets.

"Lei, this dress is so beautiful." Amy liked the bright color of the life jacket very much.

Hearing this, Lei Yin could not help but burst out laughing. Apparently, she was not afraid anymore.

At this time, the hull was badly shaking, it felt like it was about to turn over. This time, not only the girls, even the boys could not help but cry. These young people who usually posed as elite

students, for the first time, felt the threat of death and consequently, lose their head.

At the same time, from the front came the sound of a heavy crash, and then there was a pitiful yell of a middle-aged man. But after that, there was no longer any sound.

Hearing the scream, everyone did not know what was going on in the front, but no one wanted to see. When everyone's lives were at stake, how could they have the time for others?

Seeing how almost everyone in the cabin shrieked and howled loudly, and then looked at the little girl who tightly shrunk herself in his arms like a kitten, he can only helplessly wait for the storm to past. Fortunately, the fluorescent light inside the cabin shone as normal, or there would be more panic.

After an unknown amount of time, the feeling of violently shaking forever finally stopped slowly. This also meant that the storm has passed.

After passing this calamity, everyone slowly stood up. In determining that the storm was really over, everyone excitedly cheered.

Lei Yin took Amy to the bridge in the front and saw a fifty-something years old man lying on the floor, blood constantly oozed out of his forehead. The ground was flooded with rainwater from the cabin door that was blown open.

Just as Lei Yin previously speculated, the previous scream came from the Captain.

After squatting down to check on his injury, Lei Yin found that his head was violently hit by an object, causing him to have a concussion which led to him being unconscious.

After helping him made a simple wrap around his injury, Lei Yin looked out of the bridge window, and all he saw was an endless sea.

He immediately tried the radio that was equipped on the ship, but there was no reaction at all, perhaps because it was soaked in the rain.

This is bad, he simply did not know where the ship was located.

Lei Yin wryly smiled, maybe this educational trip will turn into a modern version of The Life And Strange Surprising Adventures Of Robinson Crusoe.

Chapter 179 - Drift

“You mean to say, the ship cannot start?” One of the students uncontrollably exclaimed aloud.

Lei Yin lightly said: “Yes, this ship use electric signals to start, but since the dashboard on the bridge is wet from the rain, not only the engine cannot start, even the radio is also short-circuited. In other words, right now, not only we cannot move, we also cannot ask for help from outside world.”

His words made everyone’s hearts inside the cabin sank.

“Is there no other way to do it?” Another student asked hurriedly. [Go read on the right site]

“There is, I heard that by switching the circuit mode, the engine can be manually started. But I do not know how to do it. If anyone of you also did not understand, then the only other way is to wait until the Captain wake up.” Lei Yin’s knowledge of electronic was already a few decades old and was not suitable for this day and age. Moreover, the former owner of this body was an electronic idiot.

Unconsciously, everyone looked at the middle-aged man lying unconscious on the bench.

“Even if the ship does not start, it does not matter. As long as we wait, someone should come to rescue us.” Said a guy who pretended to take things less seriously.

Hearing his words, the other also felt as if things were not that terrible, and could not help but relax a lot.

“What you said is right, but only if we have enough food and fresh water to support us while we wait for the rescue to arrive, or else, we would starve or die of thirst first. In addition, we also need to be sure we would not encounter that storm again.” Lei Yin’s words made everyone’s heart tightened up again. Everyone present has profound impression toward that previous storm.

That guy was unwilling to be persuaded, and at once retorted: “You are just speculating, we will probably encounter a search and rescue helicopter in a moment.”

Lei Yin took one look at his eyes, and then said: “If we don’t? I just looked at the cabin and cannot find something to eat. Now we don’t know how far away this ship being drifted away from its course by the storm, and if in two or three days no one come to save us, then all of us will die of hunger here. Can you guarantee that within two days someone will come to save us?”

That guy was suddenly speechless.

“Then do you have another way?” Another male student asked.

“Just recently, I saw a few birds flying in the sky, which mean we should not be too far away from a land. My idea is to put all people into two groups, and then row the boat on both sides until the land is found.”

“What did you say? You want us to row the boat to find a land? Do you think we are still in the Columbus era?” One of the students burst out laughing.

Lei Yin looked at him coldly, and after a while said: “Do you think this is funny? Frankly speaking, dying is not my habit, it is fine if you don’t agree with this programme, even if it is only me who would go to take the lifeboat out to do this thing. If there’s a helicopter coming to rescue here, then please tell the Pilot the way to my position.”

The boy who first asked Lei Yin a question then said: “I think this proposal is feasible. Instead of just waiting for the rescue, it is better to think of a way to save ourselves while waiting for the rescue.”

After thinking about it for a moment, the others also thought that this proposal was much better than just blindly waiting for the rescue, so finally most people agreed to this suggestion.

Since the proposal was introduced by Lei Yin, all the students agreed that he would be the one who performed the groupings.

Lei Yin did not refuse, he arranged for the men and women to mix and divided them into two groups, to ensure that both groups maintained an average physical strength. Due to the lack of oars, he asked the students to disassembled the cabinet or the benches and used them as oars.

Although some people were reluctant to follow the plan, under the pressure of everyone's eyes, they finally unwillingly followed suit. Fortunately, this ship was a small-medium passenger ship and there was nothing heavy inside. Therefore, the plan was not too laborious. But because most people have no experience in rowing a boat, not only their contribution were just average, the rowing rhythm was also wrong, making the hull, every now and then, turned in circles.

Seeing this, Lei Yin had to teach them the correct posture and rhythm. Not until his mouth started to parch did these students finally rowed the boat forward slowly, rather than in circles.

The entire passenger on the ship were more than forty people. After rowing for nearly four hours, these students who were tired and hot, and never did a hard job began to complain more and more.

"I quit. What's not good about honestly waiting for the rescue? Why do we have to suffer like this?" The first student who opposed this plan loudly shouted and stopped paddling.

In his lead, several students also followed suit to stop paddling.

"I do not want to paddle anymore, let us just wait for the rescue."

"That's right, I'm really tired."

"I think a helicopter will soon come to rescue us. Let's just wait

here for that.”

“I am thirsty, I want something to drink.”

“Didn’t you just drink? Now there’s only one bucket of water remain, just endure it.”

Because there was a specially designed cargo hold filled with drinking water in the ship, for a moment people did not lack fresh water. But because the weather was too hot and the people were many, the drinking water was consumed pretty quickly.

Watching more and more people complaining and stopped paddling, the student who supported this plan asked Lei Yin: “Student Masashi, what now?”

Lei Yin looked at those students who complained, and sneered: “There is a saying that said ‘refuse to be convinced until one is faced with grim reality.’ Wait until they begin to fear and they will naturally continue to paddle.

“Will this be okay?”

“It might be. Hopefully, they still have the strength to continue rowing,” Lei Yin said dismissively.

He has thought of taking Amy on a lifeboat and went forward to find a land, but until it was the last moment, he did not want to do it. Because this was a sea and not a lake. If they encountered big

waves, their small lifeboat could have been easily overturned.

But he did not hold out much hope for these people, if by tomorrow afternoon the situation remained unchanged, he will take the chance to try his plan.

He went to the cabin and saw Amy was sitting with the elderly US couple with her in the middle.

Throughout the entire ship, in addition to the unconscious Captain, the only one who did not need to row was Amy as well as the elderly couple.

Hearing the familiar footsteps, she immediately turned toward the cabin door and, sure enough, saw that the one who came in was exactly Lei Yin.

“Lei.” Amy excitedly jumped out of the chair and immediately ran to him.

Somehow, seeing her happy smiling face, Lei Yin’s mood improved a lot.

After bending over to pick her up, he said: “Has the Captain uncle wake up yet?”

The little girl shook her head.

Not wanting to worry her, he looked at her face and said: “Don’t worry, we will certainly come back safely, I promise.”

Amy seriously nodded, and then hugged his neck and said: “As long as Lei is by my side, Amy fear nothing.”

Because everyone was just having breakfast before they went out, in the evening, their young stomachs were starting to torment the young college students.

“Hey, anybody has something to eat? It’s okay even if it just crust.

“Yeah, we are all classmates, if someone has something, don’t hide it.”

Toward these meaningless sound, most people chose to remain silent. They did not have the mood to speak.

After the shouts from these several people, someone finally told them to shut up.

Because there were so many people, and the deck can only accommodate some of them, many people went to the cabin to sleep to get through that unbearable hunger.

By nine o’clock in the evening, the cabin was silent.

The next morning, while sleeping, the students heard a quarrel sound.

“You idiot, what have you done?”

“Why are you being so loud? We just use the water to clean ourselves.”

“Why don’t you use seawater, why used this water? Don’t you know that this water is used for drinking?”

“You are crazy, the seawater is so dirty, how could you let us use it? Moreover, we only use a little bit, what are you so anxious about? I didn’t know you are such a mean person.”

“What little bit, you took the whole one-third of it.”

When the students woke up, they saw a guy loudly quarreled with two girls.

The reason for their argument was simple. Because there were a few girls who used the drinking water to clean their mouth and face. If this was normal, nobody would bother to give their opinion, but their ship cannot be started, and their only drinking water was only a barrel. Seeing that barrel of water was now less than half full, not only that boy, even the other boys cannot help but loudly scold the two girls.

Being yelled at, the two girls burst into tears, “We are not the

only one who use this, the other people also use this. But after they used this they immediately ran away.”

In the afternoon, a boy could not resist his burning sense of hunger, and kicked the side of a chair.

“When are those guys going to come? If this continues, we will all die here.”

The other students looked at his meaningless action with glazed eyes. This was the first time they found out that hunger was such a terrible thing.

At this time, the student who supported Lei Yin’s plan stood up and said out loud: “At this time, are you still going to stubbornly wait for the rescue? What if no one come tomorrow or the day after tomorrow, how are we going to do?”

Hearing his words, everyone’s hearts sank. Even one day has been so hard for them, so how could they dare to imagine what would happen in the next two or three days.

“You shut up, at this time, you are still saying such unlucky words.” The first student who opposed the plan stood up and glared at him.

Standing on the deck outside, Lei Yin came in after hearing the brawl, “I ask you again, are you still going to insist on waiting here until you die?”

“Bast*rd, what did you say?” That student screamed in anger.

“The one who need to shut up is you, if you dare to say a word, I’ll throw you into the sea at once.” Lei Yin’s face revealed a dangerous look.

Seeing the look in his eyes, that student immediately remembered that the man was the ‘human weapon.’ He suddenly did not dare to make a sound anymore. ^If^you^read^this^change the site@

Lei Yin then loudly said toward those students who were looking at him: “You have no choice in this, if you do not want to die, then do as I say. Now pick up your paddle and go to the deck.”

Tortured by hunger, the students absolutely have no opinion and involuntarily stood up.

Looking at these students feebly paddling the boat, the thought of whipping them with a whip flashed through his mind.

But when he looked at the waves, he suddenly thought of something, and cannot help but curse himself, How could I forget such a simple thing.

He went back to the cabin and tore down all the curtains on the windows. Then he went to the deck to find a roll of rope, and then he brought those curtains, as well as the rope to climb to the top of

the cabin.

Lei Yin's action caught the attention of the other people, all of whom looked at him in bewilderment.

“What does he want to do?”

“I don't know.”

After a while, when Lei Yin put those curtains together with a thin wire to make a large thick cloth and then tied it to the flagpole, the students finally came to understand that he was making a sail.

After a few minutes, when Lei Yin unfurled this slightly coarse sail and tied it with a rope, he pointed to a few boys and said: “You guys come here.”

Those boys looked at each other and then went to the cabin to climb the ladder.

“I will teach you how to adjust the angle of the sail according to the wind direction. From now on, the few of us will take turn to guard here.” With that, regardless of whether they agreed with him, he began to teach them.

These few guys knew that with this simple sail, as long as they well adjust the angle, they could accelerate the speed of the ship. Compared with the mechanicalness of rowing the boat, this work

was much easier and more fun. Therefore, very quickly, they were eager to learn.

Soon, the evening came. A more intense hunger than yesterday invaded their stomachs. Many people did not have the strength to stand up. All of them were limply lying or sitting in a chair.

“Lei, you need to eat at least a little bit, okay?” At this time, on the top of the cabin, the little girl was sitting on Lei Yin’s lap while putting a piece of bread in his mouth.

These few slices of bread were all that he found when he searched for food in the bridge. They were probably the Captain’s yesterday breakfast. At the time, he did not tell anyone and just quietly put it away to save it for Amy.

“No, you have it.” Lei Yin smiled and patted her face.

The little girl’s eyes were red, “But you did not eat anything at all these two days. Eat something, please?”

“I really am not hungry.”

“If you don’t eat, I won’t eat either.”

“If you don’t behave, I am going to spank you, be obedient and eat this.”

Seeing his unhappy look, the little girl had to obediently put that piece of bread into her mouth. But as she ate, she continued to shed tears.

Seeing her cried like this, Lei Yin felt slightly guilty, so he used his hand to gently stroke her hair, "I'm sorry, kid."

The little girl looked at him with her teary eyes and then plunged into his chest, crying.

After a while, she said while sobbing in tears: "I am afraid something will happen to you, Lei."

"Don't worry, I'll be fine. I will definitely take you back safely." Lei Yin smiled as he used his sleeve to wipe away her tears

The little girl blankly stared at his smile.

At noon on the third day, looking at the endless sea, the look of despair appeared in many people's eyes.

At this time, most people have been so hungry that they could barely stand up, much less rowing the boat.

In any case, their boat was now driven by the sail, and rowing or not would make no difference. So Lei Yin did not bother them. Since yesterday afternoon, he has been observing the debris floating on the sea.

His guess was correct, they were now sailing toward a certain island. Because the floating debris was increasing in number, the boat must not be too far off from the island.

Around ten o'clock at night, the sleeping people were awakened by a strong impact, some even fell down from the benches.

The students who slept on the deck then heard the constant scream from inside the cabin, and then they saw many students ran up from the bottom.

“Wake up, the cabin is flooded.”

“What, the cabin is flooded? How could this happen?”

“Yeah, it is flooded, now what should we do?”

“We need to quickly plug the hole.”

“The hole is too big, it can't be plugged.”

Lei Yin ran from the top of the cabin down to the deck and said in a loud voice: “The ship may have hit a reef. Everyone need to immediately put on the life jackets, we have to abandon the ship. There is an island in front of us, we can land there.”

“What, there is an island in front of us? Are you serious?” One of

the students excitedly called out.

“Less wordy and quickly put on the life jackets.” With that, he picked up a life jacket and put it on Amy, then he put one for himself.

Because there were only two lifeboats, Lei Yin just let the unconscious Captain, the foreign old couple, and the female students to board. Some of the boys wanted to squeeze themselves to the boat but were fought back by Lei Yin.

Due to the size of the lifeboat that was too small, in the end, there were three female students who could not board the lifeboat and had to wear the life jacket and grabbed the edge of the lifeboat to float on the sea like the other male students.

Lei Yin was the last one to enter the seawater, but after swimming for two or three meters, he suddenly swam back to the submerged ferry.

After a while, he took a round thing from the ship and swam back.

When he swam next to the two lifeboats, he shouted, “Kid, where are you?”

Soon, he heard Amy’s delicate voice and he immediately swam to her lifeboat.

Seeing Amy was sitting on the lifeboat, he was secretly relieved.

Whether the people on the lifeboat or the people floating on the surface, all of them can faintly see the huge shadow under the starlight in front of them.

“Hey, it’s really an island, we are saved.” Many people could not help but cheer.

Relative to these students’ jubilant mood, Lei Yin did not feel particularly happy. Because he saw the island was dark, without any light at all. In other words, this island was likely to be an uninhabited island.

In any case, this is still much better than drifting around aimlessly at the sea. Lei Yin thought in his heart.

Chapter 180 - Searching For People

Fortunately, this was Summer so even if they were soaked in seawater they did not feel too cold. With the help of the life jackets, the boy who clung to the edge of the lifeboats continued to swim forward.

After swimming for nearly two hours, everyone finally swam to the shore.

After coming ashore, strenuous exercise coupled with days of hunger made most of the students to lie prostrated on the beach. Although their bodies were so weary, their hearts were filled with joy.

Although this was Summer, if you wore wet clothes and the wind blew you, it would be very easy for you to catch a cold. If this island was really an uninhabited island, and if they fell ill, they would surely die. Therefore, for humanitarian reason, Lei Yin said loudly: "If you don't want to die, quickly take off your wet clothes. Anybody who has a lighter immediately looks for some dry twigs and light a fire." Then he took off his clothes, of course, that included his pants.

Seeing their dead-snake appearance, Lei Yin was too lazy to say anything again. He pulled Amy toward the wooded area on the beach and found some branches in varied size, as well as hay, in the vicinity. He then dug a shallow pit under a leeward area. After that, he stacked up the smallest twigs crisscrossed on that pit, and then took out the lighter, which he fetch from the bridge, and ignited the hay in the middle of the twigs. Not long after that, a

small fire lit up.

After telling Amy to add some branches there once in awhile, he returned to the beach.

Seeing those people were still lying there motionless like corpses, his anger flared up. He went to the middle of them and loudly said: “You all listen carefully, this island is likely to be an uninhabited island. If you catch a cold here, there is simply no medicine that could save you.”

“What did you say, you say this is a deserted island?” One of the boys forced himself to stand up.

The others were scared and also stood up.

“Very likely, because so far, I did not see any lights.”

Hearing his words, the other people immediately looked at their surrounding and saw it was indeed dark all around them.

“Is this island really uninhabited? Then what should we do now?” A girl uncontrollably called out.

“Maybe the people on the island have all been asleep, so all the lights were off. There should not be a deserted island.” Someone said in self-consolation.

Toward these talking human, Lei Yin continued to loudly say: “I say again, if you do not want to die, then immediately find some dry twigs to generate fire. And the put your wet clothes off.”

These students finally began to stand up and each one of them went to find some branches.

Lei Yin cursed in his heart, miserable wretch.

After a while, after collecting some dry twigs, people began to huddle in several circles to light a fire. But because most of them have no experience in lighting a fire in the wild, many people asked Lei Yin to light their fire.

Lei Yin felt angry and funny at the same time when he saw some of the students wanted to use thick wood to contain the firewood. But he was too lazy to say anything, in any case, the branches were many, so he let them made a mess for themselves.

At this time, one can see the difference between the young and the old. Although both were hungry for three days, driven by the instinct to survive, the young people have recovered a lot of their energy, while the elderly couple's spirit seemed to be very poor, seemingly ready to faint at any moment.

At this time, Amy went over to Lei Yin and whispered a few words to him.

After hearing her words, he frowned, shook his head, and then

said: “You can’t.”

“Lei, please, they look very pitiful.” The little girl worriedly looked at him.

Watching her pleading eyes, Lei Yin thought for a moment, and finally, helplessly nodded. The little girl immediately embraced him in delight.

Taking the elderly couple deep into the woods, Amy took out a plastic bag from her body and gave it to them. Seeing the inside of the bag filled with two pieces of white bread, the two elderly were stunned.

The nearby Lei Yin explained the source of the bread. Then he somewhat apologetically told them: “Maybe you think I am selfish, but I definitely cannot let Amy go hungry. These last two slices of bread are given to you by Amy herself, I hope you can keep it a secret.” After that, he put the bag into their hands and then dragged the little girl out of the woods.

The elderly couple watched them left.

“Kid, not afraid of starving?”

“Not afraid, because Lei will think of a way.”

“Well, it’s your choice, don’t cry when you feel hungry.”

The little girl innocently smiled.

If they were still on the boat, no matter how determined Amy begged him, Lei Yin would never agree to do so. But since they were already on an island, he had a considerable confidence in finding enough food, even if this island was a deserted uninhabited island.

To survive in the wild, the first thing to do was to prevent yourself from getting sick. In order not to be bitten by virulent mosquitos, Lei Yin entered the woods alone. After a while, he took back some kind of plant leave similar to tobacco leaves. He then crushed those leaves on a stone, after that, he took the resulting juice and spread it on Amy's bare skin.

"Lei, what is this stuff?" The little girl strangely looked at his action.

"The juices from these plants can prevent mosquito bites. Although the smell is not that good, but you need to tolerate it, okay?"

The little girl gently nodded. \$Support the translator by reading this on the translator's website\$

To see her being so obedient like this, Lei Yin dotingly kissed her small face.

After spreading the juice on himself, he took the rest of the leaves to those students. “Crush these leaves and applied the juice on your skin. This can prevent mosquito bites.” He spoke these redundant words at every circle of students. As to whether they used it or not, that was not his problem.

For Lei Yin’s ‘meddlesome action,’ many students were still grateful to him. After all, if not because of him, they may have starved to death on the boat.

However, some of the students resented him. In their thoughts, the reason for why they became like this was because they listened to his call to look out for a land. In the end, it made their boat hit the reef so that they were forced to reach this deserted island. Perhaps in a day or two, if they patiently waited on the boat, someone will come to rescue them, instead of being in a miserable condition like now. In their eyes, the reason for why they fell into this plight was because the guy was simply the god of plague.

Lei Yin completely ignored those who showed that kind of look. After distributing the mosquito repellent plants, he returned to his original position.

After a while, that elderly couple came back. When they saw Lei Yin, they smiled to him. Lei Yin secretly relieved and smiled back at them. In addition to them, no one knew the meaning of the smile.

The next morning, the students proposed to go out to look for whether there were other people on this island. For this proposal, Lei Yin held an opposing view.

“What do you want?” A boy who has kept his resentment for a long time loudly shouted at him.

“Even if you want to go out, you need to first find food and drinking water. In your present physical condition, how far do you think you can go?” Thinking that they shared the same University as him, Lei Yin did not want them to foolishly throw away their lives.

A student walked out to stand at the front. “That is why we need to go out to look for other people. If there are other people on this island, we can be saved. I don’t want to stay here and die. I support Murai’s proposition.”

Lei Yin indifferently shrugged his shoulders, “Do as you like, in any case, I already told you.”

“Let’s go.” That lead students stared at him and then walked toward the woods.

Influenced by the herd mentality, after hesitating, the other students started to follow him. After these people left, Lei Yin said to the only boy left: “Why don’t you go with them?” The boy in front of him was the student who supported his self-help proposal on the boat.

The boy looked at him and said: “I think what you said is correct.”

Lei Yin smiled, “There is no absolutely right decision in this world, perhaps they will really find other people. Forget it, don’t mention this. What is your name?”

“My name is Akira Hiroshi, first year Law Department student in Teikyo University.” The boy with slightly pale face introduced himself.

“My name is Gennai Masashi. Good, we have been introduced. Now let’s go find food and water.”

“But where do we find food and fresh water?” Akira Hiroshi revealed an awkward expression.

Lei Yin laughed, “Looks like you rarely play on the beach. Relative to the food, I’m more worried about the fresh water.”

Coming together with him to the shallow water, Lei Yin casually picked up a white scallop from the water and handed to him, “See this, this is a food, and they are many. Not only scallop, there are also oysters, clams, and snails. As long as they are not poisonous, you can eat any kind of shellfish or snails. Of course, if you can catch a fish, that would be better.” Akira Hiroshi began to understand what he meant, but he quickly remembered another question, “But this thing is still alive, we can’t eat this kind of thing raw can we?”

“I will not stop you if you want to eat this thing raw, I am just going to put it above the campfire until it is cooked and then eat

it.”

Akira Hiroshi remembered the light from the campfire this morning, and then saw Lei Yin’s playful eyes. He can’t help but feel a bit idiot.

“The food problem is solved, the only thing to consider is how to get enough clean water. How about this, you are responsible for picking up enough shellfish for five people to eat, and I will go look for the water.”

“Very well.”

If this was only him and Amy, he could just use the seawater evaporation to get enough fresh water for two people to drink. But now, with the elderly couple, as well as Akira Hiroshi, they have a total of five people in their group. Using this method to collect fresh water was too slow, so he had to find other sources of fresh water. This place is an island and not a desert, so looking for water should not be too difficult.

After shaking Amy to wake her up, he said to her: “Kid, I am going to find you fresh water to drink. Wait here until I come back. Remember, don’t walk away, understand?”.

The little girl hurriedly pulled his hand, “Lei, I want to go with you.”

“No, there are a lot of bugs in the woods, aren’t you afraid?”

Hearing that there were many bugs in the woods, the little girl showed a frightened eye.

Lei Yin continued to say: “You wait here for me, I will be back soon. And remember, don’t walk away, you know?”

“Em.” The little girl finally nodded her head.

After gently patting her little face, Lei Yin picked up the pot-like signal receiver that he took down from the boat. This receiver was mounted on the top of the roof to receive TV signals. He swam back to the boat last night just to take this stuff. He was going to use this to get fresh water from seawater evaporation, but now it will just be used as a water container.

On the beach, there were a lot of shellfish. Three hours later, Akira Hiroshi has picked a lot of scallops, as well as oysters, enough for six or seven people to eat. He took off his t-shirt and put all of these together in it, and then he brought them to Lei Yin’s campfire.

When he arrived, he did not see Lei Yin. There were only the cute little girl and the foreign old couple.

After putting that pile of shellfish near the campfire, he said to the little girl: “Your brother is not back yet?”

Seeing the little girl did not answer him, he remembered that she

could not understand Japanese.

He turned around to see that old couple and saw that they were unblinkingly looked at the shellfish on the ground.

Akira Hiroshi knew that they were hungry. Actually, so was he. Therefore, he immediately put those shellfish by the campfire one by one to roast them.

After ten minutes, under the high temperature, the scallops and oysters slowly opened their mouth, revealing the meat that was beginning to cooked. Akira Hiroshi constantly heard the calling from his hungry stomach. The elderly couple had the same expression as him, all wanted to immediately pick them up to eat.

A few minutes later, Akira Hiroshi thought that they should be ready. Therefore, picked up the biggest scallop with a twig, and then, after it slightly cooled, he delicately took the meat inside using a fine tree branch and hastily put it into his mouth.

Seeing his expression, the elderly couple also bluntly copy his method and picked up the meat to put it into their mouths.

Seeing the three people eating while constantly fanning with their hands to cool down the meat, the little girl could not help but laugh.

Akira Hiroshi handed her the already opened scallop. But the little shook her head and did not accept it.

Thinking that she has yet to know how to eat, Akira Hiroshi personally demonstrated it again to her. He then offered another scallop for her, but the little girl still shook her head.

The expression of the first year law student was confused. Seeing her expression, he knew that she understood how to eat the scallop, but why won't she eat?

That foreign woman also found it strange. So she asked her why.

Hearing the answer from Amy, the woman was very touched. It turned out that the little girl wanted to wait for Lei Yin to come back and then eat it together with him.

Looking at her serious little face, the woman's motherhood instinct could not help but flare up, so she tightly hugged her in her bosom.

Seeing the foreign woman burst into tears as she hugged the little girl, Akira Hiroshi was confused. Do all foreigners act strangely like this?

But there was no time for him to think because his stomach has called up again, so he immediately picked up an oyster and continued to eat.

At this moment, a burst of messy footsteps suddenly came from the woods.

Someone's coming? Akira Hiroshi immediately stood up and tried to see.

Not long after, he saw a lot of people came out of the woods. They were the students who went to look for people.

Compared to when they started in the morning, they seemed more frail and weak. Some of them even leaned against the tree trunk, struggling to walk.

Seeing their look, Akira Hiroshi knew that they failed to find what they were looking for. However, when they left in the morning till now, the time was not that long. Therefore, they should not go too far. The reason for why they came this early probably because they cannot endure the heat.

The several boys walking in the front saw Akira Hiroshi, but soon, all their eyes were focused on the foreign couple who were eating scallops.

“Bastard, you're actually eating in hiding here.” The lead student loudly roared and ran toward them.

Several other equally hungry boys also rushed over to them.

Seeing the boys' angry appearance, Akira Hiroshi knew that they have misunderstood. Therefore, he loudly said: “Don't misunderstand, these scallops....” But before he finished speaking,

a student punched him to the ground.

“Beast, you actually kept these foods for yourself.” Influenced by hunger, the lead student, who has lost his ability to think, grabbed Akira Hiroshi by the neck.

At this time, several other male students rushed to the campfire to grab those scallops.

But because the shells were very hot, they immediately screamed and threw those scallops on the ground.

By this time, the people coming out from the woods also knew that there were foods at the front, therefore, they all came running.

For a time, this group of students from a well-known University in Tokyo was like a mob, constantly pushed and shoved each other to pick the shellfish from the ground. The scene suddenly became extremely confusing.

In this ‘constant pushing’ situation, that elderly foreign couple was shoved to the ground.

Amy had never seen such a crazy scene, and cried in fear.

But by this time, no one noticed the crying little girl, everyone has been caught in a crazy battle for food.

Chapter 181 - In The Middle Of The Crowd

In Kagoshima City, just South of the port there was a five-story building, the total area of the whole floor of the building was 500 hectares. This was building was the Japan Maritime Safety Administration Office in Kagoshima.

At this time, in an office on the third floor, several men were watching a detailed annotation of Kagoshima map and the surrounding waters as they discussed.

Suddenly, a knocking sound came from the door, then the person who knocked opened the door and came in. That person was a 30-something-year-old man, behind him, there was a middle-aged man in a gray suit.

“Hello, Deputy Head Yama.” A man, who recognized him as the Deputy Director of Tokyo Maritime Safety Administration Yama Akirajiro, immediately bowed toward him. The other two men also followed suit.

“I came over as soon as I received the news, what is the current situation, Department Head Eguchi?” After his young secretary closed the door, the Deputy Director of Maritime Safety Administration immediately asked.

The one called Department Head Eguchi immediately replied: “Because of the seasonal storms, there are a total of three ferries that went missing. A total of 124 tourists, including 98 Teikyo University students. The rest are common tourists. After days of

continuous search and rescue operation, we have found two ferries, and a total of 83 people. Besides the more than ten people who have complications because of lack of food, the other conditions are not life-threatening. And now, all of them are in the hospital for treatment and recuperation. As for the other ferry, we are stepping up our search and rescue effort, and we should be able to find them soon.”

Hearing his reports, the Deputy Director frowned, “How could there be such a serious situation? There is actually more than ten tourists who have complications because of lack of food.”

“It’s like this. From the three missing ferries, one went to Yakushima Island, and the other two went to Amami Archipelago. Those students who have complications were in the boat to Amami. The reason for this to happen was because the distant to Amami is twice as far as the distant to Yakushima. Since the distant is far, the search and rescue area is too large, and it took us almost three days to find that missing ferry. Moreover, strictly speaking, we found that ship near the International waters.”

“What? The storm actually took them near the International waters?”

“Yes, the intensity, as well as the duration of the storm is very rare, second only to the one happened a decade ago. We also have a headache due to the oversized search and rescue area.”

“No matter what, you must find the last boat as soon as possible. We absolutely cannot let any visitors to have any accident. The top is very concerned about this thing, so they especially send me to

understand the situation. I will immediately notify the Administration. I will ask them to send additional search and rescue helicopters over here. In addition, before you find that last ferry, try not to let the journalists know about it.”

“I understand.”

Unexpectedly the situation is so severe, the Deputy Director’s eyelids could not help jump a bit.

Kagoshima and Okinawa are Japan’s well-known seaside tourists attraction. Although every year there will be multiple small Maritime Issues, they were generally not too serious. But this time, unexpectedly, many students and tourists were missing, moreover, they still cannot find some of them. If there were students who died in accidents because of this, the impact would be very large. He almost can see the scene where those reporters, who always took things out of context, standing in front of the Maritime Safety Administration Office to question why they did not notify the individual shipowners about the storm before it happened.

After walking to the Hotel room, Take Asasei failed to find Kazumi.

Where is she? Take Asasei made a call to her phone. But she found out that her phone was next to the headboard.

Did she go there? Thinking of this, Take Asasei immediately went out of the room.

Arriving at the beach on the Eastern front of the Hotel, sure enough, she saw the familiar figure of her friend quietly sitting on the beach.

She did not know if it was because of a mood swing, but she felt that the back of her friend showed some kind of ‘wrecked with guilt’ sign.

After quietly went behind her, Take Asasei suddenly covered her friend’s eyes with her hands.

“Guess who I am?”

She first thought that her friend would scold her for doing such a childish action as usual, but after a while, the girl whose eyes were covered by her hands was still motionless.

When she was surprised by this, suddenly, she felt her palms were wet.

Take Asasei did not dare to look at her tears stained palms and immediately went to the front to see her friend’s face, and then said something silly: “Are you crying?”

“No, I was careless and the sand went into my eyes.” Kazumi lowered her head and whispered a sentence.

Hearing her voice which was very different than usual, Take Asasei did not dare to ask anymore. This was the first time she saw

her usually calm and rational friend behave like this.

Gently sitting next to her, Take Asasei did not know anything good to say to her.

After a while, she managed to say some words, “Kazumi, rest assured, your brother will come back safely.”

Kazumi stayed silent, just resting her face above her knees.

Take Asasei thought that the atmosphere was a bit too depressing, but she did not know how to comfort her friend other than to sit there with her.

After what seemed like a long time, Kazumi suddenly whispered a sentence, “I really regretted it now.”

She seemed to be talking to herself, so Take Asasei was not even sure if that sentence was directed at her or not. But she still asked, “What do you regret about?”

Kazumi slowly raised her head, “If at the time I insisted on being together, maybe I can still be with my brother, and we can face everything that happened together. Unlike now, where I can only wait for his news.”

“Kazumi, don’t think too much, your brother will be fine.” Take Asasei saw that her friend’s face was still stained with tears.

“Two days ago, I thought so too. But now, it’s already the fifth day. I’ve been telling myself that my brother will come back, but as time past, I could not help indulge myself in flights of fancy.”

Take Asasei had never seen this kind of expression from Kazumi. Her eyes were red as she tightly hugged her, and then said aloud: “It’s gonna be alright! Kazumi’s brother will come back safely. He is so fierce, so nothing will happen to him.”

Kazumi silently sobbed.

Someone has studied that, other than muscle ratio, women’s visceral function, and autonomic nerves were actually much better than men.

This was not just empty talk. When the Titanic sank in 1912, it was the world’s greatest tragedy. At the time, apart from those women lucky enough to board the lifeboats, there were other women who were forced to float on the ice-cold sea along with the men because the lifeboats were already full. In this same harsh condition, the total female survivors were actually much higher than men.

And in the face of a hopeless situation, although they will generally scream or faint, very few women would go crazy on the spot.

The food frenzy continued. But only to those who were eligible to participate in the competition. Namely, the male students who

have considerable strength. Those female students could not even get close. At this time, with their splendid autonomic nerves and visceral function, these female students realized that what these boys were doing were utter madness and pure nonsense. But they did not have any way to prevent it. Or it should be said, they simply did not have the strength to stop them.

At this time, many of the female students saw the little girl and the foreign couple were trapped within the crowd.

The old couple has been pushed to the ground and was trying to get up. But the little girl was in danger of being trampled at any time.

Although a few girls wanted to take her out of there, the boys' insane acts made them completely lose their courage to take a step.

They can almost imagine the horrible situation when the lovable little girl was trampled to the ground. Regarding this unpreventable tragedy, many of the girls have shut their eyes, too afraid to take a look.

Just then, suddenly a figure from outside rushed into the crowd at an incredible speed.

Soon, this new addition quickly disappeared within the crowd.

But a second later, the chaotic scene dramatically changed.

No one knew what happened. The girls outside can only see a student flew out from a crowd.

But that boy flew out instead of jumped out. These two words have absolutely different meaning. The biggest difference was the difference in height. Because when a person suddenly rose to almost three meters high from the ground and then fell down, it would be inappropriate to use the word jump.

Before that boy fell, another person flew out from the crowd the same way as him. And then the third one, the fourth one.

In addition to the one who flew up, there were also boys who were thrown out of the crowd at a horizontal angle. And some of them were thrown down to the ground like dominoes.

As the number of people in the crowd continued to decrease, the female students can clearly see the original source of this dramatic change. At this time, the students who were still skeptical about the content of their college magazine suddenly realized that the term “Human Weapon” was not a bit too outlandish.

At this moment, in the middle of the crowd, Lei Yin met no resistance. As long as there were people who stood in front of him, he kept throwing them out or knocking them down, without exception. This was the first time he used his internal force against ordinary people since he rebirthed in this body. If not for his heart who can always maintain a calm mind and somewhat reserved his action, all those people he encountered would absolutely meet a certain death.

Although he did not severely injure them, whenever he went, there will always be a loud scream followed by the sound of something fell on the ground.

After throwing out the last student away, he immediately hugged the crying little girl in his bosom.

After walking away from the crowd, he immediately checked the little girl's body, to see if there were any trace of being stepped on.

“Kid, do you feel any pain?” After a brief second check, Lei Yin nervously looked at her.

“Lei!” The little girl threw herself into his arms, crying out loud.

Hearing nothing abnormal in her voice, he somewhat confirmed that she was ok. So to make even more sure, he immediately sent his true qi to unceasingly move in her body to check for her breath and pulse. After discovering that there was no blocked artery, he finally felt relieved.

Looking at those students who fell on the ground struggling to stand up, and their pair of frightened eyes, he felt a strong and intense desire to commit murder. He did not dare to imagine what would Amy's young body turn into if she was trampled by those boys. If something really happens to this kid, not one of you can escape here alive.

When he walked to the front of those students while hugging the little girl, those students immediately took a step back involuntarily.

Lei Yin coldly looked at them, and then sneered, “Truly a touching scene.”

“Why did you do that?” A student loosened his cringe and said.

“This is a very good question.” Lei Yin said and walked toward him.

“What, what do you want?” That student immediately took a step back. But he soon began to regret not to immediately run, because as soon as Lei Yin arrived in front of him, he immediately kicked his crotch.

That boy immediately screamed and bent over, kneeling on the ground. Although his posture appeared as if he was kowtowing toward Lei Yin, his hands’ position was not quite right.

“What exactly do you want?” The lead student loudly shouted.

“I truly regretted it now, I shouldn’t have saved so many trashes like you.”

“You....” That student flew into a rage, but when he thought about how scary this guy was, he did not dare to rush forward.

At this time, the face of Akira Hiroshi came in front of Lei Yin and said, “Student Gennai, please stop this quarrel. Previously, they were just too hungry, so they became like this. Please stop arguing with them, okay?”

After coldly looking at those students one more time, Lei Yin and Amy went back to that elderly foreign couple.

If not for Amy who continued to cling to him, Lei Yin really wanted to flatten all of them.

Seeing the danger went away, other people slowly relaxed, but no one dared to pick up those scattered oysters and scallops on the ground.

Chapter 182 - Jungle

A student who walked at the front turned his head to look at the one who walked at the very end. The guy was holding a little girl in his arms. The lead student then said: “I never thought that guy would come with us, I thought he is going to stick himself on the beach, not wanting to enter the woods.”

“Humph, do you think he is not afraid to die?”

After filling their stomach with enough shellfish that they picked on the beach, those students wanted to continue their search for people who lived on the island. But surprisingly, that “human weapon” actually followed them.

After walking for about an hour in the sweltering subtropical jungle, along with the gradual loss of sweat, the students began to feel an uncomfortable sore in their throat like it was burnt. Although they have solved the food problem, since they abandoned the ship and landed on the island a day before, so far, none of them drank any water.

After walking for another ten minutes, they encountered three different paths separated by trees.

“Student Murai, which way should we take now?” A student asked the lead student.

That lead student paused for a moment, and then said: “Let’s go to the left, that way seems very good.”

The other students have a similar idea, they didn't want to poke those itchy and painful weeds which almost as high as a human.

When they walked tens of meters to the left, they suddenly found out that there were fewer students behind them. When they looked back, they saw that all of those students actually walked to the right.

“What are those idiots doing?” Seeing this, Murai could not help but loudly scold.

After running over to pull the last student who picked the right path, he asked, “Why don't you follow behind us? If you accidentally get lost, I will not be there to save you.”

“I just go along with other people.”

Those several students turned their head and saw that the man who walked at the very front turned out to be that guy. Followed behind him were all of the female students, as well as the male students who followed under the influence of the herd mentality.

Seeing all of those students actually followed that guy instead of believing in him, Murai felt an intense anger burst in his heart.

“Student Murai, now what?”

“Why don’t we follow them? If only there are several of us, there will be some risk in it.

Murai sneered and said: “If you want to go then go, go lick that guy’s ass.”

“Student Murai, your words went too far, it does not matter who lead us, as long as we can leave this d*mned place.”

“Then how do you know that guy will definitely take you out of here?”

“That is why we need to go and see. Not talking to you, you need to keep up.” Seeing the other students walking farther and farther away, that student did not want to tarry any longer and immediately ran to catch up with them.

Under his influence, several other students looked at the grim-faced Murai and then followed after that guy.

Looking at the empty path as they have all walked away, Murai felt somewhat at a loss. If someone asked him to go alone, he would be a bit timid, in case he encountered a beast, that would be too dangerous. After a psychological struggle, he decided that life was more important than face. After biting his teeth, he rushed forward to catch up with them while constantly swore at the guy in his heart.

On the other hand, looking at the increasing number of students

who followed him, Lei Yin frowned.

He stopped and then said to the several students near him, “Stop following me, I am not going to look for people.”

Those students revealed a surprised look, “Where are you going then?”

Lei Yin squinted at them, “I am going to look for water.”

In subtropical woods, finding water was actually not that difficult. As long as you can find ants, snails, mosquitoes, and other insects who inhabit a humid place, you generally can find shallow groundwater in the vicinity.

In fact, on the beach near the woods, Lei Yin has found such a shallow groundwater.

In that kind of place, as long as you dug a half meter deep into the ground, you can see the fresh water. But what he found there was water with green color which tasted sweet and tart. Thus, he concluded that this water contained copper salts, which if drunk, will damage vocal cord, causing one to be mute. So he needed to go deep into the woods to find other sources of water.

“You’re not looking for people who live on this island?”

“Before I completely solve the water and food issue, I don’t have the time to do that.”

“Student Gennai, can we go with you?” A female student timidly asked.

“Suit yourself.” As long as they did not offend him, he cannot just force them to go away, so he ignored them and continued to move forward with Amy in his arms.

The other students soon followed behind him. After the big and small things that have happened in recent days, the students knew that the one who really knew how to survive in the wild was this man, so they unconsciously wanted to be with him.

Watching him walking forward and, from time to time, marking the three trunks, the nearby Akira Hiroshi asked: “Student Gennai, do you really think no one lives on this island?”

“To tell the truth, so far, I never encountered any artificial objects or seen any light.”

“Is this island is really deserted?”

“I can only say it is possible.”

After another half an hour, they suddenly heard a few screams from the girls in the rear.

“Student Gennai, let’s go see what happens in the back.”

Lei Yin helplessly shook his head, walking with these kids is really asking for trouble.

Just as he started to walk, a girl saw him and immediately took his hand and then loudly said: “Student Gennai, please do something, there are some disgusting insects climbing on their feet but they couldn’t throw them off.”

Looking at the loudly screaming girls as they tried to get rid of something, Lei Yin immediately knew what happened to them.

He walked over to one of the jumping in place college girls who wanted to throw off that thing from her foot. “Stop crying, this is just a horseleech. It’s not poisonous, and it merely sucks your blood.”

“Please take it away, okay? I beg you....” That girl tightly pulled his clothes and loudly cried.

Lei Yin felt his t-shirt was soon about to be ripped by her, “Stand still and do not move.”

“I won’t move, please hurry, I beg you.” That girl immediately stopped moving.

After putting the little girl on the ground, he pulled out a lighter from his bosom, and then picked some hay from the ground. After burning the hay he put out the fire and put the smoking hay below

the horseleech to smoke it. Not long after that, that horseleech, all of a sudden, fell to the ground and rolled up.

“It’s okay now, the horseleech has been dropped off.”

Seeing that disgusting bug was gone, that girl soon stopped crying. And then, looking at him with a face full of gratitude, she said: “Thank you, student Gennai.”

Lei Yin looked at the several other students who were faced with similar situation. He then turned his head to those male students: “You go help them, but remember not to pull them too hard. You can only use the smoke to smoke them, otherwise, their head will stubbornly bite the wound.”

This was such a rare opportunity for those male students to be a hero so they immediately rushed toward those beautiful victims. But those female students only wanted to borrow their lighters to personally rid the horseleech by themselves, so the male students can only oblige.

People who have never been to a jungle would never know the danger within it.

There were many deadly dangers in the jungle. The most common dangers were poisonous snakes, mosquitoes with malaria parasites, fleas which caused typhoid and rash, poisonous spiders, fierce wild animals, dangerous insects and so forth. Besides the animals, there were also toxic plants, as well as the deathtrap of the bottomless swamp.

For those beasts and so on, those were easy to handle. What one need to fear the most was the thing that appeared save only to belatedly find that it was actually lethal. That was the reason Lei Yin previously did not want to bring Amy to the woods with him.

But because he has learned a lesson from this mistake, now he had to bring her with him to go find drinkable water. The elderly foreign couple was responsible for keeping the smoke on the sand as a distress signal.

The more they entered deep into the jungle, the more they encountered insects, plants, and other animals. Some were harmless, and some were intolerable. So then, almost every few steps they will hear a scream from a student.

For these continuous fake cries, Lei Yin ignored them all. And continued to move forward.

At this time, the already tired Akira Hiroshi could not help but say to him: “Student Gennai, let’s take a break okay?”

“No, we must find the clean water today, and we also need to get back, we have no extra time.” Lei Yin said without turning his head.

Hearing this, he knew that it was useless to raise this matter again. Therefore, Akira Hiroshi had to continue to walk.

The students who thought they could take a break were suddenly dismayed, but they also did not dare not to keep up.

Murai at the back purposely raised his voice and said: “Why do we have to go with this guy? Why should we listen to him? He take us to nowhere.”

Murai originally thought the other students would chime in to echo his resentment. But after a while, no one said anything, nobody listened to him. In the end, he had to unwillingly follow them. Although he really did not want to go, he would never dare to wander alone in this barren wilderness.

After walking for a while, Lei Yin stopped and stood still.

“Student Gennai, what happens?” Akira Hiroshi walked up and asked him.

Lei Yin suddenly put out a hand, “Don’t talk.”

Akira Hiroshi looked at him in bewilderment.

After a moment, Lei Yin suddenly put down the little girl and then put his ear on the ground. After carefully listening for a moment, he picked Amy up and walked to the left.

Seeing him began to walk again, the other people immediately followed.

“Student Gennai, exactly what happened?” Akira Hiroshi noticed that his expression was a bit different than before.

Lei Yin said while walking: “If I heard it right, we may have found the water.”

“Is it true?” Akira Hiroshi looked at him with a face full of surprised.

Lei Yin did not answer him but continued to increase his walking speed.

After another ten minutes, the students found that the terrain began to elevate like walking up a mountain.

When Lei Yin brushed aside the man-high weeds, he finally saw that so-called water source. It was in an area of a dozen meters in size. Water vapor constantly moved up from that hot springs. As for the sound of gurgling water he just heard on the ground, they came from the boiling water rising up from below unceasingly.

Lei Yin quickly ran to the hot spring to scoop up some water into his mouth to taste it. Fortunately, although there was some sulfur in it, they should be able to drink it.

At this time, those students behind him also saw this hot spring. All of them could not believe their eyes. After determining that they were not in a dream, they all loudly shouted out and called

out or hugged the nearby person, like a group of just released refugees.

“Student Gennai, can we drink this water?” After Lei Yin finished testing the quality of the water, Akira Hiroshi nervously asked right away.

“It should be fine.”

“Great.” Akira Hiroshi immediately cheered loudly.

After pulling out the large leaves that he used to prevent mosquitos bites from Amy’s body, Lei Yin scooped up some water from the hot spring to wipe off some stains from the little girl’s face.

“Lei, this is like a dream.” Amy naively said.

Lei Yin could not help but smile, “This is actually a bit extravagant. From drifting on the sea, to survive on a deserted island, and finally a trip to a hot spring after having a seafood meal. It seems like this trip is too great.”

The little girl did not really understand his words, staring at him with her big and round eyes.

As long as there was a hot spring, another hot spring should be in the vicinity. After drinking enough water, Lei Yin took the little girl to find a hot spring with moderate temperature so that they

can bathe. After many consecutive days without ever taking a bath, even if he was not a clean freak, he also felt uncomfortable with his body, not to mention the tender skin of Amy. But the little girl was very obedient and sensible, so all this time, she never made a fuss about it.

After walking around to check their surroundings, he actually found a hot spring with medium temperature. The reason why he knew this was not because he felt it with his hand, but because he saw there were several monkeys soaking in that hot spring.

Because there were so many hot springs in Japan, human beings were not the only one who liked to soak in it, the local monkeys also liked to enjoy the hot spring, which was regarded as Japan's special characteristic.

Although expelling the local monkeys from comfortably soaking in the hot spring seemed a bit unreasonable, in order not to scare Amy, Lei Yin can only scare them away.

Although some of the girls aged 11 or 12 have already well-developed, obviously Amy was not among them. Because of this, Lei Yin can still take a bath together with this kid.

When Lei Yin tried to help the little girl wash her hair, she very happily splashed him with water.

Seeing the two red marks on her arms which caused by the grass cut, a burst of heartache could not help appear in Lei Yin's heart. Since she was a child, this should be the first time for Amy to

endure this suffering. Apart from having to endure the hunger and thirst, she almost being trampled on by those students, as well as risking her life to move into the Jungle. Perhaps she did not feel any of these dangers, but Lei Yin was fully aware.

Thinking about this, he guiltily stroked her little face.

The little girl unblinkingly looked at him.

Chapter 183 - Pit

When the students returned to the beach, the sun was already down.

Seeing the ever-rising white smoke from a large bonfire, Lei Yin knew that it should not be long before someone found them here. Now that the food and water problem have been solved, those students who previously wanted to explore the island to look for other people, after experiencing the danger in the jungle, thought that it was not that important.

In the evening, Lei Yin sat quietly beside the campfire talking to the foreign couple.

After their hunger and thirst have been satiated, the spirit of that old couple became much better. For this experience – a simple trip turned into survival on a deserted island – that old man seemed to be more optimistic than his wife. He told Lei Yin that, in his younger days, he wanted to go for an adventure. But when he was young, that was an unrealistic fantasy. Unexpectedly, when he retired, he really has such an opportunity.

In recent days, Lei Yin has shown various survival skills. Seeing this, that old man was very interested, so he constantly asked him questions. Therefore, without any better option, Lei Yin had to speak one minute and be quiet the next toward him. This was the first time he found that the old man could actually be so long-winded.

Suddenly he felt someone was approaching him. Lei Yin turned his head to look. He saw that several female students were walking hesitantly toward him.

When they came in front of him, one of the girls timidly said: “Student, student Gennai, do you have a second?”

“What’s the matter?”

“It’s like this, today it was all thanks to your help, so we want to say our gratitude, thank you.”

“It’s nothing, it only took a very slight effort from me.” Lei Yin dismissively said.

After looking at the meaningful glance of her companions, she said: “We have something to ask you, but we don’t know if it would inconvenience you?”

Lei Yin looked down at the sleeping little girl who used his thigh as her pillow and then said to them: “Sit down and then you can talk about it. However, please keep it down.”

These several female students sat down immediately.

“What do you want to ask?”

“Student Gennai, can you tell us where to take a bath? We

have....” That girl was somewhat embarrassed to say it.

Today, those female students saw Lei Yin and Amy came back looking very clean and knew they have found a hot spring that can be used to bath. But at the time, they did not dare to ask him. However, as time dragged on, they finally could not resist.

Hearing her request, Lei Yin could not help but smile, “If you are not afraid to take another trip to the jungle, I can take you to the hot spring tomorrow.”

“Do you mean it?” That several female students suddenly exclaimed.

Seeing their desire to take a bath far greater than their fear of jungle, Lei Yin has nothing to say.

After a few words of dialogue, those female students found that this “human weapon” was not as scary as they imagined, at least for now.

After getting his affirmative answer, those female students did not immediately leave. The girl who was responsible for the “diplomacy” asked him again: “Student Gennai, how long do you think before we can be found?”

“As long as everyone is willing to cooperate, it should be no more than two days.”

“By tomorrow, you will know it.” Lei Yin said and then reached out his hand to add some dry twig to the fire.

Seeing him unwilling to say it, those girls did not dare to ask.

After a while, she said to him: “Student Gennai, this time, we are lucky to have you, otherwise, we can’t imagine what would this turn out.”

Looking up at them, Lei Yin revealed a meaningful smile, “Did it ever occur to you, perhaps if we stay on board the ship for another day or two, an aircraft will find and rescue us, instead of living like a primitive human in this deserted island? Do you really think you should be grateful to me?”

They can’t believe he would say that. The girl was speechless. The other girls also showed a stunned expression.

After thinking for a moment, the girl said: “I don’t know if the situation would occur just like what student Gennai said, but at least we are all still alive. Therefore, I am really grateful to you.”

Lei Yin smiled, “If your heart really thinks so, then I accept your gratitude. What date is it now?”

The girl immediately pulled out her phone – which was unable to receive signal and she only used it as a timer to save the battery – and then replied: “Today is 15th.”

“So, for other people, we have been missing for seven days.” Lei Yin muttered to himself. He remembered about Kazumi, How is she now? And then Naoko, I hope she doesn’t know about this, otherwise, I don’t know how that fool will worry about me.

The next day, Lei Yin asked the students to make as many bonfires as possible. And then tell them to burn some wet branches with some grass on it. By doing so, they will produce a lot of smoke. Yesterday, he also thought that elderly foreign couple this method to send a distress signal.

Now with these many people, as long as each two of them lit a fire to send the distress signal this way, they would soon attract the attention of an aircraft or a ship.

These students found that this method was very good, so they divided themselves and built these fires.

Lei Yin and Akira Hiroshi went to the hot springs to bring back fresh water. The female students who wanted to take a bath also followed him as per their agreement last night.

Like yesterday, the jungle was still unbearably hot. But since they did not walk aimlessly, Akira Hiroshi and those several female students subjectively felt it was more relaxed than yesterday.

After walking for about half an hour, Lei Yin suddenly heard a strange voice. He immediately stopped, held Amy on his bosom with one of his hand, and carefully lifted the branch with his other hand.

Seeing him like this, the other people can't help but feel very nervous.

Following that way, Lei Yin soon saw the source of that sound. In this jungle, there was actually a two-meter deep earth pit that was wide at the mouth but narrow at the bottom. Inside that pit, a gray hare constantly wanted to jump out, but because it was too high, so far, it was unable to.

“Hey, it's a little bunny.” Amy very happily called out.

Seeing the hare, Lei Yin also felt very happy. But he had a different idea than the naive one from the little girl. The reason he was glad was because he was tired of eating those shellfish. This was a rarely found wild animal.

“Kid, wait here. Remember, do not move.” Seeing the hare has the possibility to jump out of the pit, he immediately put the girl down, and then looked for something to hold him as he went down. Actually, he did not need to hold onto something because this was just a two-meter deep pit. But since there were outsiders nearby, he did not want to reveal his power.

After a while, he tore off a vine from a tree. After determining that it was fairly solid, he immediately went back to the pit and tied the vine to a nearby tree. He then pulled the vine and slowly climbed down the pit.

The girls did not think that he would take such a risk just for a

hare, so within their wishful thinking, they were deeply moved. Akira Hiroshi, who knew that Lei Yin definitely has no such compassion, quickly understood his intention and could not help but force out a wry smile.

After arriving at the bottom of the pit, Lei Yin grabbed that hare by the ears. After pulling it up a bit with his hand, he estimated that the hare was at least two pound in weight. He could not help but smile.

After catching the hare, he can only use one of his hand to climb up. Although using one hand to climb up was difficult for an average people, for Lei Yin, it was not a problem at all.

But just before he grabbed the vine to climb up to the surface, he suddenly heard a metallic sound when he stepped on something on the ground.

His mind moved. He immediately stepped his foot into that place again. Sure enough, once again he heard that same metallic sound.

Lei Yin's curiosity was piqued. He immediately picked up a twig to dig in that spot.

After digging just a little, he felt that twig touched something that was very hard.

After digging again next to that spot, the result was still the same, just a little dig and he can no longer dig anymore deeper.

He quickly dug the surrounding soil. After digging a pit nearly the size of a basketball, he finally found the thing hidden underneath. It turned out to be a piece of metal plate. That metal piece was very large. He probed the other areas by sticking the twig into the soil and found out that the whole pit was actually on top of that metal.

When he was about to continue to examine the area, Akira Hiroshi's voice came from the top: "Student Gennai, are you okay?"

Looking up at those students on top, Lei Yin thought for a moment before he answered: "I am all right, I am going up now."

He then nonchalantly covered that exposed metal plate with the soil using his feet. After that, he quickly grabbed the tree vine and climbed out from that earth pit.

Seeing him finally came up, the several girls were suddenly relieved. Just now they saw him stayed in that pit for a long time and thought that something happened to him.

"Little bunny, little bunny." Seeing Lei Yin carried the hare with his hand, the little girl very excitedly rushed over.

Those girls could not help but also come.

"Grab it by the ears, be careful not to let it escape." To see the

little girl wanted to hold it, he gave it to her. He planned on making this hare as tonight's dinner for her.

The little girl immediately grabbed the hare's ear gingerly. And then she put it on her arms. The several other girls also bent down to touch the hare on her bosom.

After glancing at them, Lei Yin turned his head to look at the pit and then pondered.

"Student Gennai, what happened?" Seeing his thoughtful expression, Akira Hiroshi asked.

"It's nothing, let's go."

"Good."

Chapter 184 - Digging

After returning to the beach, when Akira Hiroshi and those girls saw the ever-rising thick white smoke from everywhere, they thought the scene was quite spectacular, just like a big forest fire. Seeing this obvious distress signal, even they knew that someone would soon find them here, and became even more impressed by Lei Yin who taught this method to them.

Looking at the position of the Sun, Lei Yin determined that it should be around 2 or 3 o'clock in the afternoon. Feeling a little hungry, he walked back to the huge campfire where the elderly couple resided.

Seeing the little girl was carrying a hare, the old couple looked somewhat surprised.

“This is....”

“Tonight’s dinner, we just caught it when we fetched the water.”

As soon as he finished, the little girl immediately looked up and asked: “Lei, do you want to eat the little bunny?”

Lei Yin suddenly felt bad, for a moment he forgot the little girl was beside him, listening to what he said.

Seeing her nervous face as she looked at him, Lei Yin immediately smiled: “Just kidding.”

He thought in his mind, As long as I roast that rabbit after Amy fell asleep, I can always say it run away tomorrow.

“Are you really not going to eat the rabbit?”

Seeing the little girl’s full-of-skeptic face as she looked at him, Lei Yin remembered her ability to sense other people’s emotions. If I really eat the hare, maybe she will notice my lie to her.

After weighing this thing a bit in his heart, he finally decided to let it go. There was no need to make her sad just so that he can have a wild game as a meal.

He smiled a bit and patted her little face, “I promise you not to eat it.”

Seeing him finally agreed to her, the little girl very happily jumped onto his arms while still holding the hare.

The old couple cheerfully laughed at them.

After eating, Lei Yin, like usual, went on to check the Captain that they kept lying under the shade.

Looking at the increasingly sunken cheeks of the middle-aged Captain, he knew that if the man did not get the treatment in a couple of days, the man will die for sure. These days, he asked the

old couple to crumble some scallop meat and mixed it with water and then dripped it into his mouth. Although this can temporarily suspend his life, after all, this was not a long-term solution.

But he can only do that much. In the end, live or die, it will depend on the Captain's good fortune.

Looking around at those students sitting under the shade enjoying the cool air, as well as taking their turn to add the twigs to their fire, Lei Yin suddenly wanted to go to that place to take a look.

Thinking about this, he gently shook the sleeping Amy leaning on his shoulder.

"Lei, what happens?" The little girl rubbed her eyes to look at him.

"Kid, there is something I have to look at the jungle. Wait here until I come back, ok?" Lei Yin initially did not want to shake her, but he was afraid she would be scared when she woke up and can not find him, so he had to tell her clearly.

"I want to go with you." Her eyes revealed a hopeful look.

Lei Yin thought for a moment and finally nodded. After all, the jungle is not that dangerous in the day, unlike in the night. Moreover, he still remembered the previous memory, where he left her on the beach and almost being stepped on, deep in his

mind.

After giving the hare for the several female students to look at, he casually said an excuse to Akira Hiroshi and then brought Amy to the jungle.

Because he was the only one to go, he quickly arrived at the location of the pit.

After looking at their surrounding environment, he told Amy not to be afraid and then jumped down directly to the pit.

He then put her on the ground near the edge of the pit and said, "Stay here and don't wander around, okay?"

The little girl nodded her head.

Lei Yin walked to the middle of the pit to find his previous digging site. And then he continued to expand the digging area outward from the center by using the tree branch to dig the dirt.

After digging for more than ten minutes, the metal plate has been exposed to nearly two meters in area. Lei Yin carefully looked at the exposed part and found this piece of metal was unlike ordinary iron because, although its surface was covered with damp soil, it has not undergone oxidation process. In contrast, its gray-black surface appeared to look dull-gloss, somewhat like an alloy.

Lei Yin did not really know how big this thing was and has to

poke the ground in the nearby area with the branch. Finally, he found that the entire bottom of the pit was on top of that thing. In other words, he still can't find out how big this thing was just by sizing up the pit. In addition to the bottom of the pit, he still needed to dig the area around the pit in order to know it. But, according to his estimation, the size of this thing should be huge.

Unless he mobilized all the students to dig the area, otherwise, there was no way for him to dig such a large area in such a short time by himself. But his intuition told him that this thing must be something he did not want other people to know. Therefore, finally, Lei Yin decided to leave it alone for the time being, at least, until he left the island.

After he buried the part he just dug, he picked up the little girl who was squatting on the ground playing with the ants by teasing them because of bored. He then said to her: "Kid, don't tell anyone about this place, okay?"

"Ok." The little girl did not seem to understand but she still nodded her head.

Lei Yin smiled with satisfaction, and then walked to the edge of the pit and jumped. His whole body suddenly jumped out of that earth pit.

When he walked back, he made some not so easily recognizable mark at the bottom of the tree trunks.

As he arrived at the beach, Lei Yin saw from afar the students, for

some unknown reason, were huddled up in one group.

As he walked past them, a female student saw him and immediately ran toward him and then said: “Student Gennai, it’s bad, student Akiyama and student Haruko seem ill, can you go and look at them?”

Sure enough, someone finally fell sick. After all, there were more than 40 students here; After walking in the jungle, plus spending the evening on the beach, the sea breeze could easily make some of them catch a cold. Because of this, Lei Yin was not too surprised when he was told that some people have fallen ill.

When he went to the front of the crowd, he saw Narimura Haruko was sitting under the shade, hugging her knees tightly as her whole body trembled.

Seeing this, Lei Yin frowned, “When did she become like this?”

The girl who called him immediately replied: “This morning she said she was under the weather. We thought she just catches a cold, so we didn’t care too much, and just called her to sit near the fire to keep her warm. But when she woke up after sleeping the whole afternoon, she became like this. Student Akiyama is also like this, Not only he said that he felt cold, he also has diarrhea. He just went over there in the woods and haven’t come back yet. Student Gennai, do they catch colds?”

Lei Yin did not speak, just looking at the pale face of Narimura Haruko who seemed to be struggling hard.

After a while, he walked over, squatted down in front of her and looked at her eyes, and then lightly said: "Shall I give you a hand?"

Seeing him suddenly appeared in front of her, Narimura Haruko's face revealed a surprised look. Upon hearing his voice, she hesitated.

From the subjective point of view, she did not want to owe this man. But the constant pain on her body made her instinctively wanted to get help from this man.

After going through all sorts of experience these last few days, she and the other students were surprised by this man's unending survival skills. Unknowingly, she subconsciously believed that as long as she stayed together with this man, she must be able to safely get out of here. And now, she knew that the only person who can save her was this man.

Seeing the glazed indifference in his eyes, Narimura Haruko knew perfectly well that if she said no, this uncompromising guy will no longer bother with her.

Some people said that young people do not fear death. Actually, that was just a misconception. The truth was, they just felt that death was too far away from them. But at this moment, Narimura Haruko truly felt the threat of death. Because she knew there were no drugs on this deserted island, so any illness that she got would indeed be very dangerous.

At last, after a fierce mental struggle, she finally lowered her eyes and nodded her head.

Without further ado, Lei Yin immediately put his hand on her forehead to check her temperature.

Without knowing why, when his hand touched her forehead, Narimura Haruko suddenly felt her heart beating fast.

After checking her body temperature, Lei Yin asked: “Tell me about your symptoms.”

“I, I feel very cold, and pain in all over my body, especially in my head. Am I having a fever?”

“What about your throat?”

“It’s also very painful.”

Lei Yin opened her eyelid to take a look, and then carefully looked at her exposed arms and legs.

After checking them, he frowned again.

“When I gave you the mosquito repeller plant that day, you did not use it, right?”

Afraid to look at him in the eye, Narimura Haruko whispered: “Yes, I thought it smelled so bad so I didn’t want to apply it on my skin.” Although this was indeed one of the reasons, the main reason was, she did not want to owe him, so she did not use it.

“And that Akiyama also did not use it?”

“I don’t know, maybe not.” Actually, she knew Akiyama will definitely not use it because he hated this man. Therefore, he would absolutely refuse his gift.

“Really? Then congratulation to both of you. If I’m not mistaken, what you have is dengue fever, an infectious disease spread by Aedes mosquito (It can also spread Zika).

“What is dengue fever?” A female girl uncontrollably cried.

Lei Yin stood up to face the other students and said, “Dengue fever is very infectious. If you don’t want to have it, I suggest you to immediately take those mosquito repellent plants, pound them into juice, and applied them on your skin.” After that, he hugged Amy back toward their fire pit.

Hearing his words, the other students immediately ran away like a swarm to find those mosquito repellent plants which they have no idea where they put them. Some of the students even fought each other to compete for these medicinal plants. Fortunately, those herbs were plenty enough, so they did not cause the mass chaos like when they fought for food last time.

Seeing not only the female students but even those male students who usually stayed close to her also tried to escape as far away as possible from her, Narimura Haruko felt immense panic and worry.

Finally, she could not help but quietly lowered her head between her knees and wept. She did not know why she cried, perhaps because she finally saw the real human nature, or maybe she felt she might really die on this deserted island.

She did not know how long she cried when she heard a male voice in front of her, “Put these herbs on your forehead. It can help you reduce your fever.”

She lifted her head to look. It turned out to be that guy. This time, his hand was holding some kind of strange plant.

“Didn’t you just walk away, why did you come back?” Narimura Haruko looked at him as she wiped her tears.

Lei Yin dryly said: “Just consider this as me meddling in other people’s business.”

Hearing his words, Narimura Haruko suddenly has the urge to cry.

Chapter 185 - Cooling

The student named Akiyama who suffered diarrhea, as well as systemic bone pain, finally came from the woods. After Lei Yin examined him, it was determined that he also got the dengue fever.

In order to prevent more people getting infected, Lei Yin lit a plant that he previously found, and placed them on their surrounding, smoking them with an unpleasant smell. Although the smell of the smoke was a bit pungent, it has a better repellent effect than just simply applying the plant juice on the skin. In this critical life and death moment, as long as no one is infected, no one would bother with the unpleasant smell. Thus, the rest of the students started to look for this plant and emulate his method on their respective firepit.

As for Narimura Haruko and Akiyama, after applying the herbs, as well as cold compressing them, their high fever was temporarily suppressed.

At 12 o'clock in the evening, a student came over and told Lei Yin that those two students were having high fevers again.

At their resting spot, Lei Yin saw both were in a semi-comatose state. After carefully checking each of them, he found that parts of the lymph-node in Narimura Haruko's body was swollen. As for the student named Akiyama, his situation was slightly better than her, but there were rashes on the soles of his feet and palms. The reason why their conditions appeared to be different were mainly because of the time difference in the onset of their symptoms, as well as their physical strength.

“Student Gennai, what happens now?” Seeing their struggling appearance, Akira Hiroshi who came together with him somewhat cannot bear it.

Lei Yin thought for a moment, “Continue to mix those herbs with water and apply it to their forehead to reduce their temperature, I’m going out.”

After he went outside, he used a thick branch to put the pot-like signal receiver on top of a fire pit. Afterward, he put some plants he found in the day in that signal receiver, as well as some hot spring water, and then boiled them.

After a while, not long after the water was boiled, he separated the water from the herbs and then brought back the water.

“Let them each drink half of this.” Lei Yin said to a girl.

That girl immediately took the “pot” and brought it to them.

“Student Gennai, what is that thing?” Akira Hiroshi looked at the green water inside the pot and asked.

As he watched the girl made the two people drink the water, Lei Yin answered: “Those are some heat-clearing and detoxifying herbs, though this will not necessarily cure them, it should be able to temporarily control the development of their disease. Actually, those herbs should be dried first before using it, but because this is

a critical time, we can only let them drink it, even though it will likely cause diarrhea. This is better than just letting them die in the open because we have no other way to treat them.”

Although he didn't quite understand what “detoxifying” mean, Akira Hiroshi has some kind of inexplicable trust toward him, so he did not ask again.

Under dizziness, Akira Hiroshi slowly woke up.

She did not know how long she slept and just remembered that she seemed to have a very long dream. Although the content of the dream was already forgotten by her, she knew that it was definitely not a good dream. She even thought that living on a deserted island was part of her dream. But when she opened her eyes and saw the top of the tall trees, she knew that was not a dream.

She wanted to sit up like usual, but found out her body lacked any strength, as if her body was not her own. She then remembered about the high fever that she suffered last night.

Why does this happen to me? Why would an ordinary trip become like this? If this thing did not happen, she may, as usual, enjoyed the service of her servants at her home, rather than, as of now, dying of illness on this deserted island. All along, she thought that she already understood those male students who always tried to flatter her, but now, she knew that was untrue. Here, no one cared about her identity, no one cared about her life and death, all of them would only care about how to survive until they can leave this place.

At this time, she suddenly heard the constant friction sound of the footsteps that were coming toward her. Then she saw him again.

The little girl was playing with the hare next to him. Then, Lei Yin put his hand on Narimura Haruko's forehead to check her temperature. After checking her temperature, he opened her eyelid for another check.

"Am I going to die?" After he finished checking her, Narimura Haruko faintly asked a sentence.

"The fever has gone. Get up and eat something." Lei Yin helped her up, sat her on a tree trunk, and then walked away.

After a while, he walked back with the signal receiver in his hand. A female student followed behind him.

"Feed her this broth." Lei Yin handed that "pot" of soup to the female student. The female student immediately took the "pot" from his hand and went in front of Narimura Haruko.

"Thank, thank you."

"No problem." That female student said with a smile.

If this was a normal situation, Narimura Haruko would have

never noticed such an ordinary-looking girl like her. But now, in her eyes, the girl's smiling face seemed glowing.

Lei Yin walked to the nearby Akiyama who was lying on the ground, crouched down, and started to check his conditions.

It seems like the herbs are working. Both of their fevers are gone.

"Since last night, did he ever woke up?" Lei Yin asked the girl who was holding the pot to feed Narimura Haruko.

"He woke up around 2 o'clock last night, said he was thirsty. After I gave him some water to drink, he slept again and never woke up."

"No diarrhea?"

"No."

"You've worked hard last night. You certainly had not had a good sleep since last night. Why don't you take a break, let me take care of them." Toward this sole Medical Department student, Lei Yin's attitude was surprisingly good. Because when she took care of these two people, she went all out.

"I am alright. I am very happy that I am able to help student Gennai."

“In the future, you are going to be a good doctor.”

“Thank you.” That female student smiled.

Watching their conversation, Narimura Haruko’s eyes revealed a complex look.

“Excuse me, what time is it now?” After Lei Yin walked away from there, Narimura Haruko suddenly asked the female student.

“About two o’clock in the afternoon. Hopefully, someone will notice the distress signal today.” That female student said, somewhat in distress.

After eating enough broth, Narimura Haruko felt her strength has restored a bit. She could not help but gratefully said: “Thank you for taking care of me.”

That female student smiled and shook her head, “Actually, student Gennai is the one who saved the two of you. He looked for the herbs to reduce your fever, I am just helping him on the side. Moreover, without him, all of us would’ve died on this deserted island.

Narimura Haruko was silent.

At this time, the two of them suddenly heard a burst of noisy sound coming from the outside, which then mingled with the continuous scream.

As the noise and the yell continued to get louder, the female student who was with Narimura Haruko loudly said to her that she was going to take a look.

After a while, that girl ran back.

Seeing her whole face was filled with a pleasant surprise, Narimura Haruko was somewhat stunned.

“There is a helicopter flying over here. We are saved.”

Hearing this sentence, Narimura Haruko felt the whole blood in her body suddenly rushed to the top of her head.

“Is this true?” She suddenly forced herself to stand up.

“It is. I saw it myself. There really is a helicopter.” The eyes of that female students were completely filled with tears.

Narimura Haruko slowly sat on the ground. And then she covered her face with her hands as she burst into tears.

Knowing that those students who have been missing for several days have all been found, the leadership of Teikyo University and the Officials of the Tokyo Maritime Safety Administration finally felt relieved.

At the main gate of a large public Hospital in Kagoshima City, many reporters were piling around to get an interview. Because this was the Hospital where the authority put those students and tourists who were on the missing ferries.

At the Hotel where the Teikyo University students were staying, outside the third floor's balcony, two people, a young man, and a young woman were talking.

“Where is Amy?”

“She completed the general check up in the hospital this morning, and now she is sleeping in my room?”

“I know my brother would come back safely.” Kazumi walked up to him and then gently leaned on his arm.

“I am sorry, for letting you worry about me.”

“I am okay as long as brother is safe and well.” Kazumi looked up to him and smiled.

But then, she suddenly remembered something. She stared right into his eyes, “Brother, I have something to ask you.”

“About Naoko?”

“Yes.” Since several days ago, when Naoko took a plane from

Tokyo to come here especially to inquire about the news of her elder brother, Kazumi immediately knew that the relationship between Naoko and her brother was not as simple as the relationship between student and teacher.

“As you might have guessed it, she is your future sister in law.” Lei Yin said straight-facedly.

Although she already guessed it, hearing his answer, her heart could not help but turn cold.

“When did this happen?”

“Two years ago. I didn’t mean to deceive you. It’s just Naoko has not sufficiently prepared to meet you yet. Even Maeda only knew it by chance.”

Kazumi did not say anything. She was still digesting the impact of this news.

After a while, she said: “Then what about Rumi? You should have known of her feelings toward you.”

Lei Yin slowly leaned on the balcony railing, “She is just a child. I know she has some degree of goodwill toward me. But girls at her age having a certain degree of goodwill toward the opposite sex is very common. I have yet to tell her this in order not to affect her study. After all, she is trying hard to prepare for the college entrance exams so I don’t want her to be distracted by other

things.”

Kazumi nervously took his hand and said: “Brother, that’s not true. The feelings that Rumi has for you is definitely not as simple as you think, she is....” Before she finished her words, Lei Yin’s phone suddenly rang.

Lei Yin pulled out his phone, looked at the caller’s name, and immediately pressed the answer key.

“I am on the balcony outside your room. I am going back there, wait for me at the room.”

After he put his phone back in his pocket, Lei Yin apologetically said to Kazumi: “Naoko woke up, I need to go back.”

Kazumi has to nod her head.

When Lei Yin walked into her room, “Lei!” When she saw him, Naoko immediately rushed into his arms, her two arms firmly clung onto him.

“Don’t be afraid, I’m right here.” Lei Yin put his arms around her and gently comforted her with a soothing voice.

“I, I just had a nightmare, dreaming that you were washed away by the sea, but when I woke up and can’t see you....” Naoko tearfully looked at him.

After he picked her up and then sat on the bed, Lei Yin put her in his arms and gently stroke her back, “Don’t worry, I have come back.”

Smelling the familiar breath of her lover, Naoko began to slowly calm down.

“Lei, I am really scared. I was afraid you won’t come back again.” Naoko said, as she gently sobbed. A few days ago, she saw the news that there were visitors missing at Kagoshima because of a storm. At the time, she had a very bad feeling about it. So she hurried to call his cellphone, but couldn’t get through. By the time she came here by plane, she knew from his sister that his ship was caught in a storm and went missing. In the past few days, she and Kazumi have to helplessly endure the torment of burning-like worry. With each passing day, her heart would become a little bit desperate. This sense of never ending despair almost made her suffer a relapse.

At this time, all words were powerless. Lei Yin can only hold her in his arms tightly, letting her feel his presence.

After she recovered, Lei Yin kissed her left cheek, “Hungry? Come with me to eat, ok?”

“Em.” Naoko gently complied near his ear.

After several people sat down, two people, Takeda and Take Asasei were unblinkingly staring at Naoko. Lei Yin had to cough a

bit loudly before the two people reacted and quickly pretended to look at the menu, and did not dare to look up again.

He turned to the flushed Naoko and said: “What do you want to eat?”

“Why don’t you choose them for me.” Naoko did not dare to raise her head and whispered.

“What about the steak? The black beef here is quite famous.”

“Ok.” Naoko docilely replied.

Lei Yin also said to the nearby Amy: “Kid, what do you want to eat? You also want the steak?”

The little girl immediately opened her mouth: “I don’t want it.”

“Don’t you usually like to eat the beef steak here? Forget it, what about their package meal?”

“Ok.” Taking advantage while Lei Yin did not pay attention, the little girl gave Naoko, who was sitting on the other side of Lei Yin, a single glare.

After finishing their respective meal, Takeda said: “Masashi, did your family know that you were missing?”

“Yes, I heard from Kazumi that after they heard the news yesterday, they immediately phoned her and planned to take the plane today. But on the phone, I managed to urge them not to come.”

“I never thought this kind of thing could really happen. Fortunately, you came back safely, Kazumi was worried about your safety for days.” Take Asasei said.

“Gee, being drifted on the sea and cast away on a deserted island, that’s a really exciting adventure. If I knew this would happen, I would have sat with you on that boat.” Takeda’s face revealed a regret expression.

“If this happens to you, you wouldn’t be smiling like that. Where is Yoshikawa?”

“He went to the hospital to accompany Haruko. But I heard that Haruko’s family came to visit her, so that guy probably won’t have a chance to visit her in her ward.”

When they were talking, the other students who were also eating at the dining hall, couldn’t help but, once in awhile, involuntarily focus their eyes on Naoko.

The sudden appearance of this beautiful woman around the “human weapon” made all of them jealous. Compared to her, Narimura Haruko and Mingyu Jizi were obviously significantly inferior.

The gap between them was not just in the appearance or figure, the main thing was, they lacked her indescribable mature feminine character and style.

The skin on her exposed hands and feet were smooth and creamy, and her face was stunningly beautiful. Her elegant and reserved temperament was completely incompatible with her hot body. Coupled with her gentle and supple attitude, all of them firmly attracted everyone's attention.

Not only the boys who were envy and jealous of Lei Yin, even the pretty girls felt a great sense of threat.

“Who is that woman?” Mingyu Jizi who sat at a distance asked.

“I don't know, maybe she is Gennai Masashi's sister.” A boy sitting next to her answered.

“Humph, a seductress.” Mingyu Jizi said with a sneer.

Chapter 186 - Teacher And Student

“So, she is your brother’s teacher?” Take Asasei uncontrollably called out.

Kazumi nodded her head, “Strictly speaking, she used to be. Then for some unknown reason, she left the school.”

Take Asasei’s eyes were green with envy, “So it’s actually a love between a teacher and a student? Oh, that’s so romantic.”

Kazumi has a bitter facial expression, “I don’t think there’s anything romantic in that. I just recently heard this from my brother, that guy actually hid this thing from me for two years, really hateful.”

Seeing her like this, Take Asasei couldn’t help but laugh, “Seeing your most important elder brother being robbed away, your heart must be really uncomfortable, right?”

After giving her a glare, Kazumi no longer bothered her.

Take Asasei lightly smiled as she teased Amy, who was wearing a life-saving jacket, by splashing her with water.

After a while, Take Asasei suddenly said: “What a pity that we have to return tomorrow. The truth is, I still want to play for several more days.”

“Don’t be too greedy. Don’t forget, there are still a lot of students who are being treated by the doctors. We are very lucky that we are able to safely go back.”

“Of course, luckily we took the right ship. I still can’t believe such a thing could happen. Fortunately, little Amy is alright.” Take Asasei kissed the little girl’s face once again.

When the two of them were still talking, the door suddenly opened, and a woman dressed in a bathrobe and hair coiled on top came in.

“Hey Kazumi, look, your brother’s girlfriend is here.” Take Asasei saw at a glance that the one who came was Naoko.

Although there were many girls soaking in the onsen, as soon as Naoko saw Kazumi and the other two, she immediately went toward them.

Watching the approaching Naoko, right now, Kazumi has a very complicated mood.

Although the woman was really beautiful, because she was also a female like her, Kazumi only saw her as an ordinary teacher. But she still can’t accept the fact that this woman would be her future sister in law. This sudden identity changed was too difficult for her to adapt.

In Kazumi’s mind, the only girl who is acceptable for her to be

with her brother was Rumi. And she was still considering whether she should tell this new situation to that simple girl.

“Hello.” Naoko smiled at the edge of the onsen to greet them.

“Hello, miss Hase.” Take Asasei immediately replied.

But Amy, who was in Take Asasei’s arms, flattened her mouth and turned her head to the side, refusing to look at her.

“Hello, Kazumi.” Naoko greeted her lover’s younger sister.

“Hello.”

Seeing the indifferent look from Kazumi, Naoko’s look became somewhat dejected. But she immediately cheered her spirit up, and said with a smile: “How long have you been here?”

Take Asasei said: “Not too long.”

“That’s good because I’m not used to dipping in the onsen alone. It would be nice if someone can accompany me to talk.” Naoko said, took off her bathrobe, and slowly walked toward the onsen.

Seeing her body, Take Asasei could not help but blush. This was the first time she saw a mature female body who could make her heart beat fast. Even though she was also a woman, her heartbeat couldn’t help but accelerate.

After wiping her face with a wet bathrobe, Naoko asked: “I heard from Masashi that you guys are going back to Tokyo tomorrow, is that right?”

Take Asasei replied: “Yes, in addition to the other students who need to be hospitalized in the hospital for further observation, the rest of the students are going to go back. But this can’t be helped because we have to find the missing students for several days. We have passed our schedule here for several days. Originally, before the start of our boat tour, the plan is for us to go back a week ago. We were just talking about this, I really want to stay and play for a few more days here.”

Naoko smiled and said: “Since it has been decided, no need to feel regret. Your family must have been very worried about you. Don’t worry, in the future, you will certainly have the opportunity to play again.”

“Miss Hase, can I ask you about something?” Take Asasei suddenly asked.

“About what?”

“Why do you like Kazumi’s brother?”

Naoko never thought she would ask this question, and can not help but become a bit embarrassed, not knowing what to say.

Seeing her like this, Take Asasei immediately said: “I am sorry, that was rude of me, just forget it.”

Naoko thought for a moment before haltingly said: “Actually, it’s not something that can not be said.”

Hearing this, Take Asasei immediately became high in spirit, her eyes glittered with lights as she stared at Naoko.

Being looked at like that by her, Naoko became a bit shy, lowered her head and whispered: “Actually, in high school, I was Masashi’s English teacher.”

“I know about this, and then?” Take Asasei hurriedly urged her.

In fact, Naoko truly worried about what other people would think when they knew she was once Lei Yin’s teacher. But now, seeing Take Asasei did not seem to care about that, she was slightly relieved.

Under Take Asasei’s full of expectation look, Naoko slowly recounted the story of how she and Lei Yin, from a mere acquaintance to become madly in love. At first, she seemed a bit nervous and shy, but later on, by slowly recalling her experience with him, bit by bit, she became fully immersed in her own story. At this time, she had forgotten everything around her, as well as the presence of other people. It was like she was having a dream about their laughter, anger, sorrow, and happiness together.

This was the first time for Kazumi to hear this thing. She truly can not think that so much has happened between Naoko and her brother. When she learned that Naoko was suffering from congenital heart disease, she could not force herself to be angry with this woman anymore.

After that, when Kazumi heard her story about her unforgettable memory when Lei Yin disappeared for more than a year, Kazumi finally could not resist anymore. She slowly went to her side and wiped her rolling down tears.

After an indeterminate amount of time, Naoko finally woke up from her memory lane. She saw Take Asasei, who was in front of her, was crying in tears. And then she turned her head to the side and saw the warm smile from Kazumi's face. At that moment, she had no idea what just happened.

On the men's side of the onsen, Lei Yin and Takeda was soaking in water.

At this time, Takeda suddenly said: "Masashi, your girlfriend seems older than you by a few years. She looks really feminine."

"She is my English teacher when I was in high school."

"What?" Takeda's jaw almost fell off.

Lei Yin dismissively said: "Do you think there is a problem with that? For me, these are not a problem at all. I don't care if she is a

few years older than me, or she was once my teacher. What I know is, she is my woman.”

Takeda gawked. After a while, he slowly recovered, “This is the first time I see someone who takes his teacher as his lover and is so frank about it.”

“Thank you for the compliment.”

“Hey, that is not a compliment. Forget it, let’s get back to the original topic. If there is such an attractive and sexy female teacher who is willing to be my girlfriend, even if I have to live ten years shorter, I am still willing. I don’t understand how could you be so lucky to always encounter such a good thing.”

Arriving at Naoko’s room, Lei Yin knocked on the door a few times, but no one opened the door. After a while, the sound of rapid footsteps came from the room. The door then opened from the inside and Naoko in a bathrobe ran out of the door.

“Did you just take a shower?” Lei Yin smiled as he looked at the steaming Naoko.

“Em.” As if thinking about something, Naoko’s face became very red.

After closing the door, Lei Yin picked her up and then went to bed and sat down. Naoko curled up in his arms like a docile cat.

Looking at his lover in his bosom who dared not to look up to him, Lei Yin smiled a bit. He put his arm around her waist and lifted up her upper body toward his. He then put his face on her neck, slowly smelling her body fragrance.

Feeling the warm breath of her lover on her skin, Naoko felt her whole body became soft and weak.

After a while, Lei Yin leaned against her ear and kissed the tiny earlobe, and then said: "Would you like to go out for a walk?"

"Ok." Naoko's face was as red as the roses as she looked at him affectionately.

Although this was not the first time, changing clothes in front of him still made Naoko felt ashamed and felt as if her body numb with tingling sensation.

On the side, Lei Yin quietly watched as she softly took off her robe in a gentle movement, revealing her perfect curve, and then put on her underwear. After that, from the closet, she took out a one-piece dress and put it on. Throughout this process, Lei Yin inadvertently captured an aesthetic sense from her that was entirely unknown to him.

When Naoko put on the last button, Lei Yin walked up and hugged her slim waist, "Unfortunately, there are too many kids here who can make things inconvenient, otherwise, I will not let you off."

“Lei....” Naoko turned around to face him, held his waist and rested her head on his chest.

Lei Yin lowered his head and kissed her hair, “Come on, if this goes on, I won’t be able to hold myself back.”

“Em.” Naoko raised her head, and then, all of a sudden, stood on tiptoe and blushingly kissed his lip.

Lei Yin smiled at her, and then took her hand to walk out of the room.

When they walked into the hotel lobby, they met with Take Asasei, Kazumi, Amy, Takeda, and Yoshikawa who have just returned from window shopping outside.

Seeing Lei Yin, Amy immediately broke away from Take Asasei and ran over to him.

When she came in front of him, Lei Yin bent down and picked her up, “Kid, did you enjoy the window shopping?”

The little girl nodded her head, and then tightly hugged his neck.

“Masashi, where are you going?” Takeda came over and asked.

“Want to go out for a walk.”

“Have you told your girlfriend about that thing?”

“Not yet.”

“What are you guys talking about?” Take Asasei, with hand holding a big bag of souvenirs, curiously asked.

“It’s the thing that I just told you, about asking you guys to go to my house to play.”

“Oh, you mean that. Unfortunately, I couldn’t go because my parents have seen the news and they insist that I must go home even though I told them that I’m alright.” Take Asasei was somewhat disappointed.

Lei Yin looked at her sister, “Kazumi, are you going?”

Kazumi thought for a moment and then said: “I’m not going. Rumi is going to attend a cram school in Tokyo this summer, so I want to go back to help her with her homework, as well as tutoring her.”

“Very well. After a period of time, I will go back. If there is anything, don’t forget to call me. Moreover, tell mom that she doesn’t need to worry about me.”

“I know.”

Watching Lei Yin took Naoko's hand as they walked out of the hotel, Kazumi suddenly had a disquieting thought.

She was determined to go back, in large part because she wanted to accompany Rumi. Although to a certain extent she has accepted the fact that Naoko will become her sister-in-law, she can't imagine how would that simple girl react to this news. But she can affirm it would absolutely not be small. Therefore, she decided that before Rumi get admitted to Teikyo University, she will make sure that Rumi will not know about this.

In the surging sea breeze on the beach, Naoko somewhat reluctantly watched as Amy occupied an important position.

At this time, the little girl was leaning against Lei Yin's bosom; her small face was staring at her in full alert, like a kitten defending her territory.

But Lei Yin did not notice the two women's different disposition. He said to Naoko: "When I was in the Onsen just now, Takeda asked me to come over to his house to play. I think that since the kid rarely comes to Japan, and because this trip turns out to be a disappointment, so I agreed to his invitation to go to his house along with her for a period of time. Do you want to go?"

For a time, Naoko did not know what to say."

Seeing her like this, Lei Yin said: "Are you worried about what would Takeda's family think about us?"

“Lei, I....”

Lei Yin gently stroked her left cheek, “You’re really a fool. Actually, you are the only one who cares about this matter, no one would think about it at all. Moreover, one day you are going to see my mother; are you going to be afraid to see her just because of this pointless reason?”

Hearing his words, Naoko bowed her head and pondered.

After a while, she raised her head and looked at him fondly, “Lei, I am sorry, for being so headstrong. I know what I need to do.”

Lei Yin smiled, reached out her delicate hand, placed it on his lips, and then kissed it.

Naoko’s face turned red as she looked at his action. She then softly leaned on his shoulder.

Chapter 187 - Kyoto

The next morning, under the organization of several instructors, all who have not gotten sick or hurt arrived at the airport.

For this unforgettable-for-a-lifetime educational trip, the students did not have the mood to be sentimental. Instead, they were eager to go home.

After Kazumi and Take Asasei boarded the plane, Lei Yin, as planned, together with Naoko and Amy, along with Takeda and Yoshikawa went to board on another plane on a flight to Takeda's home.

Takeda and Yoshikawa's homes were located in South of Kyoto, Japan.

Kyoto is about 500 kilometers Southwest of Tokyo, and 41 kilometers East of Osaka. Better known as "Japan's Millennium Ancient Capital."

The total population is about 1.47 million. Kyoto was constructed according to the ancient Tang Dynasty Capital City, Chang'an. It became the capital of Japan from AD 794 to 1868. It still holds many shrines, temples, palaces, as well as elaborate gardens. Because of its long history, nowadays, it retained its traditional culture of the ancient capital of Japan.

Takeda's Family, for generations, ran the Sado (Japanese tea ceremony) business throughout the Kyoto area. They also have

several branches in Kobe, Nara, and other places. But Yoshikawa's Family also ran the tea business, so naturally, the relationship between his family and Takeda's Family was not shallow. Plus, their two homes were not too far apart, therefore it can be said that Takeda and Yoshikawa grew up together.

Takeda walked to the front of the vermilion gate and pressed the bell several times.

After a while, an old man in a black kimono and wooden clogs under the feet opened the door.

Seeing Takeda, the old man seemed very happy, "Young master Hidetoshi, you are back." (The character Hidetoshi in Chinese means Handsome)

Seeing that the corner of Lei Yin and Naoko's mouths gently twitched, Takeda dryly coughed and said: "Uncle Iketani, later on, just call me second young master, ok. These are my friends, and they will stay in here to play."

The old butler named Iketani immediately bowed toward Lei Yin and Naoko: "Thank you for taking care of the second young master Hidetoshi."

"You are too kind." Naoko immediately bowed back ritually.

"Very well, enough with the introduction, just take us in. By the way, is my sister here?"

“Young miss Nadeshiko has come back from the vacation and is now reading in the study room. Moreover, young master Kuraya has also come.”

“Even my big brother is also here, that’s great.” Takeda led Lei Yin and the others to come in.

When they went into the house, Lei Yin sized up the surrounding environment as they walked.

This was a typical 300 pings (1 ping ~ 3.3 square meters, this measurement typically used in Japan and Taiwan) area residence. Besides the main building, there was also a courtyard on it. Not only there was a huge Koi fish pond, there was also a large area full of bamboo and an open area with a variety of flowers and plants.

The house at the center area was also very huge, and the exteriors were all in the traditional wooden corridor and paper door design. Now Lei Yin started to believe Takeda’s previous claim that his house can fit in the Edo period drama production.

Takeda said to Lei Yin: “Now you know why I want to go to College outside of Kyoto. How could this kind of ancient house be suitable for a person like me to live in? That is why, since high school, I did not dare to bring my classmates to play here.”

After leading Lei Yin and the others to a spacious guest room to put down their luggage, Takeda said to him: “Do you want to meet with my old man?”

Lei Yin nodded his head, “Since we’ve come to someone’s house, it is polite to meet with the master of the house.”

Takeda patted his shoulder and said: “My old man is a stubborn old man. When you see him, no matter what he says, just consider it as farts.”

Listening to their conversation from nearby, Naoko could not help but smile.

When they came to the corridor, Lei Yin saw three kids playing with Amy near the fish pond. One of them was holding a GameBoy.

“Are they your brother’s children?” Lei Yin asked.

“No, they are the children of my two uncles. I don’t know if this is a house rule or not, but starting from my grandfather’s generation, we got used to living with our immediate family together. Especially after having a kid. They always quarreled here, which is another reason why I am anxious to move out. Can you imagine that someday when you are in your room watching adult videos and suddenly your cousin run in and ask what are you doing? How are you going to explain that?”

Lei Yin snappily said: “I don’t know whether to pity or despise you.”

At this time, the three children happened to see Takeda. With

shouts they ran over to him immediately.”

“Brother Hidetoshi, when did you come?”

“It’s good that you’re back. You said you want to take me for a ride when you come back.”

“Me too.” A child sucking his finger said.

Being mobbed in the middle by the three kids, the rebellious youth exclaimed: “I know, but now I am still busy. When I am free, I will take you out to play.” With that, he took that opportunity to run away.

Lei Yin said with a smile: “It seems like you should be a nanny, it’s like a second nature to you.”

“Do not joke, if I stay with them for an hour, I would go crazy. If only they are so well-behaved and quiet like Amy, that would be nice.” Takeda looked down at the little girl who was holding Lei Yin’s right hand, only to see her looking at his three younger cousins.”

When they went inside the house, Takeda suddenly stopped, combed his slightly upturned hair with his hand and then carefully examined his clothes. After he completed all of these, he then knocked on the door.

After the knock, there was a slightly hoarse male voice, “Please

come in.”

Takeda blinked his eyes at Lei Yin like he was doing a prank and opened the door.

“Father, I am back. Big brother, so you’re here, I was just about to go look for you.” Takeda kneeled toward the two men sitting inside the hall.

The two men that were in the hall, one was a senior wearing a gray-black high-quality kimono, with not too neatly combed hair. Although his age was already over fifty years old, his spirit was still very much in shape. He slightly looked up and cast Takeda a glance, and then said: “When did you get back.”

“Just now,” Takeda answered.

Takeda’s father looked at his youngest son from top to bottom for a while before he said: “In Tokyo, you did not provoke any disaster, right?”

“Of course not, you can ask sister if you want.”

“Humph. In high school, you always said that. But in the end, didn’t you still stir up a lot of things? I don’t expect you to do something good for the family in the future. I would content as long as you don’t give me any trouble.”

Takeda disapprovingly curled his lips.

Takeda Yifu (Takeda's father) then shifted his eyes up and saw the people behind Takeda.

He saw a young man with age similar to Takeda holding a little girl, and an impressively beautiful woman who stood next to that young man.

“Takeda, who are they?” Takeda Yifu asked his son.

Takeda put his arm around Lei Yin's shoulders and said: “His name is Gennai Masashi, my University classmate, and my good friend. Next to him is his girlfriend, her name is Hase Naoko. Right, I almost forgot. This little girl is his distant relative, we call her little Amy. Masashi is her temporary guardian.”

After listening to his presentation, Takeda Yifu dryly said: “Since he is your classmate, it's your duty to take care of them.”

Although this so-called classmate of his son did not wear fancy dress or wore strangely decorated accessories and hair dyed in a wacky color like a punk. But seeing that he already has a girlfriend within the first year of college, in his heart, Takeda Yifu already classified him as an unambitious young man just like his youngest son.

But toward his old man's cold shoulder approach on them, Takeda instead was very happy with this result. He smiled and then said: “I will entertain them. Big brother, when did you get back?”

After a while, Takeda Yifu still has not heard his eldest son's answer, so he turned around and glanced at him. Only to find his eldest son unblinkingly stared at the young man's girlfriend. It seemed like his eldest son did not even hear the question from his youngest son.

Takeda Yifu heavily coughed. Takeda Changshi immediately reacted and he awkwardly changed the subject as he said to his younger brother: "I saw in the news that the Teikyo University students who were on an educational trip were hit by a storm, and many students are in the hospital. Are you okay?"

Takeda said: "I am okay, thankfully, we arrived at Yakushima before the storm appeared, so we did not encounter the storm. However, the boat behind us was caught in the storm, but luckily, no one was hurt."

"Very good then."

Takeda did not want to stay here any longer so he said to his father and elder brother: "If there is nothing else, we are going to go out now."

Takeda Yifu nodded his head.

When they walked out of the hall, Takeda Yifu found his eldest son was still watching the back of that beautiful woman, lost in thought.

It seems like it is time to find him a wife, Takeda Yifu said in his mind.

Outside the hall, from his pocket, Takeda fished out the earring that he took off before they went inside the hall and re-worn it on his left ear.

“Everytime I see that old man, I feel like I was seeing my high school disciplinary director. You just heard him said: ‘I don’t expect you to do something good for the family in the future. I would content as long as you don’t give me any trouble.’ Sometimes I wonder if he found me in a toilet.”

Lei Yin gave him a serious look and said: “It is possible. No wonder I always thought that your body has a funny smell.”

“B*stard.” Takeda gave him a middle finger.

When they walked near the garden, Takeda took out his mobile phone to call Yoshikawa.

After hanging up the phone, he said to Lei Yin: “When that guy comes, I will take you out to the best hotel in Kyoto to eat a meal there. And then, tomorrow, I will let you sit in my car and go for a ride. There are many fun places in Kyoto that we can visit.”

Suddenly, Takeda saw a person trimming the flowers within the cluster of flowers and said to himself: “Who is that guy? I’ve never

seen him before.”

Lei Yin and Naoko looked at the direction where he was looking and saw in the distance, near the bamboo grove, a tall guy was holding large scissors as he trimmed the nearby weeds.

At this time, the butler Iketani walked by, so Takeda called him and asked about that person's origin.

The housekeeper Iketani said: “Young master Hidetoshi, that man is the new handy man that was invited by the master. I heard that he seemed to have saved young miss Nadeshiko, so young miss requested the master to let him do things here. He rarely spoke, and when he first came in, his clothes were tattered like a stowaway (illegal immigrant; In Japan, they all come by boat). I really don't understand why master would let someone with unknown origin stay here. I think we should know more about how he could save young miss Nadeshiko.

Right, young master Hidetoshi, if my guess is correct, then he is definitely not a Japanese. Because I once heard him speak, and his accent was strange, completely unlike a native Japanese. I wonder if he is really an illegal immigrant. Moreover....” Takeda knew that once this butler started talking, he would not be able to stop himself. So Takeda stopped him, “I know, what's his name?”

“He said his name is Brin. You see, even his name isn't a Japanese name. Young master Hidetoshi, I think we better alarm the police. If he really is an illegal immigrant, I don't know what kind of accident he would bring us.” The old butler appeared to be worried.

“I will ask my sister about this particular situation, no need for you to care about it. Why don't you help us prepare our lunch? After the meal, we are going to go out.”

“I understand.” The old housekeeper reluctantly walked away.

When the old butler was gone, Takeda found out that Lei Yin was looking strangely at the new handyman.

“Masashi, what's wrong.”

“It's nothing.” Lei Yin slowly recovered his gaze.

In the evening, Takeda and Yoshikawa acted as the host to lead Lei Yin and Naoko to eat at the nearby large Hotel.

After finishing their dinner, Takeda cheerfully proposed to go for a ride.

Lei Yin, who was feeling full after satiating his appetite, did not want to go. But he could not bear to dampen his friend's excitement, so he nodded in agreement.

Naoko has a mild motion sickness so she just wanted to have a good rest and did not go with them.

When they went out, Lei Yin sat in Takeda's car, the \$ 210.000

worth of Lamborghini sports car, which was the prize his brother sent to him after Takeda was admitted to Teikyo University.

“What do you think, it’s cool isn’t it?” After driving for a mile, Takeda very proudly said.

Lei Yin said: “Your car’s only advantage is to dry your hair after you take a shower and sit in here while driving it; the hair will dry naturally. Or, you can also use this car to dry your freshly laundered clothes.”

For this review, which can’t be called as a praise, Takeda was very dissatisfied: “This is a convertible sports car, of course, this will satisfy the craving of going against the wind.”

The nearby Yoshikawa said: “This guy can’t wait to drive this car, everyday he would lit the incense and bow down to ease his mind.”

“D*mn!” Takeda, all of a sudden, accelerated the car. The oncoming strong wind blew all their hair backward.

“Whoo, this is so great,” Takeda shouted out like a madman.

Lei Yin was glad that Naoko did not come with them; women sometimes can really tell the future.

After driving for half an hour, Takeda suddenly stopped the car.

“What are you doing?” Yoshikawa asked.

“I drank too much water. I need to relieve myself.” With that, he ran to the roadside bush.

After he went there for a few minutes, a scream suddenly sounded from that place.

Yoshikawa and Lei Yin’s face immediately changed, because they recognized that it was the voice of Takeda.

Lei Yin immediately jumped out of the car and rushed over to that place.

Chapter 188 - Among The Bushes

When Yoshikawa jumped out of the car to follow him, Lei Yin has disappeared into the bushes.

Deep in the bushes, Lei Yin met with a very awkward Takeda who was sitting on the ground in a funny pose, trembling.

Seeing he was not hurt, Lei Yin felt relieved.

“What happens?” Lei Yin walked over and pulled him up.

“There, there is a bear, over there....” Takeda lifted up his trembling right hand and pointed to the trees in front of them.

Lei Yin did not believe that Takeda was imagining things because he smelled the air indeed filled with a thick scent of blood.

He quickly determined that what Takeda saw was not a bear, because the climate in Kyoto was not suitable for a bear to live. Moreover, a bear was not going to come near the road where there were many cars coming and going. Even though Takeda said it was a bear, in such a dark environment, he should not be able to see things clearly. Lei Yin thought that this matter was a bit unusual, so he decided to go in and see what happens.

“Go back to the car and look for Yoshikawa, wait for me until I come back.” With that, Lei Yin ran to the woods in the front.

“Masashi, don’t go there....” Takeda shouted, but before he finished, his friend’s figure has disappeared among the trees.

Takeda did not know what to do. Just at this time, Yoshikawa ran in. Seeing Takeda, he immediately asked: “What happened?”

“When I was taking a pee, I suddenly heard a sound in front of me, so I went over to look at it. I found out there was a big bear hiding in the bushes. At that time, I was so scared that I can’t even move, fortunately, the bear was scared off by my cries.”

“Aren’t you just seeing things? I never heard a bear appeared in Kyoto. Where is Masashi?” Yoshikawa looked around and failed to see Lei Yin.

“He ran after it.”

“What? Is that guy’s head flooded with water?”

“So what happens now, do you want to go in and find him?”

“Do you have any lights in your car? If there is, why don’t you bring it here?”

“How can there be such a thing on my car? However, we have a total of three grown men, and that bear, although very large, but it should be very timid. Otherwise, it would not be scared by my yell. So we have to go in, to look for Masashi.” Takeda said self-comfortingly.

Yoshikawa said with a sigh, “I hope you’re just seeing things, because if that’s really a bear, even if we have more people, it would still be useless. Unfortunately, this is already dark, and we can’t see anything here. Otherwise, we could look for sticks to defend ourselves.”

When the two of them were about to go back cautiously, a sound of trampling suddenly came from the bushes in front of them. They were shocked and instinctively backed away several steps while they kept their eyes focused on the front.

The trampling sound was getting nearer. Remembering the previous horror experience, Takeda really wanted to run away.

Finally, when they saw the shadow that made them frightened was Lei Yin, Takeda, all of a sudden, sat on the ground.

“Masashi, are you alright?” Yoshikawa asked.

“I’m fine, but I find something in there.” Lei Yin dragged something with his left hand to the front of them.

Takeda and Yoshikawa saw that it was a Great Dane, which lied on the ground motionless. Apparently, the dog has already died.

“So, it really is a bear?” Yoshikawa said, somewhat surprised.

Takeda curled his lips and said: “I have long said that it was a bear, it’s you who doesn’t believe me.”

Lei Yin shook his head, “I don’t think it was a bear. No bear has that thing’s flexible action and quick speed. Moreover, I did not see any bear tracks over there. I just checked the dog, it was bitten to death on the throat by some kind of animal. Moreover, all the blood in its body was drained. I have seen similar condition on another corpse. But that’s not a dog’s corpse. Instead, it was a human corpse.”

All the fine hair on the two people who listened to this suddenly stood straight.

Yoshikawa asked: “Masashi, according to you, what could possibly cause this thing?”

“This is not a secret. Do you remember the case not too long ago about the residence of former Mayor of Tokyo, Shintaro Ikeyama, where they found the human experiments and the lab? If I did not guess it wrong, what Takeda just saw is likely to be one of the escaped experimental bodies.”

“Did you say experimental bodies? Isn’t that someone who is half man half beast monster?” Takeda sucked a mouthful of cold air.

Yoshikawa thought for a moment, and then said: “But the news never mentioned this escaped experimental bodies.”

In fact, at the time, all of the rescued illegal immigrants did not show any beastly characteristic. Most of them were just about to be put on the experiment or were just injected with a small amount of drug. In addition to the several dismembered part human part animal bodies that were cut by Lei Yin, the reporters did not find any other experimental bodies who have shown their animal characteristic. They must have been kept in other places.

“I know a man who works in the police force. He told me that, at the site, he saw the record of this thing in the file. But this file was later taken away by public security authorities.” Lei Yin casually made up a reason.

“So what happens now? Are we going to notify the police?” Takeda said.

“This is just our guess. Moreover, since no human has been hurt, the police will not believe it. You can see it slowly, but I need to go back now, otherwise, the kid will be afraid.” With that, he immediately went to the roadside.

The remaining two looked at the pitch black terrifying bushes in front of them and could not help but shiver. They immediately did not dare to stay and ‘see it slowly.’

Back to where the car was parked when Amy saw Lei Yin, she immediately jumped out of the car and ran toward him.

Lei Yin picked her up and softly asked: “Are you afraid of staying here alone?”

The little girl nodded her head.

“It’s all right, let’s go back inside.” Lei Yin touched her head and held her as he put her into the car.

“Today is already dark enough, but we still met with this thing.” After a while, Takeda cursed as he walked behind Yoshikawa to the car.

Remembering the dog’s corpse that he just saw, Lei Yin sat in the car and pondered.

For several days, Takeda and Yoshikawa served as tour guides, driving around Lei Yin and the others everywhere they went.

In the past few days, they visited Lake Biwa, Sagano, Sanjusangendo, Nishi-Honganji Temple, Kiyomizu Temple, Ginkaku Temple, Arashiyama, Kinkakuji, and several others famous tourist attractions.

This time, their visit coincided with one of the two grandest festivals in Kyoto, the Gion Festival (Gion Matsuri). So their surroundings were particularly lively.

Gion Festival is held from July 1st to 29th in Yasaka Shrine. Legend has it that in the year of 869 AD, there was an epidemic plague in Kyoto. At the time, the people prayed to the god of the Yasaka Shrine, Susanoo-no-mikoto. Sixty-six stylized and

decorated halberds, one for each province in old Japan, were prepared and erected at Shinsen-en, a garden, along with the portable shrines (mikoshi) from Yasaka Shrine. This practice was then repeated wherever an outbreak occurred, and later on evolved into a festival.

With the start of the Gion Matsuri, the Takeda Family slowly began to visit their relatives.

As a traditional family and on such an important day, Takeda was forced by his father to wear a Kimono at home. This command made Takeda very upset, but under the power of the old man that was acquired over a long period, he had no choice but to unwillingly obey the command.

This was the first time for Lei Yin and Naoko to see this rebellious youth, who always wore earrings, ripped jeans, and dyed hair like a street gang member, to wear a Kimono. In particular, after he wore the Kimono, he looked as if he was trying to grab the small fleas that continuously pester him. Seeing this scene, Lei Yin and Naoko could not help but laugh.

In contrast, Yoshikawa, who was also required by his family to wear the Kimono, was much more natural and did not show any resistance.

Although when she was still a teacher in high school her subject was English, Naoko also came from a very traditional family. Her gentle and elegant temperament were well suited to wear the Kimono. Therefore, taking advantage of this festival, Lei Yin deliberately took her to a local Kimono shop to buy her a Kimono.

In addition, he also wanted Amy to dress as well, to see if it suit her.

In the Kimono shop, when Naoko came out from the dressing room wearing a set of long sleeves Kimono which was painted with birds and flowers, in addition to the shop owners, everyone who saw her showed a stunned expression.

“Lei, what do you think about this set?” Naoko whispered to her sweetheart.

Lei Yin went over to hold her shoulders to take a closer look for a moment before he smiled and then said: “Don’t dress like this to someone else’s wedding. Otherwise, the bride will be angry.”

Naoko suddenly blushed and bowed her head.

Seeing Naoko’s pair of shy eyes and her touching beauty, the shop owner almost shed a saliva, while Takeda and Yoshikawa heavily sighed in their hearts, lamenting about their friend’s good fortune. How could such a creature find such a stunning girlfriend?

Then it was Amy’s turn to try. Because the formal Kimono dress was very tedious, Lei Yin asked a sales lady to help Amy put them on.

After Amy went into the dressing room, Lei Yin noticed that Naoko was looking at a set of brightly colored gorgeous flower

Kimono wedding dress in a daze.

Knowing her thoughts, Lei Yin took her hand, gently caressed it, and said: “If you like, just buy it. When I marry you, would you like to wear this as you wait for me to come and pick you?”

“Lei....” Naoko turned her head and looked at him with eyes full of tears and, after a while, finally leaned into his arms, and gently wept.

Lei Yin softly stroke her long hair.

Seeing this, Yoshikawa sighed and said to Takeda: “Fortunately this guy has no interest in Haruko. Compared to him, I am just a high school boy, and you are yet to graduate from kindergarten.”

“Go to hell.” After he cursed, Takeda can’t help but watch with envy at the two people embracing each other.

Compared to adults, children’s kimono was a lot simpler. Not long after she entered the dressing room, Amy came out wearing a pink kimono.

Compared with Naoko’s mature beauty, Amy’s cuteness gave off another distinctive visual impact. This kimono wearing little girl was like the larger variant of Japanese dolls, making other people can’t help but want to hold her tightly in their arms.

“Lei, this dress is really strange.” Amy felt the novelty of wearing

a Kimono for the first time. She enthusiastically looked at its long sleeves and flung them around every now and then.

Lei Yin knelt down, told her to circle around, and then said: “Kid, you look great in this.”

“Really?” The little girl opened her big and round eyes to look at him.

“Of course it’s true.”

“Then I’ll wear it.” Amy very happily clung on his neck.

When Lei Yin was about to pay for their goods, Takeda said: “Masashi, you’re not going to buy one for yourself?”

“I don’t like to wear a Kimono.”

Takeda was very pleased and pat him on the shoulder, “Me too, I don’t like it either.”

Takeda did not know that Lei Yin’s reason was not as simple as that. The origin of Kimono came from the Tang Dynasty. It evolved from the Tang Dynasty’s clothing style. However, in the modern times, Kimono has become Japan-specific clothes. Lei Yin could not stand the uncomfortable feeling about this subject. Not because he felt disgust or hate, but rather he felt resistant about it. No matter where his rebirth was, at his core, he was a Chinese. After all, when he was hit by the lightning, which turned him into

a spiritual body, he was already a mature adult. Time may change a lot of things, but some entrenched habit and ideas are difficult to change. Instead, they will deepen as times goes by.

After they returned to Takeda's house, Yoshikawa saw a red sports car parked at the gate. He turned to Takeda and said: "It looks like your cousin is here."

"Haven't seen that guy in almost a year, I don't know how he is now?"

"You'll know it when you see him."

When they went to the garden, when Takeda's three younger cousins saw Amy dressed in a kimono, they immediately ran and surrounded her.

After a few days together, despite the language barrier, these little kids liked the cute and well-behaved Amy. Moreover, Lei Yin wished for her to get along with the other children, so, Amy slowly stopped resisting in playing with them.

When they came at Takeda's room, a burst of laughter came from the inside. Takeda recognized the voice of his cousin so he opened the door. Sure enough, he saw the tall figure of Kanoyama Akiji and three other people with the same age and similar build as him were playing cards. Takeda has seen these three other people before, they were all Kanoyama Akiji's high school classmates.

Hearing the door was pushed, Kanoyama Akiji turned around and saw Takeda. He immediately smiled and said: “Hidetoshi, long time no see.”

Takeda sat down beside him, “Yes since you went to college, I had not seen you in a year. How are you?”

“Not good, not bad either. Yoshikawa, you’re here too, and this is....” Kanoyama Akiji looked at Lei Yin and asked.

“He is my college classmate and good friend, Gennai Masashi.”

“Hello, my name is Kanoyama Akiji, Hidetoshi’s cousin.”

“Hello.”

Kanoyama Akiji turned to Takeda and said: “I heard from aunty that you got admitted to Teikyo University, is that right?”

Takeda proudly said: “Of course, it’s true.”

“I never thought you could get into Teikyo University, it’s really surprising.”

“This is my strength.”

When the two men spoke, Naoko, who just came from putting

her newly purchased Kimono on her room, opened the door and went in.

After she came in, she was surprised to see so many people inside and immediately said “Excuse me” and then quietly sat down beside Lei Yin.

This sudden appearance of the top beauty made Kanoyama Akiji and his several of his classmates stunned for a moment, and they unblinkingly looked at her as she moves.

“Hidetoshi, this young lady is....” After they came to their senses, Kanoyama Akiji immediately asked Takeda.

Takeda said: “She Masashi’s girlfriend, Hase Naoko, she is here with Masashi.”

Thinking that this top beauty was actually the girlfriend of this ordinary looking boy, the four people were amazed, and simultaneously cried out in their heart, What a pity.

At this time Lei Yin said to Takeda: “Since your cousin is here, we are going back to our room, you play with your cousin.”

“Very well, I’ll be looking for you not long after this.” Takeda knew that Lei Yin did not like to talk with strangers, so he won’t force him to stay.

Upon seeing the top beauty as well as the more-and-more-not-

pleasing-to-the-eyes boy stood up to leave, Kanoyama Akiji and his several friends felt both pity and frustrated.

When they went to the door, Lei Yin suddenly stopped, and then pushed out the door in a hurry and rushed outside without even putting his shoes back.

Yoshikawa had never seen him like this, immediately turned around and asked: “What’s the matter with him?”

“I don’t know,” Naoko said while putting on her shoes to follow him.

Takeda and Yoshikawa did not know what happened and had to follow.

Kanoyama Akiji and his several friends thought that they could see something exciting so they quickly followed.

Chapter 189 - Pond

Although Amy has an autism, she was a child with normal intelligence and innate ability to sense other people's emotion, as well as likes and dislikes, which made her a very sensible child. Compared to children of the same age as her, she was more quiet and well-behaved. When she was living on the deserted island she did not even cry, even though they lacked food and water. Because she knew the man was trying to solve this difficulties, so she did not want to add his burden.

But now she began to cry. Lei Yin, whose hearing far more sensitive than ordinary people, was the first person who heard her crying. In his impression, Amy was not a child who can randomly cry. Thinking that she had an accident, Lei Yin rushed to her direction at a staggering speed.

When he arrived at the garden, he saw the scene next to the pond that made him super angry.

He saw a fourteen-fifteen years old teenager was pointing at Amy and loudly laughed at her. The look on the beautiful and cute Amy was the reason he made fun of her. Because her face was painted with the various big blue circles and patterns. The several younger cousins of Takeda, who were playing together with Amy, were cowering in fear, afraid to make any sound to stop the teenager.

Seeing the blue greasy marker on the right hand of this laughing teenager, Lei Yin was furious. He silently walked toward the boy and lifted him up by the collar, and before that juvenile reacted, he threw him in the fish pond.

“Splash!” The teenager almost fell flat on the pond. Although the pond was only waist deep, in this situation where he was caught off guard, he was like a drowning man, constantly struggling and yelling in the water.

“Lei!” Seeing that Lei Yin has come for her, the little girl pursed her mouth and threw herself into his arms and cried out loud.

“Don’t be afraid, it’s all right.” Lei Yin softly comforted her.

“What are you doing?” At this time, someone growled behind him. Then, the tall figure of Kanoyama Akiji rushed to the edge of the fish pond to pull his younger brother.

After the juvenile, who was completely soaked with water, came out of the pond, he continued to cough and breath heavily just like a real drowning person. His appearance was very pathetic.

“What do you think you’re doing?” Kanoyama Akiji rushed to the front of Lei Yin and shouted.

“Obviously, I am not feeding the fish.” Lei Yin dismissively said.

“Bast*rd!” Kanoyama Akiji tightly clenched his fists, seemingly wanted to start a fight.

Seeing this ominous turn of event, Takeda immediately put

himself between the two people, “Let us talk, don’t give in to the impulse.”

Seeing the look on Takeda, Lei Yin coldly stared the angry face of the juvenile’s elder brother for a moment. He then turned around and walked back to his room.

“Coward, do you want to escape?” Kanoyama Akiji thought that Lei Yin was timid so he bypassed Takeda’s blocking and went in front of Lei Yin.

“What do you want?” Lei Yin looked at him coldly.

“I want you to apologize to my younger brother.” Kanoyama Akiji said out loud.

Lei Yin revealed a thoughtful smile: “If I say no?”

Seeing Masashi’s eyes, Takeda knew it was a very dangerous signal so he rushed to block the angry Kanoyama Akiji once again.

“Cousin Kanoyama, in this matter, Akito is also wrong, after all, Amy was bullied by him first. Moreover, he was not injured. Just let it past, you better take him to the room to change clothes, otherwise, it would be bad if he catches a cold.”

“Hidetoshi, what’s wrong with you, why are you helping the outsiders instead of me?” Hearing Takeda’s words, Kanoyama Akiji became angrier.

“This is not a question about who helping who, this is just a small thing, no need to make it big. Just let it go.”

“What small thing, that guy threw Akito into the pond and it almost drowned him. And you still think this is a little thing? Hei, don’t try to escape! Akiyama, Masato, stop him, don’t let him get away.” Kanoyama Akiji called out his several friends to stop Lei Yin because he saw Lei Yin was about to leave.

His classmates looked at each other for a moment and then ran to the front of Lei Yin to try to stop him.

But Yoshikawa blocked their way and said: “This is Takeda’s family matter. It has nothing to do with you. Don’t get involved with this.”

He and Takeda were well aware of the severe consequences of angering Masashi. It was very rare for Masashi to hold himself back like today so Yoshikawa did not want this matter to get out of hand. After all, he was Kanoyama Akiji’s acquaintances.

Seeing this, Kanoyama Akiji wanted to rush forward, but Takeda immediately put his arms around him and loudly said: “Don’t get into trouble, he is my good friend and an invited guest, give me face and let it go, okay.”

“Hidetoshi, if you won’t let go of me, I am not going to be polite anymore.” Being blocked by his cousin, Kanoyama Akiji can’t help but anxious.

Just then, a man's voice suddenly came: "What is going on here?"

Several people turned their head to look, that voice came from Takeda Yifu. He was followed by Takeda Cangshi and Takeda Nadeshiko, as well middle-aged man and woman.

Seeing the soaking wet Kanoyama Akito, the middle-aged woman in a Kimono cried out and rushed over, "Akito, how can you be like this?"

That juvenile pointed to Lei Yin and said: "He threw me into the pool."

That middle-aged woman immediately stood up and asked Lei Yin: "Why did you do that?"

"Ask your son about the details, anyway, even if I tell you, you wouldn't believe my story." Lei Yin knew that in terms of bickering, elderly women were almost invincible, so he did not want to make any unnecessary dispute.

"What do you mean by this?" She stared at him fiercely.

Yoshikawa came up and said: "Aunt Kanoyama, it's like this, just now Akito drew doodles on the little girl's face, thus my friend made such a move on impulse. Please calm down."

Although she saw the face of the little girl on Lei Yin's arms was indeed filled with drawings, Kanoyama Akina loudly said: "Who can prove that it was Akito who did it? And even if he did do that, that's just children's quarrel. But you, as an adult, actually threw a kid into the pond, don't you feel ashamed?"

"Although, according to the law, the criminal sentence on juvenile delinquency was lighter than adults. But, there was no difference on the effects on the family of the victims. In the news, it was often said that, in recent years, the juvenile crimes in Japan are steadily increasing. It seems like the main reason is the lack of good parenting." Lei Yin put on a social commentator tone.

Kanoyama Akina was like a cat being stepped on its tail, screaming out loud, "What do you mean by this? Are you trying to say that our Akito lacks parenting?"

Seeing Lei Yin's mouth twitched slightly, Yoshikawa knew he would definitely speak harsh words, so he hastily went in front of her and said: "Aunt Kanoyama, both were wrong, and since this is Gion festival, let bygone be bygone."

At this time, Takeda Yifu opened his mouth: "Yoshikawa is right. Now we are celebrating Gion Matsuri, no need to make it big, just let it go. Quickly change Akito's clothes."

"But, brother...."

Takeda Yifu waved his hand and said: "You better quick, otherwise, it would be bad if Akito catches a cold because of this."

Kanoyama Akina glared at Lei Yin for a while and then pulled his son away.

After saying that, Takeda Yifu cast Lei Yin a not so friendly look before he turned around and returned to the hall.

Toward his non-friendly look, Lei Yin sneered in his heart: Who the h*ll are you? When I first roamed the world, your grandfather's grandfather might not even grow hair yet.

Before he left, Kanoyama Akiji glared at Lei Yin and said: "Count yourself lucky. You better pray you don't run into me in the street."

Lei Yin did not bother to even look at him, completely regarding him as invisible, walking away by his side while holding Amy.

Feeling that he was being extremely despised by him, Kanoyama Akiji was furious and wanted to rush and flatten him, but he was quickly pulled by Takeda.

Finally, Takeda and Yoshikawa managed to get Kanoyama Akiji and his friends to the hall, lest they renewed the conflict.

After returning to the room, Naoko immediately fetched a basin of water from the bathroom.

Lei Yin sat beside Amy, wetted the towel in the basin, and gently rubbed the marks on her face.

But because the ink was oil based, Lei Yin still could not wipe them off completely, even after he repeatedly wiped them. Therefore, Lei Yin said to Naoko: “Go and get me some warm water, as well as a bar of soap.”

“Okay.”

Because Amy’s skin was very tender, Lei Yin did not want to use a dissolving agent like a chemical solution to wash them off and had to use a towel with warm water to slowly rub them off.

After almost an hour later, Lei Yin finally able to erase the hand drawings one by one on her face.

After he finished, he saw the little girl’s face was red by that towel rubbing and could not help but feel distressed. He regretted that he did not throw the kid into a cesspool instead of a pond.

“Kid, do you feel pain on your face?”

The little girl looked at him and then shook her head, and quietly leaned her head in his arms.

Lei Yin stroke her hair with his right hand.

Naoko quietly sat next to him and tenderly looked at her.

After a while, suddenly, there came a knock on the door. Naoko opened the door to take a look. The person turned out to be Takeda's sister, Takeda Nadeshiko.

Takeda Nadeshiko was a very serious girl. Takeda said she was using the summer to refresh her study, therefore even if they have lived here for several days, Lei Yin and Naoko seldom got the chance to meet with her.

As with Takeda, she was also wearing a Kimono at home. After the door was opened, she first bowed at Naoko and then said to Lei Yin: "Do schoolmate Gennai have a moment to talk?"

Lei Yin nodded his head.

Kneeling in front of Lei Yin, Takeda Nadeshiko said: "I want to take this time to apologize to the little girl on behalf of my cousin Akito. For my cousin's mischievous behavior, I sincerely apologize."

Regarding this ritual of apology on behalf of other people, although Lei Yin felt it was somewhat redundant, he still opened his mouth to reply: "You are very considerate."

Takeda Nadeshiko was about to speak when Takeda's voice suddenly came through the door: "Masashi, are you there?"

Naoko immediately stood up to open the door.

When Takeda came in, he immediately saw her sister, who, like him, was somewhat surprised. Takeda Nadeshiko immediately said to Lei Yin: “Schoolmate Gennai, if there is nothing else, I will take my leave.”

After waiting for her to go out, Takeda asked Lei Yin: “What does my sister want?”

Lei Yin answered: “Nothing, just apologizing on behalf of your cousin.”

“I see, no wonder previously in the hall I saw her whispering with my brother, they were actually talking about this matter. What about Amy, are those drawings have been erased?”

“They have been cleaned.” Lei Yin said while touching the little girl’s head.

Seeing Amy’s face was all red, Takeda slightly apologetically said: “Masashi, I am really sorry, I never thought that kid Akito would do such an excessive thing.”

“This has nothing to do with you. In addition, we have lived here for many days, it is almost time for us to go back to Tokyo. I plan on going back tomorrow by plane.”

Takeda immediately stood up anxiously, “No, you guys can’t

leave. You did not do anything wrong. You can't go back because of this."

"It's not really about this thing. After living here for several days, it's natural for us to go back."

"In short, you can't."

Seeing him so strongly opposed to this, Lei Yin simply spread out his hand and said: "Hey, I am just looking out for you here. I have offended your aunt, cousins, almost all of their family. If I stay here, it will just make it difficult for you."

"I don't care about that. In any case, even that old man's words were just farts as far as I concern, much less theirs. If you insist on going, I will run away from home with you. At most, you're just going to provide me food and lodging at Tokyo."

Seeing his ruffian-like appearance, Lei Yin knew it was useless to say anything, so he shrugged and said: "Suit yourself, in any case, I'm just an outsider. If your old man is going to scold someone, he will only scold you."

To see him finally agreed to stay, Takeda suddenly smiled.

Chapter 190 - Cage

At Yoshikawa's suggestion, everyone agreed to participate in the temple fair in the evening on the nearby shrine.

Japan's temples fair were many, and each place is different. But Kyoto's Gion festival was very famous. From the 1st of July, onwards for the entire month, basically, every night there will be festivals that were held in various temples or shrines.

Although in today's Japan, the sacrifice to the God of the temple was just a mere formality, it became one of the projects to attract visitors. But Kyoto is, after all, the ancient capital of Japan, and in this regard, the ceremony was much more formal than elsewhere.

That night, apart from Lei Yin, the people of Takeda Household all dressed up in Kimono and ready to participate in the temple fair, Takeda was no exception.

In order not to let Kanoyama Akiji renewed the conflict, Takeda, and the others went out to the temple fair that was held in the nearby shrine first.

When they arrived there, the festival has already begun. Everywhere one can see Kimono wearer people walking back and forth.

Although the original goal of holding the temple fair was to let people who wanted to get rich made their petition in the shrine, a few young people were not so devout and join in purely for the fun,

just strolling around everywhere like it was an evening entertainment.

Amy, who has never participated in the temple fair, was very excited. In particular, she moved left and right like a pendulum, very interestedly looking at the various food stalls on both sides of the road.

For fear of her having a bad stomach, Lei Yin only dared to let her eat squid, and wouldn't let her see the other snacks for too long.

In this temple fair, there was this most classic goldfish scooping stall. Seeing that she wanted to have the goldfish, Lei Yin did not personally catch it for her, but let her try scooping for herself. After trying a couple of times, although she failed to catch any fishes, the little girl was still very happily playing.

Takeda was a bit anxious and wanted to help her out, but even after breaking three paper nets, he still failed to catch any. Seeing Amy laughed at him, he became angry out of shame and simply squatted there and continued to try, determined to get at least one.

"I said it right, that guy did not even graduate from the kindergarten," Yoshikawa said to Lei Yin.

"Do you envy him?" Lei Yin asked with a smile.

"Shoo, why would I envy him?"

After leaving the goldfish stall, Takeda cockily said: “See, I told you I am the goldfish scooping master.”

“Forget it. It took you so long just to get two of them, how could you have the nerve to call yourself a master.” Yoshikawa ridiculed.

Takeda refuted in a loud voice, “That’s just because in the beginning my scooping skill was a bit rusty. If you dare, let us compare....”

Before he finished, he heard a familiar voice from behind him: “Hidetoshi, so you guys are here.”

When they looked back they saw the brother of Takeda. Beside him, there were Kanoyama Akiji as well as his high school classmates and Kanoyama Akito. There were also two girls, who also seemed to be Kanoyama Akiji’s schoolmates. All of them dressed in Kimonos.

Takeda and Yoshikawa cannot help but bitterly smile to each other, they never thought they would be so quick to bump into each other.

“Where are father, aunt and the others?” Takeda asked his brother.

“Father, aunt, and uncle said there are too many people here, so they don’t come for fear of overcrowding.”

Hearing this sentence, Takeda was relieved. He did not want to see the old man's face when he was trying to have some fun here.

Takeda Cangshi looked at everyone, and then, his vision, like being pulled by a very strong magnet, quickly zeroed in on Naoko in the pink Kimono.

Like him, the other people also like being under a spell, staring straight at Naoko. But the eyes of the two girls were apparently filled with hostility.

Noticing these several burning gazes, Naoko awkwardly shifted herself sideways to hide behind Lei Yin.

After their visions were blocked by Lei Yin's body, these several people immediately reacted. Kanoyama Akiji and his several friends were jealous and hate of Lei Yin.

Takeda Cangshi lightly coughed and said to Takeda, "Since we have run into each other, let us walk together."

Since the big brother has spoken, Takeda had to agree.

When they went to the shooting booth, Kanoyama Akiji said to Lei Yin: "Do you dare to contest against me with this?"

For this type of child-like vindictive contest, Lei Yin dryly

coughed a bit before he said: “I am sorry, I don’t play this thing anymore since I was three years old.”

“You....” Kanoyama Akiji was furious.

Suddenly, when he saw the thing that was placed next to a stall, his eyes, all of a sudden, lit up.

Thus he said, pointing to the punch force measurement machine: “This is something that when you’re three years of age has not had enough right? What do you think, do you dare to make a bet with me? Whoever has the highest score in the punch force wins. The loser will take off his clothes to walk around here.” He was going to say, the loser will take off his pants, but he knew Takeda Cangshi would certainly forbid it, so he quickly changed his wording.

Takeda Cangshi cannot stand idly and said: “Cousin Kanayama, there is no meaning in this.”

“Cousin, this is just between me and him, please don’t interfere.” In fact, he knew why they wanted to find that guy’s trouble; besides the matter of his younger brother, the existence of that top beauty was also an important reason. He really wanted to make this guy lose face in front of the other people.

“Very well, but you need to be quick because I am in a hurry.” Contrary to Kanoyama Akiji’s expectation, Lei Yin actually agreed.

Kanayama Akiji sneered, walked to the front of that machine and prepared a Karate punch position.

His several classmates wore a proud expression. They knew Kanoyama Akiji was a Karate club member in the University, so they were confidence of him.

“Ha!” With a shout, Kanoyama Akiji punched that leather sheath, and the machine measurement scale immediately rose to number 85.

After he did that, he smugly said to Lei Yin: “Your turn.”

Lei Yin walked to the front of the stall owner and said: “Boss, if this thing is destroyed, won’t you lose money?”

The boss laughed, “If you have the ability, you don’t need to pay for it.”

“You said this yourself.” With that, he walked to the front of that machine and, without assuming any position, he just casually punch it.

“Bam!”, “Krack!” Two dull voice resounded, the whole leather sheath actually flew backward.

Seeing this scene, beside Naoko, Takeda, and Yoshikawa, the other people’s eyeballs almost fell out.

Seeing the expression of the stall owner as if he was watching the death of his family member, Lei Yin addressed Kanoyama Akiji who was about to escape: “If you are willing to pay for the stall owner’s loss, I will call this even.” In the end, he is Takeda’s cousin so Lei Yin has to consider his friend’s face. Moreover, in his eyes, people like Kanoyama Akiji was even inferior to a street bum, so he was too lazy to care about him.

Kanoyama Akiji looked at him in alarmed before he said: “Okay.” His tone of voice lost its previous aggressive momentum.

Thinking that the other was willing to pay for his loss, the stall owner came close to tear up in excitement.

After reaching an agreement about the compensation price, Kanoyama Akiji actually did not have that much money and had to borrow from Takeda Cangshi. Takeda Cangshi did not know whether to laugh or cry as he made the payment. At this point, the farce was over.

After leaving the stall, Kanoyama Akiji and his classmates chose to walk at the rear, not daring to come close to Lei Yin. At the moment, in their eyes, the guy has been classified as a class of biological non-natural human.

Although he was equally shocked, Takeda Cangshi quickly returned to normal. He asked Lei Yin: “Student Gennai, have you been practicing boxing?”

“No, I haven’t, I just have a bit of brute force. I heard that brother Cangshi is already in the business world for a long time, I do not know what kind of business is that?” Lei Yin did not want to talk about this thing and quickly changed the subject.

“I am doing the import and export trade. Originally father wanted me to take over the sado business. But I have my ambition’s elsewhere, and therefore only expect that, in the future, Hidetoshi can help father run the sado business.”

Looking at Takeda, who was holding a skewered cuttlefish with his left hand and a bag of goldfish on his right hand, and still looking like a bully even though he was wearing a Kimono, Lei Yin thought that Takeda Cangshi’s hope might be too difficult to achieve.

“Hey, what’s with that look?” Seeing Lei Yin was staring at him with a weird look, Takeda who also walked near his brother and happened to hear his brother’s words, immediately stared back at him very unsatisfied.

“It’s nothing. I just find it hard to imagine how you are going to operate the tea ceremony business.”

“Who said I want to run that old man’s shop? I am only interested in cars, let my sister inherited that sado business.”

When the two people talk, Takeda Cangshi silently watched Naoko who was walking next to Lei Yin.

Watching Lei Yin, who has a bit of absent-minded look, Naoko asked: “Lei, what happens?”

Lei Yin thought for a moment and then told her about the Brin’s matter.

“Do you want to investigate this?”

“Not really, I just found it strange, that’s all.”

Naoko suddenly laughed softly, “You are lying. Are you worried about me staying alone here?”

Lei Yin was somewhat surprised to see her and said with a wry smile: “How do you know?”

Naoko cast him a playful smile for a moment and then gently fell upon his arms and said: “If you want to go then go, but promise me to be careful and don’t get hurt, okay? Rest assured, if I am bored, I will just watch the TV. If possible, come back early.”

Lei Yin was touched as he tightly held that beautiful person in his arms, “Naoko, you are really good.”

“Fool.” She looked up to him with her red face and lightly kissed his lips.

When he walked out of the room, Naoko put a pillow in her arms and buried her head in it. After a moment, she put her index finger on her cherry lips, which apparently still have the trace of his body temperature, in a daze.

There was a three story high building near the Takeda House main building, it was dedicated for the servants of the family. Lei Yin asked the other servants about Brin's room location and then went in.

Japan is a hierarchical country, not to mention in the government or the company, even in the apartment where the servants lived has a certain division rule. Usually, the longest serving, the most senior of the servants will stay at the best location on the top floor, and so on. Brin's room was located at the very end of the first floor, which was impervious to the sun.

After listening from the outside of the door and determining that Brin was still inside, Lei Yin walked out of the apartment building and wait for him to come out.

Around 11 o'clock in the evening, the already exasperated Lei Yin finally saw Brin's tall figure stepped out of the apartment door.

After secretly cursed a sentence, Lei Yin quietly followed behind him.

With regards to tracking skill, basically, no one can compare to Lei Yin. Because he did not need to keep up with the person he was

trying to follow, as long as he can lock the person's body heat, he will know the walking route of that person and the person that he tracks will never know there was someone behind them.

Along the way, Lei Yin slowly followed behind Brin. Sometimes, he stopped by the roadside snack vendor to buy some and to try it.

Half an hour later, Lei Yin found out that Brin was walking toward the shrine. Is that guy going to catch some stray dogs?

Right on cue, Brin went behind the shrine without consulting anybody. Then he went to what seemed to be his previous spot to drag three stray dogs in a cage from the thick patch of grass. Then, just like the last time in the temple fair, he walked toward that deserted alley.

Seeing that the good show was about to begin, Lei Yin finished off the last few snacks on his hands and then continued to follow.

Meanwhile, shortly after Lei Yin went out of Naoko's room, a man knocked on her door.

Chapter 191 - Fight

Naoko opened the door and saw the one standing outside was Takeda's brother, Takeda Cangshi.

"Good evening, Mr. Takeda, is there something that I can help you?"

Takeda Cangshi appeared a bit restless, "Good evening, Miss Hase. May I come in and have a talk?"

Hearing his words, Naoko can't help but hesitate. Although now it was only 9 o'clock in the evening, she was the only person in the room, and being in a room with an unrelated man was not good. Her experience with Hinatsu Junichiro two years ago was still fresh in her mind.

Seeing her embarrassed look, Takeda Cangshi smiled for a moment and then said: "Since Miss Hase is inconvenient, then just forget it. I am very sorry to disturb your rest, excuse me."

Seeing he was about to leave, Naoko was shaken. This place was someone else's house, after all, if she can't even promise such a request, it would appear a bit too unreasonable. After bowing her head to think for a moment, Naoko said: "That was rude of me. Mr. Takeda, if you have something to talk then please come in and let's talk about it."

Takeda Cangshi suddenly bowed to her and said, "Thank you, Miss Hase."

Naoko was shocked by such a big ritual, immediately said: “Mr. Takeda, you are too serious.”

After he came in, Naoko did not close the door but pushed the door open a bit more. But Takeda Cangshi did not seem to notice this casual movement from her and continued to sit on the other side of the table.

Naoko brought a cup of tea in front of him, “Please enjoy the tea, Mr. Takeda.”

“Thank you.” Takeda Cangshi picked the tea cup in a very standard position and took a sip.

“Miss Hase, your tea flavor is very good.” After putting down the cup, Takeda Cangshi said something.

“You flatter me, Mr. Takeda. Your family has been in the tea business for generations. Your erroneous praise makes me ashamed.”

Takeda Cangshi said with a straight face: “No, I am saying the truth.”

Seeing his serious face, for a while Naoko did not know what to say, but finally said: “You are too kind. Mr. Takeda, you said there is something you want to talk to me?”

Takeda Cangshi was at a loss for a while. Actually, for a long time, he did not say any words.

Seeing him like this, Naoko did not dare to make a sound and can only wait for his answer.

For a time, the entire room was quiet.

After an indeterminate time has passed, Takeda Cangshi finally looked up at Naoko, and then said the words that, for her, was truly unexpected.

“Miss Hase, I like you.”

Naoko was shocked and almost knocked over the teacup in front of her.

After she composed herself, Naoko immediately said: “Mr. Takeda, I....”

Takeda Cangshi interrupted her, “Please do not misunderstand, Miss Hase, I have no other intention. I am well aware that you truly love Mr. Gennai, and I will not do anything to affect your feelings. I just want to settle my wish before I leave, that’s all.”

“You said before you leave?” Naoko realized he was wearing a suit rather than a Kimono, which he usually wore everyday at home.

“Yes, because there is something urgent that I need to take care of in the company, I have to go back on a plane tonight. Maybe after this, I will have no chance to see Miss Hase again. Therefore, I really hope I can settle my wish before my departure. That is, to confess my feelings for Miss Hase. Of course, I don’t expect to get any response, I just don’t want to leave with regrets. If this causes you any discomfort, please forgive me.” With that, he bowed to her.

Seeing this man, who always wore a very serious expression, Naoko did not really know what to say. After a while, she slightly pulled herself together and then said: “Mr. Takeda, I don’t deserve your kindness, I feel very uneasy.”

Takeda Cangshi said: “Miss Hase, you are the most beautiful and gentle woman I have ever seen, my heart is filled with admiration for you. I wish for you and Mr. Gennai to grow old together.”

“Thank you, Mr. Takeda. With Mr. Takeda’s condition, I believe you will soon find a woman who suits you.”

Takeda Cangshi smiled, “Thank you for your good wish. But to be honest, I really envy Mr. Gennai.”

“I don’t deserve such a praise.”

After he drank the tea, Takeda Cangshi stood up, “Very well, I have to go, Miss Hase. Please take care of yourself.”

“You too, have a nice trip.” Naoko stood up and sent him out.

After walking out of the door, Takeda Cangshi suddenly looked back to Naoko and said: “Perhaps this sentence is rude, but I want to ask: What exactly do you like in Mr. Gennai?” He still did not understand why a woman so perfect like her love such an ordinary man.

Naoko was stunned for a moment, and after a while gently said: “In this world, no one treat me better than him.”

Seeing the gentleness on her face, Takeda Cangshi seemed to understand, turned around and slowly walked away.

In his previous rebirths, in his spare time, Lei Yin carefully studied the difference races, as well as the differences in the characteristics of the indigenous people in different places.

From his first glimpse of Brin, he concluded that the new handyman was not a Japanese. Perhaps it was just like the Takeda Family’s old Butler put it, this man could really be an illegal immigrant.

Previously he found the dog’s corpse that might come from the laboratory, plus he now suspected the stowaway Brin’s bizarre behavior in recent days who showed up wounded, so he quite naturally associated the two together, making Lei Yin’s curiosity pique.

The man walked outside the outskirts of the shrine for nearly half an hour before finally stopped in what might seem like a bomb shelter.

After carefully looking around and determining that there was no one nearby, Brin pushed aside a pile of cover up weeds, revealing a gap that can only be passed by a person.

After he lined up the cage in a straight line, Brin's figure continued to drag the cage and went inside. He did not know that a ghostly shadow-like figure quietly went in not long after he walked in.

The inside environment was very dark, but that did not slow Lei Yin at all. He carefully looked around and found that this was indeed an abandoned bomb shelter. During World War II, there were quite a few of these bomb shelters being built in Japan, but most of it were filled during city development.

In order for Brin not to notice him, Lei Yin carefully paid attention to his footsteps so he did not accidentally kick something, which can produce a sound.

Suddenly, he heard a very shrill barking sound, but soon, everything was quiet.

In this dark environment, he suddenly heard the kind of voice that can put a great strain on people's nerve. But to a millennium old ghost like Lei Yin who used to see extraordinary scenes, the

sound was just a bit harsh.

Knowing a good show was about to begin, Lei Yin could not help but speed up his pace.

After walking less than ten meters, he suddenly heard a burst of shrill barking once again. But this time, Lei Yin also heard another sound.

Several minutes later, Lei Yin felt he was getting closer and closer to Brin, suddenly, the pitiful scream of the third dog came out.

Three in a row? His appetite is too great. Lei Yin thought while he continued to move forward rapidly.

When he reached the end of the tunnel, Lei Yin saw, leaning against the room, a faint dim light that shone the room in front of him.

At this time, Lei Yin suddenly stopped, because he heard a familiar voice.

It was a heavy breathing of a hungry animal, which was irregular and harsh.

All of these were similar to the sound he previously heard from the experimental bodies who have turned into animals.

Is Brin really one of those escaped experimental bodies? The doubt in Lei Yin's heart was getting heavier.

But soon, a man's voice negated his assumption.

“Brother, you have to control your emotion....”

Although the words were said in Nepali, Lei Yin soon recognized that it was Brin's voice.

At this time, a roaring sound of a beast resounded in the room, followed by a heavy falling sound. Lei Yin immediately rushed to open the door but found that the door was locked, so he kicked open the door with his foot.

When he went inside, he saw, under the illumination of the battery powered energy saving lamp, a figure, whose whole body covered with brown long hair with sharp long fingernails that were dripping with blood and face that was seriously contorted like a “werewolf”, was pinning Brin to the ground.

From the corners of its mouth that revealed the sharp teeth, bloodshot eyes and constant dripping of saliva, the “werewolf” obviously considered Brin as a prey.

Hearing the door being strongly kicked, the experimental body and Brin unconsciously looked up.

Seeing a person's shadow kicked the door to break in, Brin

immediately called out: “Get out of here!”

But it was too late, the experimental body jumped away from Brin and rushed toward that figure on the door.

Brin turned around and immediately stood up before loudly said: “Brother, don’t kill him!”

But the experimental body did not heed his voice, still rushing to the incoming man. His two pairs of claws stretched out toward him.

When Brin thought that person would surely die, suddenly, there was a scene that completely unexpected to him. He saw the man’s body seemed to move a bit and the experimental body, seemingly being subjected by a huge force, flew out to the back of the room and finally hit the wall with a “pop” and then fell to the ground.

The whole process just happened in a flash. Brin had no idea what happened.

At this time, the man stopped to say a sentence: “You said he is your brother, what exactly is going on?”

Hearing him saying in Nepali, Brin was pleasantly surprised and said, “Who are you?”

“Now is not the time to say this thing, quickly get out of here.”

Brin began to wonder why he'd say that, but he soon knew why.

Seeing the experimental body was looking at him with bloodshot eyes and over two meters of height, Lei Yin felt a burst of excitement.

This transformed being was worthy to be called unnatural creatures. Just now, he used 80 percent of his power in that single punch, but the creature unexpectedly stood again so soon, and it did not appear to have suffered any injury. Although his present internal force was only 30 percent of his heyday, simply from the pure physical body strength, this experimental body occupied a dominant position.

Since the previous time he fought mano a mano with the experimental body in the parking lot, he really wanted to have another round of fight with this kind of creature who has a tyrannical physical body. Now, finally having the opportunity, he thought that his long wait tonight was worth it.

“You go, otherwise you will die,” Brin said to Lei Yin after he stopped in front of the experimental body.

Lei Yin said in a deep voice: “If you don't want to die, you better hurry to leave this place, he has lost his humanity.”

“My brother still has a bit of sanity. As long as you leave....”

Before he finished his words, the experimental body suddenly jumped over Brin's body and then came at Lei Yin.

Seeing the claws that were trying to grab him, Lei Yin made a backhand move and shove them to the side and then, taking this opportunity, Lei Yin mercilessly hit the chest of that experimental body with his elbow.

If these claws attack hit him, his whole head would fly out, separated from his body. Lei Yin immediately bent over to avoid the fatal blow and sent out his right hand to hit the creature's abdomen with a fist technique.

“Poof!” With a thud, the experimental body was hit once again and he loudly howled in pain.

But Lei Yin did not let him off just yet. While he was shouting wildly, Lei Yin kicked his belly, sending the creature's entire body backward with his foot.

In this dazzling fierce exchange, Brin saw his big brother knocked to the ground again and again. Brin could not believe everything that he just saw. He can't imagine an ordinary human being able to fight to such a degree against his brother who has been transformed into a monster.

“Who, who are you?”

“Why are you talking so much nonsense, just wait until I finish

taking care of him.”

If not for the light that was too dim, Brin will definitely see the strange smile from that person’s mouth.

Seeing the experimental body got up again, Lei Yin’s fine hair stood straight with excitement. His grandma! This is too exciting, this fellow is a lot fiercer than the one in the parking lot. Not only his body is bigger, his strength is stronger, and his skin is thicker, his resistance to being hit is also first class. He loved this kind of flesh to flesh heavy beating. Therefore, he did not want to use any weapon and just want to continue attacking with his fist and kick.

Feeling the excruciating pain on the body, the experimental body was completely enraged.

It stared at the man with eyes that almost oozed with blood. It ignored its hunger and just wanted to tear the man apart.

After it loudly roared, the experimental body rushed toward that person again. Finally, the third round of attacks began.

Unlike before, the enraged experimental body crazily tried to bite Lei Yin with its teeth or grabbed him with its claws. But the man refused to be outdone and made his move that almost impossible to see, counter-attacking it one by one.

In contrast, the experimental body’s physique was much more tyrannical than Lei Yin. Just like before when he faced with the

experimental body in the parking lot, Lei Yin sometimes thought that he was punching a tire. But if the experimental body can land a hit on him, the situation will be completely different, so long as it can hit 2 or 3 times, the likely results would be broken bones or internal injuries.

But Lei Yin's advantage was also evident, he has unmatched amazing martial arts skill. When the experimental body came at him, he would often dodge in a very ingenious way while at the same time unloaded his fist at it. So from the outside, it seemed like the one who was being beaten was the experimental body instead. Moreover, with the support of his internal force, his punching power is not worse than it.

Watching the continued flurry of exchanges between these two people, Brin who lied on the ground felt as if he was watching a fight between monsters.

As the younger brother of that experimental body, he was well aware of its horror; absolutely no human can fight with it. But the man in front of him can actually stand toe to toe with it, and even had the upper hand, making him unable to believe his own eyes. If he knew the man had used a blade to sever the bodies of other five similar experimental bodies, maybe he wouldn't be so surprised.

From the fierce exchanged of these two creatures, from time to time, he can hear some heavy attack sound. Brin can see that this sound emerged whenever the man struck his brother's body. This kind of impressive sound can only be created by a powerful attacking strength; thus Brin began to fear for his brother for the first time.

After what seemed like a long time, the fierce fight still continued. But this time, both sides moving speed was obviously slower than before.

Judging from the appearance, that person seemed to be in a great advantage.

Brin could clearly see the visible large and small wounds that covered the whole body of the experimental body. Especially in the areas that were lethal to ordinary humans body, such as, chest, head, abdomen, and other locations. They were all covered with very obvious fists and shoe prints. But on his brother's face, a wisp of blood continued to appear intermittently on the corner of its mouth.

In contrast, on that person, in addition to the few claws scratches on his clothes, he did not appear to suffer any injury.

This huge difference made Brin feel incredible.

However, the one who participated in this fierce struggle, Lei Yin, bitterly knew the real situation. Although his biggest advantage in practicing internal strength was that his stamina was huge. Moreover, with his rapid breathing technique, he did not need to worry that his energy would dry up. But after fighting for so long, the reaction time of his muscles, who were strained by the high intensity stretching and contracting for a long time, became slow, making him almost got caught by its claws several times. Although it also had the same tired appearance, no one knew how

long it can support itself.

Encountering such a rare rival, if Lei Yin was still a single man, he might fight it to the end. But Naoko was still waiting for him to go back, so he did not want to hang around here any longer. But under less than compelling circumstances, he also did not want to kill it. So he loudly said while he continued to attack: “Brin, go and find me an iron rod.”

Brin was stupefied, but he quickly struggled to stand up and find him an iron bar.

After looking around the room for a while, he exclaimed: “I can’t find the iron bar.”

Lei Yin got angry, “If you don’t want your brother to die in my hands, you better find one in a hurry.”

After seeing the man’s strength, Brin thought it was unlikely for the man to deceive him. But because the two of them were fighting near the door, he had to carefully avoid them and then ran outside.

After a while, Brin rushed back holding a meter long iron bar, “I found it.”

“Good.” Immediately after he said that, Lei Yin punched the experimental body right in the face. This was his full powered blow. The experimental body flew backward like a shell and turned half-circle in the air before it fell to the ground with a thud. This

was the third time it was knocked down to the ground.

After he took the iron bar in Brin's hand, Lei Yin slightly adjusted his shortness of breath, and then looked at the experimental body who slowly climbed up.

Lei Yin felt a bit sorry, This guy is really tenacious, being knocked down so many times, he still able to climb up. I really wish I could continue this fight to see who is the winner.

At this time, the experimental body has lost its previous terrifying momentum, and just felt like a sick animal. But it was still looking at Lei Yin with eyes filled with hatred.

But Lei Yin suddenly had an awareness. Although it seemed like it has completely overcome by the animal instinct, but its character should not be too different than its original human character. Just like the experimental body that he previously encountered in the parking lot; when it was shot by Eiko Kotoshi, it chose to run away, but this one actually chose to fight to the death.

Finally, after breathing a few mouthful of heavy breaths, the experimental body came at Lei Yin again.

In a cacophony of roaring sound, the experimental body flew backward almost in a straight line and then crashed hard into the wall.

Brin could not clearly see what the man just did, only to see him suddenly bent his waist, and then, in a marvelous way, dodged his big brother's attack to the side; then he saw his brother flew out horizontally.

This should do it, right? Looking at the iron bar, who bent at a 50-degree angle, in his hand, Lei Yin said in his mind.

After a while, seeing the experimental body was not able to stand up again, Lei Yin finally breathed a sigh of relief.

He walked over and very carefully checked its breathing. After that, Lei Yin picked up a rope and tied its whole body like a rice dumpling. After he tied it, Lei Yin looked at Brin and asked: "Now tell me what exactly is going on here."

Being frightened by his gaze, Brin said: "Me and my brother escaped from the laboratory...."

After hearing his story, Lei Yin thought for a moment, then said: "Besides your brother, have they ever done any experiment on you?"

"No, because at the time, I fell sick, so they just took big brother away. Initially, I did not know what they do to him. But one night, the lab suddenly caught fire, a lot of people ran out. Big brother also ran away. But he took advantage of the confusion and fled with me.

Lei Yin continued to ask: “After you two fled here, what happened?”

Brin revealed a painful expression, “Brother became more and more strange, his temper became very irritable, and sometimes went mad. Until one night when I saw him secretly eat raw meat, I knew he must be hiding something from me. Later, he told me everything, and he also said he might become a monster. I did not believe him at first, but then I saw his body transformation, as well as his crazy moment interval that became shorter and shorter. Now I know what he said was true.”

“Why do you want to catch stray dogs to give them to him?”

“Once he ran out. I managed to find him, but when I found him, he was biting a dog’s throat, desperately sucking its blood. From then on, he became more and more like a wild beast. If not for the blood, he will become very vicious. I have no other choice but to go and catch some stray dogs for him to suck their blood every day. In the beginning, one dog is enough, but lately, even three dogs, almost every time, were not enough for him. He became more and more aggressive; my wounds were all scratched by him.”

After listening to him, Lei Yin cursed, “You idiot, since you knew the dogs that you gave him made him like this, you will only let him deeper into this sh*t if you continue to do the same thing. You see, now he barely has his humanity.”

Brin cried, “I really don’t know what to do. I am really scared. Actually, I’ve thought about just leaving him like this.”

“Lei Yin sighed and said: “What is your name, your name is not really Brin, right?”

“My name is Balin, but because I am from Nepal, I changed my name to Brin.”

“Is your brother’s name Jabin?”

Brin looked at him in surprise, “How do you know that?”

Because I once saved a Nepali youth, his name is Ji Teba. He mentioned your brother’s name to me.”

Chapter 192 - Return

When Lei Yin woke up, he felt sore all over his body. For a long time he has no such an excessive exercise, he felt as if in that last night fight, he was truly able to have fun.

After a brief wash in the bathroom, he smiled when he came out and see Amy still sleeping like a log.

At this time, someone gently knocked on the door. He opened the door and saw it was Naoko. Her hands were holding a tray filled with breakfast.

“Lei, good morning.” Naoko gently smiled to him.

Receiving this kind of smile from a beautiful woman in a bright morning sun, Lei Yin felt peace in his heart.

“Where’s yours? Don’t you eat?”

“I already ate.” Naoko helped him straightened the bed sheet while replying to him.

After putting his bed in order, Naoko quietly knelt next to him, watching him eat breakfast.

“What time is it now?” After eating his breakfast, Lei Yin looked up and asked.

“About 9:30 A.M..”

Watching her ready to take the cutlery, Lei Yin held her hand, “Don’t bother with this, sit down and let us talk first.”

Naoko obediently sat in his arms.

“Did you enjoy this vacation?”

Naoko leaned her head on his chest and said: “Yes, I haven’t gone outside of Tokyo for a long time, and this makes me comfortable.”

Gently stroking her hair, Lei Yin said: “This time, there are many people with us. Next time we have the opportunity, we will go somewhere else to play, just the two of us.”

“As long as I can be together with you, it doesn’t matter even if we don’t go outside.” She put her arms around his waist and pulled herself toward him even more.

Smelling her faint delicate fragrance, Lei Yin has a soul-stirring feeling. And can’t help but tightly hugged her.

A while later, after this gentle and quiet moment was over, Lei Yin asked: “How many days have we stayed here?”

Naoko thought for a moment and then said: “If I remember

correctly, there should be thirteen days.”

“So it’s almost two weeks, we should go back in two days.”

“Okay, after all, bothering people for too long is not good.”

Looking at her mouthwatering lips, Lei Yin could not help but lift her chin up and kiss her. As in the past, Naoko was gentle and slightly shy to respond to his request. Suddenly the room became tranquil again.

In the evening, Lei Yin called Brin alone outside.

In a place where there was no one else, Lei Yin pulled a piece of paper from his pocket. He then gave it to Brin along with a paper bag, “Take this.”

Brin was a bit puzzled by the things in his hand. “Mr. Gennai, these are....”

“There is a prescription written on the paper. Buy the medicine according to that prescription and injected it to your brother. Remember not to let him taste any blood or raw meat, and never let him go. You need to tie him in a bed, otherwise, there would be trouble if he runs out and kills people.”

Brin excitedly said: “Can this drug really make my brother return to normal?”

Lei Yin shook his head, “Your brother’s gene has been transformed into a half human, half animal. There is no way to bring him back just by relying on drugs. This drug is similar to a powerful sedative, and should be able to suppress his animal nature. But if this drug can’t control him anymore....” Speaking to this, his expression became very serious.

“Use ten times the dose on him so he can pass away without feeling any pain.”

Brin’s eyes were red, “Is there really no other way?”

“In today’s medical level, genetic change cannot be reversed. They’re like cancer cells which are impossible to turn them into normal cells. The best treatment is to kill or remove the diseased tissue. Moreover, even though you can successfully suppress the animal part of him, he may not think like a normal people anymore. In the end, what’s best for him is up to you to decide. For him, maybe death is a relief. There is some money in the bag for you to buy him the medicine.” With that, he slowly walked away.

Brin looked blankly at his back. After a while, he squatted on the ground and cried like a child.

When he returned to Takeda’s home, Amy and a few of Takeda’s younger cousins were playing ‘catch the firefly’ in the garden.

Hearing a couple of children’s frank and innocent laughter, Lei Yin felt a bit depressed because the matter of Brin’s brother was

still heavy in his mind.

As if sensing something, Amy instinctively turned her head back just as he walked in from the outside. She immediately rushed and hugged him with great excitement.

“Lei, play “catch the firefly” with me, okay?” The little girl endearingly said.

“Ok, but you must let Naoko play with us.” Lei Yin touched her head and said.

Hearing the name Naoko, Amy suddenly pursed her small mouth and said, “No.”

Lei Yin gently pinched her face, “Didn’t you promise me yesterday to get along with her?”

Hearing his words, the little girl showed a distressed expression.

Seeing her frowning like an adult, Lei Yin almost couldn’t help laugh out loud.

After thinking for a moment, she finally somewhat reluctantly said: “Okay then, but you have to help me catch a lot of small insects, ok?”

“It’s a deal.” With that, Lei Yin outstretched his right hand

toward her.

After making a big show of high-fiving with him with a serious face, which was very rare, Amy then smiled again.

Naoko's gentle character and beautiful look can be said as lethal to people of all ages. Other than Amy, Takeda's several younger cousins soon like this attractive and good-natured big sister. They all gathered around her, asking her to help catch the firefly. But the little girl happily wrapped herself around Lei Yin, asking for his help. The garden soon became very lively.

After they played for a while, Takeda and Yoshikawa came from the outside, each held two watermelons.

"Hey, we have watermelons here." Takeda raised his watermelons and exclaimed.

His several younger cousins immediately gathered around him.

Lei Yin said with a smile to Naoko: "Sometimes, several imps in the garden is a good thing, at least it's pretty lively."

Naoko smiled, turned around and looked at them. At this time, Lei Yin did not see the hint of sadness in her eyes.

When he walked into the hall along with the other people, Lei Yin's phone suddenly rang.

After he looked at the caller id, Lei Yin deliberately slowed down and answered the phone.

“I know, I’ll talk to you again.”

After he hung up the phone, Lei Yin revealed a thoughtful expression.

No matter where he was, Naoko’s eyes would silently follow him. Therefore, his expression this time also fell in her eyes.

After waiting for him to catch up, Naoko pulled his hand and asked him in a low voice: “Lei, what happened?”

Looking at her slightly worried eyes, Lei Yin held her hand and said: “Don’t worry. It’s not a big deal, don’t sweat about it.”

Seeing that he was not trying to comfort her, Naoko felt somewhat relieved.

“You always like to worry about things; I don’t know what to do with you.” Lei Yin held her waist as they walked to the Hall.

While walking, Naoko leaned her head against his shoulder.

At lunch the next day, Lei Yin said to Takeda: “We have stayed for many days here, it is time for us to go back.”

Takeda, who was eating his lunch, immediately looked up and said: “Why do you want to go so soon?”

“Not too soon, we have been staying here for almost half a month. I want to go back to see my family.”

Takeda doubtfully said: “This is not because of my cousin Kanoyama isn’t it?”

“That’s nonsense, if it is because of that, I would have left earlier. Why would I wait until now? I have discussed it with Naoko, we are going to go back tomorrow by plane.”

Takeda looked very disappointed, “Why don’t you stay for a few more days, there are still many fun places in Kyoto that you guys haven’t seen yet.”

“Please, don’t say I never got a chance to come here. Next summer, I am going to stay here until you force me out. As a reciprocity, don’t you have any interest to stay in my place?”,

Takeda curled his lips, “Bah, what good is there in Tokyo? When summer holiday ends, we have to get back there anyway. Why should I advance this suffering? By the way, have you booked your tickets? Yoshikawa and I will send you to the airport.”

“I have. It’s tomorrow morning’s plane.”

When Lei Yin, Naoko, and Amy came out of Haneda Airport, it was already three in the afternoon.

After Naoko opened the door to her apartment, she saw, in addition to Aiko, two other girls in the living room. One was Asami, and the other one, though she did not recognize, must be one of Aiko's college classmate.

“Sister you're back.” Seeing Naoko came into the room, Aiko was very pleased and got up from the couch and walked toward her.

After putting down her small luggage to the floor, Naoko smiled and said: “We just arrived from the airport. Hello.” She said the last word toward the two college students. From several close friends in high school, only Asami who gained admission at the same University as Aiko. While Ryoko and Ai each was admitted to different Universities. Although they have been separated, these few girls often played together every now and then.

Followed closely behind Naoko was Lei Yin, who carried a big backpack on his bag and pulled Amy's hand with his right hand. Inside this big backpack, in addition to the majority of their luggage, there were also various souvenirs from Takeda and Yoshikawa that they bought when they strolled the local attractions while Lei Yin and others were there.

Seeing him also come with her, Aiko unconsciously revealed a complex look.

After putting that big backpack down, Lei Yin said to her: “Aiko,

long time no see, how have you been?”

Afraid to look at him in the eyes, Aiko bowed her head and said: “I am fine, how about you?”

“Not bad.” With that, he said hello to Asami and the other girl who he did not recognize.

Looking at his face, which both seemed familiar and somewhat unfamiliar, a burst of ripple suddenly appeared in Aiko’s heart.

Looking back, apart from seeing him once at the Hospital where her sister temporary stayed, she had not seen him for nearly six months. But she heard that he was studying at Teikyo University.

After not seeing him for half a year, the lines on his face seemed more mature. If he put on a suit, no one would know he was still a first-year college student.

At this time, she heard her good friend asked him: “Gennai Masashi, is this little girl your sister?”

“No, her guardian is busy with work so she called me to temporarily take care of her. Amy, come, say hello to aunt Asami.”

“Hey, that is not funny.” Asami glared and rolled her eyes at him.

“Rest assured, she only knows English.”

“What, she is not Japanese?” Asami was somewhat surprised to see the little girl with a very obvious Asian descent.

“This matter is somewhat complicated. In simple terms, although her nationality is Swiss, her grandmother is a Korean, so her father is a mixed blood. Then her father took a Singaporean woman who gave birth to her. Therefore, she looked relatively closer to Asian people.”

The more they saw her, the more Asami and the other girl felt that the little girl was cute, and could not help but want to touch her face.

Amy immediately hid behind Lei Yin.

“She seems to afraid of us,” Asami commented.

“She used to have autism; although it is much better now, she still has some resistance to strangers. But, as long as she gets to know you, it will be all right.”

“A pity.” Hearing that she has autism, the other girl cannot help but show motherly concern.

Naoko said to Lei Yin: “After a long fly journey on the plane, Amy must be tired. I am going to tidy up her room, wait here for me, okay?”

“I know, go on.”

After Naoko left, Aiko could not help but ask: “Is this little girl going to stay here?”

Lei Yin nodded his head, “I need to go on a trip today, so I want Amy to stay here for a couple of days. When I come back, I will bring her back to my home.”

“Didn’t you just get off a plane?”

“Yes, there is something I need to take care of.”

With that, he knelt down to the little girl and said: “Kid, be obedient and listen to Naoko’s words, okay? I will soon be back to pick you up.”

“Lei....” The little girl’s eyes slowly teared up.

“Don’t cry, I’ll be back soon. Remember to listen to Naoko, understand?”

Amy nodded her head and tightly hugged his neck.

After a while, Naoko stepped down from the second floor, “Masashi, Amy’s room is ready, you can take her up to rest.”

“Okay.” Lei Yin picked the little girl up and followed Naoko upstairs.

After they walked away, Aiko’s classmate asked: “Aiko, who is that guy? His English is very good.”

Aiko looked at the big backpack that he placed on the ground and said: “He is my sister’s fiance.”

—

Led by a man in a black suit, Lei Yin arrived in front of a small manned aircraft.

That man said: “Mr. Gennai, this is the airplane as per your request; we have filled its fuel. Moreover, director Sakurai wanted me to tell you that, if you want bigger aircraft please feel free to say so, she will definitely meet your request.”

“No need, this plane size is fine. Please give my thanks to Miss Sakurai.

“I will deliver your message.”

After sitting on the pilot seat, Lei Yin carefully looked at the various instruments. Fortunately, this was an old type plane, otherwise, he wouldn’t know how to operate it because the last time he piloted an aircraft was twenty years ago.

Although it took him a bit long to start it, but after he took it to the runway to take off, the plane finally ascended the sky.

Looking from below, the man breathed a sigh of relieve.

If something happened to that man, he would die a tragic death.

Chapter 193 - Bury

In the vicinity of Kagoshima 500 nautical miles to the west of Amami archipelago, there was a small island in the international water. Strictly speaking, it was a deserted island.

Half a month ago, this deserted island, which no one cared originally, all of a sudden attracted many people's attention. The reason for this was because there were more than forty Teikyo University students who lived in this island for a week. They were originally on board a ferry who ran aground and thus forced them to survive on this deserted island. They were finally saved by the Marine Department people who returned them safely to Tokyo.

Human is a creature that is easy to forget. Half a month later, under the barrage of varieties of news and information, not many people remembered this island anymore.

But this time, on this uninhabited island, there were several indistinct campfires. In the dark of the night, people naturally thought this fires as the legendary will-o'-the-wisp.

Then, a sudden gust of aircraft engine sound broke the calm sea.

Around 3 o'clock in the morning, a small plane landed on the sandy beach where the several fires were located.

After jumping out from the airplane, Lei Yin first carefully looked at the several heaps of bonfire, and then closely observed the surrounding environment. Very quickly he noticed the several

people's breathing in the vicinity.

After a while, a tall dark figure walked out from the woods toward the beach.

“Master, you're here.” Dressed in military fatigues and a pair of leather boots on the feet, Rei Li, who fully dressed like a member of an arms force, very happily walked toward Lei Yin. Behind him, he was followed by several similarly dressed sturdy men.

Lei Yin yawned and said: “It's awful, never had such a long flight.” After returning to Tokyo from Kyoto by plane, he scrambled an aircraft to fly here. In addition to stopping twice in mid-way to refuel the plane, he basically has no time to rest. Flying a plane and taking a plane were a completely different experience. The former requires one to fully concentrate. Because the small plane was slower than the passenger plane, Lei Yin took several hours to get here. Even if Lei Yin has extraordinary energy, he also felt a bit tired.

Rei Li smiled: “Master, you've worked hard, how about I take you to the tent to rest.”

Lei Yin nodded his head and followed him side by side.

While they were walking, he asked Rei Li: “This time, how many people came with you?”

Rei Li replied: “Seven people, all of them are my confidants so

there would be no problem in the trust issue. Because I heard from Master that this thing is quite weird, I don't bring too many people. However, because they usually kill people and do the dirty work; doing this kind of thing is the first time for them so the progress is very slow. We only found the entrance the day before yesterday."

When they were approaching the tent, Lei Yin smelled a very fragrant taste. There was a fire pit in front of the tent where a pan was set up on thick branches on top of that fire. The fragrant smell came out from that pan.

Lei Yin smilingly scolded: "You, this kid really regard this as a camping trip."

Rei Li smiled and said: "This place is good, there are sea foods, as well as hot springs. We also brought a lot of canned food with us. But when we're here, my men did not eat it, they chose to catch fish or shrimp. If there are chairs and umbrellas on the beach, together with few beautiful women in bikinis, this would be like in Hawaii."

"Cut the cr*p, I haven't had my dinner, quickly bring me something delicious."

"Ok, ok. In a second." Rei Li went toward the pan on top of the pit fire and scooped the food in a serving dish.

In the tent, two people, master and disciple, each ravenously ate a plate of seafood with chopsticks like they were hungry for six

months.

No one dared to believe a riff raff like Rei Li was actually a good cook. However, there was a historical reason for this.

In the past, after Lei Yin took Rei Li as his disciple, with a purpose of grooming him into the future heir of the Black Dragon, he taught him martial arts with very strict requirements. After not being able to meet his master's ruthless requirements and being beaten several times, Rei Li went to Chang'an for help.

Chang'an told him that Lei Yin enjoyed good food, so as long as he can please his master's stomach, his master will naturally be lenient toward him.

Thus the terrifying Rei Li began his cooking lesson.

Sure enough, after eating Rei Li's several personally made dishes, when teaching him Lei Yin started to be lenient. Seeing that this trick was really effective, Rei Li gave his all to train his kitchen skill, hoping that it can lessen his physical suffering.

At present, Rei Li no longer needed to cook. But sometimes, on a whim, he would cook his master's favorite dishes to recall the bittersweet feelings of those days, but only Lei Yin and Chang'an who were qualified to eat it.

After he fully satiated his hunger until his stomach was full, Lei Yin looked at Rei Li, who was still eating with gusto, and cursed:

“His grandma! Are you a pig? How can you still be able to eat!”

Rei Li ambiguously said: “In the beginning, I was not going to eat, but seeing master seemed to have just worked hard, I was influenced by you to eat more.”

“Bullsh*t.” Lei Yin was too lazy to bother him and picked up a bottle of water to drink.

When the two of them ate and drank to the full, Lei Yin asked: “Have you take a look at it?”

Rei Li’s face suddenly became serious, “I went in to take a look. Although I did not walk far, the inside is very amazing. Therefore, I immediately set up the signal receiver to call you from the plane.”

Rarely seeing him having such an expression, Lei Yin frowned.

—

After the next day’s lunch, Rei Li told his men to stay on the beach while he and Lei Yin walked into the woods.

When they arrived at the previous pit where he caught a hare, Lei Yin found that the area was completely different now. The soil around the pit has been dug into a few hundred meters wide, large, and deep pit. In that pit, stood a colossus glossy gray metal.

The size of that thing was completely beyond Lei Yin's initial estimate. Looking from above, the whole pit seemed to consist of that thing alone, it felt as if they have dug out a part of ancient fortress. The whole scene can only be described as 'looking at the tip of the iceberg.' Seeing this, Lei Yin had no idea how much of that thing still buried in the soil.

From top to bottom, its height was more than 30 meters, even Lei Yin, with his power, did not dare rashly jump down. Therefore, he did what Rei Li do, tying a rope on a large tree trunk near the pit, and then slowly climbed down.

When he reached the bottom of the pit, Lei Yin saw, on the surface of several large metal plates, there were several large patterns. These patterns looked very strange and difficult to understand.

Rei Li said: "I never imagined this thing turned out to be so big. If we want to dig the whole thing, we may need two or three months to do that. Fortunately, we are lucky, because it did not take long for us to find an entrance." He said as he walked with Lei Yin toward the Eastern part of the pit.

Arriving at the so-called entrance, Lei Yin noticed that it was not a formal entrance, but a gap that was the result of a huge external force. This gap was very big, enough to let four people walked through it side by side. Rei Li and Lei Yin then went inside each with their own portable powerful searchlight.

Until around 8 o'clock in the evening, the two people finally came out from the gap.

When they came out, the master and disciple, two people's faces were very serious.

Looking into the darkness from outside the gap, Lei Yin bitterly smiled, "I hope we're not opening a Pandora's box."

He originally thought it was one of Japanese underground bases or labs during the World War II so he wanted to dig it out to see the inside.

Although Lei Yin has no resentment for Japan's ordinary people, regarding the Japanese government who stubbornly refused to acknowledge the crimes that were committed during World War II, he can't let them go. If it was a lab, he did not mind 'to beat a drowning dog,' and put it into light. He wanted to see the expressions of those self-righteous lawmakers in the face of various countries reporters. But he did not expect it would turn out to be something so incredible.

Rei Li's eyes revealed a strange look as he said: "If we can use those things inside, even if we want to conquer the world, that is not entirely impossible."

"Do you want to be like Hitler? Don't be silly, in a large scale war, advanced weapons are not the key to victory. Moreover, how can you ensure that your subordinates are not going to betray you? More importantly, there is no such thing as inexhaustible energy in this world, that includes these things. If they can be used, no one knows how long they will last."

Rei Li somewhat said in frustration: “I am just saying. Besides, striving for hegemony over the world is too tiring, not suitable for me. It’s better for me to stay in my role as an underworld gang leader and continue my debauchery. Master, now what?”

Lei Yin asked back: “Those men you bring with you, did they know the route here?”

“They should not, because I am the only one who piloted the plane. They all sat inside the cabin.”

Lei Yin nodded his head slight assured, “Fortunately, you did not bring too many people. Now the only thing we can do is to get this thing re-buried, and then quietly leave as if we have never been here.”

Rei Li with a bit pity looked at that gap, and then said: “Okay.”

The next morning, Rei Li and his seven men came here again. He then commanded them to bury the pit with soil again.

Being ordered to re-bury this thing, although those few men felt strange, since they have long been used to obediently take his order, they did not dare to say their minds and do according to order.

Running downhill is usually faster than uphill. Similarly, burying a hole is much easier than digging one. These eight people

dug out this pit for nearly half a month, but when they buried it, they only spent less than four days time.

After the whole pit was buried, in order not to let Naoko and the others worry about him, Lei Yin planned to immediately go back.

After not seeing his master for so long, although Rei Li wanted to stay with him for several more days, he knew the gravity of this matter so it's better for him to bring his men back as soon as possible. Therefore, he purposely put himself in the pilot seat and flew the plane away from this deserted island.

After they left, Lei Yin looked at this deserted island, sighed, and launched his small plane.

—

Due to Japan, as with the other Asian countries, using examination-oriented Education mode, exam grade played a huge factor on entering the University. Especially in Tokyo where quite a few of prestigious Universities were located at, various forms of short term or long term tutorials can be found everywhere.

In the Eastern part of Shinjuku, there was a quite famous tutorial agency. Allegedly, many students who took part in this agency's cram school were admitted to the elite Universities. Therefore, it attracted a lot of parents to enroll their children in this agency.

At 9:30 P.M., a bell sounded from within this tutorial agency,

indicating that the tutorial was over.

After a while, a stream of students came out from this tutorial agency.

In the slightly crowded flow of people, a girl with fluttering long hair attracted the attention of many people near her.

Usually, students who normally study well have some obvious characteristic. For example, the most common one was shortsighted because of overusing the eyes, lack of exercise which made their bodies unfit, and there were quite a few with introverted personality and not good at communicating with people. Although no one can say that this theory is absolutely correct, it certainly covered a large part of them.

But this theory obviously cannot be applied to this girl. All the people who knew her knew that her grades were very good, so good that they did not seem to think that she needed this cram school.

The girl was unlike the others who wore thick glasses, her body was surprisingly slim and moving. The warm smile that she put on her face when she talked to her companion showed that she was not an introverted person. But the most important thing was that she was very beautiful.

Such a smart and beautiful girl was hard not to attract the attention of others. Therefore, a lot of male students in this tutorial agency were aware of her presence. Therefore, everyday,

there would be one or two letters in her drawer asking her to study together.

When they were out of the tutorial agency, the girl said to her companion said: “Sorry, Little Juan, I may not be able to go back with you today. My sister just called me and said she would come and pick me up, so I am going to wait here for her.”

“What, you actually have a sister?” Her companion asked in surprise.

The girl smiled and nodded her head, “Her name is Kazumi, one year older than me. Although not my biological sister, she treated me very well. Last time I told you that my home is in Hokkaido. But I actually live away from home in her house. Half a month ago she was back from vacation.

“She started working yet?”

“Not yet, she is now a first-year student in Teikyo University.”

Her companion gawked: “A student in elite Teikyo University? That’s so awesome.”

When the two people spoke, a Honda stopped not far away from them. Then, a young woman in a white knee-length dress and a silver thin frame glasses came out from the back seat of the car.

After getting off the car, she called out toward the girl, “Rumi.”

“Kazumi, you’re here.” Seeing her, the girl very happily ran toward her.

Worthy to be a student from an elite University, so classy. The young girl’s companion enviously looked at the smiling Kazumi.

“Is uncle Maeda also here?” Rumi recognized the car belong to Ryutaro Maeda.

Kazumi smiled without saying a word.

“I’m sorry, but you need to guess again.” Along with a familiar male voice, a young man walked out from the driver’s seat.

After seeing that person, Rumi was completely shocked, then her eyes slowly teared up.

“Rumi, I’m back.” Lei Yin said with a smile at her.

“Senior!” The long hair waved through the air as the girl rushed toward that man.

Chapter 194 - Mood

Watching the seemingly a bit absent-minded girl, Kazumi stopped her tutorial and asked, “Are you tired? Let’s take a break first.”

Rumi nodded her head.

“What’s wrong, something on your mind?” Kazumi held her hand and asked.

“Nothing, maybe a little tired.”

“You little fool, still trying to pretend in front of me. Is it because of brother?”

The kendo girl finally faintly nodded.

Actually, the reason why she wanted to spend her summer in Tokyo was to attend the cram school, but another reason was she wanted to spend some time with him. Although Kazumi told her the ship that he boarded did encounter a storm, he was fine. But even so, she was still very worried, and not until she saw him back with her own eyes would she finally at ease.

Half a month later, she finally managed to wait until he returned from the College educational trip. But since coming back, he was always out for several days and spent very little time at home. He did not even back for two night’s straight, which made this young

girl very frustrated and worried.

After bowing her head to think for a moment, the girl looked up and asked: “Kazumi, in University....Does senior have a girlfriend?”

Looking at her deep in the eyes which harbored a sense of loss which she greatly repressed to not come out through her nervous look, Kazumi’s heart could not help but ache.

Caressing her hair with her right hand, Kazumi said with a smile: “Don’t think about it, brother does not have any girlfriend in the University, this I can guarantee.” His girlfriend is not in college. But of course, she did not say this sentence.

Hearing this answer, the kendo girl suddenly relieved, and she gradually restored the smile on her face.

Pulling Kazumi’s hand and head resting on her shoulder, the girl said in a soft but firm tone: “Kazumi, I will give my best so that I can be admitted to Teikyo University. I want to be able to see him every day, just like in high school.”

Listening these words through her ears, Kazumi felt sour in her nose, and when she wasn’t looking, her hand casually wiped something in her eyes and said: “Let’s end today’s review now, how about we go sit in the living room?”

“I am fine, you go. I want to do some practice questions.”

Kazumi somewhat helplessly said: “I don’t know what to do with you. Forget it. There’s no use for me sitting out there alone, let me accompany you again.”

The young girl very happily grasped her hands, “Kazumi, you’re really good.”

Watching the bright smile on her face, Kazumi secretly made a decision in her heart.

—

Opening the front door to see the one who knocked was indeed Kogure Ryoko, Aiko emphatically said in a strange voice: “So it’s actually Miss Ryoko, oh such a rare visitor, I thought you were going to stay with your boyfriend and couldn’t get away even for a moment.”

Kogure Ryoko rolled her eyes, “You miser. I just missed our appointment once and you still remember it until now. What about Asami and the others? Are they here?”

“They’re all here, and we’re just waiting for you. You are always late.”

“I know, you’re really becoming wordy you know.”

“Hateful, the one who is late is you, and you dare to say I am wordy?”

While bickering, the two people walked into the living room.

They saw Asami and Ai sat beside the table playing poker with a young man. Kogure Ryoko could not help but pause, and then asked Aiko in a low voice: “Aiko, who is he?”

“Fool, he is Gennai Masashi.” Aiko snappily said.

“What? Gennai Masashi?” Kogure Ryoko almost cried out.

Looking back, the last time she saw this old-school fellow was two years ago. She carefully looked at him from the side and realized that he was indeed him. However, compared to two years ago, he seemed totally different; he has a flavor of a mature man so she was unable to recognize him for a moment.

Seeing Ryoko, Asami smiled and said: “Asami, you’re here. Long time no see.”

Ai with a quiet personality also greeted her, “Hello, Asami.”

Seeing these many familiar faces, Asami felt as if she was back in high school.

Adding one person to play the card game, the atmosphere became

more lively. However, Ryoko's mind was somewhere else. She was curious about what this wacky guy did now after not seeing him for two years.

In the conversation, after hearing he was a college student at Teikyo University, Ryoko looked at him with a look of disbelief.

“You’ve got to be kidding me, aren’t your grades in high school very rotten? How did you get into Teikyo University?”

Lei Yin teased her by saying: “I am the kind of guy who usually bad at grades but have extraordinary performance in exams; It’s called explosive power. How about it, want an autograph?”

Kogure Ryoko indignantly said: “Ghost believe your words. A guy like you can actually get into the elite Teikyo University, this is so unfair.”

“Hey, what’s with these words, what ‘a guy like you?’ It seems like a jealous woman is really unreasonable.”

“Bah! Who is jealous of you? Let me tell you, my boyfriend is the vice president of the student council. Very powerful, right?”

“What does it have to do with you?”

“He is my boyfriend.” Kogure Ryoko could not help but say out loud.

“You mean, if one day you violate the University’s regulation, he can cover you and help you hide the crime, right? If that’s the case then it does have a little use.”

“You....”

Aiko discontentedly said: “Hey, you still want to play cards or not?”

Asami smiled at them while Ai secretly watched that person.

At this time, Naoko came down from the second floor.

Lei Yin looked at her and said: “Did the kid fall asleep?”

Naoko sat down next to him: “She did.”

Lei Yin warmly asked: “Are your wounds still hurt?”

“No, just feel a bit itchy.”

“That’s good, it means the wounds have already begun healing.”

From his full of concern tone of voice, Kogure Ryoko remembered that two years ago he and Aiko’s sister were a couple, but two years later, with six years age differences, the two of them

were actually still together. And between them, there was a very comfortable warm feeling.

Suddenly, Kogure Ryoko realized something and asked: “Aiko’s sister, are you injured?”

Naoko replied: “It’s nothing. Just accidentally scratched by glasses by last week’s earthquake. It’s okay now.”

“Scratched where?” Ryoko did not see any visible wound on her.

“On the back.” Naoko pointed her shoulders area.

When Ryoko looked at her back, she can clearly see the small bump under her clothes, which was obviously a gauze.

Aiko was haunted by the memories: “I came back only to see blood on the ground. It scared me to death, thinking about what might happen. If sister did not call me from the hospital, I would have called the police.”

Lei Yin could not help but feel a bit guilty. At that time, he was still on the island helping the others to fill the pit. Although no one can predict this kind of thing, if he was still in Tokyo he could have at least half the chance to come here. In other words, at least he would have had half the chance to protect her from injury.

As if realizing what was in his mind, Naoko reached out her hand to grasp his hand, and then shook her head gently.

Seeing no one paid attention to the card game anymore, Aiko said: “Let’s stop the game. How about we go out shopping?”

Several other girls agreed to her proposal, they had wanted to go to Shinjuku to buy clothes.

But Naoko cannot go out yet because of injury. So, Lei Yin kept her company at home like the previous several days.

After they were out of the apartment, Kogure Ryoko astonishingly said: “Although I haven’t seen him for two years, I really can’t believe that guy actually got admitted to Teikyo University. This can already be classified into top ten incredible events.”

Ai suddenly said: “I think it’s not that incredible for student Gennai to get admitted into Teikyo University.”

Kogure Ryoko strangely said: “Why do you say that?”

“Because....Because student Gennai always gives me the kind of feeling that I cannot see through.”

“I don’t see anything out of the ordinary in him. Aiko, Asami, let’s stop talking about him. My boyfriend knows that you guys don’t have a boyfriend yet so he wants to find a couple of nice guys to set up a meeting to see if you guys can be a match with them. I heard that all of them are hunks, do you want to participate? By

the way, I think little Ai should go, in any case, you don't have a boyfriend."

Aiko curled her lips and said: "You make it sounds like no one wants us. I hate this kind of meeting, it looks like a blind date. Moreover, it feels like we're some kind of merchandise being assessed by those guys."

"Missy, please, in these days, the interaction between men and women are like these, either you choose him or he chooses you. This meetup between college students is very common. Moreover, with your look, which guy would refuse you? Come on, why don't you go try it, maybe you can find a good man."

"I don't want to. In our campus, there were some boys who wanted to set this kind of meetup with us but had been rejected by us. It's annoying."

"I see you still have not had a boyfriend so I kindly give you a chance. If you don't want to go then so be it, you fellow who don't know other people's good intention. Asami and Little Ai, you guys are going to go, right?"

Asami said with a smile: "If Aiko goes I go."

Ai pondered for a moment and then said: "I read in the newspaper that some boys who participate in this kind of meetup put drugs in the girl's drinks."

Hearing their words, Kogure Ryoko rolled her eyes.

But then she suddenly thought of something and looked at Aiko with a doubtful look, “Aiko, don’t tell me you still like that guy Gennai?”

Looking at her slightly flustered look, Kogure Ryoko was even more sure of her assessment.

“That’s our taxi, let’s go.” Aiko did not dare to look into her eyes, hurriedly walked toward a taxi by the roadside.

Seeing her like this, Kogure Ryoko sighed: “I still don’t understand, sister Naoko and Aiko are both beautiful women, but how could they both like that guy Gennai. A guy like him in my school are everywhere.”

Asami watched Aiko’s back and gently said: “You wouldn’t understand.”

—

After carefully pulling the gauze, Lei Yin noticed the wounds looked a lot better than yesterday. It seemed like if the wounds continued to heal like this then in a few days they will be completely healed.

After he opened the box of medicinal ointment and put it on the table, he scraped some of that white ointment with his clean right

index finger, and then gently applied it on the wounds.

Once again feeling the refreshing feeling from the wounds, Naoko could not help but ask curiously: “Lei, what cream is that? Why every time you apply it on the wounds it feels cool and very comfortable.?” The day before yesterday, Lei Yin suddenly brought this box of ointment here and told her it would treat her injury. Without any suspicion, Naoko very obediently stopped using the prescribed medicine and began to use this box of ointment.

After he finished applying the ointment, Lei Yin replied: “This is my homemade box of ointment. It’s very good for treating external wounds. Moreover, after the wounds are healed, they will not leave any scars.”

“Really?” Hearing the words will not leave any scars, Naoko said in a pleasant surprise.

After securely wrapping the wounds with a new gauze, Lei Yin put his arms around her waist and said: “My Naoko is so beautiful, I certainly don’t want to leave behind any shortcomings.”

A burst of thick sweetness welled up in Naoko’s heart. Feeling agitated, she turned around and hugged him around his waist and then tightly attached her head to his chest.

“Fool, be careful, your wounds are not completely healed yet.” Lei Yin hastened to hold her waist, not letting her move.

Touching her silky skin on her bare waist, as well as smelling her delicate fragrance, Lei Yin's mind was entirely intoxicated, just wanting to hug her tightly.

The two people quietly hugged each other. After a while, Lei Yin bowed and kissed her forehead, "Thank you, if it weren't for you, that kid would have been injured." He knew that at the time of the earthquake, because they did not have enough time to hide under the table, Naoko pressed Amy on the floor to protect her with her body; The wounds that she carried on her back was the result of the broken glass that scratched her back that day.

Naoko softly said: "I never imagined Amy will accept me as a result of that, I feel very happy."

Lei Yin stroked her hair and said: "Although that kid is well-behaved, sometimes she is very stubborn. I was worried you guys would continue to be like that.

Seemingly remembering something, Naoko could not help but laugh, "You know what Amy said to me in the hospital?"

"What?"

Naoko said with a smile: "She said, she can give half of you to me, but on the condition that she wants to sleep together with you at night."

"Hey, I am not a pork that can be cut in two, ok! Truly admires

you guys.” Lei Yin lovingly kissed her nose and then slowly moved down to kiss her luscious red lips.

Naoko gently responded him.

When Lei Yin taste her cherry lips and her fragrant tongue, the sensitive body of Naoko began to get excited. The moaning sound that came from her breathing became increasingly heavy as her whole body became as hot as fire.

Knowing that if things went on like this her body will ignite, Lei Yin started to slow down in order to accommodate her wounds.

After a long time, their lips were separated again. Lei Yin quietly appreciated her excited appearance that has yet to return to her touching bashful state. Naoko really cannot stand his burning gaze and once again attached her face on his chest and lightly hum.

After she slightly recovered, Lei Yin said: “Today I want to take the kid to my home for a visit. After coming here for so long, besides Kazumi, none of them have ever seen her.”

Naoko smiled and said: “I wonder what will be your mom and Mr. Maeda’s reaction when they see her?”

Lei Yin smiled, “I’d like to see that too.”

Chapter 195 - Request

After being knocked down so many times, when Rumi wanted to stand up again, Lei Yin walked over and pulled her up.

“Okay, that’s it for today.” He said, taking off her protective mask.

“Senior, do I regress a lot?” The kendo girl looked very frustrated.

Wiping the sweat from her forehead with a sleeve, Lei Yin smiled: “Because you have to prepare for the University entrance exam, you don’t have much time to practice before this. After your test, I will help you return to the previous level.”

Rumi looked at him, and after a while, her eyes started to redden, but she immediately bowed her head, not wanting him to see.

“Let’s go outside. It’s almost dinner time. You better take a shower first.” Lei Yin touched her head and then walked up the stairs with her protective mask.

Watching the slender figure went further and further, the girl could not help but gently let out a cry, “Senior.”

“What’s the matter?” Lei Yin looked back at her.

The girl was afraid to look him in the eye, “I, I will work hard.” Lei Yin smiled, “Come on up.”

Watching his warm smile, the girl all of a sudden has the impulse to burst into tears.

“Senior.” When Lei Yin was about to go up to open the basement door, Rumi suddenly called out.

“What?”

“Nothing, just wanted to call.” The girl said with a smile.

Back to the living room, when Amy, who sat beside Kazumi watching cartoons on TV, saw Lei Yin she immediately jumped down from the couch and ran over to him.

Lei Yin easily picked her up and then said to Kazumi: “Is Maeda back?”

“He said he will be back in half an hour. Rumi, look at you so sweaty like that, go take a shower.” She went over to the kendo girl to help her take her protective clothing off.

Amy very curiously watched Rumi took off her protective clothing.

After Rumi went to the bathroom, Kazumi asked Lei Yin:

“Brother, how is Naoko-sensei?”

“She is much better now. In a few days, her wounds will be completely healed.”

Kazumi paused and then said: “Brother if Naoko-sensei is all right, can you spend more time with Rumi? For several days you weren’t here, she became dispirited.”

Lei Yin grimaced, “Kazumi, in addition to thinking about Naoko, you should be able to understand my intentions in doing this.”

Kazumi worriedly said, “I know you don’t want Rumi to be too dependent on you, but this time is too important for her, and I really don’t want to see her unhappy look. Brother, please.”

This was the first time he heard her asked him with a face filled with concerns like this. Lei Yin thought and then said: “Let me think about it, okay?”

Kazumi looked at him and nodded.

At dinner time, Rumiko was stunned to see the little girl skillfully eat her meal with chopsticks.

“Masashi, isn’t Amy a foreigner? How could she used chopsticks?”

Lei Yin put a peeled shrimp to the little girl's bowl and said: "She wanted to learn on her own initiative. When she saw me eat with chopsticks and find it interesting, she wanted to try it. She is very smart; It took only two days for her to learn." Maeda said with a smile: "When I heard there's a foreign girl at home, I bought a knife and a fork on my way back, it seems unnecessary now."

Lei Yin asked Amy: "Kid, delicious?"

The little girl nodded at once.

"Eat more if it's delicious." He said while he picked the cooked rice grain from the corner of her mouth.

Looking at this pretty little girl, Rumiko's motherly instinct flared up and began to give her the dishes from time to time. And each time she gave it to her, the little girl would smile to show her thanks. Seeing how sensible she is, Rumiko became even more fond of her.

Rumi, who sat on the other side of the table, watched the life-size doll-like Amy with great interest.

After eating the meal, Lei Yin noticed Rumi holding a bag as if she wanted to go out. He knew she was about to go to the cram school. Because there were many students enrolled in the Tutorial Agency, the class has been divided into day-class and night-class, and she happened to be placed on night-class.

Borrowing the car key from Maeda, Lei Yin said to the kendo girl: “Rumi, I’ll drive you.”

“Senior, you don’t have to, I can take the subway.”

“What’s with this politeness, come on.”

The kendo girl very happily said: “Thank you, senior.”

Seeing him going out, Amy immediately went after him.

Lei Yin said to her: “Kid, you stay here and watch TV, okay? I will be back soon.”

In order to give them the opportunity to be together, Kazumi immediately came over and took the little girl’s hand to reassure her.

Amy thus agreed.

Seeing the joyful look of Rumi as she walked out with her brother, Kazumi’s face gradually revealed a smile.

After driving for about 30 minutes, Lei Yin stopped the car near the entrance of the Tutorial Agency.

When the girl unfastened her seatbelt, Lei Yin asked: “Rumi,

you're going to finish your class in 9:30?"

"Yes, senior."

"At that time, I want you to wait for me at the entrance, I will come and pick you up."

"You really don't need to do this, senior." Rumi was overwhelmingly flattered.

Lei Yin added: "Not only tonight, until the end of summer, as long as I have the time I will come and pick you up from school. I really don't feel assured for a girl like you to walk alone at night."

"Senior...." The moisture in her eyes was more and more welled up, and then quickly merged into water droplets which then flew down.

"Little fool, there's nothing to cry about this thing." Lei Yin gently wiped the tears with his sleeves.

Rumi could not stand it anymore and threw herself into his arms and cried out loud.

She did not know why, but after he came back from the vacation, Rumi always felt there was something different in him. He often was not at home and no longer call herself kid. Nor did he gently stroke her hair like before. This seemingly sudden sense of distance made her very upset and confused.

This seems a bit rushed, Lei Yin thought in his heart as he watched the weeping teenage girl tightly clung to him.

After a while, when the girl's cry slowed down, Lei Yin gently stroked her hair and said: "Do you have something in your mind? If you don't mind, you can talk to senior about it."

Hearing his gentle tone, the girl's tears could not help flow down, "Senior, I beg you, please don't ignore me."

"Fool, how could it be? Rumi is the most obedient and well-behaved, how could I ignore you?"

The girl raised her head back and looked at him, and after a while, she suddenly blushed and whispered: "Senior, I, I...."

But before she finished, Lei Yin gently embraced her head on his bosom, and then said: "Rumi, I know what's in your mind. But now you are still young, let's talk about it after you go to college, okay?"

"Do, do you mean this?" Rumi's voice trembled.

"Yes."

"Senior." Rumi's heart was filled with a burst of ecstasy. She tightly hugged him with both of her hands very excitedly while

tears continued to come out of her eyes.

Seeing her body shudder with excitement, Lei Yin sighed in his heart. His right hand continued to gently stroke her hair.

At this time, the car was filled with tranquility.

After this night, the young girl seemed to get her spirit back, and her face always responded with a familiar cheerful smile like before. At the same time, Lei Yin also increasingly spent more time at home to help her with the study. Everything seemed to be back to the three people's high school's days.

Despite the language barrier, Rumi, who still retained her inner child, increasingly got along better with Amy as days went by. Sometimes, they even slept together, which made Lei Yin very happy.

—

“Rest assured, the kid is doing very well. If you don't believe, at that time, you can check whether she gains weight or not.”

“What, the old fox said hello to me? Thanks then, you can give him my thanks.”

After the conversation ended, Naoko asked: “Is that, Alice Lynn?”

“Yes, she wants to ask about the kid’s situation.”

“Lei, Renjia haven’t seen Amy for many days too. Can you bring her here for two days?” Naoko took his hand and said. (When girls try to be cute or flirty, they call themselves Renjia – which means ‘other people’ – to their male friend/boyfriend)

Rarely hearing her coquettish tone, Lei Yin could not help but palpitate with excitement.

“If I promise you to bring her over, how are you going to repay me?” Lei Yin smiled a bit evilly.

Naoko immediately blushed and lowered her head, unable to look him in the eye.

Lei Yin climbed on her bed and put her horizontally in his arms, and then whispered: “Tell me, how are you going to repay me?”

Naoko could not hold her shame and gently hammered his chest in a coquettish way: “Bad guy, you always bully me.”

Lei Yin smiled, bowed and kissed her on the forehead, and then carefully played with her delicate and beautiful jade-like feet with his left hand.

After a while, Naoko moved, rolled up like a cat lying in his arms

so that he can play more easily. At the same time, her breathing became more and more rapid.

When he was about to take her dress off, Lei Yin heard the sound of someone outside trying to open the door with a key. He had to somewhat reluctantly moved near the ear of the already wet with excitement Naoko and whispered: “Aiko is back.”

Naoko was taken aback and immediately sat up.

“If I knew this, we should have gone to the villa. What a waste.” Lei Yin said while helping her zip her zipper on the back of her dress.

The still blushing Naoko gently laughed, “You go out first, okay? I still have to organize first.”

Lei Yin nodded, bowed, kissed on the cheek, and walked out of the room.

Just as he walked out of the room, he immediately saw Aiko walking outside the room with four cans of soda.

To see him suddenly appeared, Aiko uncontrollably called out and the two cans of soda slipped from her hands.

Lei Yin deftly caught them all in a flash.

Aiko calmed herself down and asked: “When did you come?”

“Half an hour ago. You’re done shopping?”

“Yes.” Remembering that he just came out of her sister’s room, Aiko could not help but blush.

When the other three girls, who sat on the sofa, saw Lei Yin, they looked very surprised. They did not expect him to be here. But soon, the three girls seemed to realize something and, as if by prior agreement, they all blushed.

Seeing their expression, Lei Yin knew it was useless to say anything, it will only make matter worse. So he dryly coughed out loud and said: “Since there are so many people, why don’t we play cards?”

“O, okay.” Asami was the first one who came to her senses and immediately agreed.

“I agree, let’s play cards.” Aiko followed.

Although the five people sat down to play cards, the atmosphere still seemed a bit awkward. The rather bold Kogure Ryoko, from time to time, secretly looked at Naoko’s room.

Lei Yin could not help but wryly smile in his heart, Letting these several girls run into that thing was truly a misstep. However, his face was still calm and unperturbed, totally worthy of his

tempered ultra-thick face.

After vacationing in Kagoshima and Kyoto, Lei Yin has no interest to travel elsewhere again. Usually, in his free time, he would take Amy, Kazumi, and Rumi to stroll randomly around Tokyo. Sometimes when Rumi has to stay at home to review her study, Lei Yin would take Amy and Naoko instead.

Time flies. A month later, the very long summer holiday would soon end.

One day, a woman rang the doorbell of the Gennai House.

When Lei Yin brought this impressive woman into the house, Amy immediately cheered and ran over to her, “Lynn!”

She was Amy’s guardian, the mixed race beauty, Alice Lynn.

That night, after having dinner, Alice Lynn said to Maeda and Rumiko: “Thank you for your kindness and hospitality in taking care of Amy this period of time, thank you so much.” Because Alice Lynn was well-versed in several languages, and Japanese was one of them, she did not need Lei Yin to translate it for her.

Maeda immediately said: “Please do not be so polite. Actually, we did not do anything. The people who took care of Amy all this time are Masashi, Kazumi, and Rumi.”

At this time, Lei Yin asked: “When do you plan to take the kid

back?”

“If possible, I want to take Amy back the day after tomorrow.”

All good things will come to an end, Lei Yin was very clear of this. Therefore, he quietly stroked the hair of the little girl who seemed a bit down. Amy was also very clear, as long as she loved Alice Lynn, she must go back with her. Because of this, she did not cry. However, it was very difficult for her to be in a good mood.

Lei Yin took her in his arms and softly said: “Kid, don’t be like this, wait until the next year’s holiday and we can play together again.’

“Lei, I don’t want to leave you,” The little girl could not help but tightly cling to his neck and cry out loud.

Seeing this, the other people could not help but sad.

“You guys should wait here and slowly talk, I am taking the kid out for a walk.” With that, he hugged the little girl and walked out of the door.

When he went outside, feeling the gentle blow of the cool breeze, Lei Yin smiled and said to the little girl: “How is that dog called Rei Li doing?”

Hearing his question, the little girl’s mood seemed a bit better, “It looks so big now. Moreover, it has a lot of puppies, and each

one of them is beautiful. But Mr. Bacon always complained that they gnawed away the flowers in the garden.”

“Ohh, why don’t you tell me what each of them looks like?”

“There is one who is fully black, I called it Black. But I don’t understand why the white dog would give birth to a black puppy. Moreover, it’s very naughty. Mr. Bacon said it chewed the flowers the most. There is also one with yellow pattern, it spent all days sleeping....” The little girl began to speak, and Lei Yin also asked some questions now and then. Gradually, the little girl forgot about the matter of returning home and cheerfully said about the frogs, puppies, and the school’s matter.

When he went back in, the little girl’s head has been lying on Lei Yin’s shoulder asleep while her mouth revealed a faint hint of a smile.

Looking at her sleeping angel-like face, Lei Yin smiled, lowered his head and gently kissed her forehead.

Afternoon of the third day, at Narita International Airport departure lounge, looking at the rapidly flying silvery giant plane, Lei Yin asked Maeda for a cigarette, lit it up, and slowly smoked it.

Walking to the nearby crying kendo girl, Lei Yin stroked her head and said: “Rumi, let’s go back.”

Rumi looked up at him, and then gently nodded.

Chapter 196 - Back To School

The long Summer holiday has ended. Whether they were elementary, junior, high school students or college students, all have returned to school in droves.

After having such a long holiday, almost everyone has not recovered from the aftermath of the Summer holiday. Many people still happily gathered around and talked about their vacation time. While others simply lying on the table, asleep.

Lifelessly glancing around, Takeda weakly said: “Masashi, did Amy go back already?”

Lei Yin replied while reading a book, “She went back last week.”

“Did she cry when she left?”

Remembering when at the airport she was so dead set on holding him and not wanting to let go, Lei Yin subconsciously put down his book.

Seeing his thoughtful look, Takeda did not ask again.

After a while, he said an oath-like sentence, “I have decided that this semester, I have to find a girlfriend.”

Lei Yin smiled, “What a lofty goal.”

“Hey, what do you mean by that?”

“Nothing, I just admire you for having the courage to challenge the impossible.”

“Bah, don’t think you’re having a girlfriend is so great, Watch me, I will definitely have a girlfriend first before Yoshikawa.”

At this time, a burst of crisp high heels stepping on the floor sounded from outside the classroom. And then the door was opened, and a figure walked in.

Students who saw that person immediately became high in spirit, their eyes unblinkingly staring at that person.

The clear sound of high heels continued to ring in the classroom. That person did not sit down on the nearby vacant seat but went straight to the platform.

“Who is she?”

“So beautiful!”

“Is she a teacher? But why I have not seen her before?”

“I have not seen her either, maybe she is a new teacher.”

“She should not be a teacher, right? You see her dressed like that?”

“So sexy. My god, I am dying.”

After arriving at the podium, that person, who became the object of conversations among the students, turned around to face the students and said with a clear and sweet voice: “Students, hello. I am a new teacher responsible for teaching you the economic structure. My name is Myojin Sasako. Please advise.”

This one was a stunning woman, with beautiful facial features, bright smile, and elegant style. On top of that, she wore a pink tight miniskirt. As long as she bent over, the underneath of her miniskirt would be exposed. Her astonishing curve can make most men’s eyes red and mouths dripping with saliva. All of the boys were focused on staring at her impressively stretch out twin peaks and the smooth rounded pair of slender legs below her skirt.

Although Teikyo University did not impose any kind of clothing restriction on campus, very few female students dressed so sexily. Not to mention the teacher.

Hearing her introduction, many male students believed she was really a teacher. Moreover, she will be their teacher. Suddenly feeling a burst of pleasant surprise, all of them vigorously clapped.

“Thank you very much.” Myojin Sasako expressed her gratitude.

But the female students were not all that enthusiastic, a few of them cursed in a low voice.

At that moment, a male student stood up and asked: “Teacher Sasako, do you have a boyfriend?” As soon as he finished, the classroom immediately filled with laughter.

Sasako answered with a smile: “I haven’t worked long enough so I currently do not have a boyfriend.”

The male students immediately cheered up.

That student continued: “Teacher, what kind of guy do you like?” The other students immediately stopped making any sound, all carefully listened.

Sasako thought for a moment and then said: “Teacher like a strong guy, because it feels more secure.”

A girl cannot help but scold the word “Slut.”

The boys continued to raise all sorts of questions, such as her age, blood type, horoscope, and so on. Some even also directly asked for her phone number and her measurements size.

Except for not answering some of the questions that were too excessive, regarding phone number and measurements size

questions, Myojin Sasako deftly handled them with ease.

Seeing the boys' non-stop questions, a bespectacled girl finally can't hold back anymore, stood up and said: "Teacher, don't you think that your dress is quite inappropriate?"

Myojin Sasako somewhat strangely asked that girl: "The student, do you think there is a problem with my dress?"

"Of course, you are a teacher, is it necessary to put on that dress to teach in the class?"

Myojin Sasako thought about it and said: "Because I have just come back from overseas, I am still accustomed to wearing this. But since you think that this is a problem, then teacher will pay attention to it the next time."

The male student at the front immediately said: "Teacher, no. You look great in this dress, we have no problem with that at all. Do not listen to her nonsense."

"That's right, teacher, don't care about them."

One of the boys cursed that girl: "You dead 38 need to shut up, you're obviously jealous of teacher Sasako that is prettier than you."

The other boys immediately echoed loudly.

That girl's eyes immediately reddened, seemingly about to cry. Seeing this, several other girls immediately stood up and started to curse the other boys, not wanting to be outdone by them.

For a time, the classroom was very noisy, even people who stood outside the classroom can hear their cursing voices.

Upon seeing this, Myojin Sasako immediately urged: "Stop the quarrel, this time, teacher is indeed wrong, you all quiet down please?"

A boy loudly said: "Teacher, no matter what, we will support you."

As soon as he finished, some other boys immediately expressed their support.

"Thank you, but please do not quarrel, okay?"

Seeing her delicate and charming look, those guys were immediately seething with excitement, wishing that they could hug and protect her.

Seeing this farce performance on the first day of school, Lei Yin, who sat at the rearmost, could not help but laugh.

Truly a femme fatale. In less than ten minutes, this woman

already caused so much trouble, I don't know what will it become in the future. When he turned to look at Takeda, he found him no different than the other boys, fiercely staring with red complexion at Myojin Sasako's hot figure.

Thinking that the noise in the classroom has become too harsh, Lei Yin took his book to walk pass in front of the unconscious Takeda and then all the way to the door.

As if hearing the sound of someone walking, Myojin Sasako turned her head to look and, sure enough, saw a guy opened the door ready to go outside.

Because he walked too fast, Myojin Sasako can only see his side.

A week later, the students slowly put away they relaxed state, started to attend the class or goof like before.

While the Economic discipline, which usually gave people a dull feeling, received an unprecedented upswing in popularity. But strictly speaking, only the Economic structure's course has this popularity. Nothing changed in the other Economic courses, they all still lacked the interest from other people.

Many other students, or even senior students, as if by prior agreement, paid close attention to this course's lecture time. As soon as they have the time, they would rush to grab a position.

The goals of these people were all the same, not to earnestly

attend the lecture, but to see the rumors of a sex goddess.

After the first day's class commotion, Myojin Sasako really stopped dressing so sexily like the last time. But still, she seemed to have a special preference with a skirt so she would usually wear woman's suit with a knee-length skirt. Her blushing ears and sexy figure still caused the adrenal glands of many students to go crazy.

So, less than a week later, her classroom would always full. Her popularity skyrocketed. Soon, almost all people knew the campus has a very sexy beautiful teacher.

Because her class has become too noisy, Lei Yin seldom went to Myojin Sasako's class. This afternoon, when he came out from the library, a person walked to the front of him.

“Can I talk to you.

Looking at the face that seemed angry and happy at the same time, Lei Yin grimaced and then nodded.

Narimura Haruko did not talk but quietly led him along the way. Lei Yin made a conscious effort not to ask anything, just silently followed behind.

While they walked, the new campus beauty attracted a lot of students attention. Many of them noted that there was a young man walking behind her.

Narimura Haruko soon led him to a cafe outside of campus.

Lei Yin did not order any coffee for himself but looked at her and asked: “Why are you looking for me?”

Narimura Haruko looked at him at a glance and then pulled out a checkbook from her bag.

After writing something with a pen on it, she tore off that cheque and gave it to Lei Yin.

“I don’t want to owe someone something, this cheque is for you.”

Lei Yin received the cheque and saw the number on it. He then lightly said: “What a surprise, your life is actually worth so little money.”

Narimura Haruko’s eyes flashed a trace of anger, “How much do you want?”

Lei Yin gave her a thoughtful look for a while before saying: “If I say it, you won’t be able to afford it, forget it, just consider it as you owe me one.”

“Exactly how much do you want?” Narimura Haruko looked at him coldly.

“Compared to receiving a substantial compensation, I prefer the

feeling of being a creditor. In other words, if I don't ask you anything, you'll owe me a favor all your life."

"You...." Narimura Haruko clenched her teeth in anger.

Lei Yin stopped bothering with her anymore, stood up and walked toward the entrance of the cafe.

Watching him go further and further, Narimura Haruko's eyes emitted a complex look.

After he completely disappeared from her field of vision, Narimura Haruko read the cheque in her hand in a daze.

.....

"Masashi, what do you think about Sasako-sensei? I never thought there would actually be such a sexy teacher in our university. I now find that choosing the Economic major was a very wise decision." One day when they returned from their day in college, Takeda excitedly said.

"But I heard that the one who chose your major was your old man."

"On the premise that I can get admitted to the Teikyo University. Don't talk about this, let's talk about Sasako-sensei, do you think she would like a guy like me?"

“How should I know?”

Takeda was about to say again but suddenly felt the car in front of them was a bit familiar. After a careful look, he immediately said: “Isn’t that Sasako-sensei’s car? Why would it stop here?”

Seeing the open car door, Takeda felt even more strange.

“Strange, where did she go?”

At this time, Lei Yin suddenly said: “I think I hear the sound of someone calling for help.”

“What? Where?”

“Let’s go there, maybe it’s Sasako-sensei.” With that, he immediately pulled Lei Yin and ran to that side. In any case, he got this “human weapon” by his side so Takeda didn’t feel any danger in doing this.

Across the alley, Takeda and Lei Yin came to the neighborhood park.

Led by Lei Yin, Takeda went to the quiet lawn. There, he finally saw the sexy Sasako-sensei.

But this time, she was lying on the ground being pressured by a

man on top of her. Her mouth was tied and can only shout dull voice. Her skirt was opened by the man, revealing a large amount of her snow-white skin.

“What are you doing!?” Takeda shouted as he darted toward the man.

“F*ck off.” That man lifted his foot to kick him. This kick was very fast. Takeda was unable to dodge in time and was kicked in the stomach. He immediately covered his belly and tumbled to the ground in pain.

The man was unable to kick again because at this time a burst of sharp pain came from behind, then a surge of great strength threw him out.

When he looked back and saw Lei Yin, that man immediately climbed up and ran away.

Lei Yin was too lazy to chase so he walked over and pulled Takeda up.

“You’re not dead, right?”

“B*stard, if I see you again, I will kill you!” Takeda screamed at the direction of the fleeing man while clutching his stomach.

“He’s already gone, what are you yelling for.”

“It’s easy for you, but that was really hurt.”

At this time, a small and timid voice sounded from beside them, “Thank you very much for what you did just now.”

Takeda saw Sasako-sensei stood before the two with hands on top of her torn clothes, trying to cover them.

Seeing her bare snow-white skin, Takeda’s eyeballs almost fell out.

“Don’t mention it, it’s our pleasure to help you, Sasako-sensei. By the way, Sasako-sensei, How could you run into that person?” Takeda asked.

Sasako-sensei said with red eyes: “My car broke down. When I don’t know what to do, that man suddenly came over to help me. I thought he was a good man, Who knew, when I wasn’t paying attention, he dragged me here.

“Sasako-sensei, you are so pretty; you must be very careful in the future.”

Hearing Takeda’s praise, Sasako blushed, “You are too kind.”

With that, she turned to Lei Yin and said: “Just now, thank you for hitting that man.”

Lei Yin lightly said: “It’s nothing, he’s just afraid of our numbers.”

Sasako-sensei bowed to the two of them and said: “In any case, thank you very much.”

Takeda scratched his head and said: “It’s nothing.”

Chapter 197 - Appointment

Seeing Takeda in a suit standing in front of the mirror all the time, Yoshikawa said in a slightly sour tone: “Surprisingly you actually encountered such a good thing, if I knew that, I’ll go back together with you two.”

“This is a cruel fate, student Yoshikawa, you better continue to pursue your queen Haruko.” Takeda very smugly smiled.

Yoshikawa snorted: “Bah, although I am not on the scene, I already knew the one who finally beat that pervert must be Masashi. If I am Sasako-sensei, I would have to be blind to take a fancy of you.”

Being completely seen through by Yoshikawa, Takeda’s face could not help but flush. He wanted to argue, but then he remembered a very important issue. He immediately ran toward Masashi and Akira Siraishi who were playing chest near them, and said to Lei Yin: “Masashi, you already have such a great girlfriend, don’t snatch away Sasako-sensei for me, okay?”

With eyes kept on staring at the chest board, Lei Yin flatly said: “I have no interest in that woman. You can do whatever you want.”

As soon as he heard these words, Takeda’s heart suddenly relaxed a lot. He patted his friend’s shoulder very happily and said: “Very good, you, this kid, still have a little conscience. Hey, why don’t you change clothes? You’re not planning on wearing that to the

appointment, right?”

“I am not going, I have a date with Naoko tonight. I am going to her place in a moment.”

Takeda was stunned, “What, you don’t go? But she wants both of us to go together.”

“You’re the only one who agreed to an appointment with her, I didn’t say anything.”

“But if you don’t go, it won’t look good.”

Yoshikawa finally could not tolerate anymore and cursed: “No wonder you still can’t pee straight, having this rare opportunity to be alone with a girl and you still spout out nonsense.”

As soon as he heard this, Takeda immediately awoke and, under excitement, could not help but hug Masashi and say: “Masashi, you’re really good.”

“Idiot, let go of me.”

Suddenly, Takeda stopped and asked: “Tell me, what do you think I should do? Also, I don’t know what kind of topic should I discuss with her. You know, if I can’t come up with a conversation while eating it would be really awkward.”

“These are questions that you should ask Yoshikawa.”

Thinking that it made sense, Takeda went back to ask Yoshikawa.

Yoshikawa was too tired to refuse him and had no other choice but to personally teach and give him examples. Takeda earnestly listened from the side, but afterward, afraid that he would forget, Takeda simply used a pen and wrote it all down on a piece of paper. For this idiot behavior, Yoshikawa felt angry and funny at the same time.

.....

“Yasuda, where did I do wrong? Would you please tell me? I will definitely change.”

“Akemi, it’s not about you, we just don’t fit together.”

“You’re lying, we have been together for almost three months and always get along very well, right? Why are you suddenly telling me such words?”

“As I said, we don’t fit.”

“Do you like other girls? Is she prettier than me?”

“It’s not like what you think, we really just don’t fit. You better

find another boyfriend.”

Seeing his increasingly aloof expression, the girl finally covered her face and ran away.

Looking at the gradually disappearing girl, Yasuda sneered.

This is the fifth, right? Forget it, including her, I already forgot how many of them. In his eyes, all the women are the same.

After seeing this scene not far away from there, Take Asasei could not help but horrifyingly say: “It’s the couple’s break-up. This is my first time seeing a couple’s break-up scene in such a close distance. It really shocked me.”

Kazumi who walked side by side with her snappily said: “I told you to watch less drama, this thing will only lower your IQ.”

“What are you talking about? But that guy is so handsome. Oh, here he comes.”

Looking at the increasingly nearer Yasuda, Kazumi sneered: “Some men are just like that. Because they have good looks, they like to play some retarded game of love. And then conceitedly think they are the so-called people’s lover, as if all the women are inseparable from them. Whenever I see one of them, I really want to throw up.”

Hearing that her friend’s voice was not small, Take Asasei quietly

looked at Yasuda in front of them and hastily pulled her and then said in a low voice: “Kazumi, don’t say it so loud, other people will hear it.”

“Don’t worry, pigs won’t understand human language.”

Take Asasei could not help but blush.

Yasuda, who also heard these words, was not angry but looked at the girl who spoke those words with great interest.

Is this woman trying to get my attention? Yasuda thought as he carefully looked at the girl.

That girl was one of the girls with very unique qualities. Her half-long hair reached past her shoulder. Although she has indifferent expression, her delicate facial features plus a pair of thin frame silver glasses gave off the feeling of a person with an intellectual beauty. She was unlike other girls who put on skirts to stir up emotion, but dressed in an ordinary jeans and a woman’s white shirt instead. However, the overall look was clean and comfortable.

When he looked at her face, he found that she did not even look at him. However, her companion would, from time to time, secretly look at his direction.

Interesting. Watching her back go further and further, a smile appeared on Yasuda’s lips.

After walking away, Take Asasei said: “Kazumi, what you’ve just said seems a bit excessive.”

Kazumi disapprovingly said: “I actually think I am too lenient. Asasei, I give you a piece of advice, don’t look at a man just on the surface. Otherwise, you will suffer like that girl he just dumped.”

“I know, you’re getting more and more like your brother, both of you like to preach.”

Kazumi smiled, “Come on, brother is waiting for us.”

When the two came to the campus cafeteria, they saw Takeda was talking about something.

Seeing them walked in, Lei Yin casually pulled two chairs for them to sit.

“Hey, Kazumi you’re here.” Seeing Kazumi, Takeda immediately stopped talking.

“What do you want to order?”

“As usual would be fine. Asasei, here, choose your order.” Kazumi handed Take Asasei the menu.

“You, ckck, you need to occasionally change your taste you

know.”

Kazumi said with a smile: “Brother, aren’t you the same? What were you guys talking about just now?”

Takeda was startled, beckoned with his hand and said: “It’s nothing, just casual talk.”

Take Asasei loved to pull his leg; seeing his expression, she knew he must have something he tried to hide so she immediately asked Yoshikawa: “What were you guys talking about? Tell us.”

Yoshikawa revealed a mischievous smile, and then said: “Just now Takeda was talking about his date with Sasako-sensei last night. Alas, it truly makes me envious.”

“Sasako-sensei? Is that the newly transferred extremely beautiful teacher?”

“Yes, it’s her. The day before yesterday, Sasako-sensei, on her way back home, encountered a sexual harasser and was later rescued by Takeda and Masashi. In order to repay them, Sasako-sensei invited them for a dinner. Just now Takeda was telling us about her joyful dinner with Sasako-sensei.”

“You guys don’t misunderstood, it’s just a simple meal. Nothing else. Don’t listen to Yoshikawa’s words.” Takeda went all out to explain himself while carefully observing Kazumi’s face.

Kazumi turned and said to Lei Yin: “Brother, did you go too?”

“No. Takeda was the one who agreed, not me. I don’t have the time to go to such a thing.”

Hearing her brother’s answer, Kazumi slightly relieved. She did not want more than one rival for Rumi.

Seeing Lei Yin did not help him, Takeda put on a long face and said: “You guys don’t misunderstand, that was just a meal. I haven’t done anything.”

Take Asasei curled her lips and said: “Humph, so you wanted to do something.”

From the side, Yoshikawa fanned the flame by saying: “Before he went out, he was really happy and when he came back he won’t stop bragging about it.”

Takeda looked at him with clenched teeth: “Yoshikawa you b*st*rd.”

.....

The next afternoon, upon seeing the good weather, Lei Yin laid on the grass outside the library to read books.

After reading for half an hour, he felt someone was coming

toward him.

Sure enough, after a while, a pair of long, slender, and beautiful legs appeared before him. On top of that beautiful legs – that can make people’s adrenal glands crazy – was a knee-length blue skirt. If you continued to look upward from this angle, it can make most men nosebleed like crazy.

In order not to see things that should not be seen, Lei Yin immediately sat up.

“Good afternoon, student Gennai.” Myojin Sasako smiled and greeted him.

“Hello, Myojin-sensei.” Lei Yin politely replied.

“I never thought I could meet student Gennai here, I am really happy. Do you mind if I sit down.”

“Please help yourself.”

After sitting in the grass in a very moving graceful posture and straightened her skirt, Myojin Sasako said: “Today the weather is really good. No wonder student Gennai would choose to read a book here. Unfortunately I am girl. Otherwise, I also want to study while lying down here like you. It’s really comfortable.”

Lei Yin did not say anything, just patting the pages on the book where there were bits of grass.

After biting her lips, Myojin Sasako asked: “That night, why didn’t student Gennai come? Can you tell me the reason?”

Lei Yin replied: “That night I had something to do so I can’t come.”

“So it’s like that, I thought student Gennai did not come because you don’t like me. Now I can finally relieved.”

Looking at her smiling face, Lei Yin said: “You misunderstood.”

Myojin Sasako suddenly looked at him with a strange eyes, and after a while, suddenly said: “Maybe this is too abrupt, but student Gennai look a lot like a person that I knew. From the first time I saw you, I already have this feeling.”

“People with similarities is a very common thing.”

Sasako shook her head, “No, student Gennai really look like him.” With that, she suddenly pulled out a black wallet, took out a photo, and handed it to him.

“He is my fiance, the one I said look a lot like you is him.”

Lei Yin took a careful look at that photo for a moment. In the photo, there was a man in a suit and a cheerful smile was plastered on that man’s face. His right arm was around a woman’s waist.

That woman is Sasako-sensei. He looked at the man's facial feature and did find the man look a lot like him."

"Did you marry your fiancée?" Lei Yin probed.

"He's already dead. Just six months ago, because of a car accident." Sasako-sensei's voice became very depressed.

"I am sorry, for bringing up this painful event."

"It's okay, being able to talk this past event with student Gennai make me feel much lighter. Somehow, everytime I see student Gennai, I feel like I see him. Am I stupid?" Sasako-sensei gradually teared up.

"The dead is gone, please restrain the grief."

After reaching out her hand to wipe her tears, Sasako-sensei said with a smile: "Pardon me, I forgot myself."

Lei Yin was silent.

After standing up and stretching herself, Sasako-sensei looked at the blooming flowers in front of her. After a while, she looked back at Lei Yin and said: "Student Gennai, I feel very comfortable being together with you. Can we meet again in the future?"

Lei Yin replied: "I am still a student here and I do take your

course.”

Sasako-sensei chuckled, “You’re right. But I have a request, I don’t know if student Gennai can give your promise?”

“Please say.”

“I would like to find a chance to go with student Gennai alone for a meal, to repay for what happened last time, would you?”

Lei Yin frowned, “You are too kind, but we just used our slight effort, no need to be repaid like this.”

Sasako-sensei appeared to be very disappointed, “So, student Gennai rejects my request?”

Lei Yin thought for a moment and then said: “If you really want to thank me for what happened, I want us to go out with Takeda. After all, at the time, he was also on the scene, and he gave a lot of effort.”

“That makes sense, but I really want to eat a meal together with student Gennai alone.” Sasako-sensei’s face turned very red.

Lei Yin dismissively said: “I think that won’t be necessary.”

Sasako-sensei’s eyes gave off a look of disappointment once again, but she soon cheered up and said: “Very well, but when I

invite you out next time, you can't miss the appointment again, okay?"

"Okay." Lei Yin nodded.

Seeing his agreement, Sasako-sensei finally smiled.

Chapter 198 - Game

“Hello, I have found the book you are looking for, I am going to bring it to you, okay?”

“Thank you.”

After checking out later, a bespectacled young man turned to Kazumi, who was tidying a bookshelf, to say goodbye. Kazumi politely nodded back in courtesy.

After the young man left the bookstore, Take Asasei, who wore the same blue uniform as her, turned to her friend and asked: “That man is coming here again, he is really interested in you.”

While continuing to clean up, Kazumi said: “Don’t talk nonsense, he came here just to buy books.”

“But every time he came, you are the only one he called to help him find the book. The strangest thing is, all the books he’s looking for are all on sale. And he looked at you with a weird look. I am sure he is intentionally trying to find a chance to get close to you.”

Kazumi snappily said: “Please, Miss, reduce your time in watching rom-com, okay? Or you can just simply find yourself a boyfriend, to avoid you daydreaming all day.”

Take Asasei curled her lips and said: “What, why are you making

this about me? It's you who are obviously too slow."

At this point, she suddenly pulled her friend and said: "Hey, that handsome guy is here again."

When Kazumi looked up, she saw Ogata Yasuda leisurely walked from a nearby parked red sports car toward the bookstore entrance.

Seeing him coming directly to the bookstore from the car, Kazumi's face suddenly sank, "I am going to work." With that, she went to the innermost bookshelves.

"Kazumi...." Seeing her walked away, Take Asasei was a bit overwhelmed, looking at Ogata Yasuda arriving at the door.

After walking into the bookstore, the tall and handsome Ogata Yasuda immediately attracted the attention of several young women who were sitting in there reading a book.

Ogata Yasuda smiled and looked around, and then went over to Take Asasei and said: "Little Asasei, you are cute as usual today. Has no one ever told you that you look great in uniform?"

Afraid to look him in the eye, Take Asasei lowered her head and red-facedly said: "No, nobody has ever told me that."

"Ai, it seems like many people don't have vision."

Take Asasei's face became even redder, "You, you are looking for Kazumi, right? She, she is in there."

"You are really clever, it's rare nowadays to find a girl who is clever and cute at the same time."

Feeling his fingers gently caressed her cheek, Take Asasei's mind began to jump like crazy.

After a while, when she looked up, she saw the man has walked toward Kazumi. Her eyes could not help reveal the look of loss.

Looking at the girl, who was quietly tidying the bookshelves, Yasuda's face revealed a strange smile.

He was getting increasingly interested in this girl.

Two weeks ago when he first saw her, she cursed and scolded him. That's when he decided to teach this arrogant girl a lesson.

But for a wealthy playboy like him, the so-called lesson was obviously not going to be so vulgar.

After acquiring a detailed information about the girl, he began his game.

But more than a week after the game began, he discovered that

all the effective means he used in the past did not seem to impress her.

He saw that when she received his flowers, she would not hesitate to throw them into the trashcan. And when he appeared in front of her, she would completely ignore him like he was invisible, and did not give him any chance to speak.

He has never encountered such an interesting opponent.

Walking slowly, Yasuda went over to her side and said: “Good afternoon, Kazumi.”

Kazumi frowned and, after distancing herself two feet away from him, looked at him coldly, “May I help you?”

Yasuda said with a smile: “Nothing, I just want to see you.”

“You are so considerate, but I have no illness and no pain, I don’t need someone to deliberately visit me.” With that, she walked away to another location.

Yasuda closely followed and after a while, sighed and said: “Kazumi, why are you treating me so coldly?”

Kazumi said without looking back: “Not everyone is worthy of respect, some people live only to waste the Earth’s resources. Therefore, from an environmental point of view, all those people should be humanely destroyed.”

A flash of irritation passed through Yasuda's eyes, This girl is still a razor mouth.

He thought for a moment and then said: "I want to buy a book, and I want you to help me find it."

"If you want to find a book, please go to the front desk to find a sales lady to get it for you."

"But I want you to help me find it. I believe your manager will not reject a small request from a customer."

Hearing his words, Kazumi stopped her footsteps.

Yasuda somewhat smugly looked at her. Without knowing why, he wanted to see her angry look.

Unexpectedly, when she turned her head, she said: "You are right, the customer is the King. Please tell me the title you are looking for, and I will check it out for you."

Seeing no trace of anger in her expression, Yasuda could not help but become a bit disappointed.

After casually telling her the title, Kazumi went to the front desk computer to query.

When she came back, she said to him: “Sir, the book you are looking for has already been found, please wait here, I will help you fetch it.”

The more polite she was, the more Yasuda’s heart felt a sense of frustration.

Seeing her as cold as ice soulless eyes, he could not help but raise his estimation about this girl once again.

After getting his book, Yasuda sat in the customer’s lounge – watching her work – and began to plan for what to do next in his heart. He began to understand that the general means were completely useless toward this girl.

At this time, he heard a burst of ring tone from her side.

He saw her pulled the phone, pressed the “ok” sign, but did not immediately speak. She quietly walked to a deserted corner, seemingly afraid of affecting other people’s reading.

Most people won’t notice this detail but Yasuda’s heart was gently touched.

Because she was too far away, he could not hear her talking on the phone, nonetheless, when he saw her relaxed smiling face while talking on the phone, an absurd sense of irritation burst forth in his heart.

For two weeks this woman never gave him a good face to see. With his prominent family background and his good look, this was the first time he encountered such a tricky object.

Although he did not want to say it, he has to acknowledge that this girl's smile was pretty good, there was an indescribable flavor within it, which completely different than her usual ice-cold look. Suddenly he wanted to know who was on the phone with her because his intuition told him that the other is a man.

After a few minutes, Kazumi hung up the phone and went back to the bookstore.

Seeing the residual faint smile on her lips, Yasuda's heart felt a burst of discomfort.

When Lei Yin hung up the phone, Takeda asked: "Will Kazumi come?"

Lei Yin said, "She said she has to work until 9 o'clock in the evening so won't be able to come."

"Oh, I see." Takeda was a bit disappointed.

"Come on, Yoshikawa and the other are waiting for us."

As the two walked outside the teacher's building, a red figure came up to them.

“Student Gennai, Student Takeda, hello.”

“Hello, Sasako-sensei.” Takeda immediately looked at her with a face full of smile.

Lei Yin also politely responded: “Hello sensei.”

They seemed to never see her wore the same outfit twice, today Sasako-sensei wore a pink knee-length skirt. The handiwork was exquisite and the material was good. Once again they perfectly matched her devil-like figure. Compared to her previous sexy dress, this time, she was more like a senior white-collar worker in a big company.

Seemingly unaware of the fiery eyes of the other students watching her, Sasako-sensei said to Lei Yin: “It’s good to see you two, there is something that I need to do so I would like to ask you for a favor, can you help me?”

“No problem, if there’s something you need us to do, Sasako-sensei, please, just say it. We will definitely help you.” Takeda did not even think, he immediately agreed.

In his heart, Lei Yin called out the word idiot.”

Seeing Takeda’s agreement, Sasako-sensei very happily said: “That’s great. It’s like this, besides the students from economic faculty like you two, there were suddenly many other students

who applied for my Economic Structure course. So, all of sudden, I have to check a lot of students' homework. But I am so busy recently so I would like to ask you to come to my office to help me check their homework."

"So it's this thing, no problem." Thinking that he could be together with her in the same office, Takeda wanted to shout with excitement.

Lei Yin frowned and said: "Sasako-sensei. We are also students, it's not good for us to check for the works of other students. Moreover, our performances are not that good."

Hearing his friend's words, Takeda wanted to jump over to cover his mouth. Assuming, of course, he is not afraid of dying.

Sasako-sensei smiled and said: "Dont' worry, I will give the answer to you, you just need to grade the work according to the correct answer. Moreover, you will only grade the works from students who chose this as an optional course. For those who took this as a compulsory course like you two, I will grade them myself. Because among my many students, I only know you two, if you two won't help me, then nobody can."

Seeing her delicate and charming appearance, Takeda would agree to anything she asks even if she tell him to kill someone. "Rest assured, Sasako-sensei, we will go to your office on time. May I ask when will it be? Is it tonight?" At this time, he started to let his imagination roam.

“No need to be that fast, what about tomorrow afternoon, would that be okay? I remember tomorrow you guys don’t have any classes.”

“Okay, tomorrow afternoon then.”

Sasako-sensei was not that assured so she looked at Lei Yin and said: “Student Gennai, are you coming?”

Takeda’s most worried about was Lei Yin so he immediately replied it for him: “Don’t worry, sensei, tomorrow, I will take him with me.”

“Then thank you. That’s about it, I’ll take my leave.”

“See you again, sensei.”

Takeda foolishly watched her go further and further, lost in thought.

Lei Yin slapped his head, “She’s already gone, what are you looking at?”

Takeda licked his tongue and said: “In addition to your girlfriend, this is the first time I see such a sexy woman. No, she should be sexier than your girlfriend, because even though your girlfriend has everything, her dress is usually too conservative. If Yoshikawa knows this thing, I wonder how his jealousy would look like?” Smugly thinking about this, he can’t help but laugh.

At this time, Lei Yin looked at him and said: “I wonder when did you start to become my spokesman?”

Seeing his friend's full of dangerous eyes, Takeda immediately smiled and said: “You just saw it too, If you don't go, maybe I won't be able to go either, just consider this as you accompany me, okay.”

After withdrawing his gaze, Lei Yin lightly said: “Takeda, I advise you not to get too close to that woman.”

“D*mn, do you think I have no chance at all?” Takeda said with great dissatisfaction.

Lei Yin knew this guy is already so infatuated with her so it's useless for him to continue talking.

“Come on, Yoshikawa is certainly wanting to cut people now.”

“Okay, let's go.” Takeda began to fantasize about his buddy's expression when he informs him the news.

The next afternoon, seeing Takeda's expression when Takeda said he wanted to perform seppuku in front of him if he did not go with him, Lei Yin reluctantly had to go.

After knocking Sasako-sensei's office door, the door was quickly

opened.

Seeing it was Sasako-sensei herself who opened the door, Takeda felt all the blood in his body suddenly rushed to the top of his head.

Sasako-sensei's attire was completely different than the elegant dress she wore in the class this afternoon. Unexpectedly, she wore the same tight fitting miniskirt that they saw on the first day they met her. Although the color was different, it was still the same length, in which, if she bends her waist, it would be completely exposed.

That thin layer of cloth wrapped the figure that can make men commit crimes. In front of this devil-like physique that can make most men on fire, Takeda had the most original response. Fortunately, he hid it fast enough, otherwise, he would show his boner on the spot.

"You guys are here, come on in." Seemingly did not seem to realize Takeda's embarrassment, Sasako-sensei welcomed them very happily.

After going in, Takeda was fidgety. But Lei Yin carefully looked at the office environment.

The lighting in the office was good and everything was spotlessly clean. This meant that Sasako-sensei was a clean person. On the desk laid a notebook computer, and a thick stack of papers were next to it. It seemed like those were the students' works they are going to check.

“I am sorry, I only have some soda here,” Sasako-sensei said as she opened the refrigerator.

“No problem, I can drink everything.” Takeda immediately said.

After handing them two cans of soda, Sasako-sensei took that stack of papers and put it in front of them, “These are the students’ works, are they too many?”

“Not much, not much.” Takeda, for the first time, was grateful to those ill-disposed students who took this course.

After finding their seat, Lei Yin did not want to waste time and wanted to immediately start working.

Sasako-sensei gave them two pieces of papers with the correct answers and let them sit on one side of the table while she sat on the other side.

After Sasako-sensei gave them the grading issues that they need to pay attention to, Lei Yin, without further ado, started working his part.

This made Takeda who initially wanted to chat with Sasako-sensei first had no choice but to start working too.

After smiling at them, Sasako-sensei also began to work.

The three of them did not say anything so the room suddenly became very quiet, only the rustling sound of pen on paper friction can be heard.

With respect to Lei Yin, who fully concentrated in the work, Takeda began to have distracting thoughts.

Even though she sat on the other side of the table, he could smell the faint fragrance smell that floated from Sasako-sensei.

Secretly watching her towering twin peaks and deep cleavage, Takeda felt all the blood in his body rushed downward.

This is killing me, how could I concentrate in this kind of environment? Just having to restrain my heavy breathing is not easy. Looking at Lei Yin who sat nearer to Sasako-sensei, he found that Lei Yin did not have any distraction at all, and the pile of papers he already finished checking was getting higher and higher. If he did not know that this guy has an amazingly beautiful girlfriend, he would really suspect him of having an unmentionable disease. In front of this super sexy woman, the guy actually has no reaction at all.

In order to suppress his dry throat, Takeda kept drinking the soda.

Before he knew it, he already emptied his can of soda. He did not realize it; he just subconsciously poured it into his mouth.

The first one to realize this was Sasako-sensei: “Student Takeda, I’ll fetch you another can.”

“No need.” Unfortunately, even his own voice was weak.

“No need to be polite.” Sasako-sensei smiled, went to the refrigerator, and grabbed a can of soda.

Half an hour later, the three were still working. But strictly speaking, only Lei Yin and Sasako-sensei who worked well. Takeda has been in a state of suffering.

The more he stayed close to this sexy sensei the more he felt that his self-control was slipping. Especially when he intentionally or accidentally saw her snow-white deep cleavage and the two little projections on top of the twin tower behind that layer of thin fabric.

N*pl*s? Is Sasako-sensei not wearing that? This discovery almost made Takeda spurt out blood.

Intellectually, he was glad that he managed to drag Lei Yin with him or he would never be able to see this. But subjectively, he regretted it. If Masashi was not here, that would be great. This thought appeared in his mind more than once.

His hand was now holding the third can of soda. Even if he has a thicker face, he would not dare to finish the soda inside it to the

last drop and ask for the fourth can of soda.

He felt as if there was an animal in heat inside his heart who constantly struggled to escape. He was trying hard to contain this animal; he must never let other people know about this.

Eventually, Takeda thought that if this went on any longer, he would definitely go crazy. So, he said to the person who caused him so many physiological reactions: “Sasako-sensei, I forgot to do something. I need to go out. I will be back soon.”

“Since you need to do something, if you can’t come again, that would not be a problem.”

“I, I’ll be back soon.” With that, Takeda stood up and turned around in a hurry and then walked out of the door.

After he closed the door, Takeda was finally relieved. Fortunately, I turned around so quick, otherwise, if Sasako-sensei saw it, I would utterly lose my face.

Because of Takeda’s departure, now there were only Sasako-sensei and Lei Yin, two people in the room.

“Student Gennai, do you know what student Takeda wants to do?”

Lei Yin’s face showed a trace of an indistinct strange smile. “I don’t know, maybe he has something important to do.”

Sasako-sensei did not ask again, but looked at the soda can in front of him, “You have drunk your soda, right? I’ll get you another one.”

“Thank you.”

After putting down the soda can, Sasako-sensei quietly walked to his side and then stopped right behind him.

“How’s the checking going?” She slowly bent down to look at his work in front of him.

When she bent over, Lei Yin immediately felt something soft rested on his shoulder. Not only that, a surge of thick fresh fragrant perfume aroma constantly drilled into his nose.

Sasako-sensei suddenly said in a pleasant surprise: “Masashi, your writing is beautiful. I thought all the boys have similar writings, I never thought that you could actually write so well.” As if inadvertently, she called him by his name.

“You flatter me.” In addition to his shoulder, he felt another soft thing slowly attached at the middle of his back.

“Glad to have you here to help me, otherwise I really don’t know how I could check these many works.”

He felt her voice was getting nearer. This time, the skin on his ear can even feel the breath that came out of her mouth. And that two soft things seemed to gently press his shoulder a bit.

Lei Yin knew where this would lead to so he tried to stand up. Suddenly, Sasako-sensei gently said in his ear: “Do you smell it?”

“What?”

“My perfume. This perfume is called Luolemei, or Arabian Nights; It’s his favorite perfume. He had even told me to put on this type of perfume when I do that with him; he would come because of this. Masashi, do you like it?”

He felt that two soft things slowly rubbing his back, and he heard a moaning groan from her mouth.

“Sensei, this seems irrelevant to the work.”

“Masashi, since I first saw you I already like you, do you have no feeling for me at all? Emm....” Sasako-sensei accelerated the friction speed of her twin peaks, and her moaning sound grew increasingly heavier.

For a time, the entire room was filled with ambiguous atmosphere.

Suddenly, the knock on the door made all of these stops.

“Sorry to keep you guys waiting, I just get my things done and immediately rush back. On the way back, I bought some juices and snacks. Sasako-sensei, do you want to try it?” When the office door was opened, Takeda came in and said while carrying a bag of stuff.

“Thanks, but no thanks.”

“Sensei, why is your face so red? Is it hot?”

“Maybe because the weather is too hot, I was just about to turn on the air conditioner.”

“Today is kinda hot.” Takeda agreed, and then placed that bag of stuff on the table.

After properly venting out, the youth’s condition was much better; he no longer has difficulty in sitting like before. But he did not dare to look at Sasako-sensei again, so as to avoid making excuses to go out.

After a while, the three of them started to work again. This time, even Takeda also became very serious. Seemingly wanted to make up for his previous owed part, Takeda continued to speed up, and often made decisions just by a glance.

But on the other side, Lei Yin’s efficiency was actually reduced, because he felt that, under the table, a foot was gently rubbing his calf.

When he looked up to see the owner of that foot, he found that her head was lowered and she was seriously checking the works; she seemed to not know anything about what happened under the table. But Lei Yin can see the faint smile on the corner of her lips.

Chapter 199 - Goal

“Little Asasei, are you free tomorrow tonight?”

“What, what’s the matter?”

Ogata Yasuda said with a smile: “Nothing, I just want to invite you to see a movie with me.”

Take Asasei widened her eyes to look at him, “Are, are you asking me out?”

“Of course, other than you, is there anybody else?” read this at subudai11.com

“But, aren’t you....”

“What, you don’t like it?” Yasuda looked a bit disappointed.

Looking at Kazumi who was working at the innermost bookshelves, she lowered her head and said: “No, I like it.”

“That’s great. Tomorrow night at 8 o’clock, I’ll come to your place to pick you up. Oh, I don’t know where your place is, what should I do?”

“I’ll draw you a map, okay?”

“You are such a smart girl.”

Take Asasei's ears blushed: “It's nothing.”

When he slightly turned to look at the woman and found her face really became ugly, Yasuda's heart was very pleased.

This was his new plan that he cooked up a couple of days ago. He found that although the woman usually showed a pair of indifferent eyes, she was actually very warm toward the girl called Take Asasei. So, he no longer used his previous methods of dealing with women, but instead looked for a breakthrough by using her friend.

This trick turned out to be more effective than what he previously imagined. Since he started to pursue Take Asasei, the woman's face turned uglier by each day, which made him incomparably happy and thus dispelled his anger. He found that his battle of wits with the woman was far more amusing than to fool around with other women.

After work, in the bookstore's staff locker room, Kazumi was changing clothes together with Take Asasei.

Watching the constantly humming and smiling Take Asasei, Kazumi paused for a moment and then said: “Little Asasei.”

“What's the matter?” Take Asasei casually asked.

“That Ogata Yasuda is not a good person, you should not be deceived by him.”

Take Asasei's movement stopped, and then she looked down and faintly said: “I thought Kazumi would be happy for me.”

Kazumi was a bit worried, “Little Asasei, you also saw how he got rid of that girl, right? He is just a playboy who likes to play with other people's feeling, you....”

“That's enough!” Take Asasei loudly cried out.

Following that cry, the room went into silent, the air also seemed to condense.

After quietly buttoning up the last button, Take Asasei lifted up her full of tears face and looked at her. “Kazumi, you've gone too far.” With that, she ran to the door, opened it, and rushed out of the locker room.

Does every woman who fall in love is going to be this foolish? Looking at her friend vigorously shut the door, Kazumi bitterly smiled.

After a while, remembering the smug look of Ogata Yasuda, a wave of intense anger welled up in Kazumi's mind.

Bastard!

—

Next day at the campus, when Ogata Yasuda emerged from a building, an unexpected person that he expected stood before him.

Sure enough, she really came. However, she came much earlier than he expected.

“Can I talk with you?” Kazumi coldly looked at him.

“Who are you?” The beautiful girl on Ogata Yasuda’s side looked at her with hostility.

Kazumi did not bother with her; she just looked at the man and said: “I am waiting for your answer.”

Yasuda looked at her with a faint smile, “Are you looking for me?”

“Has anyone ever told you that you look disgusting when you put on airs?”

Yasuda was irritated, but he soon restrained his emotion. This woman always knows how to make me angry.

He stopped putting on airs anymore, “But it seems like the one who has the upper hand is me now. Therefore, I feel your tone should be a lot better than this. After all, the one who asked for a talk is you.”

“You remind me of those villains who hold the children and the woman hostage and then blackmail their family.”

“Just like doing a business, the businessman only look for the final result, and doesn’t care about the process.”

“It’s an impressive argument, I finally know the origin of the words lower than a beast.”

The girl cannot tolerate anymore and angrily called out, “Aren’t you a freshman? What are you trying to do? Don’t say it, I’ll say it for you. You must have been dumped by Yasuda, so you’re here to make trouble. Go home and look in the mirror, how could Yasuda likes a woman like you?”

Kazumi blankly looked at her, “You’re very noisy. Can you keep your mouth shut?”

“What, what did you say?” That girl’s face went white.

“If you continue to be noisy again, this playboy will shorten his fling-time with you and dump you in advance. Also, this guy, who you see as a prince charming, in my eyes, is inferior to a dog sh*t.”

With that, she turned to look at him, “If you don’t dare to come, that’s okay, after all, only a spineless man who is too coward to meet a defenseless woman.”

Yasuda showed a very interesting look, “Though I can refuse your request, I decide to accept your invitation. Set up a time for it.”

“Seven o’clock in the evening, at the cafe opposite the campus.”

“No problem, but I don’t agree with the place. How about this, let’s meet at the dining room in the movie theater where I set up a meeting with little Asasei. At the time, when I finish talking with you, I can directly watch the movie with little Asasei.” He deliberately brought Take Asasei’s name to see what kind of reaction she has.

But this time, Kazumi’s expression did not change one bit. She nonchalantly said: “So be it.” With that, she turned around and walked away.

“Wait a minute.” Yasuda suddenly called her.

“You want to renege on your words?” Kazumi looked back at him.

“Of course not. I just have one additional request.”

“What?”

“I want you to come wearing a skirt, and it must be a short skirt.”

Kazumi frowned, “Your so-called additional request has nothing to do with this, I refuse.”

“This request is indeed has nothing to do with this matter. But if you do not accept this request, I wouldn’t come to see you. Even if we meet, I would leave at once. You think about it.”

“You’re more boring than what I imagined.” Not wanting to see his face anymore, Kazumi turned around and left.

Ogata Yasuda showed a very proud look as he looked at her back.

“Yasuda, why are you doing this? Didn’t you say you only like me?” That girl realized that things weren’t as simple as she imagined so she hastily interrogated him.

Ogata Yasuda looked at her with cold eyes, “She said it right, you are really noisy.” With that, he broke free from her hands that were holding him and then walked away.

That girl looked at him with disbelief, and then loudly shouted from behind him: “Yasuda, what am I doing wrong?”

After opening the door, Lei Yin noticed Sasako-sensei, who was wearing a white miniskirt, standing in the doorway looking at him

with a smile.

The weather today was very bright, making this white miniskirt feel as if it was translucent. From inside the room, one can see the vague outline of the underwear, as well as its color.

It was already a miracle that, dressed like this, this woman did not even encounter a pervert on the road.

“May I come in?” Sasako-sensei said with a smile.

“Please.” Lei Yin had to open the door and let her in.

After putting a can of soft drink on the table before her, Lei Yin asked: “What’s the matter, Sasako-sensei?”

Sasako-sensei asked back: “Can’t I just come here to see you?”

“I didn’t mean that, please don’t get me wrong.”

Sasako-sensei thought for a moment and then said: “I don’t know if this is just my imagination, but I feel like, on this festive day, you are trying to avoid me. Am I right, Masashi?”

“It should be your imagination. Because I have no reason to avoid you, Sasako-sensei.”

“Really? That’s good then. I don’t want to be an annoying woman.” While speaking, Sasako-sensei stood up and seemed to look around the living room.

After a while, when she sat down again – as if it was a nonchalant move from her – she sat next to Lei Yin. Thus, Lei Yin immediately smelled her strong fresh scented Salome’s delightful perfume.

At this time, Sasako-sensei suddenly said: “Masashi, do you remember what I told you a few days ago?”

“About what?”

Sasako-sensei charmingly laughed, “You are still pretending to be silly.” At this point, she suddenly threw her arms around his neck and then said: “I told you that I like you.”

“Sensei, these are not words than an educator should speak.”

“Don’t lie to me. From your eyes, I can see that you didn’t regard me as a Sensei.”

“Perhaps Sensei saw it wrong.”

“Do you know what I like the most about you?”

“I think I have nothing worth your liking.”

“No, I really like your seemingly not-caring-about-anything expression. I already told you, now it’s your turn to tell me. Where do you like me the most?”

“That is a very abstract question.”

“Not at all abstract.” While talking, she suddenly grabbed Lei Yin’s right hand, and then put his hand on her waist.

After a while, she slowly pulled his hand up to gently press her left twin peaks.

At the same time, she gracefully leaned toward his ear and gently said: “Do you like this place? Those students who attend my class like to see them, but only you who are qualified to touch them. Em....” She softly moaned while pressing his hand to knead it.

After a while, she pulled his left hand over to her smooth thigh to caress it softly and then said with a heavy breathing: “And here; not only those male students, sometimes those male teachers stared tightly at my thighs. They looked like they want to eat me. Masashi, I am really scared.” She said that while slowly pushed his hand up toward her inner thigh.

After an indeterminate amount of time later, when she withdrew her hands she discovered that Lei Yin did not let her go, but continued to slowly grope these two places. This made her very satisfied.

Closely holding his neck, Sasako-sensei leaned toward his ear and gasped: “Masashi, do you know that every night before sleeping I always think about you? Do you know what a woman will do when she think about a man in the evening?” After saying these, her right hand slowly shifted toward his lower part.

Just as her hand was about to reach its destination, she suddenly felt her hand was caught and unable to move. Not only that, her other hand was also being locked. Suddenly, her whole body cannot move at all.

When she lifted her head to look, she saw the young man, who previously has already consumed by lust, was looking at her with a thoughtful expression.

“Masashi, you....”

“Although I don’t know what your objectives are, from a personal health perspective, I wouldn’t do such a thing with an unknown woman.”

Hearing his words, Sasako-sensei seemed very sad, and then loudly said: “What kind of person do you think I am? I am doing this because I like you, but you actually do this kind of thing to me.”

Lei Yin ignored her gushing-out-tears-like-crazy and sneeringly said: “You still want to continue this? You are definitely not that Myojin Sasako.”

Sasako-sensei stopped crying to look at him, “What do you mean by this?”

Lei Yin looked at her and said: “Although Myojin Sasako is indeed a real person and even has the same exact background as you, it is impossible to completely impersonate another person. Because although information can be falsified, other people who knew her all her life or people who came in contact with her can tell the true from the false.

Right from the beginning, when I rescued you from the hands of the pervert, and then you said I look just like your ex-boyfriend; All of these mean it's normal for you to have a favorable impression of me. Honestly, I did not see any flaw in these. But no flaw means there's a lot of flaws because both were too coincidentally linked together.

In order to investigate your background, apart from some general archives review, I also sent people to specifically go to Myojin Sasako's last known residence and University to investigate. From some of Myojin Sasako's teachers, friends, and neighbors' mouths, I learned that Myojin Sasako is a very introverted person, which is completely different than your character. And although your appearance is seventy to eighty percent similar to her, she is not as beautiful as you.

Although the appearance can be changed through cosmetic surgery and personality can also change later in life, one thing you do not know is that Myojin Sasako has a very small birthmark on her inner thigh, which cannot be seen from the outside. I got this information from her ex-boyfriend. One more thing, her ex-

boyfriend is not the man in the photo. Of course, you can explain that you have several boyfriends. But anyway, I am already sure that you are not Myojin Sasako. I have answered your question, now you should return the courtesy and answer my questions. First of all, who are you?"

Chapter 200 - Attraction

“Masashi, why do you want to hurt me like this? Is it wrong for me to like you?” Sasako-sensei looked at him with a face filled with grief and indignation.

“It’s an impressive acting, but a pity that I have to disappoint you, I never watch any romance.”

Lei Yin said while locking her arms behind her back to prevent her from playing any tricks.

“Is this how you treat a girl who likes you?”

“Congratulations, you are the first. To be honest, although I know that you are not Myojin Sasako, after checking out your identity, I do not even know your goals in approaching me. After checking out for so long without any result, I have lost some of my patience. But you actually came here on your own initiative. Now even if you do not open your mouth it does not matter, because my method of extracting information would not be much worse than your seduction method.”

Hearing his words, Sasako-sensei suddenly sighed and said: “You are a man who does not understand how to be tender.” At this time, her tears have stopped, and her indignant expression has melted away.

“Oh, the Fox finally shows its tail. I thought you are going to continue to pretend.”

Sasako-sensei slowly turned her face and smiled at him: “You know what? I am liking you more and more now. I admire the kind of man who is both intelligent and powerful. And you, are such a man. Do I really have no appeal at all to you?”

“Wild Leopard is a very beautiful animal, but also very dangerous. This is the kind of feeling that you give me. So, I give you one last chance, if you do not speak up, I am really going to force you to confess.” Lei Yin’s heart found that something is amiss, although he has firmly locked her in place, this woman appeared too calm.

“It seems like I have lost this round. But the game is not finished yet.”

Seeing her smiling face, Lei Yin was alarmed, This woman is really weird.

When he was about to move his hand to seal her acupuncture point, a surge of incredible force, without a warning, threw him onto the ceiling.

Just as he was going to crash into the ceiling, Lei Yin sent out a backhand palm toward the ceiling to offset that force, and then took advantage of this opportunity to jump down on the floor.

Seeing Sasako slowly stood up from the sofa, Lei Yin looked at her and said: “Are you an Esper?”

Sasako looked at him with a smile: “Maybe, maybe not.”

Lei Yin frowned, “What do you mean?”

“Now it’s too early to answer your question.”

Looking up at the deep palm print on the ceiling, Sasako looked at him with strange eyes, “What an amazing power. Just as I thought, you really are not an ordinary person.”

“So are you. I can’t believe you are one of those Espers, now I am getting more interested in your identity.” Lei Yin’s eyes revealed a dangerous look.

“If you look at people like that, people will get shy you know. As I said, now is not the time to answer your questions. But I lose this round so I temporarily take my leave.” After saying that, she leisurely walked toward the entrance.

“Why do you leave so soon, other people will say I didn’t even say hello to you.” With that, Lei Yin rushed toward her.

“Really!? If just now you were this warm to me, that would be nice.” When she was wearing her high-heeled shoes at the entrance, the entire shoes-cabinet suddenly rose up and flew at him.

Because the entrance was very narrow, Lei Yin did not have enough space to dodge. Therefore, he can only use his technique to grab that shoes-cabinet at an angle and then took advantage of this opportunity to throw that shoes-cabinet behind him.

In this short period of time, Sasako has put on her shoes and walked out of the door.

He can't afford to bother with the loud bang sound from behind him so he continued to pursue her.

But he suddenly had a bad feeling. He then saw the entire door was separated from the doorframe and came straight at him.

In this small entrance, Lei Yin simply has no way to dodge and had to kick the door.

His huge strength kicked the door back to hit the doorframe.

When Lei Yin rushed out of the door, Sasako's figure was already nowhere to be seen.

Can this woman fly? Lei Yin looked around a bit, but still cannot find her trace. Faced with a fruitless endeavor, Lei Yin had to go back to his apartment.

It was as if a Typhoon has passed through his living room, followed by a massive earthquake. That was the scene that he found when he came to his living room. That dead woman almost

destroyed his house.

After somewhat reluctantly set the door back to the doorframe, Lei Yin sat down on the couch to ponder.

—

“Excuse me, are you Miss Gennai?”

“Yes, I am.”

“Mr. Ogata told me if I see Miss Gennai to take you to where he sit at. Please come with me.”

That waitress brought Kazumi to a quiet corner, where she saw Ogata Yasuda dressed in a black high-quality suit looking at her with strange eyes.

Ogata Yasuda never thought this woman would look so much different in a skirt. In that moment, he was actually shocked.

She wore a knee-length folding skirt. Coupled with the fine tailoring and the same fabric at the top, the outfit perfectly showed her feminine curve. Not until now did he discover that this woman's figure was actually very good. Especially under her not long nor short skirt, her pair of slender and beautiful white legs attracted the various men's gaze at the restaurant.

Her over the shoulder length hair was without any decorations, just loosely hanging down. Her face still wore the same thin frame silver-rimmed glasses, but looking at the backdrop of her dress, everything seemed completely different than what she looked like usually. Under the dim lighting and the romantic atmosphere of the restaurant, she exuded a mature woman's ice-cold style. He has never seen this kind of style from his previously known women.

Without glancing at the person, Kazumi quietly waited for the waitress to pull her chair and then sat down.

“Please, feel free to choose what you like to eat. But the steaks in this restaurant are very good, do you want to try it?”

Yasuda pushed the menu in front of her. His eyes never left her even for a second.

Kazumi ignored him and turned to the standing nearby waitress and said: “Bring me a glass of water, please.”

Yasuda said: “Do you usually come to the restaurant just to drink water?”

“Of course not, I just don't want to dine together with a person who can cause me indigestion.”

“Can you not always guard against me like I am a hedgehog?”

“This is a good question, but before you ask, please examine your

behavior first.”

Hearing her answer, Yasuda finally knew the feeling of not-know-how-to-deal-with. In his experience of always dealing smoothly with women, this was the first time he encountered this kind of feeling.

With a handsome appearance, prominent family, and flirty nature, all of these combined can easily capture the heart of any woman he fancies.

But this woman seemed completely immune to all of these. He did not even understand what this woman thought. Therefore, he later went to her friend, which was a clear violation of his aesthetic principle. He somehow regretted it now. If he did not do so, perhaps this woman would not hate him so thoroughly. At this step, it was not like he is trying to pursue her anymore. Instead, it evolved into a quarrel with her, which is far from his original plan.

The reason why things turned into this was because, some time ago, her indifference and repulsion to his successive offensive on her produced an intense sense of frustration. Combined with her irritating speech, it made him lose his previous calm. Thus, it reached the now seemingly a failure plan.

But since he has already come this far, he has no way to come back, so he must follow his set of plans from a few days ago.

At this time, Kazumi glanced at him and suddenly said: “You should be very clear about why I come to look for you. I just want

to know, how do you want to let go of little Asasei? Don't tell me a playboy like you suddenly fall in love with her."

Being asked so directly by her, for a time, Yasuda did not know how to answer. After thinking for a moment, he then said: "How did you know I don't really like little Asasei?"

Kazumi sneered, "In two years in Teikyo University, you have dumped nine girls. The longest time you have a relationship with a girl is three months, while the shortest is no more than two weeks. A playboy who likes to play with other people's feelings like you, how could you have a sincere relationship with an ordinary girl?"

Yasuda said with a smile, "Looks like you have done your homework in investigating me."

"Please don't misunderstand, I don't need to investigate an infamous person like you, just casually asked other people was sufficed for me."

"It's hard to say, maybe little Asasei is the person that I am looking for."

"That's a touching confession. It seems like I am the one who is too meddlesome here. Sorry to bother your intimate relation with her. Later on, I am not going to bother with this anymore. After all, this is little Asasei's own choice." With that, she stood up and ready go.

Seeing that she really wanted to go, Yasuda panicked. He never thought this woman would suddenly turn a blind eye toward this matter. If that's the case, then all that he had done was in vain.

Almost subconsciously, he called out, "Wait a minute."

Kazumi looked back at him but did not sit down, "Is there anything else?"

"Would you please sit down? I want to have a talk with you."

"We have nothing to talk about." With that, she turned around again.

Seeing her so resolute, Yasuda was anxious and immediately said: "I can let go of little Asasei, but you have to agree to be my girlfriend."

Hearing these words, Kazumi stopped her footsteps.

To see her finally stop, Yasuda could not help but breathe a sigh of relief.

Kazumi slowly turned around, then slowly walked back to her seat to sit down, and coldly looked at him.

"So, you are really just using little Asasei to force me into submission?"

Yasuda knew it was useless for him to deny anymore so he nodded and said: “Kazumi, I really like you. But because you never give me a chance, I was forced to use such a mean. Actually, I really don’t want to hurt little Asasei.”

Kazumi did not speak, just silently looked at him.

In this silent atmosphere, Yasuda was suddenly overtaken by a tension that cannot be put into words.

After a while, Kazumi suddenly said leisurely: “Wow, you’re really worthy to be a professional playboy! No wonder you can catch so many girls in two years. But I am sorry, I do not want to be one of them. Actually, you do not like anyone at all. You seems to be in pursuit of me, but I know you just want a revenge. You want to retaliate from what I said when I first saw you. Not too long after that day, when you started to bring me flowers, I knew what you were up to. Please, next time you do this kind of thing, don’t make it so obvious. I’m sorry, I want to hang up a phone call first.” With that, she suddenly pulled out a cell phone from her body.

Yasuda somewhat confusedly looked at her action. She did not press any key, but put the phone directly to her ear and said: “Little Asasei, did you hear all of that? Fool, don’t cry. This man is not worth your tears.”

At this time, Ogata Yasuda suddenly realized what just happened. His complexion suddenly changed again and again.

After hanging up the phone, Kazumi suddenly threw the glass of water on his face.

Without a warning, Yasuda's face was suddenly splashed with water.

This sudden turn of event immediately attracted the attention of the people sitting nearby. Very curiously, they turned around to look.

Kazumi stood up and said to him: "I give you my last words, just like what I said before, you are really inferior to dog sh*t." With that, without looking at him anymore, she turned around and walked to the front of the restaurant.

Those who just saw that scene looked at her leaving the restaurant with unbelievable look.

"Mr. Ogata, are you okay?" At this time, the waitress came in with a dry towel.

"I am fine, thank you." Yasuda took the towel from the waitress hand and wiped the water from his face.

Having seen this kind of thing in this restaurant occasionally, the waitress knew that talking too much would be met with curses instead. Therefore, she did not say a word anymore and just quietly walked away. Those curious onlookers also withdrew their

eyes. Before long, the dining room returned to its original calm.

Looking at the chair that woman just sat, Yasuda suddenly started to laugh. He even needed to cover his mouth with his hand to not let people hear his laughter.

After a while, when he stopped laughing, he took her glass of water and slowly turned it around.

—

On the open street that was illuminated by bright street lights, a female figure attracted the eyes of all the men in the vicinity.

She has an amazing curve that can make all men's blood boiled with excitement. But the thing that made most people itchy was that, such a woman who can make people commit crimes was wearing a tight-fitting white miniskirt; as long as that woman bent over, the things inside would be completely exposed.

Near her neckline, a thin fabric wrapped her towering twin peaks, revealing her snow-white cleavage. With a thin waist, very sexy buttocks, as well as a pair of slender legs that can make people indulge in fantasies; All of these produced a fatal attraction to all the male who walked through the street.

“Young lady, how about going for a drink with us?” Two young men walked up to her and then looked at her devil figure with lewd eyes.

“Go away!” The woman glanced at them coldly.

Somehow, when she glanced at them, these two smooth talker veteran young men completely did not dare to make a sound, but immediately left under her chilling gaze.

After the two young men left her, the woman somewhat impatiently scolded: “Really common perverts.” Besides those two men, when she came out from his place, she has been approached by passing men for about seven times.

However, he was an exception. Thinking of that man, her mouth revealed a trace of strange smile.

Suddenly, a burst of ring tone sound resounded from her body.

“So it’s you, why are you looking for me?”

“Don’t bother, I will deal with this little thing myself. But I am starting to believe what you said before, the man is really not that simple.”

“No other meaning, I am just saying it.”

“No, you cannot intervene in this matter. Because the above know you have a beef with him, they don’t send you to deal with this matter. So don’t come here.”

“No need, I’ll hang up.”

After hanging up the phone, she looked at her mobile phone and said to herself: “If you come here, how am I going to play?”

When she walked in front of a cafe, she suddenly wanted to go in and have a cup of coffee. When she was about to go in, suddenly she saw a familiar figure walking along the street in front of her.

After seeing that person, she suddenly had an exciting look in her eyes. It seems like the game is really not over yet.

—

Kazumi was very anxious now. She worried that the guy would do something stupid.

If it was a normal couple’s break, it would be okay. But to use him, a playboy, like a tool was definitely something that not anyone can take. With that guy’s mental capacity, it was highly likely that he would do stupid things.

Remembering that there was a taxi spot on the front corner, Kazumi cannot help but speed up her pace.

Suddenly, a woman dressed in a white mini skirt came to her face.

At this time, Kazumi simply has no desire to pay attention to other people. She just wanted to get back to the apartment as soon as possible.

But that sexy woman stood in front of her, and then asked: “Are you student Gennai Kazumi?”

Kazumi looked up and saw that the woman was actually the new female teacher, Myojin Sasako.

“So it’s Myojin-sensei, hello.” Being used to good manners, Kazumi greeted her.

“Student Kazumi, you look like you have been fighting with someone, what’s the matter?”

“Yes, I have contention about something with someone so I want to rush back. If you’ll excuse me.” With that, after she paid her respect, she moved to the side to pass through.

At this time, Sasako-sensei suddenly pulled her hand and said: “Student Kazumi, don’t go so fast, I’m actually looking for you.”

Kazumi somewhat anxiously said, “I am sorry, sensei, I’m really in a hurry.”

“That’s a coincidence, I’m also looking for you in a hurry.” At

this point, Sasako-sensei suddenly frowned, and then she looked around for a bit. Before long, she saw two tall men in a laid back clothing approaching here.

“Really annoying insects.” After she whispered a curse, she turned her head to Kazumi and said with a smile: “Looks like your brother really cares about you.”